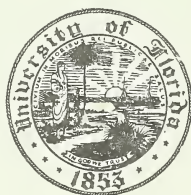


UNIVERSITY
OF FLORIDA
LIBRARIES





Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2015

Sixteenth Annual Report, 1911, of the American Scenic and Historic Preservation Society

TO THE LEGISLATURE OF
THE STATE OF NEW YORK



TRANSMITTED TO THE
LEGISLATURE JUNE 12,

1911



FOUNDED BY ANDREW H. GREEN AND
INCORPORATED BY THE LEGISLATURE OF
THE STATE OF NEW YORK IN 1895



ALBANY
J. B. LYON COMPANY, STATE PRINTERS
1911

AS-1242

CONTENTS.

	PAGE.
Letter of Transmittal.....	7
Officers and Trustees.....	9
Committees	11
Charter	13
Death of J. Hampden Robb.....	15
Aims of the Society.....	16
Practical Results the Prime Object.....	17
Precept and Example.....	17
Financial Support	18
Demand for Annual Reports.....	19
Finances: General Fund.....	20
Andrew H. Green Fund.....	22
Stony Point Battlefield State Reservation.....	22
Improving the Right of Way.....	23
Mounting Cannon	23
New Steamboat Landing.....	24
Lighthouse Reservation	24
Number of Visitors.....	26
Gift of Relics to Museum.....	26
Financial Statement	27
Watkins Glen State Reservation.....	29
Grading Entrance Grounds.....	29
Pavilion at Entrance.....	29
Sentry Bridge Stairs.....	30
Stairs on Lower Path at Sylvan Rapids.....	30
Rock Excavation at Glen Cathedral.....	31
Rainbow Falls	31
Pluto Falls and Whirlpool Gorge.....	32
Railings	32
Miscellaneous Improvements	32
Number of Visitors.....	33
Cavern Cascade	34
Bids for Contract Work.....	34
Insurance of State Property.....	36
Financial Statement	37
Letchworth Park	40
Death of William Pryor Letchworth.....	40
Mr. Letchworth's Will.....	42
Farm Leases	46
Proposed Arboretum	46
Cornplanter Medal Awarded to Mr. Letchworth.....	48
Mary Jemison Statue Unveiled.....	49
Portage Dam Project Opposed.....	49
Philipse Manor Hall.....	59
Plans for Restoration.....	59
Alexander S. Cochran's Gift.....	60
Fort Brewerton State Reservation.....	61
Tappan Monument Property.....	61

	PAGE.
Public Meetings	61
Fourth of July	61
Fort Number One.....	61
Iroquois Indians	62
Chancellor Livingston	63
Yucatan	63
Phytosaur at Fort Lee.....	64
Manhattan Archæology	64
Regimental Buttons	64
Greeley Centennial	65
Grand Canyon Physiography.....	68
Centennial of Occupation of New York City Hall.....	72
New York City Parks.....	76
General System of Administration.....	76
Central Park: Deteriorated Condition.....	78
City Hall Park: New Court House Opposed.....	79
Battery Park: Unsightly Federal Structure Erected.....	82
Bryant Park: Academy of Design Project.....	83
Morningside Park: Rowdyism.....	84
Joseph Rodman Drake Park: Improvement.....	85
Sites and Inscriptions.....	86
Manhattan Hollow Way.....	86
Fort Number One.....	86
Maiden Lane, New York.....	87
St. Paul's Church, Eastchester.....	87
New Utrecht Milestone.....	87
Tan-yard Spring, Peekskill.....	88
Names of Places.....	88
General Principles of Place-names.....	88
Bentley Manor or Tottenville.....	96
Meaning of the name Spuyten Duyvil.....	99
Hall of Fame.....	107
Election of 1910.....	108
Vote of Electors in 1910.....	108
Complete Roster of the Hall of Fame.....	111
Method of Election.....	112
University Senate	112
Electors of the Hall of Fame.....	113
Palisades and Highlands Interstate Park.....	116
Gifts by Mrs. Harriman and Others.....	116
Legislation in 1910.....	117
Bond Issue Approved by Popular Vote.....	118
Ceremonies of Conveyance at Bear Mountain.....	122
Malden-on-Hudson	122
Preservation of Historic Buildings and Places in New York.....	123
Billogg House on Staten Island.....	123
Verplanck Mansion near Fishkill Landing.....	124
Van Buren Estate in Kinderhook.....	125
Fort Crailo in Rensselaer.....	125
Schuyler Mansion in Albany.....	125
Glen-Sanders House in Scotia.....	127
Saratoga Battlefield in Stillwater.....	128
Another Saratoga Battlefield Bill.....	129
Bennington Battlefield	129
Herkimer House in Danube.....	129
Sullivan Monument Near Elmira.....	130
Poetry Inspired by Scenery.....	131
A Foreign Poem on the Hudson in Goethe's Day.....	132
Poem on Watkins Glen.....	136

	PAGE.
Saratoga Springs State Reservation.....	138
Condemnation Proceedings Begun.....	138
Mineral Properties and Pressure Restored.....	139
Important Decision by United States Supreme Court.....	139
Niagara Falls	149
Treaty with Great Britain Proclaimed.....	149
Failure of the Alexander Bill.....	161
Burton Act Renewed	163
Minnehaha Falls, History of.....	165
General du Pont's Gift of a State Road to Delaware.....	169
Cascade Town Co. vs. Empire Water & Power Co.....	173
Notable Colorado Decision Concerning Value of Scenic Beauty.....	173
Grand Canyon National Monument.....	184
Enlargement of Park Proposed.....	184
Bill to Create a National Park.....	188
Railway Franchise Along Canyon Rim Opposed.....	189
National Parks and Monuments.....	191
New National Parks and Monuments.....	191
Hawaiian Volcano Park Proposed.....	191
Difference Between National Parks and National Monuments.....	194
Bureau of National Parks Proposed.....	196
Visitors to National Parks and Forests.....	200
Hetch-Hetchy Valley Decision Postponed.....	202
Conservation of Natural Resources.....	203
National Conservation Congress.....	203
Report of this Society.....	204
Co-operation of Water and Forest Commissioners Recommended.....	210
Necessity of Reforestation.....	211
Use of Convicts and Inebriates in Forestry.....	211
Appalachian Forest Reserve Bill Passed.....	212
Text of Bill.....	212
Preparations for Purchasing Lands.....	216
Regulation of Public Signs.....	219
Fifth Avenue Omnibus Sign-board Decision Sustained.....	219
Removal of Signs from Highways	219
Taxation of Sign-boards.....	220
Advertisements in Vehicles, Etc.....	221
Menace of Roof Signs and Water Tanks.....	221
Preservation of Public Records.....	222
Destruction of State Library.....	222
Printing of New York City Archives Recommended.....	223
New York County Clerk's Records.....	225
Conclusion of Report.....	226

APPENDIX A.

Dedication of the Statue of Mary Jemison, the White Woman of the Genesee, at Letchworth Park, September 19, 1910.....	229
---	-----

APPENDIX B.

Fourth of July, 1910, in the City of New York, Account of a Celebration Designed to Establish a More Rational Way of Observing Independence Day	261
---	-----

APPENDIX C.

Dedication of a Tablet Marking the Site of Fort Number One, New York City	291
---	-----

APPENDIX D.

Chancellor Robert R. Livingston of New York and His Family. By Joseph Livingston Delafield	311
--	-----

	PAGE.
APPENDIX E.	
The Fort Lee, N. J., Phytosaur, Discovered in 1910. By Jesse E. Hyde..	357
APPENDIX F.	
The Palisades and Highlands Interstate Park. Ceremonies of Conveyance at Bear Mountain, October 29, 1910.....	365
APPENDIX G.	
History of Central Park in the City of New York. By Edward Hagaman Hall, L.H.D.....	379
APPENDIX H.	
The Bureau of American Republics. Dedication of Building in Washington, April 26, 1911. By George F. Kunz, Ph.D., Sc.D.....	491
APPENDIX I.	
American City Parks. By George F. Kunz, Ph.D., Sc.D.....	499
APPENDIX J.	
Foreign Regulations for the Conservation of Scenic and Historic Places and Objects. By George F. Kunz, Ph.D., Sc.D.....	553
APPENDIX K.	
Maiden Lane, New York. An Illustration of How Errors in History are Corrected and Inscriptions Verified. By Albert Ulmann.....	585

ILLUSTRATIONS.

Plate.

1. Stony Point Reservation: Cannon.
2. Stony Point Reservation: New Steamboat Landing.
3. Watkins Glen Reservation: Pavilion at Main Entrance.
4. Watkins Glen Reservation: Stairs and Bridge at Rainbow Falls.
5. Watkins Glen Reservation: Stairs and Path East of Rainbow Falls.
6. Watkins Glen Reservation: Path and hidden stairway at Cavern Cascade.
7. Letchworth Park: Scene at Dedication of Mary Jemison statue.
8. Letchworth Park: The Mary Jemison statue.
9. Portrait of Mary Jemison, the "White Woman of the Genesee."
10. Residence of Wm. C. Muschenheim on Spuyten Duyvil Hill, New York City, on the site of Fort Number One.
11. Tablet marking the site of Fort Number One, on Spuyten Duyvil Hill, New York City.
12. Horace Greeley portrait.
13. Joseph Rodman Drake Park, New York City, before improvement.
14. Joseph Rodman Drake Park, New York City, after improvement.
15. Harriman Park, N. Y.: Ceremonies of Conveyance at Bear Mountain, October 29, 1910.
16. Birthplace of John Bigelow at Malden, N. Y.
17. Minnehaha Falls, Minneapolis, Minn.
18. Minnehaha Creek, Minneapolis, Minn.
19. Fort Snelling, Minn.
20. Grand Canyon of the Colorado at foot of Bright Angel Trail.
21. Grand Canyon Plateau: White Cliffs north of Kanab, Utah.
22. Grand Canyon Plateau: Kanab Creek, a small tributary of the Grand Canyon.
23. Grand Canyon National Monument: Map.
24. Fort Lee Phytosaur: Site where fossil was discovered.
25. International Union of the American Republics: Building in Washington, D. C.
26. International Union of the American Republics: Interior of Main Hall.
27. International Union of the American Republics: Courtyard and Fountain.
28. Carnegie Medal presented to Andrew Carnegie by the American Republics at Washington, D. C., April 26, 1911.
29. Lincoln Memorial proposed by the Park Commission of Washington, D. C.: View from Monument Terrace.
30. Lincoln Memorial (proposed), Washington, D. C.: View of West Front.
31. Indianapolis, Ind., Park Improvements: (a) View before improvement near Northwestern avenue bridge. (b) View after improvement.
32. Boston, Mass., Park Improvements: Charles River Basin Embankment.
33. Kansas City, Mo., Park Improvements: Drive in North Terrace Park.
34. Kansas City, Mo., Park Improvements: Tenth Street Terrace in West Terrace Park.
35. Jamestown, N. Y., Park Improvements: Dow Park and Jones Memorial Park.
36. A City Plan for Rochester, N. Y.: Contrasting river views.
37. A City Plan for Rochester, N. Y.: Contrasting bridge views.
38. Memphis, Tenn.: View of Mississippi River from Riverside Park.
39. Hawaii: Map of proposed Volcano National Parks.
40. Hawaii: On automobile road to Kilauea (proposed Volcano National Park).

Plate.

41. Hawaii: Kilauea Crater in Proposed Volcano National Park.
42. Hawaii: Lava Tree Moulds in Proposed Volcano National Park.
43. Historic Monuments of Belgium: University Halles at Louvain.
44. Historic Monuments in Belgium: The Steen, in the City of Anvers.
45. Historic Monuments in Belgium: Ruins of Abbey at Villers.
46. Historic Monuments of Burma: Shwedagon Pagoda, Rangoon.
47. Historic Monuments of Burma: Ananda Pagoda at Pagan.
48. Historic Monument of Burma: Ningung Pagoda, Sagaing.
49. Historic Monuments of Burma: Queen's Golden Monastery, Mandalay.
50. Nature Monument Care in Denmark: Stork Oak near Fredericksund.
51. Nature Monument Care in Denmark: The Danime Stone near Nyborg.
52. Nature Monument Care in Prussia: Porta Westfalica, near Minden.
53. Scenic Preservation in New Zealand: Mitre Peak.
54. Scenic Preservation in New Zealand: Lake Ada.
55. Scenic Preservation in New Zealand: Mount Cook.
56. Scenic Preservation in New Zealand: Sandstone Rock, Mokau river.
57. Scenic Preservation in New Zealand: Limestone Rocks, Waru.
58. Scenic Preservation in New Zealand: Reingā Falls.
59. Pyramid and Temple at Chichen Itza, Yucatan.
60. Central Park, New York: Blockhouse erected 1814.
61. Central Park, New York: (a) Bluff of Fort Clinton showing neglected cannon, 1905. (b) Cannon mounted on Monument, 1906.
62. Central Park, New York: Fort Fish, Fort Clinton and Nutter's Battery, 1814, looking northeast.
63. Central Park, New York: Forts Fish and Clinton, 1814, looking north.
64. Central Park, New York: Fort Clinton and Harlem Creek, 1814, looking east.
65. Central Park, New York: McGown's Pass Blockhouse, 1814, looking northeast.
66. Central Park, New York: Map of Park from 104th street to 110th street, showing site of military works of 1814.
67. Central Park, New York: Landmark map of Manhattan Island from 80th to 140th streets.
68. Central Park, New York: Modern map of the Park.

STATE OF NEW YORK

No. 58.

IN ASSEMBLY

JUNE 12, 1911.

SIXTEENTH ANNUAL REPORT

OF THE

AMERICAN SCENIC AND HISTORIC PRESERVA- TION SOCIETY.

NEW YORK, N. Y., *June 9, 1911.*

HONORABLE DANIEL D. FRISBIE, *Speaker of the Assembly, Albany,*
N. Y.:

SIR.—I have the honor herewith to transmit to the Legislature of the State of New York the sixteenth annual report of the American Scenic and Historic Preservation Society as required by law.

Yours respectfully,

GEORGE FREDERICK KUNZ,

President.

REPORT.

NEW YORK, June 9, 1911.

To the Legislature of the State of New York:

Pursuant to chapter 166 of the Laws of 1895, and laws amendatory thereof and supplementary thereto, the trustees of the American Scenic and Historic Preservation Society have the honor to present this, its sixteenth, annual report.

OFFICERS, TRUSTEES AND COMMITTEES.

The officers, trustees and standing committees of the Society are as follows:

Honorary President.

J. PIERPONT MORGAN, LL. D. 23 Wall street, New York

President.

GEORGE FREDERICK KUNZ, Ph. D., Sc. D.,
401 Fifth avenue, New York

Vice-Presidents.

HON. CHARLES S. FRANCIS Troy, N. Y.
HENRY M. LEIPZIGER, Ph. D., LL. D. New York
HON. GEORGE W. PERKINS New York
COL. HENRY W. SACKETT New York

Treasurer.

HON. N. TAYLOR PHILLIPS 51 Chambers street, New York

Counsel.

HENRY E. GREGORY 25 Liberty street, New York

Secretary.

EDWARD HAGAMAN HALL, L. H. M., L. H. D.,
Tribune Building, New York

Landscape Architect.

Hon. SAMUEL PARSONS.....1133 Broadway, New York

Trustees.

1. EDWARD DEAN ADAMS, LL. D.....New York
2. Dean LIBERTY HYDE BAILEY.....Ithaca, N. Y.
3. REGINALD PELHAM BOLTON.....New York
4. HERBERT L. BRIDGMAN.....Brooklyn, N. Y.
5. HENRY KIRKE BUSH-BROWN.....Washington, D. C.
6. D. BRYSON DELAVAN, M. D.....New York
7. Hon. CHARLES M. DOW.....Jamestown, N. Y.
8. Hon. CHARLES SPENCER FRANCIS.....Troy, N. Y.
9. Hon. ROBERT LIVINGSTON FRYER.....Buffalo, N. Y.
10. HENRY ELLSWORTH GREGORY.....New York
11. ROCELLUS S. GUERNSEY.....New York
12. FRANCIS WHITING HALSEY.....New York
13. Hon. WILLIAM B. HOWLAND.....New York
14. Hon. THOMAS P. KINGSFORD.....Oswego, N. Y.
15. GEORGE FREDERICK KUNZ, Ph. D., Sc. D.....New York
16. FREDERICK STYMETZ LAMB.....New York
17. Hon. THOMAS H. LEE.....Stony Point, N. Y.
18. HENRY M. LEIPZIGER, Ph. D., LL. D.....New York
19. OGDEN P. LETCHWORTH.....Buffalo, N. Y.
20. HIRAM J. MESSENGER, Ph. D.....Hartford, Conn.
21. J. PIERPONT MORGAN, LL. D.....New York.
22. IRA K. MORRIS.....Staten Island, N. Y.
23. JOHN DEWITT MOWRIS.....New York
24. GORDON H. PECK.....West Haverstraw, N. Y.
25. Hon. GEORGE W. PERKINS.....New York
26. Hon. N. TAYLOR PHILLIPS.....New York
27. Hon. THOMAS REDFIELD PROCTOR.....Utica, N. Y.
28. Hon. HERMAN RIDDER.....New York
29. Col. HENRY WOODWARD SACKETT.....New York
30. CHARLES SPRAGUE SARGENT, LL. D..Jamaica Plains, Mass.

31. HON. CHARLES A. SPOFFORD.....New York
32. HON. STEPHEN H. THAYER.....Yonkers, N. Y.
33. ALBERT ULMANN.....New York
34. CHARLES DELAMATER VAIL, L. H. D.Geneva, N. Y.
35. FRANK S. WITHERBEE.....New York

Executive Committee.

- GEORGE FREDERICK KUNZ, Ph. D., Sc. D., Chairman..New York
- HENRY E. GREGORY.....New York
- ROCELLUS S. GUERNSEY.....New York
- HON. N. TAYLOR PHILLIPS.....New York
- COL. HENRY W. SACKETT.....New York

Finance Committee.

- FREDERICK S. LAMB, Chairman.....New York
- HON. N. TAYLOR PHILLIPS.....New York
- COL. HENRY W. SACKETT.....New York

Fort Brewerton Reservation Committee.

- HON. THOMAS D. LEWIS, Chairman.....Fulton, N. Y.
- HON. THOMAS P. KINGSFORD.....Oswego, N. Y.
- HON. THOMAS R. PROCTOR.....Utica, N. Y.

Letchworth Park Committee.

- HON. CHARLES M. DOW, Chairman.....Jamestown, N. Y.
- DEAN L. H. BAILEY, Cornell University.....Ithaca, N. Y.
- HON. ROBERT L. FRYER.....Buffalo, N. Y.
- FRANCIS WHITING HALSEY.....New York
- HON. THOMAS P. KINGSFORD.....Oswego, N. Y.
- HENRY M. LEIPZIGER, Ph. D., LL. D.....New York
- OGDEN P. LETCHWORTH.....Buffalo, N. Y.
- HON. N. TAYLOR PHILLIPS.....New York
- COL. HENRY W. SACKETT.....New York

Sites and Inscriptions Committee.

- REGINALD PELHAM BOLTON, Chairman.....New York
- FRANCIS WHITING HALSEY.....New York
- ALBERT ULMANN.....New York
- THE SECRETARY.....New York

Stony Point Reservation Committee.

GORDON H. PECK, Chairman.....	West Haverstraw, N. Y.
HENRY K. BUSH-BROWN.....	Washington, D. C.
HON. THOMAS H. LEE.....	Stony Point, N. Y.
FRANCIS WHITING HALSEY.....	New York
THE SECRETARY.....	New York

Tappan Monument Committee.

FRANK R. CRUMBIE, Chairman.....	Nyack, N. Y.
EUGENE F. PERRY.....	Nyack, N. Y.
VAN WYCK ROSSITER.....	Nyack, N. Y.

Watkins Glen Reservation Committee.

Col. HENRY W. SACKETT, Chairman.....	New York
Dean L. H. BAILEY, Cornell University.....	Ithaca, N. Y.
HON. JOHN A. CLUTE.....	Watkins, N. Y.
JAMES B. RATHBONE.....	Elmira, N. Y.
CHARLES D. VAIL, L. H. D.....	Geneva, N. Y.
CHARLES M. WOODWARD.....	Watkins, N. Y.

Yonkers Manor Hall Committee.

HON. STEPHEN H. THAYER, Chairman.....	Yonkers, N. Y.
MISS MARY MARSHALL BUTLER.....	Yonkers, N. Y.
MISS HELEN R. CROES.....	Yonkers, N. Y.
HAMPTON D. EWING.....	Yonkers, N. Y.
MRS. THOMAS EWING, JR.....	Yonkers, N. Y.
MRS. CHARLES P. G. SCOTT.....	Yonkers, N. Y.
HON. D. McN. K. STAUFFER.....	Yonkers, N. Y.
NATHAN A. WARREN, M. D.....	Yonkers, N. Y.

CHARTER.

An account of the founding of the Society by the Hon. Andrew H. Green in 1895 and its subsequent development will be found on pages sixteen to twenty-four of our twelfth annual report.

The Society was originally incorporated by a special act of the Legislature of the State of New York (chapter 166 of the Laws of 1895), under the title of "The Trustees of Scenic and Historic Places and Objects," which title was changed by chapter 302 of the Laws of 1898 to "The Society for the Preservation of Scenic and Historic Places and Objects," and by chapter 385 of the Laws of 1901 to "The American Scenic and Historic Preservation Society." It had on January 1, 1911, a total membership of 503.

Its charter reads as follows:

The People of the State of New York, represented in Senate and Assembly, do enact as follows:

Section 1. The following persons: William H. Webb,* Samuel D. Babcock,* John M. Francis,* Andrew H. Green,* Charles A. Dana,* Oswald Ottendorfer,* Chauncey M. Depew, Horace Porter, William Allen Butler,* Mornay Williams, George G. Haven,* Elbridge T. Gerry, Walter S. Logan,* Henry E. Howland, Edward P. Hatch,* William L. Bull, James M. Taylor, J. Hampden Robb,* Ebenezer K. Wright,* Alexander E. Orr, William M. Evarts,* Wager Swayne,* Charles R. Miller, Frederick W. Devoe, Elbridge G. Spaulding,* Frederick S. Tallmadge,* Thomas V. Welch,* S. Van Rensselaer Cruger,* Frederick J. De Peyster,* Morgan Dix,* John A. Stewart, Charles C. Beaman,* Francis Vinton Greene, Peter A. Porter, M. D. Raymond, George N. Lawrence,* Benjamin F. Tracy, Augustus Frank,* Charles Z. Lincoln, John Hudson Peck, Sherman S. Rogers,* William Hamilton Harris, Lewis Cass Ledyard, Alexander B. Crane, John Hodge,* Robert L. Fryer, J. S. T. Stranahan,* Samuel Parsons, Jr., Charles A. Hawley, Henry E. Gregory, Frederick D. Tappan,* Henry J. Cookinham, Henry R. Durfee, H. Walter Webb,* and such others as shall become associated with them in the manner and upon the terms and conditions prescribed by the by-laws of the corporation hereby created, are hereby constituted a body politic and corporate by the name of the American Scenic and

* Now deceased.

Historic Preservation Society, with all the powers and subject to the provisions of the eleventh section of chapter thirty-five of the general corporation law as amended by chapter six hundred and eighty-seven of the laws of eighteen hundred and ninety-two, except as otherwise provided by this act, and shall be capable of purchasing, taking, receiving, and holding by gift, grant, devise, bequest, or otherwise, in trust or perpetuity, real and personal estate for the uses and purposes of said corporation, the value of which shall not exceed one million dollars. (Chapter 166, 1895, amended by chap. 302, 1898, and chap. 385, 1901.)

§ 2. The objects of said corporation shall be to acquire by purchase, gift, grant, devise, or bequest, historic objects or memorable or picturesque places in the State or elsewhere in the United States, hold real and personal property in fee or upon such lawful trusts as may be agreed upon between the donors thereof and said corporation, and to improve the same; admission to which shall be free to the public under such rules for the proper protection thereof as said corporation may prescribe, and which said property shall be exempt from taxation within the State of New York. (Chapter 166, 1895, amended by chap. 385, 1901.)

§ 3. The affairs and business of said corporation shall be conducted by a board of not less than five or more than thirty-five trustees, a quorum of whom for the transaction of business shall be fixed by the by-laws. The persons now constituting the board of trustees of said corporation shall continue to hold office until others are elected in their stead as provided by the said by-laws. Vacancies in the board of trustees may be filled in the manner prescribed by the said by-laws. (Chapter 166, 1895, amended by chap. 302, 1898, and chap. 385, 1901.)

§ 4. None of the trustees or members of said corporation shall receive any compensation for services, or be pecuniarily interested directly or indirectly, in any contract relating to the affairs of said corporation, nor shall said corporation make any dividend or division of its property among its members, managers or officers. (Chapter 166, 1895.)

§ 5. The board of trustees shall annually, at a time to be fixed by the by-laws, elect or appoint from their number the following officers: A president, four vice-presidents and a treasurer, who shall hold office for one year and until their respective successors are elected or appointed, and shall perform such duties as are provided by the by-laws. The board of trustees may also appoint a secretary and define his duties, and shall have the power to

manage, transact, and conduct all business of the corporation, to prescribe the terms of admission of its members, and to appoint and fix the compensation of and remove its employes at pleasure. The said corporation shall have no capital stock, and shall have no power to sell, mortgage or otherwise incumber any of its property. (Chapter 166, 1895, amended by chap. 385, 1901.)

§ 6. Said corporation shall annually make to the Legislature a statement of its affairs, and from time to time report to the Legislature, by bill or otherwise, such recommendations as are pertinent to the objects for which it was created, and may act jointly or otherwise with any persons appointed by any other State for similar purposes as those intended to be accomplished by this act, whenever the object to be secured or purpose sought to be accomplished, is within the jurisdiction of this and any other State, or can only be attained by such joint action. (Chapter 166, 1895.)

§ 7. This act shall take effect immediately.

DEATH OF J. HAMPDEN ROBB.

It is our painful duty to report the death of the Hon. J. Hampden Robb, a charter member and trustee of the Society. Mr. Robb passed away at his residence No. 23 Park avenue, New York city, on January 21, 1911. He was born in Philadelphia, Penn., October 27, 1846, being the son of James Robb, a New Orleans banker, and Louisa Werninger Robb. He was educated in Europe, then in a military school in Ossining, N. Y., and a short time in Harvard College. His early military instincts were indicated by his membership in the National Guard of New York, in which he was at one time a Lieutenant-Colonel and Adjutant-General of the First Brigade. In 1868 he married Cornelia Van Rensselaer Thayer, of Boston. He leaves a son and two daughters, Nathaniel Thayer Robb, Miss Cornelia Van Rensselaer Robb and Mrs. Goodhue Livingston. From 1866 to 1886, Mr. Robb was engaged in the cotton and banking business in New York city.

For years Mr. Robb was active in the national and State councils of the Democratic party. He was a member of Assembly in 1882 and Senator in 1884 and 1885. In the Legislature he was one of the foremost advocates of the law creating the State Reservation at Niagara, took a leading part in securing the appropriation for the purchase of the property, and was one of the Commissioners

of the Reservation appointed by Governor Cleveland after the latter had signed the bill.

Late in the '80's, he was persistently mentioned for the mayoralty of New York. In 1884 and again in 1888 he was a member of the Democratic National Convention. In the former he was a zealous advocate of the nomination of Mr. Cleveland, but after the latter's election, declined the tender of the position of Assistant Secretary of State.

That same interest in the preservation of the beauties and the breathing places of the State which he manifested in his advocacy of the State Reservation at Niagara and in other ways he put into use as a Commissioner of Parks of New York city, to which place Mayor Hewitt appointed him in 1887. He became President of the Park Board in 1888, and was always stubbornly opposed to any invasion of the lands set aside to be the green places of New York. In commenting on this service, a newspaper said twenty years ago:

"Only by eternal vigilance can the parks be maintained and developed as they ought to be, for there is never a time when some one is not trying to 'work' something to his own personal advantage and to the detriment of the public. If he can't work it he makes a terrible hullabaloo and abuses the Commissioners. Mr. Robb has withstood all these jobs, big and little, and has endeavored to have the parks administered so that the people of New York can get the greatest possible enjoyment and benefit out of them."

Mr. Robb was one of the most helpful coadjutors of the late Andrew H. Green in 1895 in founding the American Scenic and Historic Preservation Society, of which he was one of the incorporators and for the past five years a trustee. In his death the State, the city and the Society have sustained a great loss.

THE AIMS OF THE SOCIETY.

The Society aims to protect beautiful features of the natural landscape from disfigurement, either by physical alterations or by the erection of unsightly signs and structures; to conserve forests, streams and waterfalls; and to preserve from destruction remarkable geological formations and organic growths possessing an artistic or scientific value.

It endeavors to prevent the mutilation, destruction or dispersion of American antiquities; to save from obliteration places, objects and names identified with local, state and national history; to encourage original research and promote the publication of original documents and contributions relating to American history and scenery; to erect suitable historical memorials where none exist; and to secure the bestowal of significant and appropriate names on new thoroughfares, bridges, parks, reservoirs and other great municipal works.

It promotes the beautification of cities and villages by the landscape adornment of their open spaces and thoroughfares, the protection of their parks and trees from deterioration or destruction, and the creation of public parks by private gift or the appropriation of public funds, for the health, comfort and pleasure of the people.

It cultivates by public meetings, free lectures, literature, prize competitions, correspondence and other educational means popular appreciation of the scenic beauties of America and public sentiment in favor of their preservation; and it promotes interest in and respect for the history of the country, its honored names and its visible memorials.

Practical Results The Prime Object.

While the Society takes a natural pride in identification with the accomplishments of its sixteen years' labors, yet its principal object is to produce practical results through the best media. From the nature of its work, many impulses which it gives to public and individual sentiment find their ultimate expression through other channels, and in such results the Society feels as much satisfaction as in those which stand directly in its own name.

The Society also recognizes the valuable work done by cognate organizations and is ready to co-operate with, advise and otherwise aid them in the furtherance of undertakings designed for the general welfare.

Precept and Example.

The Society not only strives to influence others to perform acts of public beneficence, but it also shows its spirit by the examples

of its own members. During the past decade, members of the Society have made personal gifts aggregating \$2,347,200 for public parks, statues, tablets, and the preservation and restoration of historic buildings. The Society has been chiefly instrumental in the creation of seven State parks and largely instrumental in the creation of an eighth. It has taken a leading part in presenting to the Legislature the reasons for making appropriations amounting to \$317,359 for State parks and has exercised a minor influence in helping to secure appropriations amounting to \$2,950,000 for similar purposes. It was an influential factor in securing the creation of Washington's Headquarters Park in New York city at a cost of \$235,000. It is custodian of five State properties, namely, the Stony Point Battlefield State Reservation, the Watkins Glen State Reservation, Letchworth Park on the Genesee river, Fort Brewerton on Oneida lake, and the ancient Philipse Manor Hall in Yonkers, further details of which are given hereafter.

Financial Support.

Although performing functions exercised in some European countries by the Government itself, and in cases to be mentioned hereafter actually representing State and local authorities at home, the Society receives no governmental financial support for its general work. The appropriations of public moneys which it receives are applied exclusively to the specific objects for which they are made without any administrative charges by the Society. The Society is therefore entirely dependent for the maintenance of its general work, upon its membership dues, occasional voluntary contributions and the income from the Green Memorial Fund mentioned hereafter. The expenses of the Society during the first sixteen years of its existence have been less than \$38,000, which is an indication of the economy with which its affairs are managed and which is an extremely small "percentage of cost" compared with the practical results of its work summarized under the previous heading.

The Brooklyn *Standard-Union* of October 24, 1910, said: "It is morally certain that no organization does more good for less money."

The income of the Society, however, is inadequate to meet the

growing and inescapable demands of its work, and it earnestly appeals to the lovers of American scenery and American history for more adequate support by membership and by endowment.

Demand for Annual Reports.

In accordance with the general Printing Law, the State prints only 500 copies of our annual report. This number is inadequate to meet the increasing number of requests for the information which they contain concerning this field of work; and every year the Society is obliged to have extra copies printed at its own expense to meet the demands of public libraries, educational institutions, students, etc. Among the institutions which have recently made special request for the Society's publications are the Smithsonian Institution, the National Museum, Cornell University, the New York Public Library, the Division of Educational Extension of the New York State Education Department, Massachusetts Agricultural College at Amherst, Mass., West Virginia University Library at Morgantown, W. Va., Mt. St. Mary's College at Emmitsburgh, Md., Boiling Springs High School at Shelby, N. C., Pomona College at Claremont, Cal., the famous Rijks Universiteit of Leiden, the Netherlands, founded by William of Orange; and the Société Nationale Pour la Protection des Sites et des Monuments in Belgium.

The New York State Education Department, speaking of the Society's annual reports, says: "Some of our clubs are wishing to make a study of historic places and find that this report is especially valuable. * * * We are delighted with them. They are going to be very useful in furnishing material for several of our clubs."

The director of the Albany, N. Y., Institute writes: "It contains much valuable information."

Prof. Edward S. Burgess of the Department of Natural Science, Normal College, City of New York, writes: "I take pleasure in forwarding my dues for your esteemed Society — one of the most important to promote, in my opinion, of all existing agencies for local and national welfare. I have put the fifteenth annual report already into good service and could make another copy tell fruitfully in college work."

The librarian of Massachusetts Agricultural College writes: "These volumes are of great value to us because of the help which our students in landscape gardening, park planning, ornamental planting, etc., get from them, in addition to the splendid historic and patriotic considerations."

The librarian of the Gloversville, N. Y., Free Library writes: "The historical papers attached to the report make it especially valuable."

The librarian of Pomona College, Claremont, Cal., writes: "If possible we would like * * * future publications * * * as we find that they are full of valuable historic matter."

The librarian of the Rijks Universiteit of Leiden, founded by William of Orange, referring to the appendices of the fifteenth annual report, writes: "They are very interesting for the students of our country. But besides those appendices, the report itself seems to be of great value for us, and so I take the liberty to ask you if there could be any opportunity to have also the first fourteen reports."

M. Gaston de Formanoir de la Cazerie, secretary of the Société Nationale Pour la Protection des Sites et des Monuments in Belgium, asks for our reports for the encouragement of similar work in Belgium, stating that their efforts in that country are paralyzed by very narrow-minded legislation compared with that in this State and country.

The work of the Society also has the commendation of the Rev. Henry M. MacCracken, D. D., LL. D., formerly Chancellor of New York University, Seth Low, LL. D., formerly President of Columbia University, Arthur T. Hadley, LL. D., President of Yale University, Charles W. Eliot, LL. D., M. D., President Emeritus of Harvard University, and many other men of letters and leaders of education.

FINANCES.

The Society is maintained by membership dues, the income from the Andrew H. Green Memorial Fund of \$10,000 and occasional small donations. There are four classes of membership: Annual Members pay \$5 annually; Sustaining Members pay \$25 annually; Life Members are those who have contributed \$100 at one time; and Patrons are those who have given \$500 or

more in property or money at one time. For its general work the Society receives no financial assistance from the State. Moneys appropriated by the State are applied exclusively upon the properties of the State without any charge by the Society for its executive services, and are duly accounted for to the proper State officers. Detailed statements of the disbursements of such funds since our last annual report are given in the following pages:

Following is a statement of receipts and disbursements of the General Fund for the year ended December 31, 1910:

General Fund.

DEBIT.

Balance on hand, January 1, 1910.....		\$289 39
Received from annual members	\$2,177 60	
Received from sustaining members	225 00	
Received from Mrs. Fredk. F. Thompson.....	250 00	
Received from Green Memorial Fund.....	400 00	
Received from sales of pamphlets.....	21 25	
Received from donations	2 00	
		<hr/> 3,075 85
		<hr/> <hr/> \$3,365 24

CREDIT.

1. Arrears of salary to Secretary.....		None.
2. Salary of Secretary, January 1 to December 1, 1910.....		\$1,833 29
3. General printing and stationery.....		124 63
4. Special printing:		
City Hall pamphlets, etc.....	\$179 65	
Engraved invitations for membership.....	112 50	
500 extra copies annual report.....	175 00	
		<hr/> 467 15
5. Postage, telegrams and exchange:		
General	\$161 63	
Postage on City Hall pamphlets.....	32 25	
Postage on annual reports.....	79 06	
		<hr/> 272 94
6. Stenographic assistance		115 80
7. Public meetings		35 00
8. Telephone		5 43
9. Office rent		233 36
10. Traveling expenses and car fares.....		134 15
11. Press clippings		18 55
12. Messenger, freight and express.....		20 48
13. Photographic and drawing materials.....		27 53
14. Miscellaneous expenses		32 33
		<hr/> Total credit
		\$3,320 64
		<hr/> Total debit
		3,365 24
		<hr/> <hr/> Balance on hand, December 31, 1910.....
		\$44 60

The balance is on deposit with the National City Bank of New York.

Andrew H. Green Memorial Fund.

The Andrew H. Green Memorial Fund of \$10,000 given by the heirs of the founder of this Society in November, 1906, is invested in gold certificates of corporate stock of the city of New York (registered), bearing four per cent. interest per annum. The terms of the deed of gift require the principal to be invested permanently, the income therefrom to be devoted to the promotion of the objects of the Society. The deed further requires that "each and every report to the Legislature of the State of New York of the statement of the affairs of the party of the second part, as required by its charter, shall contain a concise statement of the purposes and objects upon which the income from said fund has been expended since the time of the last preceding report." The total income from interest on the fund during the year ended December 31, 1910, was \$400 and has been disbursed for the following purposes:

October 27, 1910.

No. 9.	Charles Washburn, attendants, lighting, etc., at public meeting, January 19, 1910.....	\$25 00
	J. B. Lyon Co., 500 extra copies of 15th Annual Report..	175 00

November 30, 1910.

No. 10.	John Polhemus Printing Co.:	
	1 qt. mucilage	1 00
	1 mucilage bottle	30
	1,000 envelopes	3 25
	1,000 City Hall pamphlets.....	93 35
	1,000 slips City Hall Park.....	3 00
	500 manila envelopes for same.....	3 50
	1,000 City Hall pamphlets, 2nd edition.....	49 00
	1,000 petition blanks, City Hall Park.....	5 25
	1,000 manila envelopes for same.....	6 25
	Postage for City Hall pamphlets.....	32 25
	Drawing materials for maps, etc.....	2 85
		\$400 00

STONY POINT STATE RESERVATION.

Maintenance and Improvement.

The Stony Point Battlefield State Reservation of thirty-five acres on the west side of the Hudson river is by law in the custody of this Society. The work of the past year has been bestowed chiefly on maintaining the roads and paths, improving the entrance to the right of way from the public highway, mounting the cannon

supplied by the Federal government and rebuilding the steamboat landing.

Improving the Right of Way.

In our last annual report, on pages 19 and 20, we gave the text of a bill which had been introduced and which was entitled "An Act to provide for acquiring, without expense, an additional portion of the battlefield of Stony Point and a right of way thereto, in the town of Stony Point and the county of Rockland." This act became a law April 20, 1910, with the approval of the Governor, and is chapter 116 of the Laws of 1910. The reasons for the act are set forth in our reports for 1909 and 1910. During the past year the tract of one acre and six hundredths at the entrance to the reservation, referred to in the act and upon which the memorial arch stands, has been graded and trimmed up.

The entrance to the reservation proper is about 1,400 feet east of the nearest public highway — the Call's Dock road, so called. It is reached by a right-of-way which branches off from the Call's Dock road and for about 210 feet follows the line of the old King's Ferry road down a steep grade to the famous Mud Bridge across the brook separating the peninsula from the mainland. The right of way then follows a winding course for a distance of 1,687 feet trending generally toward the east-southeast and up-grade to the entrance at the memorial arch. During the past year, we have widened the old road from the highway to the Mud Bridge six feet, making it sixteen feet wide; lessened the grade to and across the bridge or causeway by filling to a depth of two or three feet; built a retaining wall about five feet high with a stone road-guard on top; and replaced the old Mud Bridge with one of cement and iron. This has been a material improvement.

Mounting Cannon.

We have mounted six of the ten cannon donated by the Federal government and are awaiting funds to mount the other four. The carriages used for this purpose are made entirely of iron, after the pattern of a gun carriage used in the Revolutionary period and are like those upon which the guns at Valley Forge are mounted. They are purchased from Calvin Gilbert of Gettysburg, Penn., cast in parts, and are assembled after delivery. These

mounts, which are practically indestructible, cost \$100 each free on board at Gettysburg, the freight, hauling and mounting at Stony Point costing between six and seven dollars apiece additional. The guns are placed on the sites of the principal fortifications as located for the Society by the engineers of the United States Army in the summer of 1900. (See plate 1.)

New Steamboat Landing.

During a heavy storm in November, 1909, the steamboat wharf was seriously damaged by the washing out of the broken stone filling. During the past year the wharf has been rebuilt with heavy concrete walls. The outer end of the wharf presents a sheer front, permitting the landing of passengers from large steamboats. The other two sides are terraced, stair-fashion, down to low water level, thus permitting passengers to land from launches and rowboats at any stage of the tide. From the inner end of the wharf, wing walls have been built in either direction for a short distance along the shore, serving the three-fold purpose of retaining the bank, protecting visitors, and affording a resting place. The latter result is attained by shaping the top of the wall so that it can be used as a seat. (See plate 2.)

Proposed Improvements on Lighthouse Reservation.

Adjacent to the thirty-five acres of the State Reservation and occupying the extremity of Stony Point peninsula is the Federal Light House Reservation of nine acres. Under date of December 10, 1900, the late Hon. Andrew H. Green, President of this Society, addressed a letter to the United States Treasury Department, asking the co-operation of the Federal authorities in making improvements on both reservations according to a common plan, and requesting the Federal authorities to make such portion of them as lay within the bounds of the Lighthouse Reservation. Under date of Washington, January 23, 1901, the Lighthouse Board of the Treasury Department, by the hand of Major R. L. Hoxie, Corps of Engineers, U. S. A., Engineer Secretary, replied:

“ * * * In reply the Board states that there is no appropriation under its control available for the class of improvements contemplated upon the lighthouse reservation at Stony Point to

accord with the general plan of improvement proposed by your Society. Neither could any appropriation be expended in providing a water supply for the reservation. There appears to be no objection, however, to approving the general plan of improvement suggested by the Society and permitting the latter under proper restrictions, to lay out the walks and roads and effect the improvements contemplated upon the reservation at the expense of the Society and to dispense with the existing reservation fence, substituting for it proper boundary stones to preserve the location of the line. It is possible further that whenever a water-supply for the purpose of the adjoining park shall have been provided by the Society, it may be found feasible to connect with this source of supply upon suitable terms and conditions as has been done elsewhere to provide lighthouse stations with water from the city water supply."

As we have had no funds which could be applied to improvements on the Lighthouse Reservation, the projected improvements on that side of the line remained in *statu quo*. Meanwhile, the State Reservation was improved with roads, paths, shelters, and a water supply, and a part of the division fence removed.

On April 1, 1908, the Hon. S. W. Bradley introduced in Congress, a bill (H. R. No. 20,190, Sixtieth Congress, 1st Session) "to provide for a park road at the Lighthouse Reservation at Stony Point on the Hudson river in the State of New York." The bill appropriated \$7,500 for the purpose. On April 21, 1908, the Department of Commerce and Labor reported favorably on the bill to the House Committee on Interstate and Foreign Commerce, but the bill failed to become a law.

On June 17, 1910, H. R. 24,877, entitled "An act to authorize additional aids to navigation in the Lighthouse Establishment and to provide for a Bureau of Lighthouses in the Department of Commerce and Labor, and for other purposes," became a law (Public No. 217). The act reads in part as follows:

"Be it enacted by the Senate and the House of Representatives of the United States of America in Congress assembled, That the Secretary of Commerce and Labor be, and he is hereby, authorized to establish and provide the following additional aids to navigation in the Lighthouse Establishment, under the Department of Commerce and Labor, in accordance with the respective limits of cost hereinafter respectively set forth, which shall in no case be ex-

ceeded: * * * Third Lighthouse District: A park road and approaches thereto and footpath and other improvements on the Lighthouse Reservation at Stony Point on the Hudson River, New York, at a total cost not to exceed seven thousand five hundred dollars."

As the foregoing act simply authorizes the expenditure of the money but does not carry an appropriation, the proposed extension of our system of roads and paths to the Lighthouse Reservation remains in abeyance for the present.

Number of Visitors.

As we have no means for ascertaining accurately the number of visitors to the Reservation we are obliged to depend upon the count of those actually seen by the keeper. By this unsatisfactory method, we know that at least 13,000 persons visited the Reservation between April 1, 1910 and April 1, 1911. The total number, however, was considerably larger than this. The visitors express their pleasure derived not only from the natural scenery, including the superb views of the Hudson river, but also from the study of the battlefield by the aid of the landmarks and the maps and relics in the museum.

Gift of Relics to Museum.

We have the pleasure to acknowledge the receipt in April, 1911, of a valuable gift of relics to the Museum from the estate of the late William H. Jaycox of Haverstraw, who died on February 13, 1911, at the age of 72 years. During his lifetime, Mr. Jaycox was ardent in his patriotism as an American citizen and greatly interested in history, and he had made a large collection of fire arms, some of which had been in actual service as far back as the Revolution, and other relics of great interest; and it was his expressed desire that these should be given to the Museum on the Stony Point Battlefield State Reservation. After his death, his brother Mr. G. B. Jaycox intended to carry out his wish, but before he had done so, he died on March 11, 1911, and the execution of the estate devolved upon Mrs. Hattie E. Ingraham of Cuates, New Mexico, and Mr. Patrick McCabe of Haverstraw, N. Y. Under date of April 24, 1911, the latter consummated the desire of Mr. Jaycox by presenting the relics, and they will be properly dis-

played with suitable indication of their source. For the generous public spirit with which the administrators have carried out the purpose of Mr. Jaycox, we express our sincere appreciation. The relics will not only add greatly to the historic interest of the reservation, but they will also serve to keep alive the memory of a patriotic American citizen.

Financial Statement.

Following is a statement of the State funds received and disbursed from April 1, 1910 to April 1, 1911:

Chapter 432, Laws of 1909.

(Appropriation \$600).

DEBIT.

Received from State Treasurer and previously reported.....	\$200 00
April 19, 1910. Received from State Treasurer.....	100 00
July 7, 1910. Received from State Treasurer.....	100 00
Aug. 19, 1910. Received from State Treasurer.....	100 00
Dec. 7, 1910. Received from State Treasurer.....	100 00
	<hr/>
	\$600 00
	<hr/>

CREDIT.

Disbursements previously reported.....	\$200 00
Voucher. 1910.	
3. April 13. Wm. Ten Eyck, keeper, February-March ...	100 00
4. June 13. Wm. Ten Eyck, keeper, April-May	100 00
5. Aug. 10. Wm. Ten Eyck, keeper, June-July	100 00
6. Nov. 28. Wm. Ten Eyck, keeper, August-September ..	100 00
	<hr/>
	\$600 00
	<hr/>

Chapter 433, Laws of 1909.

(Appropriation \$1,000).

DEBIT.

Received from State Treasurer and previously reported.....	\$931 90
Aug. 5, 1910. Received from State Treasurer.....	50 00
Oct. 7, 1910. Received from State Treasurer.....	18 10
	<hr/>
	\$1,000 00
	<hr/>

CREDIT.

Disbursements previously reported.....	\$931 90
Voucher. 1910.	
9. July 30. Haverstraw Water Supply Co., water service, May 1, 1909, to May 1, 1910....	50 00
10. Sept. 20. Martin Mulvhail, labor on grounds.....	18 10
	<hr/>
	\$1,000 00
	<hr/>

Chapter 512, Laws of 1910.

(Appropriation \$600).

DEBIT.

Dec.	7, 1910.	Received from State Treasurer.....	\$100 00
Feb.	28, 1911.	Received from State Treasurer.....	100 00
March	28, 1911.	Received from State Treasurer.....	100 00
			<hr/>
			\$300 00
			<hr/>

CREDIT.

Voucher.	1910.		
1.	Nov. 28.	Wm. Ten Eyck, keeper, October	\$50 00
2.	Nov. 28.	Wm. Ten Eyck, keeper, November	50 00
			1911.
3.	Feb. 20.	Wm. Ten Eyck, keeper, December-January ..	100 00
4.	March 18.	Wm. Ten Eyck, keeper, February-March ...	100 00
			<hr/>
			\$300 00
			<hr/>

Chapter 513, Laws of 1910.

(Appropriation \$3,000).

DEBIT.

Aug.	5, 1910.	Received from State Treasurer.....	\$108 60
Aug.	19, 1910.	Received from State Treasurer.....	29 25
Oct.	7, 1910.	Received from State Treasurer.....	24 94
Oct.	15, 1910.	Received from State Treasurer.....	1,920 00
Dec.	7, 1910.	Received from State Treasurer.....	42 25
Dec.	20, 1910.	Received from State Treasurer.....	622 50
Feb.	28, 1911.	Received from State Treasurer.....	3 09
			<hr/>
			\$2,750 63
			<hr/>

CREDIT.

Voucher.	1910.		
1.	July 30.	Tomkins Cove Stone Co., 181 tons $\frac{3}{8}$ -in. crushed stone	\$108 60
2.	Aug. 10.	Martin Mulvhail, labor.....	29 25
3.	Sept. 20.	Martin Mulvhail, labor.....	24 94
4.	Oct. 4.	Calvin T. Allison, materials and labor re- building dock	1,425 00
5.	Oct. 4.	Calvin T. Allison, building wing walls at dock	195 00
6.	Oct. 4.	Calvin T. Allison, retaining wall, culvert and grading at Mud Bridge.....	300 00
7.	Nov. 28.	Martin Mulvhail, labor.....	42 25
8.	Dec. 8.	Calvin Gilbert, 6 gun carriages and freight.	622 50
9.	Feb. 20.	J. B. Lyon Company, printing.....	3 09
			<hr/>
			\$2,750 63
			<hr/>

WATKINS GLEN STATE RESERVATION.

Grading Entrance Grounds.

The Watkins Glen State Reservation, embracing 103.3 acres at the head of Seneca lake, is by law in the custody of this Society.

During the past year the entrance grounds have been graded from the Main street sidewalk in the village of Watkins westward to the tunnel stairs at the beginning of the Glen proper, being 1,200 feet long and from sixty to 250 feet wide. The grade starts from three inches below the top of the sidewalk on Main street and ends three inches below first step on the tunnel stairs. The drainage is to the south, so that when the retaining wall is completed, the grade will be to the top of the wall and the surface water will go into Glen creek. This gives the entrance grounds a gradual rise of one foot to the hundred, from the street to the stairs and from pavilion to retaining wall. To get this grade, cuts were made to a depth of three feet, all surplus dirt being used in low places.

At the entrance there are about one hundred yards of loam, to be used in reforesting the grounds. Trees for that purpose have been obtained from the State Forest Commission.

Pavilion at Entrance.

The pavilion at the entrance to the reservation has been completed. It is located on the north side of the entrance grounds, about one hundred feet from the street sidewalk. It is made with washed surface on the exterior, showing the aggregate used. It has cement floors, graded to drain to the exterior; a cement sidewalk, five feet wide, around the outside; and reinforced concrete seats, inside and out. It contains ladies' and gentlemen's toilet rooms and a caretaker's office. Dykerhoof cement was used in the constructions of the building, to give a color to match the rock of the Glen. The interior of the main waiting space has a rough sand finish on the wainscot panel; the upper section being washed. The sides and the ceilings of the toilet rooms and caretaker's office are plastered with King's Windsor cement. On the exterior, above the base line, a panel of tile of the Hartford Faience, three feet

wide, was put in, surrounded with cement moulding. The roof is made of tile of the T-12 pattern, made by the Ludowice Celadon Company. All valleys were flashed with 14 ounce copper and under the roofing tile was placed felt roofing. The wood work of the office is finished in chestnut, show cases being on the east and west sides and a counter desk with drawers at the front. (See plate 3.)

Sentry Bridge Stairs.

The stairs at the south end of Sentry bridge are completed. They are a broad flight of concrete stairs, made from Dykerhoof cement, to correspond with the color of the Glen rock and Sentry bridge. Midway of the stairs is a curving lookout overlooking Entrance Cascade. The balcony is reinforced with three-quarter steel. The stairs have a concrete balustrade, thirty inches high and ten inches thick, with a washed face, and are built on solid rock. The material for these stairs, except the cement, was taken from the bed of the creek, sixty feet below, where it was mixed, then hoisted in buckets by horse power to the place where it was used. To take care of the surface water on the steps and platforms, two drainage pipes were placed, taking the water under the stairs to the edge of the rocks.

Stairs on Lower Path at Sylvan Rapids.

A flight of reinforced concrete flying stairs, with lookout on the center landing has been built on the lower path at Sylvan Rapids taking the place of the old wooden stairs. They have twelve-inch tread and seven-inch riser and are protected by the regular pipe guard rail. They have a washed surface for the purpose of allowing vines which have been set out beneath the stairs to cling to the face. The stairs are anchored with one inch steel rods, cemented in solid rock, connecting with the reinforcing irons running through the stairs. The aggregate and sand for these stairs were taken from the creek at the entrance to the Glen, three-quarters of a mile from the site of the stairs, drawn up the hill by a team to the cliff overlooking the point where the stairs were being built one hundred and twenty-five feet below in the gorge, and then lowered to the bed of the gorge. The lumber for the concrete forms, the cement, the iron pipe for railings, the stan-

dards, and the gravel were all lowered in a similar manner by hand tackle.

Rock Excavation at Glen Cathedral.

At Glen Cathedral rock excavation for a distance of about four hundred feet is under way. Commencing at the low point of the old path on the west, a flight of stairs has been cut out of the rock, leading to a tunnel thirty feet long, through and at the rear of Pulpit Rock, connecting with the path from the east. This is a path four feet wide, cut out of the face of the rock, thirty feet below the old path and forty feet above the bottom of the gorge. By the way of this new path there is twenty feet less climb, with short flights of stairs at each end, whereas by the old way the stairs were at one end. The path is so constructed that on the east one has an unobstructed view of the Cathedral from end to end and on passing through Pulpit Rock tunnel, the visitor comes to a landing giving a view of the falls, properly named Central Cascade, as it is half way through the Glen. By the old path, farther up on the cliff, very few visitors could see this fall, which is one of the best in the Glen.

Rainbow Falls.

At Rainbow Falls on the east end, the path has been extended to the east about one hundred and fifty feet to a point, where, in connecting with the path below, the stairs would be out of danger of freshets and falling ice from the cliffs above. Connecting these paths is a flight of concrete stairs, with lookout on the center landing. Below the stairs and to the east, a retaining wall eight feet high and fifty feet long has been built of reinforced concrete, faced with natural stone, tied into the solid rock by irons. At the west of the falls another flight of reinforced concrete stairs has been built, leading to an arched concrete bridge, spanning the gorge, connecting the path below and on the south side with the path above and on the north side. This bridge was raised four feet higher than the wooden one which it replaced, for the purpose of giving a view up and down the Glen. The aggregate and sand used in the above work were taken from the bed of the creek, up and down the gorge, hoisted up to the paths, then wheeled and

carried to the place where it was used. The lumber for the forms and cement were hauled from the village up through the cemetery and through the woods as far as possible, then carried to a point on the cliff, where they could be let down with ropes. At this point, the materials were let down to a shelf of rock sixty feet below where men were placed to relay it to the men on the path eighty feet still farther down, by whom they were carried to the place where used. (See plates 4 and 5.)

Pluto Falls and Whirlpool Gorge.

At a point 200 feet west of where the wooden stairs lead out of the Whirlpool Gorge, rock was excavated for a flight of stairs leading to the gorge. From this point east for 500 feet, a path four feet wide was excavated to a point where the stairs at Pluto Falls would connect with the path from Artist's Dream. In excavating this path, platforms had to be let down from the cliffs for the men to work on. Then, when the holes were drilled and loaded with dynamite, the men with the scaffolds were hauled up and the charges were exploded. Connecting Artist's Dream with Pluto Falls is a flight of concrete stairs. From Pluto Falls to the Whirlpool is a reinforced concrete bridge and leading from the gorge to the path above is a flight of concrete stairs. At the center landing of these stairs is a concrete lookout across the Glen, giving a view up and down the gorge.

Railings.

New iron railings have been erected from Glen Cathedral to Frowning Cliff, a distance of 800 feet, and from Artist's Dream to Glen Omega, a distance of 600 feet. All new railing installed is the regular Glen railing, consisting of iron standards forty-two inches high, set ten to twelve feet apart, cemented or bolted into the rock, with three lines of inch and a half wrought pipe. This completes the railing in the Glen from end to end, except at Glen Cathedral and Cavern Cascade, where improvements are under way.

Miscellaneous Improvements.

In the spring all that part of the Glen where rocks overhang the paths, bridges and stairs, was "scaled" of loose rocks, caused by

the freezing and thawing in the winter or by blasting for new work.

All wooden railings, stairs and bridges were repaired or built new, where the freshets washed them out.

Railings, some thirty thousand lineal feet, with standards were painted and all cement work erected in 1908 and 1909 was stained a natural color.

This work was completed and the Glen opened for visitors May 1st, or about one month earlier than it has been opened for visitors in the past.

A careful inspection of all the new work completed in the Glen since the State purchased the property, was made last fall and found to be as durable as when it was put in. All new concrete work completed this year has had a coloring mixed with the cement to give the work the color of the natural rock, except where Dykerhoof cement was used.

In the spring several pine and hemlock trees on the reservation died and upon taking the question up with the Department of Forestry at Cornell, we were informed that their death was caused by the drouths of 1908 and 1909. A few days after receiving this advice we had rains, after which very few trees died.

There have been three fires on the reservation in the past year, one of which burned over an area of ten acres. The fire was discovered about 6 p. m., and was put out by Glen employees with outside help about 11 p. m. It was caused by burning brush in the cemetery adjoining the Glen.

Number of Visitors.

It is estimated that there were 75,000 visitors to the Glen during the past year, a large increase over former years. With this number of people going through the Glen, with the new work under way, we have no knowledge of any visitor meeting with any accident, nor has the work interfered with visitors viewing all parts of the Glen.

Although the men employed on the reservation the past year have been working where dynamite was being almost daily used, some of them working from scaffolds twenty-five to seventy-five feet above the gorge, suspended by ropes from twenty-five to one

hundred and fifty feet from the cliffs above, or on a ledge of rocks, and in some places where the water drips on them, there has not been one serious accident.

Cavern Cascade.

One of the most important improvements yet to be made is at Cavern Cascade, at one of the most beautiful points in the Glen. The long stairway at this point has been a feature of the Glen since its opening to the public more than two score years ago, and before its construction a rude ladder was there in place, as a means for reaching the upper mill-dam of the pioneer days.

The Cavern Cascade is to be the location of the most remarkable artificial construction in Watkins Glen. The pathway now winds behind its falling waters, and this is to be widened and leveled up and extended into a tunnel in the northern cliff. This tunnel will have its entrance so hidden as not to mar in any measure the beauty of the scene, which will no longer be disfigured by the stairway. The tunnel will be cut into the living rock to a shaft of so large a diameter as to allow winding stairs and platforms of concrete four feet in width. This stairway, broken midway of its length by a resting place, will wind up to the pathway leading to Lookout Point upon the one hand and upon the other to the gorge beneath the Suspension Bridge. The treatment of this difficult problem at this point is one of the most ingenious and satisfactory solutions evolved by the Society's resourceful adviser, Prof. John V. Van Pelt. (See plate 6.)

Bids for Contract Work.

For the improvement at Cavern Cascade, the sum of \$1,500 was appropriated by chapter 513 of the Laws of 1910, in accordance with our estimate of the requirements. In order that we might be advised as to whether it was necessary to advertise for bids and have the work done by contract, we wrote to the State Comptroller as follows:

January 31, 1911.

HON. WILLIAM SOHMER, *Comptroller of the State of New York,*
Albany, N. Y.:

DEAR SIR.—In doing work on the Watkins Glen State Reservation to be paid out of State appropriations is it necessary to let the work by contract after advertising for and receiving com-

petitive bids? For instance we have to make some rock excavations and do some concrete work at Cavern Cascade amounting to a few hundred dollars and the question arises as to whether it is necessary to advertise for bids on State work. Will you kindly let us know what your rules are in regard to this and what the maximum amount is above which it is necessary to advertise for bids, and oblige

Yours very truly,

EDWARD HAGAMAN HALL,
Secretary.

In reply we received the following letter:

STATE OF NEW YORK, COMPTROLLER'S OFFICE.

ALBANY, February 2, 1911.

E. H. HALL, *Secretary, American Scenic and Historic Preservation Society, Tribune Building, New York City:*

DEAR SIR.—I beg to acknowledge the receipt of yours of the 31st ult., relative to State appropriations for Watkins Glen Reservation, and note your inquiry relative to advertising and receiving competitive bids for this work.

In reply I beg to advise you that there is no law which requires the advertising of bids of this character, but it has been the policy of the State where work of any magnitude is contemplated, that bids be invited by publication. In cases where the work was of a small amount, bids were invited by correspondence from people making a specialty of the line of work involved. In all cases, however, where contracts are made, the original contracts must be filed in this office, and all payments relating thereto must specify such relationship.

In case your Society should decide to advertise for bids in connection with this work, I desire to call your attention to Section 3317 of the Code of Civil Procedure, which fixes the rate allowed for printing. It has been the custom to send out the copy with instructions that the rate prescribed should govern, and if not satisfactory the copy should be returned.

I enclose herewith a slip showing these rates.

Very truly yours,

WM. SOHMER,
Comptroller.

The advice of the Comptroller agreed with the earlier advice of our counsel which was to the effect that advertising for bids was

not required by law but was advisable. Meanwhile, we had advertised for bids. Three were received, and amounted to \$3,790, \$4,325 and \$4,560 respectively. As all of the bids were greatly in excess of the available fund of \$1,500 they were rejected. We are advised by Prof. Van Pelt and by the superintendent that in their opinion the work can be done within our original estimate by days' labor under the direction of the superintendent and that they believe this to be a more economical method for work of this character than by contract after public advertisement.

Insurance of State Property.

In accordance with the custom of the State, the Society has taken out no policies of insurance upon the buildings in the Watkins Glen Reservation, the Stony Point Reservation, or Letchworth Park or upon the Manor Hall at Yonkers. This course has been in accordance with the advice of the State Comptroller, the Hon. Martin H. Glynn, given to us in 1907, soon after the purchase of the Watkins Glen property. On September 30, of that year, Col. Henry W. Sackett, chairman of our Watkins Glen Committee, wrote to the Comptroller stating that when the property was purchased by the State in 1906 there were outstanding upon the buildings on the premises policies of fire insurance amounting in all to \$16,800, and that these policies were outstanding at the date of Col. Sackett's letter and about to expire. He therefore asked the Comptroller's instructions as to renewing them. In reply the Society received the following letter:

STATE OF NEW YORK, COMPTROLLER'S OFFICE.

ALBANY, *October 5, 1907.*

COL. HENRY W. SACKETT, *Tribune Building, 154 Nassau street, New York City:*

DEAR SIR.—Your letter of the 30th ult., has come to hand. It has not been the policy of the State to insure its property, the State being its own insurer. There have been some instances where property has been insured, especially the Normal Schools, but the Legislature has rather prohibited on appropriations on Normal Schools the use of any of its money for insurance.

Yours very truly,

MARTIN H. GLYNN,
Comptroller.

Financial Statement.

Following is an account of receipts and disbursements on account of Watkins Glen from April 1, 1910 to April 1, 1911.

Chapter 466, Laws of 1908.

(Appropriation \$22,825).

DEBIT.

Received from State Treasurer, previously reported.....	\$19,022 33
May 23, 1910. Received from State Treasurer.....	810 06
May 25, 1910. Received from State Treasurer.....	1,157 50
Total received from State Treasurer.....	\$20,989 89
Received from sales, etc., previously reported.....	989 13
	<u>\$21,979 02</u>

CREDIT.

Disbursements previously reported.....	\$19,022 33
--	-------------

May 9, 1910.

Voucher.	
462-468. Labor	189 97
469. F. Hamilton, typewriting	5 00
470. F. N. Hurley, photographs.....	1 50
471-480. Labor	312 10
481. James P. Drake, lumber and nails.....	2 83
482. N. Y. Central Railroad.....	2 32
483. John V. Van Pelt, traveling expenses.....	29 28
484. Wadsworth, Howland & Co., cement stain.....	37 50
485. Woodward & Stouffer, hardware, plumber and helper...	122 35
486. Wadsworth, Howland & Co., cement stain.....	45 00
487. Woodward & Stouffer, plumber, helper and supplies....	18 80
488. Daniel Sullivan, labor	11 20
489. C. S. & C. H. Frost, iron standards.....	14 00
490. C. H. Frost, teaming	10 00
491. J. E. Frost, 2nd, postage, etc.....	4 51
492. Evans Banks, labor	3 70

May 17, 1910.

493. E. Hodgkins and George M. Miller, adms., plumbing at Entrance Pavilion	1,157 50
Total disbursements of State funds.....	\$20,989 89
Remitted to State Treasurer, previously reported....	988 80
Bank exchange, previously reported.....	33
	<u>\$21,979 02</u>

It will be seen by the foregoing that of the appropriation of \$22,825.00, only \$20,989.89 was expended. The unexpended balance of \$1,835.11 lapsed on May 22, 1910.

Chapter 433, Laws of 1909.

(Appropriation \$4,000).

DEBIT.

Received from State Treasurer, previously reported.....	\$1,247 74
April 28, 1910. Received from State Treasurer.....	166 65
May 23, 1910. Received from State Treasurer.....	166 65
July 7, 1910. Received from State Treasurer.....	175 15
July 16, 1910. Received from State Treasurer.....	166 65
Sept. 12, 1910. Received from State Treasurer.....	1,588 66
Dec. 2, 1910. Received from State Treasurer.....	378 05
Jan. 3, 1911. Received from State Treasurer.....	98 40
Feb. 4, 1911. Received from State Treasurer.....	12 05
	<hr/>
	\$4,000 00

CREDIT.

Disbursements previously reported.....	\$1,247 74
Voucher.	

April 7, 1910.

25-27. Superintendent and two caretakers, March.....	166 65
--	--------

May 9, 1910.

28-30. Superintendent and two caretakers, April.....	166 65
--	--------

June 9, 1910.

31-33. Superintendent and two caretakers, May.....	166 65
34. Stanley D. Brown, notarial services.....	8 50

July 9, 1910.

35-37. Superintendent and two caretakers, June.....	166 65
---	--------

August 13, 1910.

38-40. Superintendent and two caretakers, July 1-16.....	85 66
41. F. Hamilton, typewriting	3 00
42. Estate of Abel Hodgkins, Entrance Pavilion.....	1,500 00

November 14, 1910.

43. Charles H. Frost, teaming.....	56 00
44. F. Hamilton, typewriting	6 00
45-49. Teaming and labor	135 20
50. American-La France Fire Engine Co., extinguishers....	24 00
51. J. E. Frost, 2nd, express.....	11 90
52. Seneca Engineering Co., survey and map.....	44 70
53. Stanley D. Brown, notarial services.....	21 25
54. Henry W. Sackett, traveling expenses.....	39 00
55. Frank F. Knapp, teaming.....	40 00

December 12, 1910.

56. Charles H. Frost, teaming.....	27 00
57. F. Hamilton, typewriting	5 00
58. Emma W. King, executrix, teaming.....	20 00
59. Frank F. Knapp, teaming	8 00
60. William McIntyre, labor	38 40

January 12, 1911.

61. D. F. Thompson, loam.....	12 05
-------------------------------	-------

 \$4,000 00

Chapter 513, Laws of 1910.

(Appropriation \$16,640 and reappropriation \$1,825.90).

DEBIT.

Sept.	12, 1910.	Received from State Treasurer.....	\$525 94
Oct.	7, 1910.	Received from State Treasurer.....	1,399 78
Oct.	27, 1910.	Received from State Treasurer.....	1,238 70
Dec.	2, 1910.	Received from State Treasurer.....	1,326 16
Jan.	3, 1911.	Received from State Treasurer.....	2,004 19
Feb.	4, 1911.	Received from State Treasurer.....	805 00
Feb.	20, 1911.	Received from State Treasurer.....	379 98
March	17, 1911.	Received from State Treasurer.....	106 71
			<hr/>
			\$7,786 46
			<hr/>

CREDIT.

August 13, 1910.

Voucher.			
1-3.	Superintendent and two caretakers, July 16-31.....	\$80 99	
4-20.	Labor and teaming.....	407 40	
21.	Woodward & Stouffer, dynamite, hardware, cement....	37 55	

September 15, 1910.

22-24.	Superintendent and two caretakers, August.....	166 65	
25-34.	Labor and teaming	317 67	
35.	Emma Hodgkins and Geo. M. Miller, Adms., gravel, etc.	6 50	
36-48.	Labor and teaming.....	552 90	
49.	C. S. & C. H. Frost, posts and hardware.....	197 25	
50.	Woodward & Stouffer, dynamite, hardware, plumber, helper	158 81	

October 10, 1910.

51-53.	Superintendent and two caretakers, September.....	166 65	
54-76.	Labor and teaming	765 58	
77.	James P. Drake, cement, lumber, etc.....	165 44	
78.	Woodward & Stouffer, plumber, helper, hardware, etc..	141 03	

November 14, 1910.

79-81.	Superintendent and two caretakers, October.....	166 65	
82-85.	Labor and teaming	206 55	
86.	Woodward & Stouffer, hardware, etc.....	24 76	
87-99.	Labor	575 69	
100.	James P. Drake, lumber, cement, etc.	220 19	
101.	Water and sewer commissioners, water April 1 to November 1, 1910	20 00	
102.	C. S. and C. H. Frost, railing posts, etc.....	49 73	
103.	Christopher Grant, plumber, supplies, etc.....	43 59	
104.	Frank F. Knapp, sprinkling, season 1910.....	15 00	
105.	Watkins Coal & Ice Co.....	4 00	

December 12, 1910.

106-107.	Superintendent and one caretaker, November.....	124 99	
108-123.	Labor	657 01	
124.	James P. Drake, nails, lumber, cement.....	73 70	
125.	C. S. & C. H. Frost, tools.....	1 35	
126.	Estate of Abel Hodgkins, Entrance Pavilion.....	978 40	
127.	Woodward & Stouffer, hardware, twine, paint, etc.....	49 34	
128.	John V. Van Pelt, services and expenses.....	119 40	

Carried forward	\$6,494 77
-----------------------	------------

Brought forward		\$6,494 77
January 12, 1911.		
129.	S. B. Brown, caretaker, November and December, 1910..	83 32
130.	J. E. Frost, 2nd, superintendent, December.....	83 33
131.	Estate Jacob Mills, caretaker, December 1-13.....	16 13
132.	Evans Banks, labor	27 40
133.	Stanley D. Brown, notarial services.....	17 00
134.	Frank Clark, dynamite.....	53 25
135.	Charles H. Frost, teaming.....	8 00
136.	J. E. Frost, 2nd, petty disbursements.....	4 77
137.	John Gray, labor.....	4 00
138.	F. Hamilton, typewriting.....	5 00
139-149.	Labor	442 45
150.	D. F. Thompson, loam.....	9 55
151.	Woodward & Stouffer, dynamite, etc.....	50 80
February 10, 1911.		
152.	J. E. Frost, 2nd, superintendent, January.....	83 33
153.	John V. Van Pelt, services and expenses.....	296 65
March 7, 1911.		
154.	J. E. Frost, 2nd, superintendent, February.....	83 33
155.	John Gray, labor	6 40
156-161.	Advertising	16 98
		<hr/>
		\$7,786 46
		<hr/>

LETCHWORTH PARK.

Death of Hon. William Pryor Letchworth.

It is with deep sorrow that we record the death of William Pryor Letchworth, LL. D., the donor of Letchworth Park to the State of New York. Mr. Letchworth was born in Brownsville, Jefferson county, N. Y., May 26, 1823. He died at his home in Letchworth Park on Thursday evening, December 1, 1910, about 7 o'clock. An extended account of his long career of philanthropy will be found in the Twelfth Annual Report of this Society to the Legislature of 1907, together with a description of the beautiful estate of 1,000 acres on the Genesee river, embracing the famous Portage Falls and Gorge, which he gave to the State for a public park. Although Mr. Letchworth had been in poor health for a long time, his death came unexpectedly after a day devoted to philanthropic concerns and correspondence. It was characteristic of him that on his very last day, he should have been devoting his attention to the formation of an organization for the protection of young people seeking employment. He had recently seen an advertisement in a neighboring newspaper offering inducements to boys and girls to leave their homes to earn money, and the circumstances of the advertisement led Mr. Letchworth to think that

it was not designed to promote the welfare of young people. He had therefore begun to formulate a plan to safeguard young people from improper allurements, and on the day of his death had penciled a memorandum with these words:

The Protective League.

For the Benefit of Young Persons Seeking Employment.

Officers, a President and Secretary.

Membership subject to the unanimous approval of a Membership Committee of three members.

Mr. Letchworth's long life was a benediction to his generation, and many thousands of persons — epileptics, insane, and other unfortunates — have been benefited by the years of patient and self-sacrificing devotion given by him to the amelioration of their condition. The sentiments of a typical institution representing this phase of Mr. Letchworth's philanthropic work are expressed by the following resolution passed by the board of managers of the Craig Colony for Epileptics at a meeting held at Sonyea, N. Y., December 13, 1910:

"WHEREAS, We have learned with deep regret of the death of Hon. William Pryor Letchworth, be it therefore

"*Resolved*, That while we extend our sympathy to his family in their bereavement, we desire also to record our testimony as to his largeness of heart, abundant charity and his great love for all God's creatures, particularly the orphaned, the sick and the defective. His personal qualities were of the highest order; his life was an inspiration not only to all those who knew him personally but to that wider circle who were acquainted with him through the press and by reputation. His efforts toward securing the establishment of the Craig Colony for Epileptics were most effective and persistent; his later interest in its development, continuing to the very last, was most helpful and enthusiastic. The nation and the State, by his decease, have lost a great and notable worker in the cause of suffering and dependent humanity."

On December 14, 1910, the board of managers of Letchworth Village adopted the following minute:

"By the death of William Pryor Letchworth, LL.D., at his home, 'Glen Iris,' on December first, nineteen hundred and ten, in his eighty-eighth year, the State loses one of its most prominent

public-spirited citizens, and Letchworth Village loses the kindly counsel and constant interest of the man for whom it is named. His personality and the ideals for which he stood make it incumbent upon the State to develop at the Village an institution worthy of him and of the high type of care and training for which he labored long and effectively. His death came after a life of great usefulness, leaving his name and example as a possession of increasing value in forming ideals and setting standards for accomplishment which will keep Letchworth Village steadily abreast of the times."

A funeral service was held in Mr. Letchworth's home at Glen Iris, in Letchworth Park, on Sunday afternoon, December 4, the Rev. Louis A. Peirson, pastor of the Presbyterian Church of Castile, officiating. On Monday, the 5th, the body was taken to Buffalo, the pall bearers being Mr. George H. Bush, Hon. Mortimer N. Cole, Mr. Miles A. Hopkins, Mr. Fred Norris, Hon. Henry A. Pierce and Mr. Silas L. Strivings. At Buffalo, the body was taken to the residence of Mr. Letchworth's brother Josiah at No. 176 Summer street. At two o'clock on Tuesday afternoon, December 6, funeral services were held in the First Presbyterian Church. The pastor, the Rev. Dr. A. V. V. Raymond, officiated. He was assisted by the Rev. Dr. S. S. Mitchell, formerly pastor of the church, and by the Rev. W. R. Boynton. The interment was in Forest Lawn Cemetery. The honorary bearers were Messrs. S. M. Clement, Charles M. Dow, Robert L. Fryer, William H. Gratawick, Edward Hagaman Hall, Frank M. Hollister, James N. Johnston, Franklin D. Locke, George B. Matthews, Roswell Park, Henry A. Pierce, T. Guilford Smith and William Rhinelandier Stewart. The active bearers were Messrs. William C. Letchworth, Pierre E. Letchworth, Geoffrey J. Letchworth, Edward H. Letchworth, Charles R. Wilson, George P. Warner, George Stickney, Byron Reed and W. G. Barney.

Mr. Letchworth's Will.

On the evening of Sunday, December 4, 1910, after the service at Glen Iris, Mr. Henry R. Howland of Buffalo, custodian of Mr. Letchworth's will, broke the seal of the envelope containing the document and read it in the presence of relatives and a representa-

tive of this Society. At the time of the funeral, Mr. Ogden P. Letchworth, who is named in the will as executor, was abroad. Upon his return to this country, he found it impossible to act as executor, and upon application duly made to the surrogate of Wyoming county at Warsaw, N. Y., Mr. Howland was on March 7, 1911, appointed administrator with the will annexed. The text of the will is as follows:

I. William Pryor Letchworth, hereby revoking my previous will, do make this my last will and testament, namely:

First.—I direct that my executor pay my funeral expenses and all my lawful debts, and also pay for such a marker over my last resting place as my dear brother Josiah in his kindness shall direct.

Second.—I bequeath to the following persons as follows, namely:

To Mrs. D. J. Stickney, daughter of my eldest sister, Eliza, five hundred dollars (\$500).

To Mrs. Newton L. Reed, daughter of my youngest sister, Charlotte, one thousand dollars (\$1,000).

To Mrs. Charles Sumner Hoyt, daughter of my youngest sister, Charlotte, two thousand dollars (\$2,000).

To Susan Pearl Darling, granddaughter of my brother, Edward, twenty-one hundred dollars (\$2,100).

To my cousin, Henry R. Howland, whose interest in historic subjects relating to Glen Iris I warmly appreciate, one thousand dollars (\$1,000).

To my warm friend and wise counselor through many years James N. Johnston, one thousand dollars (\$1,000). Should Mr. Johnston have passed away at the time of my decease, I bequeath this sum to his sister, Margaret.

To my faithful friend, Edward F. Walsh, two hundred and fifty dollars (\$250).

To Miss Caroline Bishop, who has been my faithful secretary for nearly a quarter of a century, twenty-nine hundred dollars (\$2,900).

To Miss Marion G. Weatherston, a skillful graduate nurse who has ministered to my welfare for several years past, two hundred and fifty dollars (\$250).

To the following named persons who were in my employ at least a portion of the year 1906, I bequeath as follows, namely:

To Miss Mary J. Blood, my stenographer, one hundred dollars (\$100).

To Mrs. M. P. Annabel, fifty dollars (\$50).

To Miss Kate E. Nusbickel, fifty dollars (\$50).

To Miss L. Grace Nusbickel, fifty dollars (\$50).

To Miss Rose A. Ryan, fifty dollars (\$50).

To Mr. Fred Wilson, fifty dollars (\$50).

To Mr. Adelbert E. Ludwig, fifty dollars (\$50).

To Mr. Joseph Buebendorf, fifty dollars (\$50).

To Mr. Michael Langen of Portageville, fifty dollars (\$50).

To Mr. James Dumbleton, fifty dollars (\$50).

To Mr. Herbert L. Weidright and wife, fifty dollars (\$50).

To Andrew Swyers and wife, fifty dollars (\$50).

Third.—For the benefit of a few of the great number of charitable organizations and public institutions in which I feel a deep interest, I bequeath as follows:

To the Buffalo General Hospital, one thousand dollars (\$1,000).

To the Buffalo Hospital of the Sisters of Charity, one thousand dollars (\$1,000).

To the Home for the Friendless, five hundred dollars (\$500).

To Mrs. William C. Letchworth the sum of five hundred dollars (\$500) to be dispensed by her for the benefit of the Women's Educational and Industrial Union.

To Mother Mary Ann Burke, of the order of the Sisters of Saint Joseph, to be dispensed in her judgment for the comfort of the aged sisters of Saint Joseph, five hundred dollars (\$500).

To the Buffalo Fine Arts Academy, one thousand dollars (\$1,000).

To the Buffalo Historical Society, one thousand dollars (\$1,000).

To the Buffalo Society of Natural Sciences, five hundred dollars (\$500).

To the Charity Organization Society of Buffalo, five hundred dollars (\$500).

To the Queen City Society for the Prevention of Cruelty to Children, five hundred dollars (\$500).

To the Buffalo Children's Aid Society, five hundred dollars (\$500).

To the Working Boy's Home of the Sacred Heart, five hundred dollars (\$500).

Fourth.—I request that my executor set apart the sum of six thousand dollars (\$6,000), and all my private letters, papers,

memoranda, and books, to be used in whole or in part, as his judgment may direct, for compiling, editing, putting in type and binding, such material relating to my life and work as may be thought worthy of preservation, or of benefit to workers in the field of social science. I prefer that this work be done under the direction of Mr. Joseph N. Larned, whose distinguished ability and large experience in literary work eminently fit him for the performance of such a task.

Fifth.—I hereby bequeath to the *American Scenic and Historic Preservation Society* all the residue of my property. I desire in particular that all objects of historic interest upon the Council House grounds, all my household furniture, pictures, books, and objects of interest, and all my live stock, farming implements, and other property, be used by said Society so far as practicable, in order to preserve, care for, develop, and make more attractive, Letchworth Park.

Sixth.—It is my hope that the interior aspects of my present home be as little changed as possible, and that my oil paintings, pictures, souvenirs, objects of art, musical instruments, and household furniture and furnishings be retained for use and ornament in my home; and that my library, with the exception of books, papers and documents relating to my life or charities and my charity work, be retained in my present home. I desire that such books and papers relating to charity work be eventually kept in a fire-proof building on the Council House grounds. Should Miss Caroline Bishop become Superintendent of Letchworth Park, as is my wish, because of her experience and capacity, I should like her to occupy my home.

Seventh.—In consideration of the great confidence I have in the ability and integrity of my nephew, Ogden P. Letchworth, I hereby nominate him to be executor and trustee of this my last will and testament, giving unto him full power to do all necessary acts to execute this will and testament.

Witness my hand and seal this fifteenth day of February, nineteen hundred and seven.

WILLIAM PRYOR LETCHWORTH. (L. s.)

We, whose names are hereto subscribed, do certify, that on the fifteenth day of February, nineteen hundred and seven, the testator subscribed his name to this instrument in our presence and in the presence of each of us, and at the same time, in our presence and hearing, declared the same to be his last will and testament, and

requested us, and each of us, to sign our names thereto as witnesses to the execution thereof, which we hereby do in the presence of the testator and of each other, on the said date, and write opposite our names our respective places of residence.

CHARLES P. NORTON, residing at Buffalo, N. Y.

WILLIAM M. WHEELER, residing at Buffalo, N. Y.

Farm Leases.

Upon the termination of Mr. Letchworth's life tenancy on December 1, 1910, the American Scenic and Historic Preservation Society, by the terms of chapter 1 of the Laws of 1907, became custodian of Letchworth Park and assumed charge of the real estate; but owing to the fact that Mr. Letchworth's personal estate has not yet been settled, the Society deemed it advisable to extend for one year from March 1, 1911, the farm leases of Andrew Swyers and Herbert L. Weidright, at rentals of \$575 and \$260 respectively, payable one-half in money and one-half in labor.

Proposed Arboretum.

Until Mr. Letchworth's estate is settled, the Society will not be able to formulate definitely its plans for the future administration of the park.

It is contemplating, however, making an arboretum an important feature of the park. At the regular meeting of the board of trustees on December 28, 1910, the Hon. Charles M. Dow, chairman of our Letchworth Park Committee, referred to this subject in the following words:

"It will be recalled by the members of the Letchworth Park Committee that at an early conference with Dr. Letchworth the project of establishment an arboretum at Letchworth Park was discussed in an indefinite way and that a proposition for something of that kind was regarded as one of the possible outcomes of his gift. This conference was before it had been determined that the gift should be to the State of New York and not to our Society directly. Since that time I have had several conversations with Mr. Letchworth on the subject and have been led to make personal visits to some of the great arboretums of the world, notably that at Buitenzorg, Java, Singapore and Penang on the Strait settlements, and at Hong Kong, all tropical gardens and arboretums;

also the Kow Gardens in England, and a few days ago, the Arnold Arboretum at Harvard, where I had a very satisfactory interview with Prof. C. S. Sargent, the director, touching directly on our possible activities at Letchworth Park.

"I believe that the Arboretums above described are the principal ones in the world. The location of the Kew Gardens, with its poor soil and the smoke conditions, makes the work there unsatisfactory. Aside from that there are some small collections in England and on the continent.

"In this country the Arboretum connected with the Rochester Park system stands second to the Arnold, they having the second best collection of trees in America, and after that there is nothing of importance.

"Through my observation I believe it to be entirely practical and desirable for us to establish either a New York State or a General Arboretum, at Letchworth Park, the soil and other conditions there being very favorable. Western New York is recognized as one of the best tree sections of the United States.

"In the event of our establishing a New York State collection (that is, trees and shrubs that grow naturally in the State of New York) we would have the only collection of its kind where it is possible to study the trees and shrubs of New York growing together, planted under a systematic botanical arrangement, in order to facilitate their study and comparison. It would not be difficult or expensive to establish and maintain such a collection, as the number of these trees is not very large.

"If a General Arboretum, the purpose would be to have the principal timber trees likely to be hardy in New York and going to be really valuable here. They should be planted in forests of such trees, in masses of not less than ten to fifteen acres. For instance, our beeches, the European beech, and the Japanese beech could be planted side by side in such a group. Such an experiment in sylviculture has never been made in this country in any comprehensive way, and the results in view of such an experiment cannot fail to be of great value in influencing the future composition of the forests which must be planted in the northern states. The expense of either of these two enterprises need not necessarily be great—say \$10,000 a year and ten years will practically accomplish the foundation work; after that, only care and maintenance.

"The value of the work would be great in twenty years; and in one hundred years will have been shown to be tremendous, it

having proved the best forest material and the most valuable trees for practical and economic use and scientific study.

"In connection with the scientific study it would seem that it might be better that we be not connected with any educational institution or other State authority, but that the Arboretum be open to all students."

Cornplanter Medal Awarded to Mr. Letchworth.

On pages 106-109 of our thirteenth annual report (1908) we gave an account of the Cornplanter Medal for Iroquois Research founded by Prof. Frederick Starr of Chicago University in 1904. This administration of this medal is in the hands of the Cayuga County Historical Society at Auburn, N. Y. The medal is awarded biennially to a person selected from one of four classes, namely: (a) Ethnologists making worthy field studies or other investigations concerning the Iroquois Indian; (b) historians making actual contributions to knowledge about the Iroquois; (c) artists worthily representing Iroquois life or types by brush or chisel; and (d) philanthropists whose efforts are based upon advanced scientific study and appreciation of Iroquois conditions or needs. In 1904 the medal was awarded to Gen. John S. Clark of Auburn, N. Y.; in 1906 to Rev. William M. Beauchamp, S. T. D., of Syracuse, N. Y.; in 1908 to Hon. David Boyle, Ph. B. of Toronto, Canada; and in 1910 to Hon. William Pryor Letchworth, LL. D.

Prof. Starr gives the following reasons why the medal was awarded to Dr. Letchworth:

"For years he has been interested in the history and condition of the Iroquois * * * especially the Senecas. When the old Council House of Caneadea was in danger of destruction, he had the old timbers carefully removed and the edifice exactly reconstructed upon his property just back of the 'Glen Iris' residence. The occasion was a notable one. The master of ceremonies was a Cornplanter, grandson of the Chief Cornplanter, whose profile appears on our medal. Mr. Letchworth's great uncle, Rev. John Letchworth, more than once came in contact with the famous chief during his missionary wanderings. The Council was interesting, not only as the last Indian Council in the Genesee Valley and in its being held in the historic building, but also as bringing about

a renewal of relations between long estranged representatives of the Mohawk and Seneca tribes. When the gravestone of Mary Jemison, 'the white woman of the Genesee,' was in danger of demolition, Mr. Letchworth had it removed to 'Glen Iris' and reset, * * * a new monument with appropriate inscription being erected at the same time. It is needless here to recall the interesting and romantic story of Mary Jemison and her connection with the Iroquois. All that has passed into well-known history. Upon the grounds of 'Glen Iris' and transferred with the rest of the property to the State is a small museum building for interesting objects connected with Indian and pioneer history. A descriptive pamphlet of this museum has been written by Mr. Henry R. Howland of Buffalo. It shows the care that Mr. Letchworth has taken to secure and preserve valuable materials that would otherwise be lost. For these three acts and for many lesser kindnesses Mr. Letchworth has deserved and gained the love and esteem of the Iroquois Indians and of their friends. Those have bestowed upon him the Indian name Hai-wa-ye-is-tah, 'the man who always does the right thing;' these award the Cornplanter medal in recognition of his interest in and service to the Iroquois."

Mary Jemison Statute Unveiled.

A few weeks before he died, Mr. Letchworth was very happy in the consummation of a project which he had entertained for the past thirty-six years for the erection of a statue of Mary Jemison, the "White Woman of the Genesee," at her grave in the Council House grounds in Letchworth Park. On September 19, 1910, the seventy-seventh anniversary of the death of the heroic woman, a beautiful bronze statue of her — the work of the sculptor Mr. H. K. Bush-Brown of Washington and the gift of Mr. Letchworth — was dedicated in the presence of the donor and a large gathering of people. A full account of the proceedings is given in Appendix A of this report. (See plates 7, 8 and 9.)

Portage Dam Project Opposed.

On February 2 and 3, 1911, the representatives of this Society and friends of Letchworth Park appeared before the State Water Supply Commission at a public hearing held in the City Hall, in Rochester, N. Y. The hearing was upon the

application of the supervisors of Monroe county and others for the regulation of the Genesee river. These representatives included Adelbert Moot, Esq. of Buffalo, who had been the personal counsel of Mr. Letchworth and who drew up for him the deed by which he gave Letchworth Park to the State; Mr. Henry R. Howland of Buffalo, a cousin of Mr. Letchworth, who was also intimately acquainted with Mr. Letchworth's purposes in giving Letchworth Park to the State; the Hon. Charles M. Dow of Jamestown, N. Y., chairman of our Letchworth Park Committee; Mr. Edward Hagaman Hall, secretary of the Society; Amadeus W. Grabau, Sc. D., professor of Palentology at Columbia University, who is personally familiar with the geology of the Portage region; Dr. Mary T. Greene of Castile, N. Y., and Miss Isabel Howland of Sherwood, N. Y., members of the Society, the latter a niece of Mr. Letchworth; Mrs. Charles S. Hoyt of Auburn, N. Y., a niece of Mr. Letchworth; Miss Guernsey, and others interested in the protection of the park. At the request of this Society, the Hon. Thomas Carmody, attorney-general, requested the Hon. Henry Selden Bacon of Rochester, second deputy attorney-general, to represent the State's interests in Letchworth Park. The session of February 2 and 3 was mainly occupied with hearing witnesses in behalf of the petitioners, who were cross-examined by Mr. Moot and Mr. Bacon. At this session, however, opportunity was given to Dr. Grabau to testify as to the geological instability of the hills composed of glacial drift which would form the northern boundary of the proposed Portage reservoir. Adjournment was then taken until February 16, at the same place, at which time our representatives were present; but the hearing was adjourned pursuant to an arrangement of which we had no notice, on account of the sudden illness of Deputy Attorney-General Bacon. On March 2 and 3, the hearing was continued and concluded at the same place, Mr. Moot, Mr. Bacon and Dr. Greene being present in person, and Mr. Dow and Mr. Hall filing their written remonstrances with the commission.

The Plans Under Consideration.

These hearings were held for the purpose of listening to expressions of opinion concerning the plans of the State Water Supply

Commission for the regulation of the Genesee river, technically upon the application of the supervisors of Monroe county. The plans under consideration provide for a masonry dam across the Genesee river about 2,000 feet up stream from the upper fall at Portage, at what is known as the "Rafter site." At this point, the property line of Letchworth Park runs through the middle of the river. The eastern end of the dam would therefore rest on Letchworth Park, and that portion of the park lying above the dam on the right bank of the river for a distance of about 2,200 feet would be flooded. Although the petition of the county of Monroe is based upon the allegation that the protection of the public health and safety requires the regulation of the flow of the river, and although the statute under which these proceedings were held authorizes the State Water Supply Commission to take cognizance only of considerations of public health and safety, yet as a matter of fact, the commission in its report to the Legislature of 1911, admits that "it is evident that the main object sought is water storage for power purposes." It has therefore planned for the construction of two reservoirs, one superimposed upon the other. The main reservoir upon the ground floor is for power development. When the surface of the water is 1,198 feet above sea level, it will impound 13,400,000 cubic feet of water and flood 7,465 acres or nearly twelve square miles. For the detention of flood waters, it is planned to provide what may be called a second-story reservoir above the first, by raising the dam nineteen feet to accommodate the storage of emergency water to a depth of fifteen feet additional. At this additional elevation, namely, at 1,213 feet above sea level, the reservoir is expected to impound 19,300,000,000 cubic feet of water, and cover an area of 8,950 acres or fourteen square miles. Owing to the limitation of the commission's authority, its plans stop at the building of the dam and reservoir, thus leaving to the Genesee River Company or to some other private corporation the usufruct of its labors in storing water for power purposes. As the past reports of the commission have contemplated the development of this power by means of a tunnel through which the water would be diverted from the Portage Falls and emptied into the river below the falls, we conclude that the water, by whomsoever utilized, will be so diverted.

Violation of a Contractual Relation.

At the hearings at Rochester, we opposed the location of the dam at Portage on various grounds. Our first contention is that it will impair the value of Letchworth Park and violate the contractual relation which the State entered into when it accepted Mr. Letchworth's gift.

By chapter 1 of the Laws of 1907, the State of New York accepted title to Letchworth Park upon the terms and conditions stated in the deed of gift, "namely, that the land therein conveyed shall be forever dedicated to the purpose of a public park or reservation." The most notable feature of the property are the three Portage Falls and three miles of the remarkable gorge — the falls ranking in natural beauty second only to Niagara Falls in this State and the gorge being famous throughout the scientific world as presenting the remarkable geological exposures which give name to the Portage group. The preservation of the falls and their surroundings was one of Mr. Letchworth's prime objects in acquiring the property originally and in giving it to the State eventually. At the time of his gift, he was aware of the designs of private enterprise to build a dam and reservoir above the falls and divert the water therefrom; and one of his objects in giving the property to the State was to protect it against such a fate. That this was perfectly understood by the Legislature and by the people whom it represented, no one who followed the course of affairs in the Legislature of 1907, or who read the daily press from January to May, 1907, can have any doubt.

Diversion of Water Proposed.

The plan prepared by the State Water Supply Commission is the lineal descendant of the plan of the Genesee River Company. It contemplates a dam at the same site, covering substantially the same area, and designed for the same purpose. To utilize the dam for power purposes, the water must be diverted through a tunnel, around the three falls, and discharged into the river below Letchworth Park.

In order that we might form an intelligent opinion concerning the extent of this diversion and its effect upon the Portage Falls, we have recently sought from the State Water Supply Com-

mission information as to the proportion of the flow which might be taken around the falls for power development but are informed that the commission has no figures upon this question as "this does not enter into the present proposition in any way so far as this commission is concerned." This reply is disappointing as this question has entered conspicuously into the propositions of the commission in the past and is of such vital importance that it cannot be ignored now. The commission has kindly furnished us, at our request, with its most recent figures of cubic contents and depletion at various elevations, and the volume of regulated flow at dam, but the information supplied stops at the crucial question of what proportion of the flow it is proposed to divert. We are therefore compelled to fall back upon the latest information available in the commissioner's report of 1909. In that report, on page 307, it is stated:

"With provision made for a discharge of water at the dam for the maintenance of the flow of the river over the falls and through Letchworth Park, a guarantee may be given that none of the beauty of the Genesee Falls would be taken away. * * * The minimum 24-hour average quantity of water required for this purpose is * * * 50 cubic feet per second average throughout the year."

Fifty cubic feet per second is less than the lowest average monthly flow recorded in any published figures of the flow at Portage. It may be said that this figure was based on a regulated flow estimated in 1909 to be 750 cubic feet per second — 700 to be taken for power and fifty left for the falls — and that in 1911, by the illumination of newer data, the commission is able to estimate a regulated flow of 1,400 cubic feet and that therefore it is possible to let a proportionately increased amount, namely ninety-three cubic feet, pass over the falls. In answer to this we would say that in the exceptionally dry period of thirty months from June, 1894 to November, 1896, there was only one month, namely, September, 1895, when the mean monthly flow was as low as ninety-three cubic feet per second. (Rafter's Hydrology page 585.)

But we cannot see that the plans of the commission offer any assurance that this minimum flow, or half the minimum flow, or any flow at all over the falls will be maintained. As the situation

stands at this writing, the commission proposes to build a dam and reservoir and permit some corporation to step in and utilize the water, leaving to the charity of the corporation the amount to be doled out over the falls for scenic beauty.

It has frequently been stated in the public press that the proposed dam and reservoir will ensure the minimum flow over the falls and therefore add to their beauty. This, however, is a contradiction of terms. The falls already have their minimum flow and it is no addition to their beauty to ensure the least that they already have. That would be like saying to a man of variable monthly income that his financial condition would be improved by taking away from him all his income over and above the least that he has been known to earn. The commission recommends in its 1911 report that "any bill passed by the Legislature to authorize the building of the dam should contain specific provision for maintaining the flow of the river through the park at a volume well above the present minimum flow during the daylight hours and well into the evening, that is to say, at all times when the park is likely to contain visitors." Such meagre provision, however, would be poor compensation for the volume of water that passes over the falls naturally.

Water Now Used Beneficially.

Before speaking of the effects of this proposed diversion of water, we beg to call the Legislature's attention to the fact that the water flowing in its natural course over the Portage Falls is serving a beneficial use. On this point we cannot do better than refer to the opinion of Judge Robert E. Lewis of the United States Circuit Court for the District of Colorado sitting at Pueblo on October 3, 1910, in the case of the Cascade Town Co., complainant vs. The Empire Water and Power Co., et al., defendants. This opinion, including a recitation of the facts of the case, is given in full at pages 173-184 following.

Physical Injury to the Park.

In addition to the injury to the scenery of the park, we argue that the subtraction of the waters passing over the falls and through the gorge, and the consequent deprivation of spray and moisture

from the organic growths of the park, will seriously injure the park physically. The Hon. George W. Clinton, an expert botanist and son of Governor De Witt Clinton, has stated that he found at Glen Iris a greater variety of flora than in any other place of equal area in the State. This large variety of growth is due in large measure to the natural conditions produced by the falls and river.

The preservation of these natural conditions is essential not only to the conservation of existing growths but also to the execution of the important plan which we have in hand for the establishment in Letchworth Park of an arboretum and to which we have referred on a preceding page. We need no better authority for this than our trustee, Dr. Charles Sprague Sargent of Harvard University, director of the famous Arnold arboretum, who is personally familiar with conditions at Letchworth Park.

Dam Will Create Unsanitary Conditions.

Another objection to the proposed reservoir is the unsanitary conditions which it will create. From a table prepared by the State Water Supply Commission showing the areas flooded at different elevations of water level, it appears that at an elevation of 1,198 feet above sea level, the reservoir will cover an area of 7,465 acres or about twelve square miles. When drawn down to the level of 1,120 feet, only 905 acres will be covered with water and 6,560 acres or over ten square miles of slime covered bottom will be exposed, to give off its noxious exhalations and poison the surrounding atmosphere.

If the testimony given at the hearing before the commission on February 2 and 3 is to be credited, the dead animals and refuse which lodge on the flats near Mount Morris and produce the unwholesome conditions complained of come from above the Portage dam site. The proposed Portage reservoir would therefore be the cesspool into which these putrefying carcasses and other noxious materials would be collected, to be exposed upon the annual depletion of the reservoir to an extent as large as ten square miles.

In other words, so far as the unsanitary conditions complained of are concerned, the building of the Portage dam would simply shift them from one neighborhood to another.

It has been claimed in behalf of the Portage reservoir that the Croton water shed and reservoir from which the water supply of New York city is derived are a sufficient refutation of the argument that the Portage reservoir would be unsanitary. But it seems almost needless to say that the two cases are not parallel. The sanitary regulation of the Croton water shed is most rigid and the precautions against the defiling of the waters are most careful. Whereas the testimony before the Water Supply Commission shows that the discharge of organic matter into the Genesee river above Portage is unrestrained.

Danger of a Cataclysm.

Another objection to the Portage site is the danger of a cataclysm on account of the instability of the hill of glacial drift against which the impounded water will abut. Prof. Grabau of Columbia University has already testified very fully on this subject, both in our former reports and at the hearing in Rochester, and we need not repeat the argument here.

Legal Phases of the Situation.

At the Rochester hearings, Mr. Moot and Mr. Bacon brought out the legal phases of the situation and Mr. Moot made it clear, we believe, that the State could not indifferently violate the contractual relation into which it entered when it accepted Letchworth Park.

In one of the papers presented to the State Water Supply Commission in behalf of Letchworth Park, we ventured to remind the commission of its lack of jurisdiction to provide in its plans for anything beyond the public health and safety and the apparent inconsistency of the plans under consideration with respect to its jurisdiction. Although, by the act under which this proceeding is brought, the commission is authorized to provide only for the public health and safety, the commission is stretching that authority so far as to plan for the spending of millions of money for a dam and reservoir for the development of hydraulic-electric power, but it appears to be unable to stretch its power far enough to provide for the utilization of that provision under State control and in such a manner as to share the benefit with the people of

the whole State. We ventured to invite the commission's serious consideration of the unwisdom and peril of such a half-way course, in this period of growing public sentiment to the effect that our natural resources should be conserved for the benefit of all the people and not for the benefit of a few selfish corporations.

Alternative Solutions of Problem.

In conclusion, it may be said that two solutions of the problem present themselves. One of these, already suggested by the commission, will in no wise intrude upon or affect Letchworth Park. The other does not appear to have been suggested heretofore.

The first of these two alternative plans is to build a dam and reservoir with a capacity of six or seven billion cubic feet in the gorge between Letchworth Park and Mount Morris, which will be primarily for the regulation of the river. This the commission can do and remain strictly within its powers. It has already said in its report for 1910 (page 26) that such a dam will subserve all the purposes of public health and safety. Such a dam can be made to meet every complaint that was made at the hearing on February 2 and 3. It will in no way injure Letchworth Park. Enclosed within massive walls of natural rock it will be safe. With almost vertical sides, it will not be unsanitary. And from the standpoint of economy, it will be much cheaper than a reservoir of equal capacity at Portage. In the commission's report for 1910 (page 26), it says that the addition to the proposed power dam at Portage of nineteen feet for the purpose of flood control will cost only \$550,000 as compared with the cost of \$1,200,000 for a dam near Mount Morris. But as we intimated to the commission on February 3, this estimate of \$550,000 is predicated on first spending \$4,000,000 for the underlying power dam and is not a fair basis of comparison. It is fairer to compare other figures of the commission which show that while the dam and reservoir with a capacity of 6,000,000,000 cubic feet near Mount Morris will cost \$1,200,000 (report of 1910, page 26), the cost of a dam and reservoir of equal capacity on the ground floor at Portage would cost \$2,250,000 (report for 1909, page 297), a difference of over a million dollars in favor of the Mount Morris site.

There is another important point in regard to the Mount Morris

site. If a dam and reservoir should be built there, they would not interfere with or prevent the building of another dam and reservoir at Portage in the event — which we do not contemplate — that a dam at Portage should become an unavoidable public necessity twenty-five or fifty years hence. A dam at Portage is *not now* an unavoidable public necessity, and it seems to us that all the considerations of common sense dictate that as between two courses, one of which involves the gravest of complications and the other of which does not, the latter should be chosen.

The second alternative is a sequence of the first: A dam and reservoir near Mount Morris with a capacity of from six to seven billion cubic feet for stream regulation only can be made to develop a considerable amount of power at Mount Morris and Rochester, while being used as a flood control reservoir, or later it could be utilized for power purposes alone. If twenty-five or fifty years hence, the contingency should arise in which there should be an unavoidable necessity for more power from the Mount Morris reservoir, it is possible then to build at Portage a dam and reservoir of equal capacity for flood control only, leaving the Mount Morris reservoir for power purposes only. As the dam at Portage would be for flood control only, it would not be necessary thereby to divert the water from the Portage Falls. The dam would be unsightly and to that extent objectionable, but it would not deplete the falls. The practical result of such an arrangement would be two dams and reservoirs with a joint capacity of 13,000,000 cubic feet, one costing \$1,200,000 and the other costing \$2,250,000, or a total of \$3,450,000, against a cost of about \$4,000,000 for a single dam and reservoir of that capacity at Portage.

The Genesee River Company.

In our former reports we have referred to the Genesee River Company which for several years has had covetous eyes on the Portage dam site. The existence of this corporation further complicates the situation. At the hearing in Rochester on February 3, 1911, Mr. John F. Connor testified that the officers and principal owners of the company were as follows: President, Mr. John C. Winters of Mount Morris; vice-president, Mr. Wm. A. Boland of New York; treasurer, Mr. John M. Prophet of Mount

Morris. It appeared from the testimony that the Genesee River Company claimed the exclusive right to develop the power from the Portage dam and with thrifty foresight had secured options on the property where the development is expected to be made. If the claims of the company are valid — which is not conceded — it would appear to be in a position to derive the first benefit from the power dam proposed by the commission. There is a prospect, however, that the embarrassments caused by the existence of this corporation may be removed. The charter of the company requires that it shall expend before July 1, 1911, \$300,000 upon the actual work of construction of the dam and reservoir at Portage now proposed to be built by the State Water Supply Commission; and it appeared from the evidence given at the Rochester hearings that only a few thousand dollars had been spent for that purpose. This led Deputy Attorney-General Bacon to state at the hearing March 2, that as the date of the expiration of the charter approaches, and it becomes clear that the company will not have expended that sum in actual construction, it will be the duty of the Attorney-General to begin an action July 1 to annul the charter on the ground of non-compliance with its requirements.

PHILIPSE MANOR HALL.

Preparation of Plans for Restoration.

In 1908, as reported in our previous annual reports, the ancient Philipse Manor Hall in Yonkers, N. Y., was conveyed to the State of New York through the generosity of the late Mrs. William F. Cochran, the law providing that this Society should become custodian of the property for the State upon the vacation of the Manor Hall by the Yonkers city government which was using the building as a city hall.

During the past year, the municipal authorities have moved out of the Manor Hall which has been their home since 1868 into the new City Hall, having completed their evacuation in the month of May, 1911.

In anticipation of this event, our Manor Hall Committee (see page 12 preceding), engaged Mr. G. Howard Chamberlin, architect, to prepare plans for the restoration of the building as nearly

as practicable to its appearance in colonial times and for such arrangements as may be necessary for its better protection from fire. With a view to the latter end, it has been deemed advisable to provide for the residence of the caretaker and the installation of the heating apparatus in a detached building in the north-western corner of the grounds instead of in the Manor Hall as at present, the detached building to harmonize in appearance with the Manor Hall itself. The plans were therefore prepared for the necessary changes in the Manor Hall itself and for the erection of the detached building, and the city government gave us permission during the latter days of its occupancy, to proceed with such work as would not interfere with the municipal business still transacted in the building. It is estimated that the improvements will cost about \$14,000 or \$15,000 including the detached building.

Mr. Alexander S. Cochran's Gift.

Although we are asking the Legislature this year for \$2,750 for caretaker, laborers on the grounds, light, fuel, water, planting and sodding, and contingent expenses, we are happy to report that the means for the restoration of the building will be supplied by private generosity. Before Mrs. Cochran, who gave \$50,000 for the purchase of the Manor Hall, died she intimated her desire to contribute \$5,000 more toward the work of restoration. Her executors, therefore, have set aside that amount for that purpose and her son, Mr. Alexander S. Cochran, has offered to supply the additional money necessary to complete the improvements. In behalf of the people of the State of New York, to whom this historic monument now belongs, we desire to express the heartiest appreciation of Mr. Cochran's generosity. Gifts like these and like those mentioned on other pages of this report are eloquent testimony of the fact that the sentiment which has grown up in the State of New York and in the United States during the past twenty-five years in favor of the preservation of scenic and historic places is not an empty or selfish one. It is not a sentiment which expresses itself solely in appeals to the Legislature to appropriate public monies for the satisfaction of local pride. On the contrary, it is a sentiment based upon so firm a conviction of the civic value of these institutions that men and women are willing to give thou-

sands of dollars — in fact, in this State have actually given nearly \$2,500,000 — in order that famous landmarks and beautiful landscapes may become the possessions of the people at large for their enjoyment, their instruction, and their patriotic inspiration.

In view of the delay in the vacation of the building by the city government, we have deferred the printing on the Manor Hall book, for which Mr. Cochran has also generously offered to provide the means.

FORT BREWERTON STATE RESERVATION.

The State reservation of one acre at the foot of Oneida lake, which contains the earthworks of Fort Brewerton, erected during the French and Indian War, and which was by law committed to our custody, remains in the same condition in which it was at the time of its purchase in 1906.

TAPPAN MONUMENT PROPERTY.

The property at Tappan, N. Y., purchased by the Society in 1905, has required no attention during the past year. The monument erected by the late Cyrus W. Field to mark the site of the execution of Major Andre, the British spy, and the tablet erected by our Society commemorating the fortitude of Washington and his generals at that crisis in the War for Independence, continue to attract attention to the interesting history of that section of the State.

PUBLIC MEETINGS.

Fourth of July.

During the past year, the Society has been unusually active in arranging public meetings for historical, patriotic and scientific purposes.

With a view to establishing a more rational form of celebrating Independence Day in the city of New York, his honor the Mayor appointed a Citizens Committee to arrange for the commemoration of Fourth of July, 1910, and in view of the prominent part taken last year in the effort to save City Hall Park from diminution by the erection therein of a large court house, the committee accorded

to this Society the honor of taking charge of the ceremonies at their focal point, the City Hall. An account of the proceedings will be found in Appendix B.

Fort Number One Tablet.

On November 5, 1910, at the request of our fellow member, Mr. William C. Muschenheim, we took charge of the dedication of the tablet erected by him upon his house on Spuyten Duyvil hill in this city, to mark the site of Fort No. 1 of the Revolution. A description of these proceedings will be found in Appendix C. (See plates 10 and 11.)

Iroquois Indians.

During the past year the Society has had the honor of holding two public meetings in co-operation with the American Museum of Natural History, of which Professor Henry Fairfield Osborn is the distinguished president. The first of these was held in the large auditorium of the museum, in New York city, on the evening of December 14, 1910, at which Mr. Arthur C. Parker, archaeologist of the New York State Museum, spoke on the subject of "The Five Nations Confederacy: A Study of the Aboriginal Empire State."

In the Appendix A relating to the statue of Mary Jemison, the "White Woman of the Genesee," we have referred to Mr. Parker's personality. In speaking on the subject of the Iroquois he has the advantage not only of his training as an ethnologist and archaeologist but also of being partly of Indian descent. On account of his Indian ancestry he has been admitted into the intimate confidence of the survivors of the Five Nations and thus had opportunities for studying their history and understanding their traditions denied to others. His address, which was illustrated with stereopticon views, was therefore of unusual interest. In the audience were a number of persons with Indian blood in their veins.

Annual Meeting.

At the annual meeting of the Society in the National Arts Club, at No. 15 Gramercy Park, New York city, on January 10, 1911, several addresses of unusual value were delivered.

Chancellor Livingston.—In view of the great interest aroused by the recent Hudson-Fulton celebration in all that pertains to the history of the Hudson river and those who were identified with the application of steam to navigation, a paper on Chancellor Livingston and his family, by Mr. Joseph Livingston Delafield, was presented by title and ordered printed in our annual report.

We are greatly indebted to Mr. Delafield, who is a great grandson of the Chancellor, for permission to reproduce his paper in full in Appendix D.

Yucatan.—The first speaker of the evening was the Hon. Edward H. Thompson, who was United States Consul at Merida, Yucatan, from 1885 to 1893, and United States Consul at Progreso, Yucatan, from 1897 to 1909. Mr. Thompson, who is a native of Massachusetts but who owns property and spends most of his time in Yucatan, spoke of the Mayas, whose culture, as evidenced by their remarkable ruins and by their present condition, he has had exceptional opportunities to study. He said, in the course of his remarks:

“It is not generally known that within less than a week’s journey from New York are ruined structures of stone — pyramids, temples, and palaces — massive and grand, as interesting in their way as those of Egypt or Rome. Yucatan is the southernmost peninsula of North America and is reached from New York by a five days’ ride over the blue Gulf stream and the beautiful aqua-marine waters of the Mexican Gulf, with a day off at Havana, Cuba. Two thousand years ago, more or less, some scientists say more and others less, there came upon the peninsula of Yucatan a mysterious people — probably the first civilized Americans. Of all the archaeological problems of the Americans there are none so weirdly mysterious as that of Chichen Itzá, the once great capital of this ancient race. Seven massive structures still tower above the surrounding forest and hundreds of others lie prostrate, their carved stone fronts and fallen columns simply buried in the jungle tangle. The heart of these ancient American centres was ever the temple. The temple of this long silent city of Chichen Itzá crowns a pyramid covering nearly the space of a city square, and itself rests upon a man-made plain so broad and long and forest-covered as to seem to be more the work of nature than handiwork of man.” (See plate 59.)

Phytosaur at Fort Lee.—The second speaker was Mr. Jesse E. Hyde, of the Department of Geology of Columbia University, who spoke on the subject of the remarkable discovery by himself and companions of the fossilized remains of a phytosaur in the sandstone underlying the trap rock of the palisades at Fort Lee in 1910. Mr. Hyde has kindly furnished us with a summary of his address, which we give in Appendix E. (See plate 24.)

Manhattan Archaeology.—Mr. Reginald P. Bolton then spoke on the subject of archaeological research on Manhattan Island, illustrating his address with stereopticon views. Mr. Bolton is one of a very limited number of persons, possibly not exceeding half a dozen, who for many years past have systematically made excavations on Manhattan Island for the recovery of relics of the aboriginal, colonial and revolutionary periods. By word and picture he illustrated the technique of the methods pursued by himself, Mr. W. L. Calver and Dr. Edward Hagaman Hall, describing how the indications of an historic site are first detected, the mechanical processes of excavating and sifting the earth, the methods of recovering, restoring and preserving the relics found, and the work of plotting and mapping the sites. To those unfamiliar with these long continued field operations, Mr. Bolton's lecture was a revelation of the history which has been recovered by excavating on the unimproved lots on the northern end of Manhattan Island and the value of which is enhanced by the fact that the rapid advance of real estate improvements is rapidly reducing the area for these researches.

Regimental Buttons.—Mr. Bolton was followed by Mr. W. L. Calver of New York, who spoke on the subject of regimental buttons of the colonial and revolutionary periods. With the aid of the stereopticon, Mr. Calver illustrated the great variety of buttons in his collection, most of them found by himself in the ground where they were lost by the wearers while in military service a century or more ago. While he has not confined his field work to buttons—having made valuable discoveries of Indian and revolutionary relics—yet he has made a specialty of this subject and is one of the foremost if not the foremost "buttonist" in the United States. Mr. Calver's address was an interesting exposition of a branch of research so comparatively rare

that there is no word in the dictionaries to describe it or the man who pursues it. It approaches the art and science of numismatics, but as it does not relate to money or medals it cannot be so classified. The buttons recovered by Mr. Calver are in some respects even more specific evidences of history than coins; for coins may have been used by any one since the period of their manufacture, but buttons bearing the regimental number of a military organization are certain evidence of the presence of a distinct body of men. In fact, some of the military accoutrements found in association with the buttons indicate by name the actual wearer. Mr. Calver, by means of his buttons, has secured data of military movements in the seventeenth and eighteenth centuries of which there are no printed records.

Greeley Centennial.

On Friday, February 3, 1911, occurred the one hundredth anniversary of the birth of Horace Greeley. In December, the Society appointed a committee consisting of Col. Henry W. Sackett, Mr. Reginald P. Bolton, Mr. Herbert L. Bridgman, Mr. Francis Whiting Halsey, Hon. William B. Howland, George F. Kunz, Ph. D., Sc. D., Mr. Frederick S. Lamb, Henry M. Leipziger, Ph. D., LL. D., Mr. Albert Ulmann and Hon. Charles A. Spofford, to take such steps as might be advisable and practicable to have the anniversary appropriately observed. We therefore brought the matter to the attention of the superintendent of public schools in the city of New York, Dr. William H. Maxwell, the State Commissioner of Education of all the states, the public press, and Typographical Union No. 6 of New York city, and suggested that suitable recognition of the date be made.

In so doing, we expressed the belief that the study of the lives of men who in their generation have been an influence for good not only serves to familiarize our citizens with the various phases of our national development but also serves to promote good citizenship. Horace Greeley is by common consent acknowledged to have been one of America's great men. While a man of marked individuality, and representing aspects of American life quite distinct from those represented by others classed as national heroes, yet in fundamentals he represented qualities of citizenship

which it is desirable to hold up for admiration, encouragement and imitation. The penniless farm boy with only a common schooling, declaring at the age of six his purpose to become a printer; the apprenticed printer of fourteen; the wandering printer arriving in New York with his bundle of clothes on a stick over his shoulder and ten dollars in his pocket; rising to become acknowledged the first journalist of his time and candidate for the presidency of the United States, is an example to encourage every young American. His views on such great questions as temperance, human slavery, national unity, the restoration of political rights to the south, industrial organization and progress, scientific farming, irrigation and western colonization, exercised a potent influence in the affairs of the nation. His solicitude for the industrial and agricultural development of the south, no less than his famous advice to young men to "Go West" indicated the national breadth of his ideas and far-sighted statesmanship. In his extensive writings, his lectures, and the dissemination of knowledge by such innovations as the publication in his newspaper of reports of popular lectures by Agassiz, he took rank as one of the educators of his generation. We therefore felt that the occurrence of the Greeley centennial presented an opportunity which those who have to do with the moulding of our national character could profitably use. (See plate 12.)

Prior to the appointment of our committee, preparations were under way for an observance at Chappaqua, N. Y., which was Mr. Greeley's home for many years, and Typographical Union No. 6 had also taken steps for an observance in New York. The result of the combined movements was a very general recognition of the anniversary. In the public schools of New York under the superintendence of Dr. Maxwell, due notice was taken in various appropriate ways on the morning of February 3, 1911. At Chappaqua, formal exercises were held under local auspices. On Greeley's grave in Greenwood Cemetery, Brooklyn,* a wreath was placed with simple ceremonies under the auspices of the Society. On

* Mr. Greeley's grave is on Locust Hill, in section No. 35, lot No. 2,344, of Greenwood Cemetery, in the borough of Brooklyn, New York city. It is about 1,200 feet in a direct line from Fifth avenue and about 900 feet from Thirty-sixth street. It is reached by way of Spruce avenue and Oak avenue after entering the cemetery gate at Fifth avenue and Thirty-fourth street.

the following Sunday afternoon, a public meeting was held in the New York Theatre, on Broadway near Forty-fifth street, under the auspices of Typographical Union No. 6. The newspapers of the country also took very general notice of the anniversary, publishing extended articles about Greeley.

Among the many letters which were received in connection with this anniversary was the following from the Hon. Frederick W. Seward, Assistant Secretary of State and Acting Secretary of State of the United States during Lincoln's administration, which is of special interest, on account of both its source and matter:

(Coat of Arms).

ESSE QUAM VIDERE.

MONTROSE, N. Y., *January 14, 1911.*

GENTLEMEN.—My first memories of Horace Greeley are of a slender light-haired, near-sighted young man, rather eccentric in manner and appearance, who came to Albany by invitation of Thurlow Weed, to take charge of a new campaign journal, called *The Jeffersonian*. He was understood to be also the editor of the *New Yorker*, a literary weekly of limited circulation, but evincing ability and good taste. That may be said to be the opening of his political career. Long before the campaign was over, he showed that he had found his vocation. He was a zealous political and social reformer. An indomitable worker, a vigorous writer, he combined patriotic sense with a vein of philosophic humor, suggestive of the great printer, politician and philosopher, Franklin—to whom both Weed and Greeley looked as a prototype and example.

The Jeffersonian was followed by the *Log Cabin*, and that, in turn, became the precursor of the *Tribune*, and thereafter he had a permanent foothold in journalism. The years of the Anti-Slavery struggle gave him ample scope for his pen. Of course he had opponents and critics, but even these did not deny his zeal and sincerity. Impatient friends, who thought he ought not to be championing too many reforms at once, were met with the convincing response that what he advocated he believed in.

During that period he was a frequent visitor at the *Journal* office. On one occasion, when he had invited me to come to the

Tribune, he remarked, "Yes, Weed is building up a great power, but a metropolitan newspaper offers a wider field for a journalist." Meanwhile, the *Journal* grew in strength, the *Tribune* grew and prospered, and the slave power was marching blindly on to its inevitable end.

Now that the issues of that day have passed away, and its partizan and personal questions are by-gones, the world can judge impartially of the actors in the eventful times "before the War." Mr. Greeley will be remembered in history as one who strove to elevate the standard of journalism, to inculcate good citizenship, better government and broader patriotism. He loved to advise young men, and his counsel addressed to them recalls Wolsey's famous maxim, "Let all the ends thou aimest at, be they Country's, God's and Truth's."

Very sincerely yours,

FREDERICK W. SEWARD.

To Messrs. HENRY W. SACKETT, and others,

Committee.

Grand Canyon Physiography.

On Thursday evening, March 23, 1911, we held our last public meeting of the season, in co-operation with the American Museum of Natural History, in the museum's large auditorium. The speaker on this occasion was Prof. Douglas Wilson Johnson, assistant professor of physiography at Harvard University and an honorary member of this Society, who spoke upon the subject of "The Physical History of the Grand Canyon District." The lecture was illustrated with stereopticon views, most of which were from photographs taken by himself in a personal examination of the ground. (See plates 20, 21 and 22.)

After emphasizing the great importance of the Grand Canyon of the Colorado River as one of the most remarkable examples of American Scenery, the lecturer traced the boundaries of the Grand Canyon District with the aid of a map thrown on the screen. The most important events in the physical history of this District, from earliest geological time down to the present, were then presented to the audience by means of a series of diagrams projected upon the screen. The first diagram showed the character of the Grand Canyon District ages ago, when the region was

occupied by mountains of hard crystalline rocks. A later stage was represented by the next diagram, which showed the mountains worn down by long-continued erosion to a low-lying plain near the level of the sea. In the third diagram the level surface was depressed below sea level, and was being covered with marine deposits of sandstone, shales, and other sediments. Successive diagrams showed that these sea-bottom deposits were uplifted, with a tilt to the east, to form a new land area, which was in its turn worn down by the agents of erosion to form a second lowland of faint relief near sea level. This lowland also suffered a depression which allowed the sea to cover it and to deposit horizontal layers of sedimentary rock upon its even surface. After these deposits had been elevated by a broad uplift to form a land area, erosion began anew the task of washing the material into the sea once more.

During this stage of its history the District consisted of a series of terraces descending from west to east, for the last uplift, instead of being everywhere uniform in intensity, was of such a nature as to bend the crust of the earth into a succession of broad steps or platforms trending north and south and separated from each other by comparatively steep slopes where the rocks were bent up toward the west or down toward the east. Before the erosion of this period had proceeded far, there came a change in the direction of the internal forces of the earth, as a result of which the western members of the terraces were separated from each other by breaks or "faults" in the earth's crust which had a north-south direction, following the zones of earlier bending. The western terraces were dropped downward so as to form a new "giant stair-way" with the lowest step at the western border of the District, while steep rugged fault cliffs led from the eastern margin of each step upward to the step next above.

Long continued erosion destroyed the southern portion of these step-plateaus, washing away the fault-cliffs and the rocks in which they had been formed until the whole southern part of the Grand Canyon District became a low-lying plain, except where a layer of unusually hard rock maintained one of the plateau areas at a higher level. In the north, however, the erosion was less complete, and rock layers which were entirely swept away in the

south here remained to form high and irregular cliffs having in general an east-west trend. Volcanoes broke out both in the north and in the south of the district, and in the south particularly extensive lava flows spread far and wide over portions of the level erosion plain.

The next event of importance was a new uplift, which permitted the streams flowing over the erosion plain to entrench themselves. It was at this time that the Grand Canyon was carved, and so recent was this uplift that the Colorado River is still busily engaged in cutting its way down to the new sea level. At the same time erosion has quickly removed layers of weak rock wherever they were left at the surface of the former erosion plain, whereas hard rocks have resisted erosion so well that they have narrow canyons only carved in them. As a necessary result of this difference in the rate of erosion in soft and hard rocks, wherever the north-south breaks or faults in the District brought the two kinds of rocks opposite each other, the soft rocks have been washed away, leaving the hard rocks standing up to form a higher plateau step, with a steep cliff along the fault which marked the transition from one type of rock to the other. Thus, where the fault-cliffs were in a former stage, we now have erosion-cliffs, along fault lines. Where hard lava flows covered soft rock areas erosion has been less effective, and we have lava-capped mesas or tablelands to vary the topography; while the volcanoes themselves afford some of the most interesting elements of the scenery. The higher summits of some few volcanoes were eroded by ice action during the glacial period, and small volcanic cones have been built by repeated eruptions, almost up to the present time.

After making clear the succession of events in the somewhat complicated history of the region, by means of the diagrams, the lecturer showed how each one of these events had contributed to the present scenery of the Grand Canyon District. The stumps of the old mountain ranges of early times are revealed in the "Granite Gorge" at the bottom of the chasm; the eastward slope, by which the top of the granite walls decline at the eastern end of the gorge, represents the early erosion surface to which the mountains were reduced; the more open portion of the canyon east of the gorge, characterized by lines of cliffs which incline

downward toward the east, owes its special scenic features to erosion in the series of rocks which were deposited on the granite floor and later uplifted in a tilted position; the second great erosion plain causes a marked transition in the scenic character of the canyon where it separates the overlying horizontal rocks from the inclined lower beds in the eastern parts of the canyon, or from the Granite Gorge farther west. The folds and faults of a later period have determined the character of the impressive north-south cliff lines which add so much to the grandeur of the plateau scenery in the vicinity of the Canyon; while to the long erosion following the faulting we owe the lower level of the southern part of the District and the imposing east-west cliff lines bordering the District on the north. To the final uplift and the erosion which it initiated are due the Canyon itself, the development of many of the north-south cliffs along lines determined by the earlier faulting, the carving of buttes and mesas from lava-covered areas of shales, and the steepening and freshening of the east-west cliffs at the north. Glaciation modified the peaks of mountains formed by volcanic eruption, and later vulcanism and stream erosion added the last touches to the Grand Canyon scenery as we know it to-day. Great as is the gorge cut by the Colorado River through the plateau, it should be remembered that in former times this same District experienced more than once an erosion which reduced the whole region to a low-lying plain — an erosion compared to which the cutting of the Grand Canyon is utterly insignificant.

In order to illustrate the typical scenery of the District in relation to its origin, the lecturer next showed two series of colored views; one series representing an imaginary trip across the region from east to west, during which especial attention was given to the north-south line of cliffs, from the Echo Cliffs in the Painted Desert on the east to the Hurricane Ledge and the volcanic features associated with it on the west; the other series illustrating a similar journey from south to north, and affording opportunity for a detailed study of the erosion features along the southern border of the plateau, the volcanoes of the San Francisco mountains near the Canyon, the wonderful scenery of the Canyon itself, and finally

the east-west cliffs which lead from the northern margin of the District up to the higher plateau of Utah.

In closing the lecturer emphasized the great importance of preserving this region of natural wonders as free as possible from the marring effects of man's handiwork, and congratulated the Society and its friends on the efforts which were being made to have a large section of the Canyon set apart as a reservation for the benefit of all the people.

CENTENNIAL OF OCCUPATION OF NEW YORK CITY HALL.

The American Scenic and Historic Preservation Society hopes that suitable notice will be taken this summer of the 100th anniversary of the occupancy of the New York City Hall. In the Society's last annual report to the Legislature was an extended history of City Hall park. The City Hall itself — the third in the history of New Amsterdam and New York — was begun in 1803. It was first occupied for the transaction of business on August 12, 1811, when the Common Council assembled in Mayor De Witt Clinton's office in the yet unfinished building. The Mayor's office, as shown on the original plans of the building was the large room in the southwest corner of the first floor. At first, the Council planned to adjourn from the old City Hall where the sub-treasury now stands at the corner of Wall and Nassau streets to the new municipal building on July 4, as indicated by the following extracts from the unprinted manuscript minutes of the common council.

" July 1, 1811.

" The Board agreed that on their adjournment they would adjourn to meet on the 4th instant at the new City Hall at 12 o'clock."

The new accommodations were not ready on Independence Day and the Council continued to meet in the old City Hall. The minutes of subsequent meetings contain the following:

" July 15, 1811.

" Alderman Torrey called up his resolution presented on the 24th of June last which being read was as follows:

"Resolved, That on the ——— Monday of ——— next the Common Council meet for public business at the New City Hall in the room intended for the Mayor's office; that the old furniture be used, until the Council Chamber is completed, and that the Comptroller and Street Commissioner be also directed to remove there respective offices to the apartments intended for them.

"On the question of agreeing to the same it passed in the affirmative and the blank was filled up with the second Monday in August.

"Alderman Buckmaster gave notice that at the next meeting he would move for a reconsideration of the vote taken."

"August 5, 1911.

"The Board agreed to meet at the new City Hall and that part of the former resolution which directed the removal of the several offices was suspended till the further order of the Board."

On August 12, the Council met in the new City Hall, and the minutes of the board open as follows:

"In Common Council, August 12th, 1811.

De Witt Clinton, Esqr., Mayor, President.

Pierre C. Van Wyck, Esqr., Recorder.

"Aldermen	
Thomas Carpenter	Peter Hawes
Charles Dickinson	Auge. H. Lawrence
Richard Cunningham	Elisha W. King
William Hoghland	John Morss
William Torrey	Isaac S. Douglass
George Buckmaster	Michael W. Titus
Caleb Pell	Wm. Welling
John Pell	Wm. A. Hardenbrook
	Abm. Van Gelden

Esq.

Esq.

"The Common Council met agreeably to adjournment in the new City Hall in the room designed for the Mayor's office."

The transactions of the board at their first meeting in Mayor Clinton's new office give interesting glimpses into the condition of the little city of 97,000 inhabitants just 100 years ago. The population of New York city in 1811, was of course limited to what is now the Borough of Manhattan. For purposes of com-

parison, we give the population of the corresponding areas of all the boroughs in 1810 and 1910:

	1810.	1910.
Manhattan	96,373	2,331,542
Bronx	2,267	430,980
Brooklyn	8,303	1,634,351
Richmond	5,347	85,969
Queens	7,444	284,041
	<hr/>	<hr/>
Total	119,734	4,766,883
	<hr/>	<hr/>

The settled portion of the city was chiefly below the latitude of City Hall. The area north of the City Hall was so much of a "back-yard" that while the east, south and west walls of the building were made of marble, the north wall was made of brown sandstone, from the same motives of economy which led the builders of private residences to use a cheaper material where it would not be seen much. The frontier of settlement was gradually moving up what is now Park Row (then Chatham street), toward the Bowery, but Chatham Square still had a primitive aspect as a market place to which farmers brought loads of hay, wood and provisions for sale. Perhaps the most exciting business transacted at this first meeting in Mayor Clinton's office was that in regard to a petition for fencing Chatham Square. The minutes read as follows:

"The Street Commissioner to whom was referred the remonstrance against fencing in Chatham Square, reported that he has not sufficient discernment to see any truth in the objections proposed against fencing in the Square. It is said it will stop the free communication of nine or ten streets. This is not true. The fence will stop no street, and he cannot see why a load of hay, wood or provisions would not be as safe alongside of the fence as in the open space. But it is said it will injure trade. If this should prove true, as it respects the petty auctions, and in that respect only, a great purpose would be gained, as they are the greatest nuisance about the place and in many respects worse than the old iron shops so much complained of in the City of London.
* * *. A plan is herewith presented for fencing and improving it which in the opinion of the Street Commissioner is the best

thing that can be done with it; but if this should be thought inexpedient at present, a little more attention will be required to keep it clear of incumbrances and filth. Signed, Samuel Stillwell."

The Council voted that the square be fenced.

West of Chatham Square, the old Collect pond, where the Criminal Courts building and Tombs prison now stand, had so recently been filled up that we find in the Common Council minutes a reference to the suit of Peter Schermerhorn against the corporation for overflowing his rope walk by filling up the pond.

The region south of West Fourteenth street was still a detached settlement mentioned in the minutes as "Greenwich village," in which John Holdron and others petitioned that George M. Patten be allowed to sell meat.

The Murray Hill district was still called "Inclenbergh," where the city was leasing corporation lots to private parties; but as the expected streets were not opened, the lessees of the "Inclenbergh lots" petitioned the Common Council for relief.

It was thirty-one years before the introduction of Croton water, and the city was dependent upon wells for its municipal water supply.† At this first meeting in the new City Hall a petition "for a well at the corner of Sugar Loaf and Chappel streets, was read and granted upon the usual terms." Sugar Loaf street is now Franklin street between Broadway and West Broadway; and Chapel street is now West Broadway.

The only protection from fire was afforded by old-fashioned hand engines, drawing their supplies from these wells. The condition of at least one of the fire engines is indicated in the communication from Fire Engine Company No. 12, complaining of the "decayed state" of its engine and asking for a new one.

Other subjects which engrossed the attention of the city fathers at this meeting were leases of city property, the retention of recovered stolen articles by the police, the appointment of firemen, assessments for paving, and the complaint of the "watchmen" of the second district who said that "their watch house confined them exceedingly" and prayed for more room.

† Aaron Burr's Manhattan Water Co., chartered in 1799, which pumped water through hollow log pipes, derived its water from wells.

The following interesting entry in the minutes of August 12, 1811, tells of the disposition of marble statue of William Pitt which the corporation erected in 1770 "in Wall street opposite to the houses of John Thurman and Evert Bankers nearly where the pump now stands:"*

"It having been represented that the statue which previous to the late revolution had been erected by the Corporation of this City and placed in one of the squares of the same in honor of William Pitt, the first Earl of Chatham, though at present in a very mutilated state, was, on account of its excellent workmanship worthy of preservation and would be acceptably received by the Academy of the Fine Arts of the State of New York, it was resolved on the motion of the House that the same be presented to the said Academy of Arts."

The headless torso of this statue, mutilated during the British occupation of the city, is now preserved in the New York Historical Society's collection. While it stood at William and Wall streets, "Mr. Pitt's statue" was a well-known land mark and was frequently mentioned in the records of the time.

NEW YORK CITY PARKS.

General System of Administration.

During the past year there has been a marked increase in the evidences of public unrest concerning the public parks of New York city, due partly to efforts from various outside sources to intrude into the parks structures foreign to their purpose, partly to certain conditions existing in the parks of Manhattan borough, and partly to the policy of innovation projected by the Park Commissioner for that borough; and this Society has continued to exercise its influence with a view to promoting the discriminating and conservative use of the parks.

For the information of those who are not familiar with the form of park administration in New York city, we may mention that the parks are under the jurisdiction of a "Park Board" of three commissioners, who are appointed by the Mayor. One commissioner has administrative jurisdiction in the Boroughs of Man-

* Minutes of the Corporation, June 25, 1770.

hattan and Richmond, one in the Boroughs of Brooklyn and Queens, and one in the Borough of the Bronx. Each commissioner has a salary of \$5,000 a year. The present Park Board, appointed by the Mayor in January, 1910, consists of Hon. Charles B. Stover, president of the board and commissioner for the Boroughs of Manhattan and Richmond; Hon. Michael J. Kennedy, commissioner for the Boroughs of Brooklyn and Queens, who was formerly commissioner of that jurisdiction; and the Hon. Thomas J. Higgins, commissioner for the Borough of the Bronx.* While each of the commissioners has a specified administrative territory, they act as a counter check upon each other to a certain extent by the requirement that they shall act as a board in the letting of all contracts, the establishment of general rules and regulations and the appointment of subordinate officers. But each commissioner takes the initiative in his own bailiwick and in public opinion is held accountable primarily for the good or bad condition of the parks of which he has administrative charge.

One important provision of the Greater New York charter with reference to the parks is as follows:

“The Board may employ, when thereto authorized by the Board of Estimate and Apportionment, a landscape architect, skilled and expert, whose assent shall be requisite to all plans and works or changes thereof respecting the conformation, development or ornamentation of any of the parks, squares or public places of the city, to the end that the same may be uniform and symmetrical at all times. It shall be the duty of such architect, from time to time, to prepare and submit to the Board, or to any Commissioner, as he may deem proper, or as he may be requested by said Board or by any Commissioner, plans for works or changes thereof respecting the parks, parkways, squares, or public places of the city.”

For many years prior to May 11, 1911, the landscape architect of the parks was Hon. Samuel Parsons, who has been connected with the parks for about thirty years and has at times acted as park commissioner.†

Another important restriction of the charter is the requirement that the approval of the Art Commission shall be had for any work of art which is to become the property of the city, including

* See note on page 474.

† See note on page 483.

sculptures, monuments, fountains, arches, or other structures of a permanent character intended for ornament or commemoration; and, when requested by the Mayor or the Board of Aldermen, for municipal buildings, bridges, gates, and other structures.

Central Park.

The most famous, although not the largest, park of New York city, is the Central Park in the Borough of Manhattan. Without here entering into the causes, it may be said in a general way that this park, which once served as a model for and stimulus to other parks throughout the country and which is dearly cherished by the people of New York as one of its greatest ornaments and beneficent institutions, is in a sadly deteriorated condition. Not only is the park run down physically, but during the past year propositions for such innovations as the straightening of winding paths, the construction of wading pools, the introduction of boisterous games like base ball, the establishment of public forums for mass meetings for the discussion of controverted political, social and industrial questions, the building of a great opera house for free public opera and dramatic performances, etc., have multiplied to such an extent that the people of the city hardly know what will be proposed next or what of these diverse propositions, which are incongruous with the conception and purpose of Central Park, will be adopted.

The situation has become so critical that we take this occasion to print in Appendix G to this report, an extended history of Central Park, in which further allusion will be made to the physical condition of the park, and to the findings of a distinguished citizens' committee which recently made a careful survey of the field.

We may state here, however, two fundamental principles which we believe should be applied to the management not only of Central Park but also of all parks.

First.—The elementary necessities of park construction and maintenance, such as the construction and maintenance of walks and drives and public conveniences, and the planting and care of trees, shrubs and grass, should be properly attended to before

innovations or non-essentials are undertaken. If funds are limited, the fundamentals should have a claim upon them precedent to non-essentials.

Second.—The functions of parks differ in accordance with their character, location and environment, and therefore what may be an appropriate use for one may be an inappropriate use for another. Discrimination should therefore be exercised in the uses to which different parks are put. Free tenting privileges may be accorded on the shores of Long Island sound in Pelham Bay Park in the Bronx with propriety, when they could not with propriety be permitted on the shores of the Central Park lakes. An out-door gymnasium may be suitable in William H. Seward Park and unsuitable in Central Park. The small parks in certain sections of the city may properly be used for "play grounds" when such a use would be out of place in Central Park. The original conception, purpose, and even long traditional use of a park are also important factors in regulating the individual characteristics of a park, so that it is not necessarily logical to argue that because a certain park is used for a certain purpose, any other park may appropriately be used for the same purpose. In Hyde Park, London, public mass meetings are permitted, public bathing is allowed, and there is even a dog burial ground. But from this it does not follow that a public forum should be instituted in Central Park, or bathing permitted, or a canine cemetery established therein. The conception, history and traditional use of the two parks are entirely dissimilar.

City Hall Park.

During the past year we have continued our opposition to the construction of the proposed new county court house in City Hall Park.

On February 28, 1911, a bill entitled "An act to provide for the erection of a court house in the county of New York," was introduced in the Senate by the Hon. Stephen J. Stillwell of New York. It authorizes the erection in City Hall Park of a court house, which, according to plans already drawn, will be of such size as to extend almost the entire distance across the north end

of the park from Broadway to Centre street. Under date of March 13, 1911, our committee on City Hall Park, consisting of Col. Henry W. Sackett, Hon. Charles A. Spofford, and the secretary, by authority of the trustees sent to each member of the Legislature an appeal to defeat this bill, offering the following reasons:

Because public sentiment in New York city, as manifested last year in the opposition of the Bar Association, the American Institute of Architects, numerous civic associations and the almost unanimous voice of the public press, is overwhelmingly against the appropriation of any more park space buildings.

Because it will reduce the open air space vitally needed in this congested center of traffic and business.

Because in years gone by, notably in 1888 and 1890, the Legislature specifically enacted that the Municipal building should *not* be located in City Hall Park.

Because the reasons for such exclusion are even greater now with respect to the court house than then with respect to the Municipal building.

Because the growth of the city, the increased traffic at this point, and the increased height of surrounding buildings, dictate that instead of further encroachments upon City Hall Park, any changes should be in the direction of the removal of buildings, except the City Hall, whenever the opportunity is afforded.

Because the erection of a ten-story court house in the park will overshadow the beautiful City Hall, one of the architectural treasures of the city, minimize its importance as the seat of government and render it less tenantable.

Because it will prevent the symmetrical development of a civic center around the park.

Because it will take away from the people public ground which has belonged to them from their earliest history, and is associated with the most highly prized traditions of their liberties.

Because, judging from past experience, the proposed new court house must ultimately be enlarged, either by further encroachments on the park, or by removal to a more commodious site.

Because the encroachment now proposed will create a precedent for the similar invasion of other parks — a course which, if not checked, threatens the very existence of the city's greatly needed park system.

Our appeal is to members of the Legislature who live outside of the city as well as those who live in the city, for the rescue of this park. Those who live outside of the metropolis in less densely populated communities, with a plenty of open space, with grass and trees around their houses, or with a plenty of skylight and fresh air about their places of business, may well accord their sympathetic aid to the city of New York to save its breathing spaces. Twice a day 175,000 persons surge past and through City Hall Park en route from and to the Brooklyn bridge. On every business day 55,000 persons more emerge from the subway at City Hall Park and pour into it again in the afternoon. In addition to these, probably 20,000 more enter this center by the Elevated Railroad, and the Park Row, the Centre street, the Chamber street and Broadway surface lines. In other words, about a quarter of a million persons sweep back and forth twice a day through and about this point. To reduce the open space here and at the same time to attract to it a still larger number of persons would seem to be the height of indiscretion.

In addition to these present phases, every consideration of prudent foresight dictates that the new court house should be located with a view to the needs of the future. The present county court house, begun just fifty years ago and never completed, was long ago outgrown. Since it was begun the population of Manhattan borough has increased 291 per cent., and the population of Greater New York 416 per cent. In view of these facts it would seem to be extremely short-sighted to plan now for only one or two generations.

If the new court house be located in City Hall Park, it must ultimately be enlarged or be removed to another site. If enlarged in area, it will further reduce the park; if enlarged in height, it will cut off still more light and air from the City Hall offices. If removed to another site, fifty years hence, the value of available

places will have doubled, trebled or quadrupled. It would, therefore, be wise to choose now, outside of the park, a site upon which the court house can be enlarged as future needs may require.

The city cannot afford to be insensible to the lessons of the past. A few years ago it might have acquired the whole block on the north side of Chambers street from Centre street to Broadway at a reasonable price. Now, the erection of the costly building of the Emigrant Industrial Savings Bank makes the acquisition of that site for a court house and great municipal building economically impracticable. There are, however, facing upon or within a few blocks of City Hall Park, available sites which bear the same relation to the present situation that the Chambers street block bore to the situation a few years ago, and upon which there are no large modern buildings or costly structures, comparatively speaking.

The city of London has seen the wisdom of reserving without encroachment a park as large as, if not larger than City Hall Park, Lincoln's Inn fields, close by the Courts of Justice and the Inns of Courts, and condemning land in the heart of the built-up section on the north side of the Strand for its great court house — an example worthy of imitation by New York.

It is earnestly to be hoped that the Legislature will co-operate with the people of New York in this matter and save the city from the humilitating and expensive course of consuming its parks to pay for the city's past improvidences. If that path be entered upon, none of the city's parks will be safe in the future.

Battery Park.

In the month of February, 1911, the people of the city were apprised of the meaning of operations which had been going on at the water front of Battery Park for some months previous when contractors for the Federal government with great expedition erected a wooden building 188 feet long and about fourteen feet high for the use of the immigration bureau. This unsightly structure, cutting off from the park miles of view of the beautiful harbor, is to be used as a waiting room and baggage room for immigrants while the barge office, a stone building near by, is being

demolished and replaced by a three-story brick building. The new brick building will be for the use of the Immigration Bureau, the New York station of the United States Weather Bureau and branches of the Marine Hospital service, the Revenue service and the Surveyor's and Collector's offices.

This erection by the Federal authorities was approved by Mayor Gaynor, Dock Commissioner Calvin Tomkins and Park Commissioner Stover. We are informed that the consent of the landscape architect of the park board was not obtained. It is claimed that this will be only a temporary structure, standing for perhaps two years; but New York has had its experience with "temporary structures" in the past, and knows that after a "temporary structure" has once been put in a park, it is next to impossible to get it out. We have been unable to learn that the park department stipulated that the contractor should give a bond to remove the building within a certain period. It is safe to say that if the public had had any idea of this plan in advance of the work, its strong opposition would have been manifested. It is claimed on behalf of the Federal authorities that no other site could be obtained "for love or money." The same argument has been advanced for putting the new county court house in City Hall Park and for building an Academy of Design in Central Park. When difficulty is encountered in finding a site for projects of this sort, the tendency is to grab a park. Battery Park was invaded in 1882 by the unsightly elevated railroad tracks upon some such pretense as this, and the city has never been able to eject them. Ceaseless vigilance is necessary to counteract this growing tendency to use public parks for purposes for which they were not intended.

Bryant Park.

In our report for 1909 we mentioned the movement for the erection of a new building for the Academy of Design in Central Park, and the opposition of this Society and other organizations to the project. This opposition proved successful and the proposition to build in Central Park was abandoned. In February, 1911, the public was apprised of a new idea of the Academy of Design for a building in Bryant Park. It will be remembered that until recently the old distributing reservoir of the Croton

water system stood on the west side of Fifth avenue between Fortieth and Forty-second streets; and the remainder of the blocks bounded by Fortieth street, Forty-second street, Fifth avenue and Sixth avenue constituted Bryant Park. In 1901-2 the reservoir was removed and on November 10, 1902, the cornerstone for the new Public Library was laid on the same site. The library is now completed and was opened in May, 1911. The adjacent area, constituting Bryant Park, remains the same. In February, 1911, the president of the Academy of Design advanced a proposition for building a gallery for that institution at the west end of the park. He suggested a long, narrow building, which would serve the double purpose of housing the Academy of Design and hiding from the diminished park the unsightly Sixth avenue elevated railroad structure. This plan has received no more encouragement from the public press than the former plan for putting the building in Central Park.

Morningside Park.

On April 7, 1911, a committee of residents in the neighborhood of Morningside Park, called upon the Mayor and presented a petition signed by 1,500 citizens asking him to take some steps to reclaim that park from the dangerous condition into which it had been allowed to lapse, partly by neglect, and partly as a result of the policy of "popularizing" the parks of Manhattan. Morningside Park is a charming stretch of picturesque land lying at the eastern base of Morningside Heights, in the midst of a high-class residential district. On the heights overlooking the park are the Cathedral of St. John the Divine, St. Luke's Hospital and Columbia University; and among the signatures on the petition were those of Bishop Greer, Arch-deacon Nelson and all of the clergy of the Cathedral of St. John the Divine; the Rev. Father McGrath and the clergy of the Roman Catholic Church of St. Thomas the Apostle, the staff of St. Luke's Hospital and the staff of the Woman's Hospital and many distinguished citizens. The petitioners protested not only against the perversion of the park to the uses of a field for rough and noisy sports, which prevented the quiet enjoyment of the park by others, but also against the hoodlumism and actual outlawry which occurred there, including the

assault and robbery of women and the debauching of girls. Under the latter head, testimony of a specific and most pitiful nature was given by a well-known woman missionary and by the medical staff of St. Luke's Hospital, who knew what they were testifying about. This is perhaps the most acute concomitant of the policy of "popularization" which has developed during the past year.

Joseph Rodman Drake Park.

From these disagreeable details it is pleasant to turn to the contemplation of a highly commendable improvement in Joseph Rodman Drake Park. In our former reports we have given the particulars concerning the burial place of Drake, one of New York's sweetest poets, and of the successful efforts which were made to have Drake's grave suitably protected and cared for. This, as has been reported previously, was partially accomplished by the city's taking the old burial ground at Hunt's Point in the Bronx for a city park. When Park Commissioner Higgins assumed office he manifested a lively interest in the educational features of his parks and gave especial attention to the improvement of Joseph Rodman Drake Park. Elsewhere we give an illustration showing how much has been done in this direction. Writing to us under date of March 2, 1911, Commissioner Higgins says:

"After we had made these improvements and put the graveyard in presentable condition, we had a little ceremony at the grave on Decoration day of last year. All the descendants of Rodman Drake who lived in the city were there and many of the branches of the family. We had the Borough President and many of the leading citizens of the Borough, all of whom made short addresses, and the general sentiment seemed to be that the City was at last doing what it should have done many years ago, namely, caring for and preserving this historic spot. I am also told that since we have improved the graveyard a great many visitors go there, which was not the case heretofore. This Department has asked the Board of Estimate for several thousand dollars for permanent improvements to be made in this small park, and when we get it we shall make it worthy of the name of Rodman Drake Park." (See plates 13 and 14.)

SITES AND INSCRIPTIONS.

The Manhattan Hollow Way.

During the past year the Society has officially verified and approved the following inscriptions:

For the Knickerbocker Chapter, D. A. R. of New York city the following inscription for a tablet erected on the eastern face of the western parapet wall of the Riverside Drive viaduct, spanning the valley through which Manhattan street runs:

The Valley Crossed by This Viaduct
Was Called in Washington's General Orders
And in the Records of the American Revolution
THE HOLLOW WAY.
Here Began the Main Action of
The Battle of Harlem Heights
September 16, 1776.
Erected by the
Knickerbocker Chapter, D. A. R.
October 19, 1910.

This tablet was unveiled with appropriate ceremonies under the auspices of the Knickerbocker Chapter, D. A. R. on Wednesday, October 19, 1910. It was made by Messrs. J. and R. Lamb of New York.

Fort Number One.

The Society verified and approved the following inscription for a tablet placed on the house of Mr. William C. Muschenheim on Spuyten Duyvil hill, in New York city.

The Foundation of this House is a Part of
FORT NUMBER ONE
Which Was Erected by the Continental Army
in August, 1776,
Occupied by the British November 7, 1776,
Dismantled in 1779,
And Remained "Debatable Ground" until
The Close of the American Revolution.

One of a Chain of Eight Forts North and East of Spuyten Duyvil Creek and Harlem River, Extending From this Point to the Site of New York University.

Erected by Wm. C. Muschenheim, 1910.

A full account of the ceremonies attending the unveiling of this tablet on November 5, 1910, will be found in Appendix C of this report. The tablet was made by Messrs. J. and R. Lamb. (See plate 11.)

Maiden Lane, New York.

For the Maiden Lane Historical Society of New York, this Society verified and approved the following inscription for a tablet soon to be erected upon a building in that historic street in New York city.

MAIDEN LANE.

Called 'T Maagde Paatje in the Days of New Amsterdam, being a rural Path Beside a Stream, Still Marked by the Curved Line of the Present Street. Known During the Early English Period as Both Green Lane and Maiden Lane. Laid Out as a Street in 1691. Began to assume the Character of a Jewelry District about 1840.

Erected by the Maiden Lane Historical Society, 1911. Donated by Edward Holbrook.

See also Appendix K.

Saint Paul's Church, Eastchester.

For the Empire State Society of the Sons of the American Revolution we have verified and approved the following inscription for a tablet to be erected by that Society upon old Saint Paul's Church in Eastchester, New York city:

SAINT PAUL'S

PROTESTANT EPISCOPAL CHURCH.

This Church stands on the Ancient Village Green of Eastchester, a General Training Ground and Election Place in Colonial Days and Enlisting Headquarters for Revolutionary soldiers.

The First Meeting House, erected on the Green North of this Church 1692-1699, adopted the worship of the Church of England 1702.

This Church, erected 1761-1765, was used as a Military Hospital during the American Revolution; converted into a Court House 1787; incorporated, 1787; reopened as a Church 1788; reincorporated 1795, with the Name of "Saint Paul's Church in the Town of Eastchester"; and Consecrated 1805.

This Tablet was erected by the Empire State Society, Sons of the American Revolution, 1911.

This tablet is being made by Messrs. J. and R. Lamb of New York and will be dedicated on July 4, 1911.

New Utrecht Mile Stone.

For the City History Club of New York we have recommended the following inscription for the railing or stone coping to be placed around an ancient mile-stone in New Utrecht, New York

city, of which land mark the City History Club is custodian for the city.

The Enclosed Milestone,
Erected Near By in 1741,
Was Long the Friend
And Guide of Wayfarers.
Van Pelt Protected It.
The City History Club,
Custodian for the City,
Here Placed It in 1911.

Tan Yard Spring, Peekskill.

In December, 1910, the Society through its president, lent its encouragement to the movement, inaugurated by Mr. W. H. H. MacKellar of Peekskill, N. Y., to mark with a suitable memorial the Tan Yard spring in that village. This spring has a unique tradition to the effect that "He who drinks from this spring before taking a journey will surely live to return to the same spot." It is believed that this legend was handed down by the Indians to the first white settlers, for it has existed from time immemorial. The object of the movement is practical as well as sentimental, as the spring is threatened by the growth of the village and its preservation is desired for the benefit of the great number of poor people who live in the vicinity. The volume of water from the spring is unusually large, its quality is very pure, and its flow does not appear to be impaired by drought. In due course this Society will pass upon the inscription for the memorial.

NAMES OF PLACES.

General Principles of Place Names.

One of the objects of this Society is to secure the perpetuation of historic place-names and the bestowal of appropriate names upon new places, bridges or structures of public importance. In a previous report (1902) we have mentioned the instrumentality, of our Society in recommending the names for the East river bridges which were officially adopted by the city of New York.

During the past year we have had one request from the owner of a large private estate on the Hudson river to suggest an appropriate name for his place. This, together with the offer of a reward by the Erie Railroad Company of a prize for the most

suitable name for its new railroad cut through Bergen Hill, N. J.* and the recent advertisement of a number of new real estate projects with fancy and meaningless names, has suggested the advisability of making in this report a few observations concerning the general principles on which place-names are formed.

When Shakespeare, in "Romeo and Juliet," causes the gentle Capulet to inquire "What's in a name?" and to disparage its significance, he indulges pleasantly in a light poetic fancy rather than in a profound philosophy. As a matter of fact, there is much in a name. Names have inspired triumphs in arms, in the halls of legislation and in almost every other department of life. A significant name, therefore, has a power; and its power lies in the association of ideas. In selecting a place-name, the first aim should be to produce an association of ideas. There may be cases, as in a great city, where numerical designations for the streets and avenues are necessary for public convenience, but such names are lifeless and barren. They simply aid in getting to a place. They convey no further idea. If streets are designated by letters of the alphabet, an association of ideas can be secured and the advantage of consecutiveness attained by selecting names of which the initials shall form an alphabetical sequence, as, Adams, Buchanan, Cleveland, etc.

In devising a suggestive place-name, the aim should also be to make the suggestion truthful. Many real estate agents in the vicinity of New York city have recently been giving to their properties the name of "Manor," coupled with fancy prefixes, as Riverview Manor, Briar Cliffe Manor, Echo Manor, etc. Such names violate what ought to be one of the fundamental principles of place-names. They are not Manors themselves, nor are the names inherited from the days when the manorial system existed in New York. Names like Pelham Manor, Philipse Manor, Van Cortlandt Manor, etc., are more legitimate, being derived from Manors which once actually existed.

Most place-names may be classified under the following heads:

I. Names of Natural Physical Descriptions:

(a) Abstract physical names.

* Finally called "Bergen Archways."

- (b) Names denoting physical relations, location or neighborhood.
- (c) Names based on local physical characteristics.
- (d) Names descriptive of physical shape or resemblance.

II. Names from Local Characteristics Not Natural:

- (a) Names derived from artificial physical objects.
- (b) Names based on local conditions not physical.

III. Changed Names:

- (a) Names changed by phonetic decay.
- (b) Names changed by translation.
- (c) Names changed by misspelling or misinterpretation.

IV. Loan Names.

V. Names Expressing Relations of Time or Order.

VI. Names Derived From Use.

VII. Commemorative Names:

- (a) Names derived from individuals, peoples or states.
- (b) Names derived from events.

VIII. Names of Imagination or Fancy.

I. NAMES OF NATURAL PHYSICAL DESCRIPTION.

(a) *Abstract Physical Names.*—Indigenous place-names among a native people originate in the first place and most naturally from roots which express in the abstract some natural physical feature of the country in which they live, as land, water, hill, vale, stream, etc. For instance, the ancient British root "Ure" means stream, and Ure is the name of part of the river on which the ancient city of York, England, is situated. The name originally applied to the river as far as York.

(b) *Physical Relations.*—The next stage in the evolution of a name is to distinguish it from other similar names by qualifying it with relation to itself or something else. For instance, the ancient British root "ac" means territory or district. By combining "Ure," or "Euor," as it was anciently spelled, and "ac," we have "Euor-ac," which was the ancient name of York and meant "place at the river."

This qualification of an abstract noun by location, neighborhood, or relation to some other place expressed or understood takes various forms. For instance, Buyten Tuynen, meaning literally out gardens, was a name applied to twenty lots at the west end of the Harlem village plot on Manhattan Island. And all that class of names like Belvidere, Bellevue and Belvoir (meaning place of beautiful view), or Ocean View, etc., really expresses a relation to geographical surroundings.

(c) *Physical Characteristics*.—The abstract name may also be qualified by a local natural characteristic, such as size, height, color or other feature.

All American-Indian names, like the original British names, were derived from roots referring to physical characteristics. Ossining is an Indian name, composed of "Ossin," a stone, and "ing" or "ink" a place, meaning stony place. The Indian name for Long Island was Sewan-hacky, from "Sewan," meaning shells and "hacky" meaning place, the whole signifying place of shells.

The early Spanish name for the Hudson river was the Rio Grande or Great river. The Dutch gave the name Roode Hoek, or Red Hook, to a neck of land in Brooklyn on account of the color of its soil. The hill in Mount Morris Park, New York city, was called by the Dutch, Slang-berg or Snake Hill, which sufficiently indicates a local characteristic now happily non-existent. The Catskill mountains were called by the Dutch the Katzbergen or Cat Mountains, on account of the abundance of wild cats. We call the mountainous region between Peekskill Bay and Newburgh Bay the Highlands, which literally describes them.

Names like Belle Isle (beautiful island), Green Island, Hot Springs, etc., also denote local physical characteristics.

(d) *Shape or Resemblance*.—Then there is a large class of names based upon shape or resemblance (real or fancied). Of this class are such names as the Palisades, Sugar Loaf Mountain, Anthony's Nose, Tor Mountain (from the Dutch "toren" or tower, which it resembles), Long Island, Gramercy Park (from the Dutch "Krom messie" meaning crooked little knife, applied to a tract of land shaped like a shoe maker's knife), etc.

II. NAMES FROM LOCAL CHARACTERISTICS NOT NATURAL.

(a) *Derived from Artificial Physical Objects.*—It is not uncommon to find a local name derived from some artificial object, such as castle, or palace, or dam. Newcastle is such a name. All the names in Holland ending in “dam” are of this class. High Bridge in New York city is such a name.

(b) *Conditions not Physical.*—Then there is often a local characteristic of social or political condition, giving rise to such a name as Freetown and Freehold; also to the names which indicate the form of government, as, for instance, names in which the word manor or borough form a part.

III. CHANGED NAMES.

(a) *Phonetic Decay.*—Primitive names rapidly become corrupted by laziness in pronunciation, producing what is called phonetic decay. By this process, the old British name “Euor-ac” becomes transformed into the more recognizable form of York. The “Eu” is represented by its equivalent “Y,” the “a” is elided, and the hard “c” represented by its equivalent “k,” and we have the name in its modern orthographic dress. An example of phonetic decay in a Dutch name may be found in “Tubby Hook,” the appellation of a point projecting from Manhattan Island into the Hudson river at about Two Hundred and Sixth street. It was originally named after Peter Ubregt, by taking his last name, prefixing it with the phonetic Dutch “’t” and following it with the Dutch word “hook” meaning point, and called “’T Ubregt Hook.” This became changed to “’T Upbro Hook” and then “Tubby Hook.” Abbreviation may be called a form of phonetic decay, for it proceeds from the same cause, laziness or the desire to save time. A conspicuous example in Dutch nomenclature is the Hague, or Den Haag, which is an abbreviation of Des Graven Haag, meaning the enclosure (or hedge) of the count.

(b) *By translation* a name frequently presents a much altered appearance. Thus the letters “u” and “v” frequently appear in Latin languages as “b.” By changing “u” in Euor-ac to “b” and adding the Latin termination “um” we have the Latin name of York, “Eboracum.” In like manner, a well-known mountain

in the Highlands was called by the Dutch, Suycker Broodt, which, by literal translation, becomes sugar loaf.

(c) *By misinterpretation or misspelling* (frequently the result of phonetic decay), a name takes on both a changed appearance and changed meaning. For instance, the Dutch named a fresh water pond which formerly stood where the Tombs prison and neighboring buildings now stand in the city of New York, the "Kolk." This is a word in frequent use in Holland and is applied to an enclosure of water. The Dutchman pronounced it Kol-luk. The English called it the Collect Pond, giving an entirely new suggestion to the name. The same has been the case with the Achter Col, or Behind Pass, between Staten Island and the mainland, which has become changed to Arthur's Kill.

IV. LOAN NAMES.

When people move from one part of a country to another, or from one country to another, affection for their old home leads them to give its name to their new home. This has given rise to a countless host of transplanted names, sometimes qualified by the prefix "New" (see class V.) Amsterdam, Harlem, Brooklyn, Utrecht, Bloomingdale, and many other place-names in New York State are transferred bodily from Holland. The same is true of Hell Gate, which appears on the earliest Dutch map of New York as Helle-gat. The original Helle-gat is a passage on the water route from Antwerp to Rotterdam, between the Volkerak and Hollandsche Diep, which rages furiously at certain stages of the tide and possesses a striking resemblance to the conditions at Hell Gate in the East river. For the meaning of this name see class VIII. There is also a large class of names which have been borrowed without any reference to propriety or associated ideas, but simply from a reprehensible laziness or a pitiable inability to invent a name which is appropriate. This class includes that whole group of classical names which were sprinkled wholesale over the map of Central New York when that region was mostly a howling wilderness, such as Rome, Troy, Utica, Syracuse, etc.

V. NAMES EXPRESSING RELATIONS OF TIME OR ORDER.

Names qualified to express a relation of time or order are frequently but not always transplanted names. In this manner we

bring down the ancient "Euor-ac" one stage further and find it appearing in the name of the New World Metropolis as New York. It is New in relation of time to old York. So with New Amsterdam and New Netherland and numerous other "News." But sometimes the *old* town takes a name to distinguish it from an off-shoot; as, for instance, Oude Dorp on Staten Island means Old Town, as distinguished from Nieuw Dorp, or New Town. Newfoundland expresses a relation of time. *Tierra Prima Vista* (land first seen) which appears occasionally on the maps of early explorers, is of the same class. The group of numbered lakes in the Adirondacks called collectively the Fulton Chain, but individually First Lake, Second Lake, etc., represents a relation of order.

VI. NAMES DERIVED FROM USE.

A large class of names is derived from the use to which places are put. For instance, the Dutch called Blackwell's Island, Verken Eylandt, or Hog Island, on account of the swine pastured thereon. Bowling Green, the first public park in New York city was reserved for the once popular out-door sport of ten pins. The Saw Kill, a Manhattan Island creek which once emptied into the East river at Seventy-fourth street, and which was formerly a famous landmark, was named from the use to which its waters were put in a saw mill. The famous jewelry street of New York, Maiden Lane, derived its name from the ancient foot path along a rippling brook much frequented by the Colonial maidens. The name Bowery, now applied to a street, is a name of use, being derived from the Dutch word *Bouwerij* or farm which was applied to the adjoining fertile fields when they existed. Cape Lookout is a use-name.

VII. COMMEMORATIVE NAMES.

(a) *Of Persons, Individual or Collective.*—Names derived from those of the first proprietors or settlers are very numerous, and their origin is generally so obvious that little need be said to demonstrate this branch of the subject. Sometimes, however, they appear somewhat disguised. Thus, Yonkers is derived from the Dutch "*Jongh-Heer*"—the "J" having the "Y" sound—and means young master, referring to Adriaen van der Donck.

The first word in the titles of the Bronx river and Bronx borough is simply the possessive case of the name of Bronck, the first grantee. Pavonia and Astoria are Latinized names based on the names of their respective early proprietors Pauw and Astor. Peekskill means the kill or creek or Jan Peek.

Names given purely in honor of individuals are closely allied to the group above mentioned. Hudson river, Albany, New York (secondarily), and King's Bridge may be cited as instances of this class.

Sometimes the name is derived from communities of men, as Canterbury, meaning the burg or borough of the Kent Men; or Scotland, the land of the Scots.

In the name Staten Island, we find an island named in honor to the Dutch Staaten or States.

(b) *Names Derived from Events*.—This subheading is intended to include a somewhat limited class of names commemorative of events which have occurred or the day on which events have occurred at those places. Old Wreck Brook was the name of the stream which once flowed from the Collect Pond on Manhattan Island to the East river. The origin of its name is obvious. The same may be said of Burnt Mill Point, which once characterized the eastern shore of Manhattan between Tenth and Thirteenth street.*

The names of Murderer's creek at Newburgh and Dead Man's brook at Fort Lee tell tales of sanguinary tragedies. Battles and other historic events are often the sources of local names, as, for instance Braddock's field in Pennsylvania. Sometimes the day on which an event occurs is the source of a name, as, St. John, N. B., so named by Champlain because he visited the place on St. John's day.

VIII. NAMES OF IMAGINATION OF FANCY.

As nobody knows how the entrance to the infernal region looks, Hell Gate cannot be classified under the heading "I. (d.)" among the names based on resemblance. We must therefore put it in the category of names derived from the imagination. Duivelsberg or Devil's Mountain, near Nymwegen, Holland, may also be placed

* Burnt Mill Point and Old Wreck Brook might with equal propriety be put in class "II. (a)."

in this class. America also has her full share of lakes, mountains and canyons named after his Satanic majesty.

A more agreeable subdivision of this class is composed of sentimental names like Sleepy Hollow, above Tarrytown; or Vredendal (quiet dale), the name given by Johannes de la Montagnie to a portion of Harlem Flats which he once owned. The Dutch in the old country still maintain the custom of applying sentimental names to their country places, such as Pleasure and Repose, Friendship and Sociability, Joy With Peace, etc. Lake Tear in the Adirondacks has a purely poetical name. So has Bridal Veil Falls, Cal., and numerous other places that might be mentioned.

Bentley Manor or Tottenville.

On general principles, we do not believe in the change of old historic names without some very excellent reason. A few years ago, the village of Sing Sing on the Hudson river secured the change of its name to Ossining for the reason that the name Sing Sing had become so completely identified with the State prison there that the name had become a practical injury to merchants in particular and to the village in general. In this case the change seemed to be justified, more particularly as the new name chosen was synonymous with the old one, being simply a variation of the spelling of the old Indian name.

During the past year, an attempt was made to change the name of the community known as Tottenville, situated at the extreme southern end of Staten Island in the city of New York — an attempt which has produced bitter wounds which are not yet healed. The history of this case may be cited for the instruction or warning of other communities.

Tottenville, a community of 3,500 or 4,000 inhabitants, is situated on land granted to Captain Christopher Billopp in 1668 by the Duke of York and called Bentley Manor. This grant was made as a reward for a unique service. Soon after the English conquest of New Netherland, New York and New Jersey began to dispute the ownership to Staten Island; and it is said that the Duke of York decided that all the islands in the harbor which could be circumnavigated in twenty-four hours should belong to New York. Captain Billopp, who had come to America in 1667

in a little vessel named Bentley, sailed around Staten Island within the stipulated period and in 1668 the Duke decreed that Staten Island should belong to New York.* The Duke rewarded the Captain by giving him 1,153 acres of land and erecting it into a manor called Bentley Manor. The ancient stone house known as the Billopp House at Tottenville was occupied by four generations of the family.

The original owner, Captain Christopher Billopp, is generally believed to have been lost at sea, he having been ordered to report to the authorities in England to answer for some political offense. His daughter Eugenia married her cousin Thomas Farmar, who, on assuming title to the property, also assumed the name of Billopp, and is well-known in history as Thomas Farmar Billopp. He became a major of militia and a judge of the court of common pleas. During the American Revolution the son of Thomas Farmar and Eugenia Billopp commanded a battalion of native loyalists, composed of Staten Islanders, after which he and his family took up lands in New Brunswick and other parts of Canada. Colonel Billopp's sons were prominent in social and political circles in New York and surrounding country. One became an officer under Miranda, in an expedition, and was captured and executed.

For a long time, the locality was known as Bentley Manor, or, more briefly, Bentley. About the year 1840, a post-office was established at Bentley, at the foot of Bentley street. Although many changes occurred in its management during the years that followed, it was sometime before there came a change in the name. The "Red Book" of the early '50's contains a list of all the post-offices in the State. "Bentley Postoffice" is in the list, but no where does the word Tottenville occur.

From some time prior to 1853, the location was called "Biddle Grove," but in that year an effort was made by some capitalists, led by Herman Kingsbury, to establish a health resort, and the name was changed to Mount Herman. The name of the post-office, however, was unchanged.

In 1860, the railroad from Vanderbilt Landing was completed

* We are indebted to Mr. Ira K. Morris, the historian, for many of the historical facts about Tottenville.

as far as Main street, at its western terminus, and the question of naming the station caused quite a commotion throughout the lower section of the island. There was a lively three-cornered controversy which some of the older residents still remember. The men most concerned were Stephen D. Ahrents, a Mr. Money and Ephraim Totten. Each had his coterie of followers. Ahrents named his part of the town "Ahrentsville," and a sign, bearing the name, was placed near the corner of Ahrents and Main streets. Mr. Money, a Frenchman by birth, built a dock where the railroad station now stands, and caused the "Bentley" sign to be placed there, because, he said, "it was the name given by its first settler, and Bentley it should stand!"

Ephraim Totten and his following wanted the title changed to "Tottenville," and persuaded the railroad company to place a sign bearing the name of "Tottenville," at the station. Still the post-office name remained "Bentley."

In 1861, shortly after Mr. Lincoln had entered upon the duties of President, the Republicans of Richmond county brought all their influence to bear to secure the appointment of Samuel L. Hopping as postmaster, and succeeded. The office was removed to a store managed by Mr. Hopping in a stone building that stood near the foot of Main street. Mr. Hopping had married a Miss Totten and it wasn't very long before the name of the post-office was changed to "Tottenville!"

For fully half a century the people seemed perfectly satisfied with the name: then in the summer of 1909, a movement was started to induce the postmaster-general to change the name to Bentley Manor. Some of the advocates of the change were actuated by historical motives; others, interested in real estate, thought that Bentley Manor sounded better than Tottenville. The postmaster-general acted favorably on the petition for the change and on February 8, 1910, appointed the present postmistress of "Bentley Manor," the appointment taking effect April 1, 1910.

This change, effected unawares to many of the citizens, aroused intense indignation on the part of many, and an effort was begun to have the name of Tottenville restored. Petitions and counter petitions were circulated, and in the discussions which ensued, bitter animosities were engendered. The advocates of Tottenville

charged that Billopp was disloyal to the colonies in the American Revolution, while the advocates of Bentley Manor made counter charges against the name of Totten. The feelings of animosity aroused were so deep that old friendships were broken and to this day some neighbors of the opposing factions refuse to speak to each other.

When the election approached in the fall of 1910, the subject was made a political issue, and the dominant political party was threatened with defeat locally if it did not secure the restoration of the name of Tottenville. Election day occurred on Tuesday, November 8, 1910. On Friday, November 4, the post-office department issued an order changing the name of the office back to Tottenville, and the announcement to that effect, made at a political meeting before the election, was, of course, received with rejoicing by the victors.

But this has not ended the matter. The postmistress holds her appointment under the name of Bentley Manor and has not received a new commission under the name of Tottenville. Thus there exists the anomalous situation of the postmistress of Bentley Manor acting as the postmistress of Tottenville post-office; and the citizens may be pardoned if they are somewhat in doubt as to the official name of their community.

The Meaning of Spuyten Duyvil.

In the past few years, particular attention has been attracted to the name of Spuyten Duyvil — one of the most singular names in American geographical nomenclature — by the erection of the Hudson monument on Spuyten Duyvil hill, and also by the passage of chapter 615 of the Laws of 1904, of the State of New York, by which the filling up of one-half of Spuyten Duyvil creek in the city of New York was authorized.

The passing away of so large a part of a water course which has occupied so conspicuous a place as a land mark in the history of New York city is an event of sufficient interest to warrant a few observations with respect to its site, its history and the origin of its singular appellation.

Before the artifices of civilization had altered the natural topography, the northern end of Manhattan Island was separated from

the mainland by a tidal estuary, called Spuyten Duyvil creek, connecting the northern end of Harlem river at Two Hundred and Twenty-first street with the Hudson river at the same latitude. This connection, however, instead of being in a straight line from one river to the other, a distance of about a mile, pursued an S-shaped course of two miles, characterized by two great loops, one of which bowed to the northward and one to the southward. Proceeding northward from the Harlem river at Two Hundred and Twenty-first street, the creek turned thence westward and thence southward. Crossing the parallel of Two Hundred and Twenty-first street, it continued southward, thence westward and northward, thence westward again, joining the Hudson river, at the parallel of Two Hundred and Twenty-first street again. The portions lying north and south of Two Hundred and Twenty-first street were each a mile in length.

On the north side of the mouth of the creek at the Hudson river, stands a hill 200 feet high, called by the Dutch, Konstabelsche Hoek, or Constable Point, from William Constable, owner; known at the time of the Revolution as Tippet's Hill or Tippet's Neck; later as Berrian's Neck, from Samuel Berrian. It is now commonly called Spuyten Duyvil hill. Under the protection of this hill, and on its eastern side, stood the fortified Indian village Nipnichsen (variously spelled) from which, it is probable, came the Indians who attacked Henry Hudson near this point on his voyage down the North river in 1609.

At the eastern base of the hill, Tippet's brook, coming down from the northward through a charming valley, poured its fresh waters into Spuyten Duyvil creek.

The Indian name for Spuyten Duyvil creek was Papirininan (spelled various ways) as we learn from the Indian deed, dated March 4, 1669, conveying to John Archer a tract of land between Tippet's brook and Bronx river. The bounds of this tract began at "a certaine place by ye Indians comonly called Mascota, so it goes to another place called by them Yowahamasing & from thence Round about ye Kill called Papirininan, & so to run into Harlem Ryver at ye Hook called Saperewack," etc.

At the extreme northern end of Manhattan Island, in the northern loop of the creek, at what is now Kingsbridge, was a peninsular neck of land which was insulated at certain stages of

high tide, and which was also called Papirininman, Paprinnemin, Papirinemin, Papparinemo, etc. Among other references to this use of the name may be cited the deed dated January 26, 1678-9, by which John Archer conveyed to Matthias Nicolls "a Neck of land, Hummock or Island Commonly Called Papiriman."

On the southern side of the mouth of Spuyten Duyvil creek lies Inwood hill, formerly called Cock's hill, 220 feet high. At the base of the eastern cliffs of this hill are extensive Indian shell heaps, and also the interesting Indian rock dwelling in which a valuable collection of Indian relics was found about ten years ago. At this place is also a perennial spring of fresh water called Cold Spring.

In 1895, the United States Ship canal was opened along that portion of the line of Two hundred and Twenty-first street which constitutes the chord of the northern loop of Spuyten Duyvil creek, and the river bottom of the southern loop was dredged to accommodate vessels of moderately deep draft. With the opening of this free passage way from the mingling currents of the Hudson and Harlem rivers, the northern loop of the creek was deprived of the scouring action of the tides and gradually became atrophied until it was reduced to a mere rudiment of its former self. Now, under the operation of the Law of 1904, that portion of the creek promises soon to disappear from sight altogether.

While the change will doubtless be physically beneficial to that locality, the historian cannot but regret the extensive disappearance of this once famous stream, particularly as the obliterated portion embraces the site to which the singular Dutch name of the creek was first applied.

There has been a great deal of speculation among historians and others as to the origin of the name Spuyten Duyvil. It was first applied to the locality before described as having been called by the Indians Papirininman. This was a crossing place from Manhattan Island to the mainland from the earliest settlement. If Riker, in his history of Harlem, is correct in his identification, this is the place referred to in the Nicolls patent of the town of Harlem, dated October 19, 1667, where it speaks of "the Spring where a passage hath been used to ford over from this island to the main and from thence hither." (This spring, by the way, can hardly be the Cold Spring before alluded to, for the two localities

are a mile apart, and the creek at Cold Spring was too deep for fording.)

In 1669, Papiriniman was known as the Wading Place.

The earliest record we have of the application of the name Spuyten Duyvil to this locality is found in a remonstrance by Adrian van der Donck, grantee of Yonkers, which was presented to the directors of the West India Company, May 26, 1653. In this remonstrance he recites that his grant included, besides the Yonkers valley, "a convenient valley nearby bordering on the kill behind the Island of Manhattans at Paprinnemin, called by our people Speijt denduyvel," etc.*

The creek westward from Paprinnemin was called by the Indians Shorackhappok, as appears from the description of the bounds in the royal charter to Frederick Phillipse of Yonkers, dated June 12, 1693, which describes the line "running southward along the said Bronxes river as it runs, until a direct west line cutteth the south side of a neck or island of land, at a creek or kill, called Papparinemo, which divides York Island from the main and so along the said creek or kill as it runs to Hudson's river, which part of the said creek is called by the Indians Shorackhappok, and continues dividing the said York island from the main. * * * And whereas * * * the said Frederick Phillipse, * * * prayed * * * that we would further grant * * * a certain neck of island of land called Paperinemo, adjoining to the land aforesaid, with the salt meadows thereunto belonging, together with power and authority to erect a bridge over the water or river commonly called Spiten Devil or Paparinemo; know ye, that we * * * have given * * * unto the said Frederick Phillipse * * * the aforesaid neck or island of land called Paparinemo, and the meadow thereunto belonging, with power * * * to erect and build a dam bridge upon the aforesaid ferry of Spitendevil, or Paparinemo * * * and the aforesaid bridge to be from henceforth called Kingsbridge." The name King's Bridge was obviously bestowed in honor of William III.

* "Eenige bequaeme valeyen daeromtrent palende aende kille achter aen het Eylandt de manhattens tot Paprinnemin byde onse Speijt denduyvel geseght, synde den suppliant altyt gesint geweest selfs daerop te gaen woonen." New York Colonial Manuscripts, State Library, Albany, Volume XI, No. 81. Also Vander Kemp's mss. translations, same library, Volume VIII, page 79.

Frederick Phillipse, in his will dated December 9, 1702, devises to his grandson Frederick, "the island of Papirinemin with the meadows, ye toll and all ye lands and meadows called the Yonkers plantation," etc.

The variable condition of this low tract of land is indicated in an act passed by the General Assembly July 1, 1713, providing that

"Whereas, by means of spring-tides not only the causey (causeway) leading through a meadow from Manhattan or York Island to the bridge * * * but likewise the bridge itself is often difficult and unfit for travellers to pass * * * it shall * * * be lawful for Frederick Phillipse, a Minor * * * to erect and build another good and sufficient drawbridge between the neck, or Island of Papparinemo, and York or Manhattan Island, at such place or places to the westward of the present bridge as to him * * * shall be thought most proper and convenient, and to join and affix the same to or in any land on York Island * * * and to pull down the bridge heretofore built."

That the causeway over the low land was south of the bridge would seem to be indicated by another act passed in 1713, providing for the repair of the Post road, and which mentions as the last section that from Harlem to the "cawseway of Kings Bridge."

By 1730, the name Spyt Den Duyvel was in common use as applied to the creek, as appears from the Montgomerie charter of 1730, wherein the Out Ward is described as running to the "river, creek or run of water called Spyt Den Duyvel over which King's Bridge is built." (Colonial Laws II, 602.)

The following variations of the name have been noted in early maps and documents:

Speijt denduyvel	Spiting Divell
Spikendevil*	Spitting duyvell
Spiteing Devill	Spitton divil
Spiten Devil	Spyt den Duyvel
Spiting Devill	Spuyten Duyvil

* Judge T. Astley Atkins of Yonkers writes to us: "A short time ago I noticed on a freight car at Spuyten Duyvil, in chalk, 'The Spike,' which I know is the name among many of the people there."

Now the question arises, how did the name of Spuyten Duyvil originate? The words "Speijt den duyvel" used by Van der Donck, are translated by some Dutch scholars "In spite of the devil." The word "speijt," (spelled in modern Dutch "Spijt" or "spyt") is used in that language in the sense of "in spijt van" or "in spite of." This suggested to Irving his tale of the woeful fate of Antony Van Corlear, the trumpeter of the valiant Governor Stuyvesant. The latter, according to Irving, sent his trumpeter forth to arouse the inhabitants of the mainland and summon them to the defense of New Amsterdam. When Van Corlear reached the creek and found no ferryman, he swore that he would cross "en spyt den dyvel" and plunged into swim across. But "scarce had he buffeted half way over when he was observed to struggle violently, as if battling with the spirit of the waters; instinctively he put his trumpet to his mouth, and giving a vehement blast, sank forever to the bottom. * * * The place, with the adjoining promontory which projects into the Hudson, has been called Spyt den Duyvel ever since."

Irving's legend is, of course, purely the work of his imagination.

Riker, in his History of Harlem, suggests that the Indians who attacked Henry Hudson off the mouth of this creek regarded his ship "as an uncouth monster vomiting streams of deadly fire" and designated it by the term "which (from the object adhering to the locality), found its Dutch equivalent in Spuyten Duyvil, that is, Spouting Devil."

The probability of this theory seems remote, particularly as we know what names the Indians applied to the creek and the wading place, and neither of them, so far as we know, means Spouting Devil. Paparinemin is said to mean "place where the stream is shut in," and Shorackhappok is said to mean "sitting down place." The latter, it is suggested, refers to the place where the Indians sat down and waited for the tide to subside, at the wading place.

Riker in his History of Harlem suggests another possibility, namely, that Spuyten Duyvil still means Spouting Devil, but was applied to the spring which bubbles forth at the foot of Inwood Hill and is known as Cold spring. "The Spring," he says, "became but another name with the early settlers, both Dutch

and English, for the locality known as Spuyten Duyvil; and an ancient record of 1672 expressly calls it Spuyten Duyvil, alias the Fresh Spring."

There appear to be two or three objections to this theory. It is difficult to understand why so commonplace a thing as an ordinary spring, of which there were many in the neighborhood, should be called a devil. And furthermore, Cold Spring is four-fifths of a mile away from Paparinemin, to which the name Spuyten Duyvil was first applied.

Other suggestions have been that that Speijt den Duyvel might be a crude translation of an Indian name, or possibly a corruption of a French name given by Walloon settlers, such as *Esprit du diable*.

Prof. J. B. A. Saeys, of Haarlem, Holland, expresses to us the opinion that "spyt den Duyvel (in the 17th century written *Speijt den duyvel*) means 'in spijt van den duivel,' that is, "In spite of the Devil."

Mr. M. A. van Weel, Doctor of Literature, and Professor of Geography at the First High School at The Hague, informs us that he does not know of any place-name in Holland like Spuyten Duyvil. He thinks that Van der Donck's petition uses the original name "In spite of the Devil." The expression, says Mr. Van Weel, "is literally Dutch with an alteration in the vowel sounds to suit the English tongue. Some day, I suppose, a Dutch sailor used the expression as an exclamation after having overcome the difficulties of the passage. Then companions, countrymen, etc., took it from him, and so the name became the common name for that creek. My opinion about this supposition is strengthened when I think of our comedies of the seventeenth century in which I find a number of exclamations in which not only the word 'Devil' occurs, but also 'God,' 'Heaven,' etc."

In discussing this subject with our eminent Dutch State Archivist, Mr. Van Laer, in 1896, we suggested some difficulties in the way of accepting the traditional interpretation "In spite of the devil." One reason is that almost without exception, the Dutch place-names in this vicinity are either names descriptive of natural physical conditions (class I), or loan names (class IV). Analogy and the doctrine of probabilities would make it most

likely to be in one of these classes, making due allowance for possible change by one of the methods mentioned in class III.

Another reason is that there are phonetic elements in the name as first written which suggest other meanings quite appropriate to the locality. There is a Dutch word "spui" of frequent use in Holland, meaning a sluice way or canal. The Spui at The Hague, part of which is redeemed and used as a street, is a famous thoroughfare.

The first syllable of "duyvel" is phonetically equivalent to "tui," a seaman's word meaning mooring rope. This is again suggestive of the water. If the syllable "duy" were broken down from "tij" it might be a relic of the word tide. The syllable "vel" might possibly be a degradation of the word "veld," meaning field, or of "val" meaning fall.

It would require no greater stretch of the imagination than Riker indulged in with his Henry-Hudson-Spouting-Devil theory, to construct a theoretical name Spui-ten-tij-val, meaning sluice at the tide-fall, to describe the place where the tides in this creek parted with the ebb toward the Hudson and the Harlem.

On December 29, 1906, Mr. Van Laer, who had at one time entertained the old theory of "In spite of the devil," wrote us as follows:

"As to the suggestion, relative to the meaning of the word 'Speyt,' as written by van der Donck, you have reached substantially the same conclusion that I came to some time ago, when, in perusing de Bo's 'Westvlaamsch Idioticon,' which the Library had just acquired, my eye fell on the words 'Spei' and 'Speite,' which were given as equivalent to the Dutch 'Spui' and 'Spuit.' I concluded immediately that van der Donck's 'Speyt' in all likelihood referred to the discharge of water and that the translation 'in spite of' must be rejected. That I had not seriously considered this possibility before, notwithstanding the fact that the name is later written *Spuyten Duyvil* and that so many allusions to spouting have been made, lies in the fact that in Dutch *ey* and *uy* are quite distinct sounds which are not likely to be substituted for one another. Seeing that the earliest usage, by an educated man like van der Donck, was 'Speyt,' I decided that it must correspond to the modern 'spijt' and could have nothing to do with 'spuit' or 'spui.'

"A word, however, as to the exact rendering of the term. You choose 'spui' and render it 'sluice.' That is in a sense of course correct, but I think one ought not to lose sight of the fact that the verb 'spuien' means to discharge, to refresh, hence that 'spui' only refers to a sluice in so far as the sluice is the actual means by which the water discharge or refreshment is made. As there evidently was no sluice at Spuyten Duyvil creek, some such rendering as 'discharging channel' might be better.

"In accounting for the word 'Speyt,' I would prefer, however, not to overlook the 't' and to interpret the word as the third person singular of the present indicative of the verb 'spuien' or as 'spuit,' a spout. By doing this, the full name as suggested by you, would mean creek which discharges, or spouts, at the tide-fall; at the time when the tide falls."

While inclined to the new interpretation of "spuit," he sees no sufficient reason for abandoning the meaning of "den duyvel," and adds: "Once the idea of 'in spite of' is dismissed, I see no real objection to some such interpretation of the name as 'the devil's channel,' 'the devil's spout,' 'creek that spouts like the devil,' etc."

If this last theory be correct, then we must put the name Spuyten Duyvil in class VIII, before mentioned, in the category of names suggested by the fancy or imagination. If, however, we attribute the name to the exclamation "In spite of the Devil," we must conclude that as a place-name, it is *sui generis*, stands in a class by itself, and by its unique genesis is distinguished above other place-names in the United States.

THE HALL OF FAME.

In our Thirteenth Annual Report (1908) we gave an official account of the Hall of Fame established at New York University in the city of New York in 1900, the constitution and rules of the Hall of Fame, a summary of proceedings prior to 1907, and the proceedings attending the dedication of tablets on May 30, 1907.

On September 29, 1909, a bronze bust of Robert Fulton on a pedestal of Conemara marble, was placed above his tablet as a part of the program of the Hudson-Fulton Celebration.

Election of 1910.

In 1910, the quinquennial election of names to be inscribed in the Hall of Fame was held, with the following result, as announced by the Senate of New York University on October 31:

Ballots were received from 97 electors, as follows: University or college presidents, 27; professors of history and scientists, 25; publicists, editors and authors, 28; chief justices, 17.

Following the precedent of 1905, fifty-one votes were required for choice. The result of the canvass showed that the following names were duly chosen by the number of votes indicated:

Famous Americans of Native Birth: Oliver Wendell Holmes, 69; Edgar Allan Poe, 69; James Fenimore Cooper, 62; Phillips Brooks, 60; William Cullen Bryant, 59; George Bancroft, 53; Andrew Jackson, 53; John Lothrop Motley, 51.

Famous American of Foreign Birth: Roger Williams, 64.

Famous American Women: Harriet Beecher Stowe, 74; Frances E. Willard, 55.

The tablets bearing the foregoing names will probably be unveiled on Memorial Day in May, 1912.

Total Vote of Electors in 1910.

Out of the ninety-seven electoral votes cast, the total number of votes given for each name submitted in 1910 was as follows:

FAMOUS AMERICAN AUTHORS.

1. George Bancroft	53	9. John Lothrop Motley.....	51
2. William Cullen Bryant.....	59	10. Francis Parkman.....	45
3. James Fenimore Cooper.....	62	11. Wendell Phillips.....	20
4. George William Curtis.....	26	12. Edgar Allan Poe.....	69
5. William Lloyd Garrison.....	35	13. William Hickling Prescott...	21
6. Horace Greeley.....	30	14. Abram Joseph Ryan.....	2
7. Oliver Wendell Holmes.....	69	15. Noah Webster.....	38
8. Francis Scott Key.....	5	16. William Dwight Whitney.....	9

FAMOUS AMERICAN TEACHERS.

1. Archibald Alexander.....	1	12. Adoniram Judson.....	15
2. Lyman Beecher.....	7	13. John McClintock.....	1
3. David Brainerd.....	3	14. William Holmes McGuffey....	2
4. Phillips Brooks.....	60	15. Cotton Mather.....	11
5. Horace Bushnell.....	19	16. Lindley Murray.....	0
6. Peter Cartwright.....	4	17. Eliphalet Nott.....	4
7. Timothy Dwight.....	4	18. Theodore Parker.....	10
8. Thomas H. Gallaudet.....	5	19. Matthew Simpson.....	20
9. Charles Hodge.....	2	20. Henry B. Smith.....	0
10. Mark Hopkins.....	45	21. Francis Wayland.....	19
11. Samuel G. Howe.....	10	22. Theodore D. Woolsey.....	10

FAMOUS AMERICAN SCIENTISTS.

1. Alexander D. Bache.....	3	18. Robert McCormick.....	7
2. Spencer F. Baird.....	7	19. Ephriam McDowell.....	5
3. William Beaumont.....	1	20. Matthew F. Maury.....	11
4. Nathaniel Bowditch.....	11	21. William T. G. Morton.....	36
5. Alvan Clark.....	3	22. Valentine Mott.....	2
6. Parker Cleveland.....	2	23. Benjamin Pierce.....	8
7. George Henry Corliss.....	6	24. David Rittenhouse.....	3
8. James B. Eads.....	16	25. James Rumsey.....	0
9. Charles Goodyear.....	7	26. Benjamin Rush.....	21
10. Samuel Guthrie.....	0	27. Benjamin Silliman.....	8
11. Joseph Henry.....	39	28. James Marion Sims.....	14
12. Edward Hitchcock.....	3	29. Nathan Smith.....	1
13. Richard M. Hoe.....	18	30. Benjamin Thompson.....	26
14. Alexander Lyman Holley.....	15	31. Alfred Vail.....	0
15. Elias Howe.....	28	32. John Collins Warren.....	1
16. Hosmer A. Johnson.....	1	33. Horace Wells.....	1
17. Cyrus Hall McCormick.....	16	34. Henry Rossiter Raymond.....	1

FAMOUS AMERICAN SOLDIERS.

1. George Rogers Clark.....	25	10. William Pepperill.....	17
2. Stephen Decatur.....	21	11. Oliver Hazard Perry.....	20
3. John Charles Fremont.....	13	12. David D. Porter.....	7
4. Nathaniel Greene.....	25	13. Philip Schuyler.....	6
5. Nathan Hale.....	20	14. Winfield Scott.....	11
6. Andrew Atkinson Humphreys.....	0	15. Philip Henry Sheridan.....	33
7. Thomas J. Jackson.....	18	16. Zachary Taylor.....	6
8. Albert Sydney Johnston.....	5	17. George Henry Thomas.....	18
9. George G. Meade.....	6		

FAMOUS AMERICAN JURISTS.

1. Rufus Choate.....	10	4. Lemuel Shaw.....	1
2. Oliver Ellsworth.....	3	5. Roger B. Taney.....	1
3. Edward Livingston.....	0	6. Henry Wheaton.....	2

FAMOUS AMERICAN STATESMEN.

1. Charles Francis Adams.....	20	14. Andrew Jackson.....	53
2. Samuel Adams.....	41	15. John Jay.....	36
3. Thomas H. Benton.....	15	16. Andrew Johnson.....	0
4. James Gillespie Blaine.....	14	17. Robert R. Livingston.....	7
5. John C. Calhoun.....	42	18. James Monroe.....	27
6. Salmon Portland Chase.....	9	19. Charles C. Pinckney.....	4
7. DeWitt Clinton.....	15	20. William H. Seward.....	31
8. Thomas Cushing.....	0	21. Roger Sherman.....	12
9. Edward Everett.....	20	22. Edwin McMasters Stanton.....	9
10. John Forsyth.....	0	23. Alexander H. Stephens.....	11
11. James Abram Garfield.....	13	24. Charles Sumner.....	24
12. John Hancock.....	31	25. Stephen Van Rensselaer.....	1
13. Patrick Henry.....	44		

FAMOUS AMERICANS. SEPTIMI.

1. Daniel Boone.....	42	15. William Morris Hunt.....	4
2. Edwin Booth.....	30	16. Elisha Kent Kane.....	7
3. John Brown.....	16	17. Amos Lawrence.....	0
4. George William Childs.....	3	18. Merriwether Lewis.....	13
5. Frederick Edwin Church.....	6	19. Lowell Mason.....	4
6. John Singleton Copley.....	28	20. Hiram Powers.....	7
7. William W. Corcoran.....	1	21. Henry H. Richardson.....	15
8. Thomas Crawford.....	1	22. Gerrit Smith.....	1
9. David Crockett.....	4	23. Leland Stanford.....	2
10. Manasseh Cutler.....	2	24. Judah Touro.....	1
11. Edwin Forrest.....	3	25. Cornelius Vanderbilt.....	4
12. James Harper.....	1	26. Marcus Whitman.....	5
13. Johns Hopkins.....	4	27. Elizur Wright.....	0
14. Samuel Houston.....	6		

FAMOUS AMERICANS OF FOREIGN BIRTH. AUTHORS.

No nominations.

FAMOUS AMERICANS OF FOREIGN BIRTH. TEACHERS.

1. Francis Asbury.....	7	7. John Joseph Hughes.....	1
2. James Blair.....	1	8. Francis Makemie.....	0
3. William Brewster.....	5	9. Jacques Marquette.....	20
4. Alexander Campbell.....	1	10. Heinrich M. Muhlenberg.....	1
5. John Eliot.....	15	11. George Whitefield.....	6
6. Francis Higginson.....	1	12. John Witherspoon.....	6

FAMOUS AMERICANS OF FOREIGN BIRTH. SCIENTISTS.

1. John W. Draper.....	15	3. John A. Roebling.....	6
2. John Ericsson.....	29		

FAMOUS AMERICANS OF FOREIGN BIRTH. SOLDIERS.

1. John De Kalb.....	5	4. Miles Standish.....	4
2. Arthur St. Clair.....	10	5. Frederick W. A. Steuben.....	9
3. John Smith.....	5	6. Peter Stuyvesant.....	4

FAMOUS AMERICANS OF FOREIGN BIRTH. JURISTS.

No nominations.

FAMOUS AMERICANS OF FOREIGN BIRTH. STATESMEN.

1. Albert Gallatin.....	31	3. Roger Williams.....	64
2. Robert Morris.....	28	4. John Winthrop.....	19

FAMOUS AMERICANS OF FOREIGN BIRTH. SEPTIMI.

1. John Jacob Astor.....	3	3. Stephen Girard.....	6
2. William Bradford.....	23	4. Henry Hudson.....	22

FAMOUS AMERICAN WOMEN. AUTHORS.

1. Abigail Adams.....	18	8. Sarah Josepha Hale.....	2
2. Louisa May Alcott.....	38	9. Helen Hunt Jackson.....	31
3. Maria Gowen Brooks.....	0	10. Lydia H. Sigourney.....	8
4. Alice Cary.....	13	11. Harriet Beecher Stowe.....	74
5. Phebe Cary.....	11	12. Mercy Otis Warren.....	2
6. Emily Dickinson.....	2	13. Constance Fenimore Woolson.	6
7. Sarah Margaret Fuller (Ossoli)	31		

FAMOUS AMERICAN WOMEN. TEACHERS.

1. Isabella Graham.....	0	4. Emily Chubbuck Judson.....	2
2. Barbara Heck.....	3	5. Sarah Boardman Judson.....	5
3. Elizabeth A. Seton.....	2		

FAMOUS AMERICAN WOMEN. HOME OR SOCIAL WORKER.

1. Eleanor Dare.....	6	8. Catherine Van Rensselaer	
2. Dorothea Dix.....	29	Schuyler	2
3. Mary Dyer.....	6	9. Lucy Blackwell Stone.....	7
4. Anna Hutchinson.....	6	10. Martha Washington.....	43
5. Dorothy Payne Madison.....	23	11. Mary Washington.....	23
6. Lucretia Mott.....	41	12. Frances E. Willard.....	55
7. Eliza Lucas Pinckney.....	3	13. Margaret Tyndall Winthrop..	1

FAMOUS AMERICAN WOMEN. SEPTIMI.

1. Sarah Bache.....	12	3. Charlotte Saunders Cushman.	45
2. Anne Bradstreet.....	3	4. Pocahontas Rolfe.....	25

Complete Roster of Hall of Fame.

Following is a complete list of the names elected to the Hall of Fame in 1900, 1905 and 1910, together with the number of electors* who supported each name:

1900.	John Adams, statesman	62
1900.	John James Audubon, scientist	67
1900.	Henry Ward Beecher, teacher	64
1900.	William Ellery Channing, teacher	58
1900.	Henry Clay, statesman	74
1900.	Peter Cooper, septimus	69
1900.	Jonathan Edwards, teacher	82
1900.	Ralph Waldo Emerson, author	87
1900.	David Glasgow Farragut, soldier	79
1900.	Benjamin Franklin, statesman	94
1900.	Robert Fulton, scientist	86
1900.	Ulysses S. Grant, soldier	93
1900.	Asa Gray, scientist	51
1900.	Nathaniel Hawthorne, author	73
1900.	Washington Irving, author	83
1900.	Thomas Jefferson, statesman	91
1900.	James Kent, jurist	65
1900.	Robert Edward Lee, soldier	68
1900.	Abraham Lincoln, statesman	96
1900.	Henry Wadsworth Longfellow, author	85
1900.	Horace Mann, teacher	67
1900.	John Marshall, jurist	91
1900.	Samuel Finley Breese Morse, scientist	82
1900.	George Peabody, septimus	74
1900.	Joseph Story, jurist	64
1900.	Gilbert Charles Stuart, septimus	52
1900.	George Washington, statesman	97
1900.	Daniel Webster, statesman	96
1900.	Eli Whitney, scientist	69
1905.	John Quincy Adams, statesman	60
1905.	Louis Agassiz, scientist	83
1905.	Alexander Hamilton, statesman	88
1905.	John Paul Jones, soldier	55
1905.	James Russell Lowell, author	59

* The total number of votes cast in 1900 was 97; in 1905, 95; and in 1910, 97.

1905.	Mary Lyon, teacher	59
1905.	James Madison, statesman	56
1905.	Maria Mitchell, scientist	48
1905.	William Tecumseh Sherman, soldier	58
1905.	Emma Willard, teacher	50
1905.	John Greenleaf Whittier, author	53
1910.	George Bancroft, author	53
1910.	Phillips Brooks, teacher	60
1910.	William Cullen Bryant, author	59
1910.	James Fenimore Cooper, author	62
1910.	Oliver Wendell Holmes, author	69
1910.	Andrew Jackson, statesman	53
1910.	John Lothrop Motley, author.....	51
1910.	Edgar Allan Poe, author	69
1910.	Harriet Beecher Stowe, author	74
1910.	Frances E. Willard, social worker	55
1910.	Roger Williams, statesman	64

Method of Election.

The method of electing names for the Hall of Fame is, briefly, as follows. Every five years New York University invites nominations from the public in general. Any name that is seconded by a member of the University Senate is submitted to the electors. The electors are a body of about 100 men throughout the country chosen by the Senate as professors or writers of history or as especially interested in the same.

The University Senate, 1910.

The University Senate in 1910 was composed as follows:

The Chancellor of the University (vacant).

The Syndic, John H. MacCracken, Ph. D.

Francis Hovey Stoddard, Ph. D., Dean, and Marshall S. Brown, M. A., Professor of the University College.

Clarence D. Ashley, LL. D., Dean, and Frank A. Erwin, M. A., J. D., Professor of the School of Law.

Egbert Le Fevre, M. D., Sc. D., LL. D., Dean, and Joseph D. Bryant, M. D., LL. D., Professor of the School of Medicine.

Thomas M. Balliet, Ph. D., Dean, and James E. Lough, Ph. D., Professor of the School of Pedagogy.

Daniel W. Hering, Ph. D., LL. D., Dean, and Lawrence A. McLouth, B. A., Professor of the Graduate School.

Charles H. Snow, Sc. D., Dean, and Thomas W. Edmondson, Ph. D., Professor of the School of Applied Science.

Joseph French Johnson, D. C. S., Dean, and Leon Brummer, C. P. A., Professor of the School of Commerce, Accounts and Finance.

Honorary and Advisory Members: President Henry A. Buttz, D. D., LL. D., Drew Theological Seminary; Very Rev. John P. Chidwick, D. D., President of St. Joseph's Seminary, Dunwoodie, Yonkers; President Francis Brown, D. D., LL. D., Union Theological Seminary; Very Rev. W. L. Robbins, D. D., Dean of the General Theological Seminary; President John Preston Searle, D. D., New Brunswick Reformed Theological Seminary; and Dean Solomon Schecter, Litt. D., Jewish Theological Seminary of America.

Electors of the Hall of Fame, 1910.

The electors of the Hall of Fame in 1910 were as follows:

UNIVERSITY OR COLLEGE PRESIDENTS.

E. A. Alderman, D. C. L., LL. D., University of Virginia.

James B. Angell, LL. D., University of Michigan.

Guy P. Benton, LL. D., Miami University.

William H. Crawford, D. D., Allegheny College.

Charles W. Dabney, LL. D., University of Cincinnati.

James R. Day, S. T. D., LL. D., Syracuse University.

Clyde A. Duniway, Ph. D., University of Montana.

W. H. P. Faunce, D. D., LL. D., Brown University.

Arthur T. Hadley, LL. D., Yale University.

Charles C. Harrison, LL. D., University of Pennsylvania.

Caroline Hazard, A. M., Litt. D., Wellesley College.

Albert Ross Hill, LL. D., University of Missouri.

William De Witt Hyde, D. D., LL. D., Bowdoin College.

Edmund J. James, LL. D., University of Illinois.

David Starr Jordan, M. D., Ph. D., LL. D., Leland Stanford University.

Harry P. Judson, LL. D., University of Chicago.

J. H. Kirkland, Ph. D., LL. D., Vanderbilt University.

Abbott Lawrence Lowell, LL. D., Harvard University.

Samuel B. McCormick, LL. D., University of Pittsburgh.

Cyrus Northrup, LL. D., University of Minnesota.
 Ira Remsen, Ph. D., LL. D., Johns Hopkins University.
 James M. Taylor, D. D., LL. D., Vassar College.
 M. Carey Thomas, LL. D., Bryn Mawr College.
 Charles F. Thwing, D. D., LL. D., Western Reserve University.
 Charles R. Van Hise, LL. D., University of Wisconsin.
 Robert S. Woodward, Ph. D., LL. D., Carnegie Institution.
 Mary E. Wooley, A. M., Litt. D., Mount Holyoke College.

PROFESSORS OF HISTORY AND SCIENTISTS.

George Burton Adams, Ph. D., Yale University.
 Henry Carter Adams, Ph. D., University of Michigan.
 Charles M. Andrews, Ph. D., Johns Hopkins University.
 Frank W. Blackmar, A. M., Ph. D., University of Kansas.
 Henry E. Bourne, L. H. D., Western Reserve University.
 George J. Brush, Ph. D., LL. D., Yale University.
 George L. Burr, LL. D., Cornell University.
 Edward Channing, Ph. D., Harvard University.
 Richard H. Dabney, A. M., Ph. D., University of Virginia.
 Fred M. Fling, Ph. D., University of Nebraska.
 Charles Warren Hunt, M. E., LL. D., New York city.
 J. Franklin Jameson, Ph. D., Carnegie Institution.
 Andrew C. McLaughlin, A. M., University of Chicago.
 John H. T. McPherson, Ph. D., University of Georgia.
 Anson D. Morse, A. M., LL. D., Amherst College.
 Henry Fairfield Osborn, LL. D., New York city.
 Edward C. Pickering, LL. D., D. Sc., Harvard University.
 Herbert Putnam, LL. D., Washington, D. C.
 Rossiter W. Raymond, Ph. D., LL. D., New York city.
 Lucy Maynard Salmon, A. M., Vassar College.
 Thomas J. Shahan, D. D., J. V. L., Catholic University.
 William M. Sloane, L. H. D., LL. D., Columbia University.
 George F. Swain, LL. D., Harvard University.
 Charles D. Walcott, LL. D., Washington, D. C.
 William H. Welch, M. D., LL. D., Johns Hopkins University.

PUBLICISTS, EDITORS AND AUTHORS.

John S. Billings, M. D., LL. D., New York city.
 William J. Bryan, LL. D., Lincoln, Neb.
 James M. Buckley, D. D., LL. D., Morristown, N. J.
 John W. Burgess, Ph. D., LL. D., New York city.
 Andrew Carnegie, LL. D., New York city.

Joseph H. Choate, LL. D., New York city.
 Jonathan P. Dolliver, LL. D., Ft. Dodge, Iowa.
 George F. Edmunds, LL. D., Philadelphia.
 Charles W. Eliot, LL. D., Cambridge, Mass.
 Charles W. Fairbanks, LL. D., Washington, D. C.
 John W. Foster, LL. D., Washington, D. C.
 Mary Hallock Foote, Grass Valley, Cal.
 Major-General Frederick D. Grant, U. S. A., Washington, D. C.
 Albert B. Hart, Ph. D., Cambridge, Mass.
 Thomas W. Higginson, A. M., LL. D., Cambridge, Mass.
 Robert Underwood Johnson, Ph. D., New York City.
 Robert Todd Lincoln, LL. D., Chicago, Ill.
 Seth Low, LL. D., New York city.
 St. Clair McKelway, LL. D., Brooklyn, N. Y.
 John Bach McMaster, Ph. D., LL. D., Philadelphia.
 Horace Porter, LL. D., New York city.
 Whitelaw Reid, A. M., LL. D., New York city.
 James F. Rhodes, LL. D., Boston, Mass.
 Henry Wade Rogers, A. M., LL. D., New Haven, Conn.
 Albert Shaw, Ph. D., LL. D., New York city.
 William J. Tucker, LL. D., Hanover, N. H.
 Andrew D. White, Ph. D., LL. D., Ithaca, N. Y.
 George Washburn, D. D., LL. D., Boston.

CHIEF JUSTICES.

Melville Weston Fuller, A. M., LL. D., C. J., Washington, D. C.
 Theodore Brantley, C. J., Helena, Montana.
 Joseph A. Breaux, C. J., Baton Rouge, Louisiana.
 Walter Clark, C. J., Raleigh, North Carolina.
 John P. Hobson, C. J., Frankfort, Kentucky.
 Ira B. Jones, C. J., Lancaster, South Carolina.
 Matthew J. Kane, C. J., Guthrie, Oklahoma.
 Edgar A. McCulloch, C. J., Little Rock, Arkansas.
 F. A. Moore, C. J., Salem, Oregon.
 D. E. Morgan, C. J., Bismarck, North Dakota.
 Wallace Mount, Asso. J., Olympia, Washington.
 F. H. Norcross, C. J., Carson City, Nevada.
 James Pennewill, C. J., Dover, Delaware.
 Charles N. Potter, C. J., Cheyenne, Wyoming.
 John W. Rowell, C. J., Montpelier, Vermont.
 Robert F. Taylor, Asso. J., Tallahassee, Florida.
 Charles S. Whiting, C. J., Pierre, South Dakota.

PALISADES AND HIGHLANDS INTER-STATE PARK.

Gift of Mrs. Harriman and Others.

On January 5, 1910, in his annual message to the Legislature, Governor Hughes transmitted, with his recommendation that it be accepted, the offer of Mrs. Mary W. Harriman, widow of the late E. H. Harriman, to convey to the State about 10,000 acres of land in Orange and Rockland counties, to be held in perpetuity as a State park, and also to give the sum of \$1,000,000 in furtherance of the same object.

This munificent gift was tendered upon condition that the sum of \$1,500,000 in addition to Mrs. Harriman's pledge of \$1,000,000, should be raised by private subscription, making \$2,500,000 in private gifts in addition to the 10,000 acres of land; that the State of New York should make an appropriation of equal amount; that the State of New Jersey should make a suitable appropriation; that the proposed erection of a State prison on the Bear Mountain site within the bounds of the proposed park be discontinued; and that the jurisdiction of the Palisades Interstate Park Commissioners should be extended as far north as Newburgh, so as to include the area of the projected park.

In pursuance of the condition requiring the raising of \$1,500,000 by private subscription in addition to Mrs. Harriman's gift, the Palisades Interstate Park Commission secured the following subscriptions:

*J. Pierpont Morgan	\$500,000
*John D. Rockefeller	500,000
*John D. Archbold	50,000
*George W. Perkins	50,000
*Margaret Olivia Sage	50,000
George F. Baker	50,000
Elbert H. Gary	50,000
Frank A. Munsey	50,000
Henry Phipps	50,000
James Stillman	50,000
E. T. Stotesbury	50,000
William Rockefeller	50,000
William K. Vanderbilt	50,000

* Members of the American Scenic and Historic Preservation Society.

Helen Miller Gould	25,000
Ellen F. James and Arthur Curtiss James	25,000
V. Everit Macy	25,000
Cleveland H. Dodge and James McLean.....	25,000

\$1,650,000

Legislation in 1910.

The Legislature of 1910 accepted the tender of these gifts, and in connection therewith passed the following bills:

Chapter 361 of the Laws of 1910, entitled "An act to amend chapter 170 of the Laws of 1900, entitled 'An act to provide for the selection, location, appropriation and management of certain lands along the Palisades of the Hudson river for an Interstate Park, and thereby to preserve the scenery of the Palisades,' as amended by chapter 691 of the Laws of 1906, and relating to the further extension of said Park."

The foregoing act enlarged the jurisdiction of the Palisades Interstate Park Commission so as to include lands which might be acquired by the State on the west side of the Hudson river as far north as the city of Newburgh and extending westward into the Ramapo mountains, excepting the United States military reservation at West Point, the State reservation at Stony Point, and other lands now owned by the State. The object of this bill is to give the Palisades Interstate Park Commission jurisdiction over the lands which might be purchased in connection with those given by Mrs. Harriman.

Chapter 362 of the Laws of 1910, entitled "An act to accept a gift upon certain conditions from Mary W. Harriman to the people of the State of New York of land in the counties of Orange and Rockland for the purpose of a State Park, and the gift of the sum of \$1,000,000 for the extension and improvement thereof, and designating the Commissioners of the Palisades Park as the Commission to receive and administer such gifts, and enlarging the powers and extending the jurisdiction of such Commission for that purpose."

The object of the foregoing act is sufficiently stated in its title.

Chapter 363 of the Laws of 1910, entitled "An act making provision for issuing bonds to an amount not exceeding \$2,500,000,

for the use of the Commissioners of the Palisades Interstate Park in the extension and improvement of the Park under its jurisdiction as from time to time such Park may exist, and providing for the submission of the same to the people, to be voted upon at the general election to be held in the year 1910."

The object of the foregoing bill was to comply with one of the conditions upon which Mrs. Harriman made her gift, namely, that the State should appropriate \$2,500,000 to match the gift of an equal amount by herself and others before mentioned. Inasmuch as the amount named in the bill exceeded a million dollars, it was necessary to submit the proposition to the electors of the State for their approval before it became valid.

Chapter 364 of the Laws of 1910, entitled "An act authorizing the abandonment for prison purposes of a tract of land situated on the west side of the Hudson river in the counties of Orange and Rockland and conferring jurisdiction thereover upon the Commissioners of the Palisades Interstate Park."

The object of the foregoing bill was to comply with another condition of Mrs. Harriman's gift which required the abandonment of the so-called Bear Mountain site for the new Sing Sing prison in the northern part of Rockland county and southern part of Orange county on the west side of the Hudson, near the Harriman property.

Chapter 365 of the Laws of 1910, entitled "An act to authorize the Commission on new prisons to select and purchase another site for the new state prison to take the place of Sing Sing, and to use money for such purpose heretofore appropriated to said Commission."

The purpose of the foregoing bill, as indicated in its title, was to provide another site for the prison, the work on which had already been begun at Bear Mountain. Subsequently the State acquired another site near Wingdale, Dutchess county, for the new prison which is to be called the Harlem prison.

Bond Issue Approved by Popular Vote.

With a view to arousing public sentiment in favor of the proposition for the issuing of bonds as provided in chapter 363, the

Society, on October 25, 1910, widely distributed a circular embodying the substance of the foregoing facts and saying:

"At a meeting of the Board of Trustees held last evening, it was voted to request the members of this Society, the editors of the public press and all other public-spirited citizens to use their influence to secure an affirmative vote by the electors of the State, at the approaching election November 8, 1910, upon the referendum which will be submitted to the people in the following words:

" ' Proposition Number One: Shall chapter 363 of the Laws of 1910, entitled "An Act making provision for issuing bonds to the amount not exceeding \$2,500,000, for the use of the Commissioners of the Palisades Park in the extension and improvement of the Park under their jurisdiction as from time to time such park may exist, and providing for a submission of the same to the people, to be voted upon at the general election to be held in 1910," be approved? ' "

" This is a nonpartisan proposition, directly in the interest of the public welfare, having for its object the acceptance of the generous gift of Mrs. Harriman and others of a great public park on the Hudson river. * * *

" The acceptance of the gift of 10,000 acres of land and \$2,500,000 in money thus depends upon the votes of the people authorizing the appropriation of an equal amount of State funds.

" The rapid growth of population on both sides of the Hudson river and the remarkable progress recently made in the science of propelling vehicles on railways and highways, which promise within fifty years to extend the metropolitan district nearly if not quite to the Highlands, give the proposed park an inestimable value, not only in conserving the natural beauty of the Hudson river and adjacent territory, but also in providing an easily accessible suburban park for the health and happiness of more than half the population of the State who dwell in the cities and towns along the Hudson valley.

" We therefore urge the voters of the State to vote in favor of the proposition, not only that a great public benefit may accrue to the present and future generations, but also that popular appreciation of the generous gifts of the donors may be manifested, and that similar gifts by public-spirited citizens may be encouraged in other parts of the State and country."

We are happy to record that the proposition thus submitted received the approval of the voters at the polls on November 8,

1910, by the vote given hereafter. At the same election, besides choosing State officers generally, the voters also balloted upon a proposed amendment to section 7, article VI of the State constitution, providing for the election of two additional associate judges of the court of appeals; and increasing the salaries of the justices. For purposes of comparison, we give herewith the vote on the bond issue, the vote on the supreme court amendment, and the vote for governor:

COUNTY.	Harriman Park Amendment.		Court of Appeals. Amendment.		For Governor:		All others.
	For	Against	For	Against	Stimson, Rep.	Dix, Dem.	
Albany	8,720	8,325	9,536	8,929	20,499	20,410	1,087
Allegany	639	3,375	634	3,488	4,969	2,964	1,003
Broome	3,674	6,360	3,493	7,176	7,658	6,055	1,759
Cattaraugus ..	1,326	5,287	1,351	5,698	6,352	5,000	1,144
Cayuga	1,354	4,760	1,341	4,902	6,909	5,890	1,337
Chautauqua ...	1,470	3,601	1,345	3,964	10,556	4,898	2,145
Chemung ...	826	2,490	652	2,726	4,700	6,467	969
Chenango ...	1,117	3,800	1,162	4,050	4,296	3,444	752
Clinton	1,544	2,352	1,702	2,529	4,565	4,329	396
Columbia ...	1,265	2,449	1,234	2,805	4,311	4,896	296
Cortland	1,172	3,260	1,121	3,521	3,372	2,350	893
Delaware ...	1,336	4,996	1,265	5,354	5,121	4,920	470
Dutchess	2,925	2,815	2,665	3,417	8,800	9,016	617
Erie	2,918	3,846	2,577	4,257	36,789	40,715	4,536
Essex	1,115	1,868	1,420	2,048	3,447	2,789	306
Franklin	657	2,084	904	2,223	4,065	2,898	406
Fulton	899	1,915	767	2,191	4,840	3,851	1,412
Genesee	587	1,782	575	1,684	4,131	2,897	525
Greene	1,166	2,573	964	2,961	2,963	3,980	375
Hamilton ...	225	374	215	395	420	690	59
Herkimer ...	980	2,309	942	2,672	6,332	5,862	663
Jefferson ...	1,569	6,732	1,524	7,176	8,153	6,547	1,838
Kings	81,904	34,360	78,639	44,143	81,467	106,737	24,367
Lewis	534	3,381	544	3,611	2,682	2,739	547
Livingston ..	1,185	3,049	1,238	3,182	4,033	3,606	447
Madison	1,428	3,733	1,301	4,080	5,116	3,746	679
Monroe	2,041	2,679	1,868	2,727	26,456	21,111	3,362
Montgomery ..	1,468	2,731	1,277	2,993	5,962	5,873	407
Nassau	4,317	5,320	4,197	5,620	7,222	7,741	708
New York ...	121,855	32,983	113,509	47,467	97,233	165,919	37,996
Niagara	2,147	4,166	2,007	4,458	8,941	8,619	792
Oneida	3,250	7,526	2,838	8,087	14,641	15,523	1,507
Onondaga ...	4,334	7,923	4,164	8,930	21,366	16,514	3,557
Ontario	1,825	4,523	1,938	4,864	6,020	5,263	330
Orange	5,789	3,369	4,185	4,871	10,982	10,718	789
Orleans	382	940	388	939	3,759	2,553	374
Oswego	1,909	4,662	2,022	4,855	8,323	5,822	1,152
Otsego	1,717	5,003	1,718	5,346	5,875	5,593	485
Putnam	1,000	645	925	799	1,662	1,524	89
Queens	13,868	7,446	13,453	9,288	13,970	22,283	7,287
Rensselaer ..	2,325	2,759	1,929	3,426	13,989	13,730	1,176
Richmond ...	4,250	2,109	3,950	2,948	5,057	8,050	1,178
Rockland ...	3,542	1,280	2,754	1,984	3,216	4,380	429

COUNTY.	Harriman Park Amendment.		Court of Appeals. Amendment.		For Governor: Stimson, Dix,		All others.
	For	Against	For	Against	Rep.	Dem.	
St. Lawrence.	2,851	6,118	3,338	6,421	10,027	5,717	776
Saratoga . . .	3,450	4,953	3,135	5,766	6,524	7,084	784
Schenectady .	1,048	1,494	1,405	1,762	7,080	6,576	3,581
Schoharie . . .	637	3,329	858	3,463	2,945	3,621	249
Schuyler . . .	620	1,871	661	1,867	1,877	1,792	169
Seneca	1,128	2,200	1,108	2,412	2,911	3,028	238
Steuben	1,515	7,167	1,466	7,424	8,317	8,008	1,223
Suffolk	5,170	4,385	5,159	4,751	7,247	7,330	1,050
Sullivan . . .	1,546	2,876	1,315	3,353	3,305	3,982	264
Tioga	1,011	3,045	966	3,262	3,016	2,680	289
Tompkins . . .	801	2,751	744	2,865	3,813	3,552	712
Ulster	4,019	6,421	4,725	5,226	9,054	9,090	646
Warren	1,562	2,835	1,656	3,070	4,126	3,605	398
Washington .	2,304	3,976	2,338	4,368	6,110	4,117	528
Wayne	798	3,072	891	3,212	6,138	4,447	365
Westchester .	21,038	7,223	18,937	10,205	22,331	21,981	2,598
Wyoming . . .	885	2,356	985	2,486	3,790	2,310	319
Yates	344	1,848	380	1,895	2,468	1,868	166
Totals..	349,281	285,910	332,300	332,592	622,299	689,700	125,011

An examination of the foregoing table shows that the counties voting in favor of the proposition were New York, Kings, Queens and Richmond, comprising New York city; Westchester, bordering on New York city and opposite the proposed park; Orange and Rockland, in which the park will lie; Dutchess and Albany, lying on the Hudson river; and Suffolk, at the eastern extremity of Long Island. These counties contain sixty-one per cent. of the population of the State.

The reason why some counties, particularly those remote from the Hudson river, voted adversely on the proposition, was that they regarded the park as of no value to them and were unwilling to increase their taxes for that purpose. This, we feel, is a narrow view to take of such an important subject. Even if the eastern section of the State were the only beneficiary, yet that section contains over half the population of the State and will eventually have physical need of such a park; and it would seem as if there should be sufficient community of interest and sympathy between different sections to lead one to take an interest in the welfare of all. By the same argument New York city and adjacent territory might have opposed the creation of the State reservation at Niagara Falls on the ground that it was of no benefit to their end of the State. As a matter of fact New York city paid about two-thirds of the cost of the Niagara reservation, because it believed

Niagara Falls to be one of the priceless possessions of the whole State; and the same argument applies to the Hudson river and the splendid opportunity for preserving its scenery and providing a breathing place for the rapidly increasing millions of the State's population.

Ceremonies of Conveyance at Bear Mountain.

In anticipation of the favorable vote of the people and the consequent compliance by the State with the conditions of the tender made by Mrs. Harriman and the other donors, ceremonies were held at Bear Mountain on October 29, 1910, at which Mrs. Harriman conveyed to the Palisades Interstate Park Commission the real estate and delivered checks for the money offered by her. At the same time the New Prison Commission turned over the abandoned Bear Mountain prison site to the Interstate Park Commission. An account of these proceedings will be found in Appendix F. This Society was officially represented at the ceremonies by its president. (See plate 15.)

MALDEN-ON-HUDSON.

Of the many evidences of civic devotion displayed in recent years in the Hudson valley, one of much interest was the dedication of a library, museum and recreation hall building in Malden-on-Hudson on November 9, 1910.

Malden is the birthplace of the famous author and diplomat Hon. John Bigelow, who was born there on November 25, 1817, in the old homestead now occupied by his son Poultney Bigelow, Esq. This historic building was erected in 1807. The bricks in the chimneys and foundations and the tiles upon the roof were baked upon the place. (See plate 16.)

Malden was settled in 1807 by John Bigelow's father, Asa Bigelow, who was the first of that name to leave New England and seek his fortunes in what at that time seemed to be the west. The Bigelows came over in 1630 from Wrentham in Suffolk and settled at Watertown near Boston, Mass., where the original Bigelow became conspicuous amongst his fellows by holding important civic offices, and also a military warrant in King Philip's War.

The library, museum and recreation hall, which was dedicated on November 9, 1910, was erected in 1845 by members of the Bigelow family who had intended it for an annex to the Presbyterian Church which for many years was the only house of worship in Malden. This building was bought from the Presbytery by the venerable statesman and by him given to his son Poultney, who has converted it into an undenominational center of civic interest for town meetings, lectures and concerts. In the upper story is an interesting library and art collection. In the evenings the building is a meeting place for the Rip Van Winkle Club of Malden. Over the main entrance is a conspicuous plaque telling the wayfarer that this house is dedicated: "To the Glory of God and the welfare of Malden."

At the dedication exercises, Mr. Poultney Bigelow presided and three clergymen representing as many different religious denominations participated. The hall was densely crowded with enthusiastic neighbors.

The building is of massive timbers with a red tile roof close to and facing the Homestead building. It is the only public building with a red tile roof, and is easily recognized by the interested traveler.

PRESERVATION OF HISTORIC BUILDINGS AND PLACES.

Billogg House on Staten Island.

During the past year original efforts have been made or former efforts renewed for the preservation of several places of historic interest in the State. With some of these this Society has been identified and with some it has not. For the sake of the record, all are here mentioned.

On March 21, 1911, the Hon. Howard R. Bayne introduced in the State Senate and on May 4 the Hon. Wm. A. Shortt introduced in the Assembly a bill for the preservation of the ancient Billogg House in Tottenville at the extreme southern end of Staten Island (Richmond county). The bill provides that upon the recommendation of the Philemon Literary and Historical Association, the Commissioners of the Land Office may acquire

the Billopp House and about twelve and one-half acres of land "for the benefit of the people of the State of New York as an historic landmark and for educational and patriotic purposes." The bill appropriates \$35,000, or so much thereof as may be necessary for the purpose, and makes the Philemon Literary and Historical Society, the Staten Island Chapter of the Daughters of the American Revolution and the Richmond County Chapter of the Daughters of the American Revolution custodians for the State.* The exact date of the erection of this old stone building is not known, but popular tradition places it in 1668, the year in which the manor of Bentley was granted to Captain Christopher Billopp. The project to save this building has been endorsed many times by this Society and Senator Bayne's bill of 1911 received the formal endorsement of our trustees on March 27, 1911. References to the interesting history of this building will be found in previous reports of this Society, and a picture of it will be found in our Eighth Annual Report (1903). A reference to Captain Billopp will be found under the heading of "Totten-ville or Bentley" on page 96 of the present report.

Verplanck Mansion near Fishkill Landing.

During the past year we have again received urgent solicitations to take steps to preserve the old Verplanck Mansion, which stands on the high ground of the eastern bank of the Hudson river about a mile and a half north of Fishkill Landing. A picture of this house and a reference to its history will be found at pages 57-60 of our Twelfth Annual Report (1907). The title to this property is still in the Verplanck family, but it can be purchased at the present time on very favorable terms. The site, with its fine prospect toward the Hudson river, is a magnificent one, and its historic associations, as we have said in former reports, are very interesting. Owing to the many other projects of a similar nature pressed upon the attention of the Legislature, we have not hitherto felt warranted in recommending a State appropriation for the purpose, but we have hoped that private philanthropy would provide the means eventually for saving this old landmark of the Colonial and Revolutionary periods.

* The bill failed to pass either house.

Van Buren Estate in Kinderhook.

On March 13, 1911, the Hon. Randall N. Saunders of Claverack, N. Y., introduced in the Assembly a bill "to provide for the acquisition and preservation of the historic building and estate known as Lindenwald, situate in the town of Kinderhook, county of Columbia, and making an appropriation therefor." The bill authorizes the Commissioners of the Land Office to purchase the brick building in Kinderhook which was occupied by Martin Van Buren, eighth president of the United States, during his lifetime, together with the farming and other lands belonging thereto, containing about 200 acres, and to preserve them "for the benefit of the people of the State of New York as an historic landmark and for educational and patriotic purposes." The bill permits the leasing of all but thirty acres for farming purposes, the proceeds to be applied to the maintenance and preservation of the building. The bill appropriates \$40,000.*

Fort Crailo in Rensselaer.

In our Thirteenth Annual Report (1908) we referred to the claims of the ancient building in the city of Rensselaer, known as Fort Crailo, for preservation as an historic monument. As stated in the report above cited, the building is claimed to date back to 1642, but our best information does not carry it back prior to 1663. It has many historic associations. During the past year, we have endeavored to secure additional information concerning this building but with unsatisfactory results. We are informed that the building is owned by Mrs. Van Rensselaer Strong of New Brunswick, N. J., and that its assessed valuation is \$3,600. This ancient building has long been an object of interest to antiquarians and historians and it is to be hoped that eventually it may be preserved.

Schuyler Mansion in Albany.

During the present Legislative session our Society took an active part in the movement for the preservation of the Schuyler Mansion in Albany, and we are happy to record that the bill for this good work has already become a law.

* The bill failed to become a law.

On February 16, 1911, the Hon. Ralph W. Thomas of Hamilton, introduced in the Senate a bill entitled "An act to provide for the acquisition and preservation of the historic building known as the Schuyler Mansion, situate in the city of Albany, and making an appropriation therefor." It authorizes the Commissioners of the Land Office to purchase the house in Albany which was occupied by Major-General Philip Schuyler during his lifetime, together with the land on which it stands, "to be preserved for the benefit of the people of the State of New York as an historic landmark and for educational and patriotic purposes." The bill appropriates \$40,000 for the purpose.

The bill passed the Legislature and became a law (chapter 38 of the Laws of 1911) with Governor Dix's signature on March 22.

The building in question, erected in 1761-1762, is situated on the west side of Clinton street between Catherine and Delaware streets. According to the foregoing act, it has a frontage of 183 feet and ten and one-quarter inches on Clinton street and a depth of 249 feet and five inches on Catherine street.

Shortly after General Schuyler's death in 1804, the building passed out of the possession of the Schuyler family, and after successive ownerships was acquired by the Roman Catholic Church. At the present time it is occupied by the St. Francis de Sales Asylum. The institution having outgrown the accommodations of the house, it was determined recently either to enlarge it or destroy the old house and build a larger one on the same site. Upon learning of this, various patriotic, historical and civic societies began the movement for the preservation of the building by the State. Among the most zealous workers in the cause were Miss Georgina Schuyler and Miss Louisa Lee Schuyler of New York city, who are lineal descendants of General Schuyler.

The patriotic interest of the present owners of the building is indicated in the following letter written by Bishop Thomas M. A. Burke of Albany, before the passage of the preservation bill:

"We are aware of the historic importance of the structure and that it is, beyond all doubt, the most celebrated of the few surviving buildings of Colonial and Revolutionary times, and that it has memories and events connected with it of greatest interest. It would be a calamity that this building should be dismantled

or destroyed, yet such will surely be its fate in the very near future unless it is taken over by the State or by the patriotic societies. During the years in which we have owned it we have been most careful to preserve it intact because of its historic interest, and we have not changed or altered the building itself in any particular, although we have built quite extensively on the grounds. The pressing exigencies of our diocesan work render it imperative that we shall extend the usefulness of our Frances Elliot Austin Maternity Hospital and Infant Home. We have no means of doing so except by using the Schuyler mansion for that purpose, which would necessitate extensive structural changes, if not demolition.

"We have postponed doing this work for two years last past at the request of many patriotic men and women who are interested in the preservation of that historic building, but we can wait no longer.

"We will not sell the mansion, except to the State or to the patriotic societies, so as to preserve its historic integrity. To either we are willing to sell the building and grounds for the sum of \$40,000, provided it be purchased by July 1, 1911."

An interesting brochure by Miss Georgina Schuyler entitled "The Schuyler Mansion," which gives the many historical associations of the old building, contributed materially to the saving of the building.

Glen-Sanders House in Scotia.

Under the leadership of the Schenectady County Historical Society, of which H. G. Reist, Esq., of Schenectady, is president, an earnest effort has been made during the past few months to arouse interest in the preservation of the Glen-Sanders house in Scotia, on the north bank of the Mohawk river, opposite Schenectady. The original house on this site was built in 1658 by Alexander Lindsay Glen. As the river encroached upon it, it was torn down and the present building erected in 1713, was constructed near by. In the present building, much of the material of the first, including the massive timbers with their wooden pins, the doors and much of the wood work was incorporated.

Alexander Lindsay Glen, called by the Dutch, Sander Leendertse Glen, was a native of Scotland and gave the name of Scotia

in memory of the country of his birth. He was one of the original settlers of Schenectady and a prominent man in his day. Various members of his family were also prominent in public affairs, civic, military and religious.

His son John Alexander Glen, known as "Major Coudre" built the present house. He was also prominent in his generation, performing notable service in protecting the settlers from the Indians.

John Alexander Glen's son, Col. Jacob Glen, commanded the militia west of Albany and was a great friend of Sir William Johnson.

Col. Glen's daughter Deborah married John Sanders of Albany, and thus the name Sanders became associated with the house.

For nearly two centuries the same family has occupied this house, and it is filled with household articles and curiosities of past generations. Among its many historic associations are visits from Sir William Johnson and George Washington. Despite the fact that it is private property, many people from different parts of the country visit the house.

The desirability for action to preserve the building is due to the fact that the present owners will probably not hold the property long. The village of Scotia is already encroaching on the land, and the attractiveness of the surroundings will be spoiled if they are not protected now.

Saratoga Battlefield in Stillwater.

On April 27, 1911, the Hon. Edgar T. Brackett of Saratoga Springs, introduced in the Senate a bill entitled "An act to provide for the acquisition and care of lands to commemorate the battle of Saratoga and making an appropriation therefor." The bill authorizes the Commissioners of the Land Office to acquire lands in the town of Stillwater, Saratoga county, constituting the battlefield of Saratoga, or such portion thereof as they deem appropriate, for commemorating, in connection with the Saratoga monument already erected, the battle of October 17, 1777, which resulted in the surrender of Burgoyne. The bill provides that the State Comptroller shall have jurisdiction over the property acquired and may employ a custodian at an expense not exceeding

\$250 per annum. The bill appropriates \$25,000, of which \$24,000 is designed for purchase of the premises and \$1,000 for improvement.*

Another Saratoga Battlefield Bill.

On May 3, 1911, the Hon. William M. Martin of Saratoga, introduced in the Assembly a bill "to provide for the marking, acquisition, restoration and preservation of the sites in the counties of Saratoga and Washington rendered historic by events leading up to and including the surrender of General Burgoyne in the War of the American Revolution." The bill provides that the Governor may appoint for the purpose stated in the title of the bill a commission of three members to be known as "the Commissioners for the Preservation of the Saratoga Battleground." It authorizes them to acquire sites on the battlefield and appropriates \$25,000 for the purpose.†

Bennington Battlefield.

On May 3, 1911, the Hon. Victor M. Allen of Petersburg, introduced in the Senate and on May 4 the Hon. Bradford R. Lansing of Rensselaer, introduced in the Assembly a bill "to provide for the acquisition and preservation of the historic tract or parcel of land known as the Bennington battlefield, situate in the town of Hoosick, in the county of Rensselaer, and making an appropriation therefor." The bill authorizes the Commissioners of the Land Office to acquire two tracts of land, one of 173 acres and another of thirty-five acres, on the Walloomsac river, on the highway leading from Walloomsac, N. Y., to North Bennington, Vt., "for the benefit of the people of the State of New York as an historic landmark and for educational and patriotic purposes." The bill appropriates \$30,000.‡

Herkimer House in Danube.

On January 18, 1911, the Hon. G. H. Wende of Buffalo, introduced in the Assembly and on January 23, 1911, the Hon. Felix J.

* The bill passed both houses but Governor Dix vetoed it.

† This bill failed to pass either house.

‡ This bill failed to pass either house.

Sanner of Brooklyn, introduced in the Senate a bill entitled "An act to provide for the acquisition and preservation of the historic house and grounds formerly owned and occupied by General Nicholas Herkimer in the town of Danube, in the county of Herkimer, and making an appropriation therefor." The bill provides that the Commissioners of the Land Office may, upon the recommendation of the German American Alliance and the Colonel Feeter Chapter of the Daughters of the American Revolution, purchase for the State the farm lands and buildings owned and occupied as a home by General Nicholas Herkimer in his lifetime, now known as the Herkimer farm, in the town of Danube, to be preserved "for the benefit of the people of the State of New York as an historic landmark and for educational and patriotic purposes." The bill names the German American Alliance and the Colonel Feeter Chapter, D. A. R. as joint custodians. The bill appropriates \$15,000.*

Sullivan Monument Near Elmira.

On April 20, 1911, the Hon. John F. Murtaugh of Elmira, introduced in the Senate and on April 21, the Hon. Robert P. Bush of Horseheads, introduced in the Assembly a bill entitled "An act to provide for the acquisition of land surrounding and the preservation of the historic Sullivan monument situate near the city of Elmira in the county of Chemung and making an appropriation therefor." The bill authorizes the Commissioners of the Land Office to acquire for the people of the State the land surrounding the Newtown battlefield monument, known as Sullivan's monument, located on a hill to the southeast of the city of Elmira, and to preserve and improve it as a park "for the benefit of the people of the State of New York as an historic landmark and for educational and patriotic purposes." The bill appropriates \$10,000 for the purpose.†

The Newtown battle monument above referred to is about six miles from Elmira and was erected in 1879. It is a massive tower-like structure of stone, and bears the following inscription:

"Near this spot, on Sunday the 29th day of August, 1779, the forces under Joseph Brant were met and defeated by the Ameri-

* This bill passed both houses but Governor Dix vetoed it.

† This bill did not pass either house.

cans under the command of Major-General John Sullivan. 1779-1879."

Other references to incidents of Sullivan's terrible expedition against the Indians will be found in pages 265-309 of our Fourteenth Annual Report (1909) in the appendix entitled "Kanadesaga."

POETRY INSPIRED BY SCENERY.

A Foreign Poem on the Hudson in Goethe's Day.

During the Hudson-Fulton celebration in 1909, which stirred up interest not only in the history of the Hudson river, but also in the developments of science and literature with reference to that stream, Dr. Perry Worden* mentioned in the New York Evening Post of October 2, 1909, a poem on the Hudson river which, in the course of his many years' study in Weimar, he found in an amateur journal edited by Ottilie von Goethe, daughter-in-law of the great German poet. With the co-operation of Prof. Worden and of Dr. Paul Ortlepp, librarian at Weimar, we have secured a complete copy of this early poem, which was written in French, and give it herewith.

It will be remembered that Goethe spent the last fifty-six years of his life in Weimar, where he died in 1832 at the age of eighty-two. Ottilie was the widow of his son August, who died in 1830. She was devoted to the great poet and ministered to him to the end of his life.

In 1830, the year of her bereavement, Ottilie von Goethe and a number of her friends by way of diversion began an amateur publication called *Chaos*, which was issued every Sunday, and which was made up of aphorisms, poems, stories and correspondence contributed by German, French and English ladies and gentlemen residing or visiting in the German Athens. At first, *Chaos* appeared in manuscript form, until the volume of the contributions made it necessary to have recourse to the printing press. The circulation of the little publication was confined to the actual contributors, and the strictest anonymity was maintained with reference to the contributions. It is therefore impossible to name

*Author of "Weimar: The Homes and Haunts of Goethe and Schiller."

the author of the following poem, which was published in the thirty-ninth issue of *Chaos*. This poem appeared during Goethe's lifetime, and may have been read to him by his daughter-in-law for his entertainment. If Goethe ever heard it, it would be interesting to know what comment he made upon the metaphor which is employed and which represents a voyager falling in love with the Hudson and flying away with her (the Hudson) to the heart of a desert, etc. The poem is not without beauty, however, and is especially interesting as part of the very small sum-total of foreign literature about the Hudson river prior to 1840. The poem in the original French is as follows:

L'HUDSON.

SOUVENIR D' AMÉRIQUE.

1. Mon pied impatient avait touché la plage;
La brise du matin ridait le flot d'azur;
Le *Steamboat* enfumé s'éloignait du rivage,
Noblement couronné de son panache obscur.
2. Les golphes de l'*Hudson*, emallés de cent voiles,
Devant moi de *Catskill* baignait le pied riant;
Sur ses faites brisés mouraient quelques étoiles;
Et l'aigle de ses bois volait vers l'Orient.
3. Sur ce tableau, semblable à la gaze légère,
Une molle vapeur voilait le nouveau jour;
Et l'Indien, savourant la suave atmosphère,
De son Eté natal saluait le retour.*
4. Là, parmi ces grands bois mon oeil, avide, effleure
Ce portique . . . Elle est là . . . j'attendrai son réveil.
Elle est là . . . que de fois j'ai rêvé sa demeure.
Elle dort . . . qu'un doux songe enchante son sommeil.
5. Elle va donc encor m'apparaître, aussi belle
Que lorsque sur ces flots suivant l'heureux hazard
Pour la première fois mon coeur battit pour Elle,
Et mon regard charmé, saisit son doux regard.
6. Du sol Américain, fleur, suave et brillante,
De tes parfums d'amour que j'aime à m'enivrer.
Voyageur, sur ce bord jeté par la tourmente,
Pour moi le vent d'espoir semble ici se lever.

* L'Eté Indien. On nomme ainsi quelques jours chauds vaporeux qui en Amérique, marquent d'ordinaire le milieu de l'automne.

7. Doux rêve de mon coeur, si mon âme oppressée
Par un aveu timide osait se dévoiler!
Et si tes yeux d'azur ou ta bouche adorée
D'un regard ou d'un mot le daignaient agréer!
8. Enfant deshérité d'une terre asservie,
Lieux par Elle enchantés, vous seriez mon pays;
Pour vous, accens nouveaux de sa langue chérie,
J'oublirais les accens dans mon enfance appris.
9. Avec eux du passé j'oublirais les alarmes;
Pour Elle j'oublirais l'autre rive des mers;
Dans mes bras palpitans j'enlacerais ses charmes,
Et je l'emporterais jusqu'au fond des déserts.
10. Là sur le bord boisé d'une immense savane,
Dont un ciel toujours pur éclaire le gazon,
Les mains de son amant bâtiraient sa cabane
Aux rives d'un grand lac, ou d'un fleuve sans nom.
11. A l'ombre d'un platane, auprès d'une fontaine,
Mon coeur contre son coeur, et ma main dans sa main,
Avec les doux parfums de la brise lointaine
Mon sein respirerait les soupirs de son sein.
12. Puis, quand viendrait l'hyver, sous nôtre toit de chaume,
Sur un siège de mousse assis à son côté,
A la lueur d'un pin dont brûlerait le baume,
Mon oeil dans son oeil bleu boirait la volupté.
13. Quoi! Je verrais mon fils balbutiant: mon père,
Par un tendre baiser se suspendre à son sein;
Et, pressant dans mes bras et l'enfant et la mère,
Je pourrais d'un tel jour rêver le lendemain!
-
14. Allons, ceignons non reins, et dans ma main tremblante
Replaçons sans retard le bâton voyageur:
Dans la rade frémit la nef impatiente,
Des mes trop longs adieux accusant la lenteur.
15. Déjà de l'Occident je sens fraîchir la brise,
Qui du monde nouveau doit m'emporter demain;
Le soleil a doré la flèche de l'église;
Pour la dernière fois montons par ce chemin.
16. Loin du bonheur, loin d'Elle une force inconnue
M'entraîne . . . Pourquoi fuir? . . . Je ne sais, mais fuyons!
Oui, je voux aujourd'huy m'enivrer de sa vue,
Et de sa douce voix recueillir tous les sons.

17. Je veux tous ses traits se gravent dans mon âme,
Et que tous ses accens s'emprennent dans mon coeur,
Pour que le peu de jours que le destin mę trame
Le parent du reflet d'un éclair de bonheur.
18. Puis, quand je voguerai vers un autre rivage,
Quand des échos lointains rediront mes soupirs,
Mon coeur évoquera sa triste et douce image;
Le voyageur, hélas! n'a que des souvenirs!

The foregoing may be translated freely as follows:*

THE HUDSON.

SOUVENIR OF AMERICA.

1. My foot impatient now at last had touched the strand.
The morning breezes rippled o'er the azure flood.
The *Steamboat*, smoking, drew itself away from land,
Crowned nobly by the sable plume which o'er it stood.
2. A hundred sails enameled white the *Hudson's* bays;
And there, beyond, the *Catskills* bathed their laughing feet,
Above their peaks some stars gave forth their fading rays,
And from his woods the eagle flew the sun to greet.
3. Like filmy gauze afloat above this picture rare ▲
A mellow vap'rous mist the new-come day enveiled.
The Indian, relishing the sweet and balmy air,
His native summer, once again returning, hailed.†
4. Among grand forests there mine eager eye surveys
This portico. She's there. Her waking I'll attend.
She's there, as I have dreamed her home in former days.
She sleeps, while visions sweet to sleep enchantment lend.
5. She's going to appear again to me, as fair
As when, upon these waves before I having chanced,
My throbbing heart the first time beat for her, and where
My charmed gaze by her sweet looks became entranced.
6. With fragrance sweet, America breathes from the land
The perfumes of thy love t' intoxicate my mind.
For me, a voyager storm-cast upon this strand,
Here seems to rise the current of Hope's prosp'rous wind.
7. My heart's sweet dream, what if this heavy soul of mine
By timid protest to reveal itself should dare!
And if thine azure eyes, or those dear lips of thine,
By glance or word should deign acceptance to declare!

* Translation by the Secretary of the Society.

† Indian summer. Thus are called some warm misty days which in America distinguish the middle of autumn from the ordinary.

8. Child by a servile land disowned and dispossessed,
With places charmed by Her, my country you shall be.
For you, new accents by her tongue so dear expressed,
I'll now forget those which I learned in infancy.
9. With them from out my mind I'll put all past alarms;
For her, forget the other border of the sea.
Within my throbbing arms I'll close entwine her charms,
And with her even to the desert's depth I'll flee.
10. There, where some great oasis, forest-edged, expands,
And cloudless skies set all the grass below agleam,
Her cottage will be builded by her lover's hands,
By some great lake or close beside some nameless stream.
11. Beside a fountain, underneath a plane tree's shade,
My heart against her heart, my hand in her hand pressed,
Amid the sweet perfumes which distant zephyrs lade,
My breast will breathe again the sighings of her breast.
12. And then, in winter time, within our thatch-roofed cot,
While resting by her side upon a mossy seat,
Illumined by the burning of a pine-tree knot,
Mine eye in her blue eye shall drink delight complete.
13. My lisping son, pronouncing "Father," I shall see
Upon her bosom hanging by a tender kiss,
And pressing both the child and mother close to me
The morrow I can dream from such a day as this.
-
14. Come, let us gird our loins, and in my trembling hands
Let us replace the traveler's staff without delay.
The fretting ship impatient in the harbor stands
Accusing my too long farewells' protracted stay.
15. Already from the west I feel the fresh breeze blow
Which must from this new world take me the coming day.
The sun has gilt the church-spire with its golden glow.
The last time now we make our journey by this way.
16. Afar from joy, afar from Her an unknown might
Deports me. Wherefore fly? I know not, have no choice.
To-day I wish t' intoxicate me with her sight
And gather all the dulcet sounds of her sweet voice.
17. I wish her features in my soul engraved might be;
That all her accents in my heart I might impress;
So that the few days Destiny may weave for me
May be illumined by the light of happiness.
18. Then, when toward another shore my way I trace,
And when some distant echoes shall my sighs send back,
My heart shall conjure up her sad and lovely face —
The voyager has naught but memories, alack!

Poem on Watkins Glen.

We are indebted to Mr. R. L. Bridgman of Boston, Mass., for the following original poem in regard to Watkins Glen:

Broad the waters, bare the mountains
 Ere the earth was clothed in green;
 Fierce the cloudbursts, land dissolving,
 Washing highland to the plain,
 Sweeping continent to sea-floor,
 Lay'r on lay'r imposing wide,
 Age on age the marvel working,
 Earth beneath the sea to hide.

Geologic ages flying
 Sped their years like watch of night;
 Earth, rebellious, still unconquered,
 Spurned the sea and rose to sight.
 Backward fled the flood of ages;
 Upward rose old ocean's floor;
 Torrents still from heav'n descended,
 Seaward rushed with mighty roar.

Land and water strove in conflict,
 Water bold, aggressive, swift,
 Land impassive, massive, sullen,
 Helpless where the foe made rift.
 Concentrating fierce battalions,
 Water drove a headlong charge,
 Burst through land's quick-routed phalanx,
 Chiseled deep a gaping gorge.

Higher still and ever higher
 Rose the lay'rs of sea-floor old;
 Deeper still and ever deeper
 Cut the water swift and bold.
 Naked earth put on green mantle;
 Wilderness was glad in man;
 Ever roared the falling torrent,
 Wonder to barbarian.

Down the deepcut gorge descending
 Reads new man the tale of old;
 All his years of thrilling action
 Nothing count to years untold.
 Leaf on leaf of rock before him
 Age on age of past records;
 Ponderous book, God-writ, lays open
 Aeons full of deeds, not words.

Down the gorge man's wond'ring footsteps
Ever marvels new espy;
Thick the book, beyond accounting,
Cliff from torrent-bed to sky.
Gray and green the leaves' cut edges;
Moss and fern have dwelt here long;
Old were they when man first saw them,
When they heard the Indian song.

Cupworn shape reveals long ages,
Water cutting sharp as steel,
Wearing stone like potter shaping
Plastic earth on spinning wheel.
Deep the pools in rock outhollowed —
Thought of gorge's Maker sign —
Gay the falls and cascades frequent,
Sparkling down the tortuous line.

Deeper yet and ever deeper
Awed beholders count God's leaves,
Down the slopes and dizzy stairways,
Under constant dripping eaves,
Every step a vision backward
Into Time's unfathomed past,
Still descending lower, lower,
Puny mind 'mid concepts vast.

Human strength is weary, staggered;
Human mind, benumbed, despairs;
Downward still the cascade plunges,
Deeper lead the diving stairs.
Ev'ry step an aeon reckons;
Ev'ry leaf from ocean's floor
Back eternally, still backward,
Opens ages' earlier door.

Past to past by ages adding,
Wonders thick the tired mind pall;
Downward still the gorge goes plunging,
Endless seeming in its fall.
Still the book of God's unended;
Leaves to leaves each stairway brings,
Tells the readers, awed, confounded,
"Nothing are ye, earthly things."

Portal grand at last attaining,
Leaf-marked cliff is left behind,
But the book remains unfinished;
Uncut leaves await the mind.
Deep-laid pages of rock's volume,
Leaves piled up from depths to sky,
Tell of aeons aeons older,
Jot of past eternity.

SARATOGA SPRINGS STATE RESERVATION.

Condemnation Proceedings Begun.

In our previous reports to the Legislature we have referred to the creation of the Saratoga Springs State Reservation Commission and to the progress of the movement for the acquisition of the mineral springs property for the benefit of the people at large. On account of the important fundamental principles involved and the intrinsic value of the project itself, and also because both in other states of the union and in Europe the reports of this Society have come to be regarded as a source of information upon the subject of State reservations, we feel justified in continuing to take cognizance of the more important proceedings in the development of the Saratoga Springs State Reservation.

The Commissioners of the Saratoga Springs State Reservation are the Hon. George Foster Peabody of New York city, president; Gen. Benjamin F. Tracy of New York city and Hon. Frank N. Godfrey of Olean.*

On February 15, 1911, what was regarded as an epoch in the history of Saratoga was marked by the action of the Commission in filing maps for the acquisition of important spring properties for the State. As soon as these proceedings are consummated, the State will have, including some small interests previously acquired, the following properties:

In Congress Park in the heart of the village, the old Hathorn Spring and the mineral water rights of the Patterson and Putnam Springs.

In High Rock Park, a little more than half a mile to the northward, the High Rock, Seltzer, Magnetic, Peerless, Old Red, Governor and Star Springs.

In Geysers Park, about two miles south of Congress Park, the Champion, Hathorn No. 2, Carlsbad No. 3, Victoria, and Geyser Springs, the Wiswall tract, Williamson property, Young property, and mineral water rights on a contiguous tract.

* The village of Saratoga Springs was authorized in 1910 to issue \$250,000 bonds for park purposes, to be expended by a park commissioner who also has the right to spend \$10,000 a year for maintenance. The park commissioner of the village of Saratoga Springs is Hon. Wm. W. Allerdice, who is working in harmony with the State Commission.

The area of the land included in the above properties, not counting that on which mineral water rights only are taken, is about 100 acres. There are no springs on some of the areas acquired, but they and the mineral water rights of lands contiguous to the springs were taken as a protective measure. The commission also owns a one-sixth interest in the Champion Carbonic Gas Company.

Mineral Properties and Pressure Restored.

On May 1, 1911, the interesting announcement was made in the public press that the proceedings to stop the pumping of water for the purpose of extracting the natural carbonic acid gas had rescued the neighboring springs from permanent injury. This announcement was based on tests made by State Chemist Thomas Conkling.

In the Hathorn spring, which has been most seriously affected by the pumping, a restoration of mineral properties, flow of water and a greatly increased gas pressure were reported when the pumps in adjacent springs were stopped. The State Reservation Commission will withdraw pumps from all the State springs, and is expected soon to take steps toward stopping the gas pumping operations south of the village.

Important Decision by United States Supreme Court.

On March 13, 1911, the United States Supreme Court rendered an important decision in the case of *Stuart Lindsley, Appellant, v. The Natural Carbonic Gas Company, William S. Jackson, Attorney-General of the State of New York, et al.*—an appeal from the Circuit Court of the United States for the Southern district of New York. The decision sustains the constitutionality of the New York law which prohibits the pumping of water from the wells at Saratoga Springs, for the purpose of obtaining and marketing the carbonic acid gas obtained thereby. Stuart Lindsley, the appellant in the case, is a stockholder of one of the four companies engaged in the marketing of the gas. He attacked the constitutionality of the law on the ground that it permitted the marketing of the water and gas together, but not of the gas alone. The enforcement of the law, the court was told, would drive the four companies out of business and leave the manufacturers of carbonic acid gas

in New York a clear field in the sale of gas for such wares as table waters and soda waters.

The law was defended as a protection of a natural resource, it being alleged that the pumping for the purpose of procuring the gas was drying up the neighboring springs valuable for medicinal purposes.

The decision is important not only in its bearing on the preservation of the springs, but also in its effect on the values of property intended to be acquired for the State Reservation. So long as these values were in doubt, the Commission was seriously impeded in its purpose to acquire land for the Reservation.

The decision is so important that we give it herewith in full from an official copy courteously furnished to us by Mr. Justice Vandevanter who rendered the opinion:

“By a bill in equity exhibited in the Circuit Court the appellant, as owner and holder of capital stock and bonds of the Natural Carbonic Gas Company, sought a decree enjoining that company from obeying, and the other defendants from enforcing, a statute of the State of New York, approved May 20, 1908, entitled ‘An act for the protection of the natural mineral springs of the State and to prevent waste and impairment of its natural mineral waters,’ and containing, among others, this provision: ‘Pumping, or otherwise drawing by artificial appliance, from any well made by boring or drilling into rock, that class of mineral waters holding in solution natural mineral salts and an excess of carbonic acid gas, or pumping, or by any artificial contrivance whatsoever in any manner producing an unnatural flow of carbonic acid gas issuing from or contained in any well made by boring or drilling into the rock, for the purpose of extracting, collecting, compressing, liquefying or vending such gas as a commodity otherwise than in connection with the mineral water and the other mineral ingredients with which it was associated, is hereby declared to be unlawful.’ Laws 1908, vol. 2, 1221, ch. 429.

“In addition to what properly may be passed without special mention the bill alleges that the gas company owns twenty-one acres of lands in Saratoga Springs, N. Y., which contain mineral waters of the class specified in the statute; that these waters are percolating waters, not naturally flowing to or upon the surface, and can be reached and lifted to the surface only by means of pumps or other artificial appliances; that the gas company is

engaged in collecting natural carbonic acid gas from these waters and in compressing and selling the gas as a separate commodity; that this business has come to be both large and lucrative, and as a necessary incident to its successful prosecution the gas company has sunk upon its land wells of great depth, made by boring or drilling into the underlying rock, and has fitted these wells with tubing, seals and pumps, whereby it lifts the waters and the gas contained therein to the surface; that these pumps do not exercise any force of compulsion upon waters in or under adjoining lands, but lift to the surface only such waters as flow by reason of the laws of nature into the wells; that when the waters are lifted to the surface the excess of carbonic acid gas therein naturally escapes and is caught and compressed preparatory to its sale, none thereof being wasted and no process being employed to increase the natural separation of the excess of gas from the waters; and that many other land owners in Saratoga Springs have like wells which are operated in a like way with a like purpose.

"It also is alleged that the gas company bottles and sells for drinking purposes and for use by invalids and others all of the mineral waters pumped from its wells 'for which there is any market or demand,' but there is no allegation of the extent of this market or demand, and it was conceded in argument that a large proportion of the waters pumped from the company's wells is not used, but is suffered to run to waste.

"In terms the bills predicates the right to the relief sought upon the claim that the State statute deprives the appellant and others of property without due process of law and denies to them the equal protection of the laws, and therefore is violative of the Fourteenth Amendment to the Constitution of the United States.

"In the Circuit Court the defendants other than the Gas Company demurred to the bill, the demurrers were sustained (170 Fed. 1023) and a decree dismissing the bill was entered, whereupon this appeal was prayed and allowed."

Mr. Justice Vandevanter, having made the foregoing statement, delivered the opinion of the court as follows:

"The statute, against whose enforcement the suit is directed, contains several restrictive provisions more or less directly connected with the purpose suggested by its title, but we are concerned with only the one before set forth, because the Court of

Appeals of the State has pronounced the others invalid, and counsel have treated them as thereby eliminated from the statute and from present consideration.

“Coming to the provision in question, it is necessary to inquire what construction has been put upon it by the highest court of the State, for that construction must be accepted by the courts of the United States and be regarded by them as a part of the provision when they are called upon to determine whether it violates any right secured by the Federal Constitution. *Weightman v. Clark*, 103 U. S. 256, 260; *Morley v. Lake Shore Railway Co.*, 146 U. S. 162, 166; *Olsen v. Smith*, 195 U. S. 333, 342. The Court of Appeals of the State had the statute before it in *Hathorn v. Natural Carbonic Gas Co.*, 194 New York 326, and again in *People v. New York Carbonic Acid Gas Co.*, 196 N. Y. 421, and the elaborate opinions then rendered disclose that the court, having regard to the title of the act and to the doctrine of correlative rights in percolating waters which prevails in that State, as recognized in *Forbell v. City of New York*, 164 N. Y. 522, construed this provision, not as prohibiting the specified acts absolutely or unqualifiedly, but only when the mineral waters are drawn from a source of supply not confined to the lands of the actor, but extending into or through the lands of others, and then only when the draft made upon that source of supply is unreasonable or wasteful, considering that there is a coequal right in all the surface owners to draw upon it. In other words, the court, by processes of interpretation having its approval read into the provision an exception or qualification making it inapplicable where the waters are not drawn from a common source of supply, and also where, if they be drawn from such a source, no injury is done thereby to others having a like right to resort to it.

“As so interpreted, the statute presupposes (1) the existence, in porous rock beneath the lands of several proprietors, of a supply of mineral waters of the class specified; (2) a right in each proprietor to penetrate the underlying rock or natural reservoir and to draw upon the supply therein; and (3) a practice or tendency on the part of the proprietors who exercise this right in the manner and for the purpose specified, that is, by boring or drilling wells into the rock and pumping or artificially drawing the waters for the purpose of collecting and vending the gas as a separate commodity, to make excessive or wasteful drafts upon the common supply to the injury and impairment of the rights of other

proprietors. And what is thus presupposed is treated in several decisions of the courts of the State and in other public papers as having actual existence and as being widely recognized. It is to prevent or avoid the injury and waste suggested that the statute was adopted. It is not the first of its type. One in principle quite like it was considered by this court in *Ohio Oil Co. v. Indiana*, 177 U. S. 190. There, oil and gas in a commingled form were contained in a stratum of porous rock, underlying the lands of many owners, and because these fluids were inclined to shift about in the common reservoir in obedience to natural laws, one surface owner could not excessively or wastefully exercise his right of tapping the reservoir and drawing from its contents without injuriously affecting the like right of each of the others. The oil and the gas were both of value, but as the greater value attached to the oil, some surface owners, whose wells tapped the common reservoir and brought to the surface both oil and gas, collected and used only the oil and suffered the gas to disperse in the air. This and kindred practices resulted in the adoption of a statute declaring them unlawful, and the validity of the statute was called in question. The objections urged against it were much the same as those now pressed upon our attention, but upon full consideration, all were overruled. After commenting upon the peculiar attributes of oil and gas which cause them to be excepted from the principles generally applied to minerals having a fixed situs, and also upon the prevailing rule that each surface owner in an oil and gas area has the exclusive right on his own land to seek the oil and gas in the reservoir beneath, but has no fixed or certain ownership of them until he reduces them to actual possession, this court said:

“They [meaning the surface owners] could not be absolutely deprived of this right which belongs to them without a taking of private property. But there is a coequal right in them all to take from a common source of supply the two substances which, in the nature of things, are united, though separate. It follows, from the essence of their right and from the situation of the things as to which it can be exerted, that the use by one of his power to seek to convert a part of the common fund to actual possession may result in an undue proportion being attributed to one of the possessors of the right, to the detriment of the others, or by waste by one or more, to the annihilation of the rights of the remainder. Hence it is that the legislative power, from the peculiar nature of the right and the objects upon which it is to be exerted, can be manifested for the purpose of protecting all the collective owners by securing a just distribution to arise from the enjoyment by them of their privilege to reduce to possession and to reach the like end by preventing waste. * * * Viewed, then, as a statute to protect or to prevent the waste of the common property of the surface owners, the law * * * which is here attacked because it is asserted that it divested private property without due compensation, in substance, is a statute protecting private property and preventing it from being taken by one of the common owners without regard to the enjoyment of the others.”

"And, taking up subordinate contentions advanced in support of the principal one, the court also said:

"First: It is argued that as the gas, before being allowed to disperse in the air, serves the purpose of forcing up the oil, therefore it is not wasted, hence is not subject to regulation. Second: That the answer averred that the defendant was so situated as not to be able to use or dispose of the gas which comes to the surface with the oil; from which it follows that the gas must either be stored or dispersed in the air. Now, the answer further asserted that when the gas is stored and not used the back pressure, on the best-known pump, would, if not arresting its movement, at least greatly diminish its capacity. Hence, it is said the law, by making it unlawful to allow the gas to escape, made it practically impossible to profitably extract the oil. That is, as the oil could not be taken at a profit by one who made no use of the gas, therefore he must be allowed to waste the gas into the atmosphere and thus destroy the interest of the other common owners in the reservoir of gas. These contentions but state in a different form the matters already disposed of. They really go not to the power to make the regulations, but to their wisdom. But with the lawful discretion of the legislature of the State we may not interfere.'

"If the statute there assailed did not work a deprivation of property without due process of law, it is difficult to perceive that there is any such deprivation in the present case. The mineral waters and carbonic acid gas exist in a commingled state in the underlying rock, and neither can be drawn out without the other. They are of value in their commingled form and also when separated, but the greater demand is for the gas alone. Influenced by this demand, some surface owners, having wells bored or drilled into the rock engage in extensive pumping operations for the purpose of collecting the gas and vending it as a separate commodity. Usually where this is done an undue proportion of the commingled waters and gas is taken from the common supply and a large, if not the larger, portion of the waters from which the gas is collected is permitted to run to waste. Thus these pumping operations generally result in an unreasonable and wasteful depletion of the common supply and in a corresponding injury to others equally entitled to resort to it. It is to correct this evil that the statute was adopted, and the remedy which it applies is an enforced discontinuance of the excessive and wasteful features of the pumping. It does not take from any surface owner the right to tap the underlying rock and to draw from the common supply, but, consistently with the continued existence of that right, so regulates its exercise as reasonably to conserve the interests of all who possess it. That the State, consistently with due process of law, may do this is a necessary conclusion from the decision in the case cited. But were the question an open one we still should solve it in the same way.

“We do not overlook the statement in appellant’s brief that the mineral waters reached by the gas company’s wells do not exist in any underground reservoir and do not come from any common source, but we cannot give it any effect. It is contrary to what the courts of the State apparently regard as the real situation at Saratoga Springs, and is without support in the present record. While the bill alleges that the waters are percolating waters, not naturally flowing to or upon the surface, that description of them is not inconsistent with their existence in a natural reservoir of porous rock underlying the lands of several owners. Besides, if we accepted it as true that they do not constitute a common source of supply, that is, one to which other surface owners have an equal right to resort, it then would have to be held that the gas company’s acts are not within the prohibition of the statute, as construed by the Court of Appeals of the State, and therefore that the appellant, as owner and holder of capital stock and bonds of the company, is not harmed by the statute and is not entitled to draw in question or test its validity. *Clark v. Kansas City*, 176, U. S. 114, 118; *Tyler v. Judges*, 179 U. S. 405; *Turpin v. Lemon*, 187 U. S. 51, 60; *Hatch v. Reardon*, 204 U. S. 152, 160.

“Neither do we overlook the allegation in the bill that the gas company’s pumps do not exert any force upon waters in or under adjoining lands, but lift to the surface only such waters ‘as flow by reason of the laws of nature into the wells;’ but we regard it as of little importance, because if the wells reach a common source of supply excessive or wasteful pumping from them may affect injuriously the rights of other surface owners, although the force exerted by the pumps does not reach their lands.

“Because the statute is directed against pumping from wells bored or drilled into the rock, but not against pumping from wells not penetrating the rock, and because it is directed against pumping for the purpose of collecting the gas and vending it apart from the waters, but not against pumping for other purposes, the contention is made that it is arbitrary in its classification, and consequently denies the equal protection of the laws to those whom it affects.

“The rules by which this contention must be tested, as is shown by repeated decisions of this court, are these: 1. The equal protection clause of the Fourteenth Amendment does not take from the State the power to classify in the adoption of police

laws, but admits of the exercise of a wider scope of discretion in that regard, and avoids what is done only when it is without any reasonable basis and therefore is purely arbitrary. 2. A classification having some reasonable basis does not offend against that clause merely because it is not made with mathematical nicety or because in practice it results in some inequality. 3. When the classification in such a law is called in question, if any state of facts reasonably can be conceived that would sustain it, the existence of that state of facts at the time the law was enacted must be assumed. 4. One who assails the classification in such a law must carry the burden of showing that it does not rest upon any reasonable basis, but is essentially arbitrary. *Bachtel v. Wilson*, 204 U. S. 36, 41; *Louisville & Nashville R. R. Co. v. Melton*, 218 U. S. 36; *Ozan Lumber Co. v. Union County Bank*, 207 U. S. 251, 256; *Munn v. Illinois*, 94 U. S. 113, 132; *Henderson Bridge Co. v. Henderson City*, 173 U. S. 592, 615.

“Unfortunately the allegations of the bill shed but little light upon the classification in question. They do not indicate that pumping from wells not penetrating the rock appreciably affects the common supply therein, or is calculated to result in injury to the rights of others, and neither do they indicate that such pumping as is done for purposes other than collecting and vending the gas apart from the waters is excessive or wasteful, or otherwise operates to impair the rights of others. In other words, for aught that appears in the bill, the classification may rest upon some substantial difference between pumping from wells penetrating the rock and pumping from those not penetrating it, and between pumping for the purpose of collecting and vending the gas apart from the waters and pumping for other purposes, and this difference may afford a reasonable basis for the classification.

“In thus criticising the bill, we do not mean that its allegations are alone to be considered, for due regard also must be had for what is within the range of common knowledge and what is otherwise plainly subject to judicial notice. *Brown v. Piper*, 91 U. S. 37, 43; *Brown v. Spilman*, 155 U. S. 665, 670; *McLéan v. Denver & Rio Grande R. R. Co.*, 203 U. S. 38, 51; *McNichols v. Pease*, 207 U. S. 100, 111. But we rest our criticism upon the fact that the bill is silent in respect of some matters which, although essential to the success of the present contention, are neither within the range of common knowledge nor otherwise plainly subject to judicial notice. So, applying the rule that one

who assails the classification in such a law must carry the burden of showing that it is arbitrary, we properly might dismiss the contention without saying more. But it may be well to mention other considerations which make for the same result.

“From statements made in the briefs of counsel and in oral argument we infer that wells not penetrating the rock reach such waters only as escape naturally therefrom through breaks or fissures, and if this be so, it well may be doubted that pumping from such wells has anything like the same effect — if, indeed, it has any — upon the common supply or upon the rights of others, as does pumping from wells which take the waters from within the rock where they exist under great hydrostatic pressure.

“As respects the discrimination made between pumping for the purpose of collecting and vending the gas apart from the waters and pumping for other purposes, this is to be said: The greater demand for the gas alone and the value which attaches to it in consequence of this demand furnish a greater incentive for exercising the common right excessively and wastefully when the pumping is for the purpose proscribed than when it is for other purposes; and this suggestion becomes stronger when it is reflected that the proportion of gas in the commingled fluids as they exist in the rock is so small that to obtain a given quantity of gas involves the taking of an enormously greater quantity of water and to satisfy appreciably the demand for the gas alone involves a great waste of the water from which it is collected. Thus, it well may be that in actual practice the pumping is not excessive or wasteful save when it is done for the purpose proscribed.

“These considerations point with more or less persuasive force to a substantial difference, in point of harmful results, between pumping from wells penetrating the rock and pumping from those not penetrating it, and between pumping for the purpose of collecting and vending the gas apart from the waters and pumping for other purposes. If there be such a difference it justifies the classification, for plainly a police law may be confined to the occasion for its existence. As is said in *Carroll v. Greenwich Insurance Co.* (199 U. S. 401, 411): ‘If an evil is specifically experienced in a particular branch of business, the Constitution embodies no prohibition of laws confined to the evil, or doctrinaire requirement that they should be couched in all-embracing terms.’

“In conclusion upon this point, it suffices to say that the case as presented, instead of plainly disclosing that the classification is

arbitrary, tends to produce the belief that it rests upon a reasonable basis.

"Another objection urged against the statute arises out of a ruling of the Court of Appeals of the State, to the effect that in proceedings for the enforcement of the statute one who, for the purpose of collecting and vending the gas as a separate commodity, engages in pumping such waters from wells bored or drilled into the rock, is *prima facie* within the prohibition of the statute, and must take the burden of showing that he comes within the exception or qualification, before mentioned, whereby the statute is made inapplicable where the waters are not drawn from a common source of supply, and also where, if they be drawn from such a source, no injury is done thereby, to others having a right to resort to it. Because of this ruling, which is treated as if read into the statute, it is insisted that the latter impinges upon the guarantees of due process of law and equal protection of the laws. But we think the insistence is untenable, and for these reasons:

"Each state possesses the general power to prescribe the evidence which shall be received and the effect which shall be given to it in her own courts, and may exert this power by providing that proof of a particular fact, or of several taken collectively, shall be *prima facie* evidence of another fact. Many such exertions of this power are shown in the legislation of the several states, and their validity, as against the present objection, has been uniformly recognized save where they have been found to be merely arbitrary mandates or to discriminate invidiously between different persons in substantially the same situation. *Bailey v. Alabama*, 219 U. S. 218, 238; *Board of Commissioners v. Merchant*, 103 N. Y. 143, 148. The validity of such a statute was brought in question in the recent case of *Mobile, etc., Railroad Co. v. Turnipseed*, 219 U. S. 35, 43, and it was there said by this court:

"That a legislative presumption of one fact from evidence of another may not constitute a denial of due process of law or denial of the equal protection of the law it is only essential that there shall be some rational connection between the fact proved and the ultimate fact presumed, and that the inference of one fact from proof of another shall not be so unreasonable as to be a purely arbitrary mandate. So, also, it must not, under guise of regulating the presentation of evidence, operate to preclude the party from the right to present his defense to the main fact thus presumed. If a legislative provision, not unreasonable in itself, prescribing a rule of evidence, in either criminal or civil cases, does not shut out from the party affected a reasonable opportunity to submit to the jury in his defense all of the facts bearing upon the issue, there is no ground for holding that due process of law has been denied him."

“The statute now before us, as affected by the ruling mentioned, makes proof of certain designated facts *prima facie*, but not conclusive, evidence of the common source of the waters and of the injurious effects of the pumping, that is to say, it establishes a rebuttable presumption, but neither prevents the presentation of other evidence to overcome it nor cuts off the right to make a full defense. As respects the source of the waters, the presumption appropriately may be regarded as prompted by the fact, now well recognized, that the pervious rock in which the waters exist usually is of such extent as to reach much beyond the lands of a single proprietor and to constitute a common source of supply, and, as respects the effect of pumping, the presumption appropriately may be regarded as prompted by the fact, before stated, that pumping from a common supply in the rock for the purpose of collecting and vending the gas as a separate commodity usually is carried on in a manner which is calculated to affect injuriously, and does so affect, the rights of others to take from that supply. Regarding the presumption as prompted by these considerations, as we think should be done, it cannot be said that there is not a rational connection between the designated facts which must be proved and the facts which are to be presumed therefrom until the contrary is shown. What we have said upon the subject of classification sufficiently answers the suggestion or claim that by reason of the presumption the statute discriminates invidiously between different persons in substantially the same situation.

“For these reasons none of the objections urged against the statute can be sustained, and so the decree dismissing the bill is affirmed.”

NIAGARA FALLS.

Treaty with Great Britain Proclaimed.

In our Fourteenth Annual Report (1909) we gave a brief and unofficial statement concerning the negotiation of a treaty between the United States and Great Britain with respect to the boundary waters between the United States and Canada. This treaty had been signed at Washington January 11, 1909, and its ratification advised by the United States Senate on March 3, 1909. It was not until last year, however, that the treaty became effective by its ratification by President Taft April 1, 1910, its ratification by

Great Britain March 31, 1910, the exchange of ratifications at Washington May 5, 1910, and its proclamation May 13, 1910. We are therefore now able to give the full text of this important document as follows:

BY THE PRESIDENT OF THE UNITED STATES OF AMERICA.

A PROCLAMATION.

WHEREAS, A Treaty between the United States of America and His Majesty the King of the United Kingdom of Great Britain and Ireland and of the British Dominions beyond the Seas, Emperor of India, to prevent disputes regarding the use of boundary waters and to settle all questions which are now pending between the United States and the Dominion of Canada involving the rights, obligations or interests of either in relation to the other or to the inhabitants of the other, along their common frontier, and to make provision for the adjustment and settlement of all such questions as may hereafter arise, was concluded and signed by their respective plenipotentiaries at Washington on the eleventh day of January, one thousand nine hundred and nine, the original of which Treaty is word for word as follows:

The United States of America and His Majesty the King of the United Kingdom of Great Britain and Ireland and of the British Dominions beyond the Seas, Emperor of India, being equally desirous to prevent disputes regarding the use of boundary waters and to settle all questions which are now pending between the United States and the Dominion of Canada involving the rights, obligations, or interests of either in relation to the other or to the inhabitants of the other, along their common frontier, and to make provision for the adjustment and settlement of all such questions as may hereafter arise, have resolved to conclude a treaty in furtherance of these ends, and for that purpose have appointed as their respective plenipotentiaries:

The President of the United States of America, Elihu Root, Secretary of State of the United States; and

His Britannic Majesty, the Right Honorable James Bryce, O. M., his Ambassador Extraordinary and Plenipotentiary at Washington;

Who, after having communicated to one another their full powers, found in good and due form, have agreed upon the following articles:

PRELIMINARY ARTICLE.

For the purposes of this treaty boundary waters are defined as the waters from main shore to main shore of the lakes and rivers and connecting waterways, or the portions thereof, along which the international boundary between the United States and the Dominion of Canada passes, including all bays, arms, and inlets thereof, but not including tributary waters which in their natural channels would flow into such lakes, rivers, and waterways, or waters flowing from such lakes, rivers, and waterways, or the waters of rivers flowing across the boundary.

ARTICLE I.

The High Contracting Parties agree that the navigation of all navigable boundary waters shall forever continue free and open for the purposes of commerce to the inhabitants and to the ships, vessels, and boats of both countries equally, subject, however, to any laws and regulations of either country, within its own territory, not inconsistent with such privilege of free navigation and applying equally and without discrimination to the inhabitants, ships, vessels, and boats of both countries.

It is further agreed that so long as this treaty shall remain in force, this same right of navigation shall extend to the waters of Lake Michigan and to all canals connecting boundary waters, and now existing or which may hereafter be constructed on either side of the line. Either of the High Contracting Parties may adopt rules and regulations governing the use of such canals within its own territory and may charge tolls for the use thereof, but all such rules and regulations and all tolls charged shall apply alike to the subjects or citizens of the High Contracting Parties and the ships, vessels, and boats of both of the High Contracting Parties, and they shall be placed on terms of equality in the use thereof.

ARTICLE II.

Each of the High Contracting Parties reserves to itself or to the several State Governments on the one side and the Dominion or Provincial Governments on the other as the case may be, subject to any treaty provisions now existing with respect thereto, the exclusive jurisdiction and control over the use and diversion, whether temporary or permanent, of all waters on its own side of the line which in their natural channels would flow across the boundary or into boundary waters; but it is agreed that any inter-

ference with or diversion from their natural channel of such waters on either side of the boundary, resulting in any injury on the other side of the boundary, shall give rise to the same rights and entitle the injured parties to the same legal remedies as if such injury took place in the country where such diversion or interference occurs; but this provision shall not apply to cases already existing or to cases expressly covered by special agreement between the parties hereto.

It is understood, however, that neither of the High Contracting Parties intends by the foregoing provision to surrender any right, which it may have, to object to any interference with or diversions of waters on the other side of the boundary the effect of which would be productive of material injury to the navigation interests on its own side of the boundary.

ARTICLE III.

It is agreed that, in addition to the uses, obstructions, and diversions heretofore permitted or hereafter provided for by special agreement between the parties hereto, no further or other uses or obstructions or diversions, whether temporary or permanent, of boundary waters on either side of the line, affecting the natural level or flow of boundary waters on the other side of the line, shall be made except by authority of the United States or the Dominion of Canada within their respective jurisdictions and with the approval, as hereinafter provided, of a joint commission, to be known as the International Joint Commission.

The foregoing provisions are not intended to limit or interfere with the existing rights of the Government of the United States on the one side and the Government of the Dominion of Canada on the other, to undertake and carry on governmental works in boundary waters for the deepening of channels, the construction of breakwaters, the improvement of harbors, and other governmental works for the benefit of commerce and navigation, provided that such works are wholly on its own side of the line and do not materially affect the level or flow of the boundary waters on the other, nor are such provisions intended to interfere with the ordinary use of such waters for domestic and sanitary purposes.

ARTICLE IV.

The High Contracting Parties agree that, except in cases provided for by special agreement between them, they will not permit the construction or maintenance on their respective sides of

the boundary of any remedial or protective works or any dams or other obstructions in waters flowing from boundary waters or in waters at a lower level than the boundary in rivers flowing across the boundary, the effect of which is to raise the natural level of waters on the other side of the boundary unless the construction or maintenance thereof is approved by the aforesaid International Joint Commission.

It is further agreed that the waters herein defined as boundary waters and waters flowing across the boundary shall not be polluted on either side to the injury of health or property on the other.

ARTICLE V.

The High Contracting Parties agree that it is expedient to limit the diversion of waters from the Niagara river so that the level of Lake Erie and the flow of the stream shall not be appreciably affected. It is the desire of both parties to accomplish this object with the least possible injury to investments which have already been made in the construction of power plants on the United States side of the river under grants of authority from the State of New York, and on the Canadian side of the river under licenses authorized by the Dominion of Canada and the Province of Ontario.

So long as this treaty shall remain in force, no diversion of the waters of the Niagara river above the falls from the natural course and stream thereof shall be permitted except for the purposes and to the extent hereinafter provided.

The United States may authorize and permit the diversion within the State of New York of the waters of said river above the Falls of Niagara, for power purposes, not exceeding in the aggregate a daily diversion at the rate of twenty thousand cubic feet of water per second.

The United Kingdom, by the Dominion of Canada, or the Province of Ontario, may authorize and permit the diversion within the Province of Ontario of the waters of said river above the Falls of Niagara, for power purposes, not exceeding in the aggregate a daily diversion at the rate of thirty-six thousand cubic feet of water per second.

The prohibitions of this article shall not apply to the diversion of water for sanitary or domestic purposes, or for the service of canals for the purposes of navigation.

ARTICLE VI.

The High Contracting Parties agree that the St. Mary and Milk rivers and their tributaries (in the State of Montana and the Provinces of Alberta and Saskatchewan) are to be treated as one stream for the purposes of irrigation and power, and the waters thereof shall be apportioned equally between the two countries, but in making such equal apportionment more than half may be taken from one river and less than half from the other by either country so as to afford a more beneficial use to each. It is further agreed that in the division of such waters during the irrigation season, between the 1st of April and 31st of October, inclusive, annually, the United States is entitled to a prior appropriation of 500 cubic feet per second of the waters of the Milk river, or so much of such amount as constitutes three-fourths of its natural flow, and that Canada is entitled to a prior appropriation of 500 cubic feet per second of the flow of St. Mary river, or so much of such amount as constitutes three-fourths of its natural flow.

The channel of the Milk river in Canada may be used at the convenience of the United States for the conveyance, while passing through Canadian territory, of waters diverted from the St. Mary river. The provisions of Article II of this treaty shall apply to any injury resulting to property in Canada from the conveyance of such waters through the Milk river.

The measurement and apportionment of the water to be used by each country shall from time to time be made jointly by the properly constituted reclamation officers of the United States and the properly constituted irrigation officers of His Majesty under the direction of the International Joint Commission.

ARTICLE VII.

The High Contracting Parties agree to establish and maintain an International Joint Commission of the United States and Canada composed of six commissioners, three on the part of the United States appointed by the President thereof, and three on the part of the United Kingdom appointed by His Majesty on the recommendation of the Governor in Council of the Dominion of Canada.

ARTICLE VIII.

This International Joint Commission shall have jurisdiction over and shall pass upon all cases involving the use or obstruction or diversion of the waters with respect to which under Articles III and IV of this treaty the approval of this Commission is required,

and in passing upon such cases the Commission shall be governed by the following rules or principles which are adopted by the High Contracting Parties for this purpose:

The High Contracting Parties shall have, each on its own side of the boundary, equal and similar rights in the use of the waters hereinbefore defined as boundary waters.

The following order of precedence shall be observed among the various uses enumerated hereinafter for these waters, and no use shall be permitted which tends materially to conflict with or • restrain any other use which is given preference over it in this order of precedence:

- (1) Uses for domestic and sanitary purposes;
- (2) Uses for navigation, including the service of canals for the purposes of navigation;
- (3) Uses for power and for irrigation purposes.

The foregoing provisions shall not apply to or disturb any existing uses of boundary waters on either side of the boundary.

The requirement for an equal division may in the discretion of the Commission be suspended in cases of temporary diversions along boundary waters at points where such equal division can not be made advantageously on account of local conditions, and where such diversion does not diminish elsewhere the amount available for use on the other side.

The Commission in its discretion may make its approval in any case conditional upon the construction of remedial or protective works to compensate so far as possible for the particular use or diversion proposed, and in such cases may require that suitable and adequate provision, approved by the Commission, be made for the protection and indemnity against injury of any interests on either side of the boundary.

In cases involving the elevation of the natural level of waters on either side of the line as a result of the construction or maintenance on the other side of remedial or protective works or dams or other obstructions in boundary waters or in waters flowing therefrom or in waters below the boundary in rivers flowing across the boundary, the Commission shall require, as a condition of its approval thereof, that suitable and adequate provision, approved by it, be made for the protection and indemnity of all interests on the other side of the line which may be injured thereby.

The majority of the commissioners shall have power to render a decision. In case the Commission is evenly divided upon any question or matter presented to it for decision, separate reports

shall be made by the commissioners on each side to their own government. The High Contracting Parties shall thereupon endeavor to agree upon an adjustment of the question or matter of difference, and if an agreement is reached between them, it shall be reduced to writing in the form of a protocol, and shall be communicated to the commissioners, who shall take such further proceedings as may be necessary to carry out such agreement.

ARTICLE IX.

The High Contracting Parties further agree that any other questions or matters of difference arising between them involving the rights, obligations, or interests of either in relation to the other or to the inhabitants of the other, along the common frontier between the United States and the Dominion of Canada, shall be referred from time to time to the International Joint Commission for examination and report, whenever either the Government of the United States or the Government of the Dominion of Canada shall request that such questions or matters of difference be so referred.

The International Joint Commission is authorized in each case so referred to examine into and report upon the facts and circumstances of the particular questions and matters referred, together with such conclusions and recommendations as may be appropriate, subject, however, to any restrictions or exceptions which may be imposed with respect thereto by the terms of the reference.

Such reports of the Commission shall not be regarded as decisions of the questions or matters so submitted either on the facts or the law, and shall in no way have the character of an arbitral award.

The Commission shall make a joint report to both governments in all cases in which all or a majority of the commissioners agree, and in case of disagreement the minority may make a joint report to both governments, or separate reports to their respective governments.

In case the Commission is evenly divided upon any question or matter referred to it for report, separate reports shall be made by the commissioners on each side to their own government.

ARTICLE X.

Any questions or matters of difference arising between the High Contracting Parties involving the rights, obligations, or interests of the United States or of the Dominion of Canada either in rela-

tion to each other or to their respective inhabitants, may be referred for decision to the International Joint Commission by the consent of the two parties, it being understood that on the part of the United States any such action will be by and with the advice and consent of the Senate, and on the part of His Majesty's Government with the consent of the Governor General in Council. In each case so referred, the said Commission is authorized to examine into and report upon the facts and circumstances of the particular questions and matters referred, together with such conclusions and recommendations as may be appropriate, subject, however, to any restrictions or exceptions which may be imposed with respect thereto by the terms of the reference.

A majority of the said Commission shall have power to render a decision or finding upon any of the questions or matters so referred.

If the said Commission is equally divided or otherwise unable to render a decision or finding as to any questions or matters so referred, it shall be the duty of the commissioners to make a joint report to both governments, or separate reports to their respective governments, showing the different conclusions arrived at with regard to the matters or questions so referred, which questions or matters shall thereupon be referred for decision by the High Contracting Parties to an umpire chosen in accordance with the procedure prescribed in the fourth, fifth, and sixth paragraphs of Article XLV of The Hague Convention for the pacific settlement of international disputes, dated October 18, 1907. Such umpire shall have power to render a final decision with respect to those matters and questions so referred on which the Commission failed to agree.

ARTICLE XI.

A duplicate original of all decisions rendered and joint reports made by the Commission shall be transmitted to and filed with the Secretary of State of the United States and the Governor General of the Dominion of Canada, and to them shall be addressed all communications of the Commission.

ARTICLE XII.

The International Joint Commission shall meet and organize at Washington promptly after the members thereof are appointed, and when organized the Commission may fix such times and places for its meetings as may be necessary, subject at all times to special call or direction by the two governments. Each commissioner,

upon the first joint meeting of the Commission after his appointment, shall, before proceeding with the work of the Commission, make and subscribe a solemn declaration in writing that he will faithfully and impartially perform the duties imposed upon him under this treaty, and such declaration shall be entered on the records of the proceedings of the Commission.

The United States and Canadian sections of the Commission may each appoint a secretary, and these shall act as joint secretaries of the Commission at its joint sessions, and the Commission may employ engineers and clerical assistants from time to time as it may deem advisable. The salaries and personal expenses of the Commission and of the secretaries shall be paid by their respective governments, and all reasonable and necessary joint expenses of the Commission, incurred by it, shall be paid in equal moieties by the High Contracting Parties.

The Commission shall have power to administer oaths to witnesses, and to take evidence on oath whenever deemed necessary in any proceeding, or inquiry, or matter within its jurisdiction under this treaty, and all parties interested therein shall be given convenient opportunity to be heard, and the High Contracting Parties agree to adopt such legislation as may be appropriate and necessary to give the Commission the powers above mentioned on each side of the boundary, and to provide for the issue of subpoenas and for compelling the attendance of witnesses in proceedings before the Commission. The Commission may adopt such rules of procedure as shall be in accordance with justice and equity, and may make such examination in person and through agents or employees as may be deemed advisable.

ARTICLE XIII.

In all cases where special agreements between the High Contracting Parties hereto are referred to in the foregoing articles, such agreements are understood and intended to include not only direct agreements between the High Contracting Parties, but also any mutual arrangement between the United States and the Dominion of Canada expressed by concurrent or reciprocal legislation on the part of Congress and the Parliament of the Dominion.

ARTICLE XIV.

The present treaty shall be ratified by the President of the United States of America, by and with the advice and consent of the Senate thereof, and by His Britannic Majesty. The ratifica-

tions shall be exchanged at Washington as soon as possible and the treaty shall take effect on the date of the exchange of its ratifications. It shall remain in force for five years, dating from the day of exchange of ratifications, and thereafter until terminated by twelve months' written notice given by either High Contracting Party to the other.

In faith whereof the respective plenipotentiaries have signed this treaty in duplicate and have hereunto affixed their seals.

Done at Washington the 11th day of January, in the year of our Lord one thousand nine hundred and nine.

(Signed) ELIHU ROOT [SEAL]

(Signed) JAMES BRYCE [SEAL]

AND WHEREAS the Senate of the United States by their resolution of March 3, 1909, (two-thirds of the Senators present concurring therein) did advise and consent to the ratification of the said Treaty with the following understanding, to wit:

“Resolved further, as a part of this ratification, That the United States approves this treaty with the understanding that nothing in this treaty shall be construed as affecting, or changing, any existing territorial or riparian rights in the water, or rights of the owners of lands under water, on either side of the international boundary at the rapids of the St. Mary's river at Sault Ste. Marie, in the use of the waters flowing over such lands, subject to the requirements of navigation in boundary waters and of navigation canals, and without prejudice to the existing right of the United States and Canada, each to use the waters of the St. Mary's river, within its own territory, and further, that nothing in this treaty shall be construed to interfere with the drainage of wet swamp and overflowed lands into streams flowing into boundary waters, and that this interpretation will be mentioned in the ratification of this treaty as conveying the true meaning of the treaty, and will, in effect, form part of the treaty;”

AND WHEREAS the said understanding has been accepted by the government of Great Britain, and the ratification of the two governments of the said treaty were exchanged in the city of Washington, on the 5th day of May, one thousand nine hundred and ten;

NOW, THEREFORE, be it known that I, WILLIAM HOWARD TAFT, President of the United States of America, have caused the said treaty and the said understanding, as forming a part thereof, to be made public, to the end that the same and every article and

clause thereof may be observed and fulfilled with good faith by the United States and the citizens thereof.

In testimony whereof, I have hereunto set my hand and caused the seal of the United States to be affixed.

DONE at the City of Washington this thirteenth day of May in the year of our Lord one thousand nine hundred and [SEAL] ten, and of the Independence of the United States of America the one hundred and thirty-fourth.

WM. H. TAFT.

By the President:

P. C. KNOX,

Secretary of State.

PROTOCOL OF EXCHANGE.

On proceeding to the exchange of the ratifications of the treaty signed at Washington on January 11, 1909, between the United States and Great Britain, relating to boundary waters and questions arising along the boundary between the United States and the Dominion of Canada, the undersigned plenipotentiaries, duly authorized thereto by their respective governments, hereby declare that nothing in this treaty shall be construed as affecting, or changing, any existing territorial, or riparian rights in the water, or rights of the owners of lands under water, on either side of the international boundary at the rapids of the St. Mary's river at Sault Ste. Marie, in the use of the waters flowing over such lands, subject to the requirements of navigation in boundary waters and of navigation canals, and without prejudice to the existing right of the United States and Canada, each to use the waters of the St. Mary's river, within its own territory; and further, that nothing in this treaty shall be construed to interfere with the drainage of wet, swamp, and overflowed lands into streams flowing into boundary waters, and also that this declaration shall be deemed to have equal force and effect as the treaty itself and to form an integral part thereto.

The exchange of ratifications then took place in the usual form.

In witness whereof, they have signed the present protocol of exchange and have affixed their seals thereto.

DONE at Washington this 5th day of May, one thousand nine hundred and ten.

PHILANDER C. KNOX. [SEAL]

JAMES BRYCE. [SEAL]

Failure of the Alexander Bill.

On June 9, 1910, the Hon. De Alva S. Alexander, of Buffalo, N. Y., introduced in the House of Representatives a bill (H. R. 26, 688) entitled "A bill to amend sections 2, 3 and 5 of an act entitled 'An act for the control and regulation of the waters of Niagara river, for the preservation of Niagara Falls, and for other purposes,' approved June 29, 1906." The act of June 29, 1906, is the so-called "Burton act" the text of which is given in our Twelfth Annual Report (1907), at pages 38-41. Following is the text of Mr. Alexander's bill:

"Be it enacted by the Senate and House of Representatives of the United States of America in Congress assembled, that sections two, three, and five of the Act entitled 'An Act for the control and regulation of the waters of Niagara river, for the preservation of Niagara Falls, and for other purposes,' approved June twenty-ninth, nineteen hundred and six, are hereby amended to read as follows:

"Sec. 2. That the Secretary of War is hereby authorized to grant permits for the diversion, within the State of New York, of the waters of Niagara river, above the Falls of Niagara, for the creation of power to individuals, companies, or corporations which are now actually producing power from the waters of the said river or its tributaries, in the State of New York, or from the Erie canal; but permits for diversion shall be issued only to the individuals, companies, or corporations as aforesaid, and not exceeding to all individuals, companies or corporations as aforesaid in the aggregate a daily diversion at the rate of twenty thousand cubic feet of water per second: Provided, That the provisions herein permitting diversions are intended as a limitation on the authority of the Secretary of War, and shall in nowise be construed as a direction to said Secretary to issue permits, and the Secretary of War shall make regulations preventing or limiting the diversion of water as herein stated.

"Sec. 3. That any person, company or corporation diverting the waters from the said Niagara river, above the Falls of Niagara, except as herein stated, or violating any of the provisions of this act, shall be deemed guilty of a misdemeanor, and on conviction thereof shall be punished by a fine not exceeding two thousand five hundred dollars nor less than five hundred dollars

or by imprisonment (in the case of a natural person) not exceeding one year, or by both such punishments, in the discretion of the court. And, further, that the removal of any structures or parts of structures erected in violation of this act, or any construction incidental to or used for such diversion of water as is herein prohibited, as well as any diversion of water in violation hereof, may be enforced or enjoined at the suit of the United States by any circuit court having jurisdiction in any district in which the same may be located, and proper proceedings to this end may be instituted under the direction of the Attorney-General of the United States."

"Sec. 5. That the provisions of this act shall remain in force until the termination of the provisions of the treaty between the United States and Great Britain, signed January eleventh, nineteen hundred and nine, providing for the settlement of international differences between the said countries, commonly known as the waterways treaty, and the Secretary of War is hereby authorized to revoke any or all permits for the diversion of water granted by him by authority of this act, and nothing herein contained shall be held to confirm, establish, or confer any rights heretofore claimed or exercised in the diversion of water: Provided, however, that, unless and until revoked according to the terms thereof, all permits for the diversion of water heretofore or hereafter granted by the Secretary of War shall continue to the grantees thereof and their respective successors unless or until superseded by other permits issued herein by the Secretary of War."

"Sec. 2. That the right to alter, amend, or repeal this act is hereby expressly reserved."

Two important features of the foregoing bill are that it raises the aggregate amount of water to be diverted on the American side from 15,600 cubic feet per second, as fixed in the Burton act, to 20,000 cubic feet, and it omits entirely the provision of the Burton act which restricted the importation of electrical power from Canada to an amount which together with the amount developed and used in Canada, should not exceed 350,000 horsepower.

This bill failed of passage. Although our Society took no actual position on this bill, its attitude toward the principle involved is sufficiently indicated in the position which it took on the following joint resolution.

Burton Act Renewed.

On February 13, 1911, the Hon. Theodore E. Burton, of Ohio, author of the Burton act before referred to, and chairman of the Joint National Waterways Committee of Congress, introduced in the Senate the following joint resolution (S. J. Res. 143):

“Joint resolution extending the operation of the act for the control and regulation of the waters of Niagara river, for the preservation of Niagara Falls, and for other purposes.

“WHEREAS, the provisions of the act entitled ‘An act for the control and regulation of the waters of Niagara river, for the preservation of Niagara Falls, and for other purposes,’ approved June twenty-ninth, nineteen hundred and six, and extended by joint resolution (public resolution numbered fifty-six) for a period of two years, approved March third, nineteen hundred and nine, will expire by limitation June twenty-ninth, nineteen hundred and eleven; and

“WHEREAS, the extended date provided therein for the termination of the operation of said act was so extended that there might be consummated a more permanent settlement of the questions involved by a treaty with Great Britain and by further legislation appropriate to the situation; and

“WHEREAS, article five of a treaty between the United States and Great Britain, proclaimed May thirteenth, nineteen hundred and ten, provides a maximum limit within which the United States may authorize and permit the diversion within the State of New York of the waters of the Niagara river above the Falls of Niagara for power purposes: Therefore, be it

“*Resolved*, by the Senate and House of Representatives of the United States of America in Congress assembled, That the provisions of the aforesaid act be, and they are hereby, extended from June twenty-ninth, nineteen hundred and eleven, being the date of the expiration of the operation of said act, to remain in full force and virtue during the life of the said treaty, save in so far as any portion thereof may be found inapplicable or already complied with.”

By circular letters to members of Congress and by personal appearance before the Committee on Foreign Relations, our Society advocated the adoption of this measure, which was designed to make the life of the Burton act co-extensive with the treaty with Great Britain and to retain the restrictions contained in the

Burton act. The treaty says that the United States *may* permit not more than 20,000 cubic feet of water per second to be diverted from the Falls on the American side, but does not say that it *must* permit that amount. The treaty also says nothing about the importation of power from Canada. We therefore represented to Congress that if the Burton act were permitted to expire, the restriction 15,600 cubic feet per second on the amount of water to be diverted on the American side would be removed and there would be nothing to restrain the Secretary of War from permitting as much as 20,000 cubic feet per second to be taken. The former amount, namely, 15,600 cubic feet, is, we believe, the maximum amount which can be diverted on the American side without conspicuous injury to the falls. We also represented to Congress that without the extension of the Burton act, the restriction on the importation of power from Canada would be removed entirely and there would be no barrier to prevent the Canadians from developing in full their allowance of 36,000 cubic feet per second, depleting the American Fall more in proportion than the Canadian Fall, and sending the consequent power into the American market for sale.

We regret to say that the foregoing joint resolution also failed of passage in the last Congress; but as the Burton act (originally enacted for three years on June 29, 1906, and in 1909 extended for two years) will not expire until June 29, 1911, we entertain the hope that the present Congress at its special session will repair the omission of the last Congress by passing Senate Joint Resolution No. 3, introduced by Senator Burton at the present session for the same purpose.*

Very careful measurements and computations have shown that at Terrapin Point on the New York side, and to a much greater extent at the Canadian end of the Horseshoe Fall, the diversion of water for industrial purposes has already worked serious injury to the beauties of Niagara. It is therefore very important to prevent the diversion of a still larger amount of water for these purposes, as appears now to be contemplated.

* Before Congress adjourned on Aug. 22, 1911, it passed a resolution extending the life of the Burton act until March 1, 1912. This will give Congress an opportunity to legislate on the subject before the law expires.

MINNEHAHA FALLS.

Various waterfalls in North America have become famous for various reasons — Niagara Falls on account of their volume and grandeur; Portage Falls on account of their beauty and their association with the geological exposures which give the name to the Portage Formation; Montmorenci Falls near Quebec, on account of their historical associations; the Yosemite Falls, on account of their height;* and Minnehaha Falls in Minneapolis, Minn., on account of their poetic association in Longfellow's poem, "Hiawatha." So little, comparatively, is known about the physical features of Minnehaha Falls, which have been so celebrated in song and story, that the representative of this Society availed himself of a trip to the West last fall to gather some information about them. (See plates 17 and 18.)

It will be recalled that the "Twin Cities" of Minneapolis and St. Paul adjoin each other, Minneapolis lying to the westward and northwestward of St. Paul. The Mississippi river enters Minneapolis from the north, and flows southward and southeastward to the inter-city line, thence southward along that line; then takes a great S-shaped course easterly, northeasterly, easterly and southerly through St. Paul. About midway of this course it receives the Minnesota river, entering from the south. At the confluence of the Minnesota with the Mississippi is Fort Snelling (plate 19), established in 1819 when the white man and red man were struggling for the supremacy of that region.

About a mile upstream from the point where the Minnesota river enters the Mississippi and at the extreme southeastern corner of the city of Minneapolis, the Minnehaha creek flows into the Mississippi. Minnehaha creek rises in Lake Minnetonka, about eighteen miles west of Minneapolis, and on its way to the Mississippi is joined from the northward by the outlet of the chain of small lakes — Harriet, Calhoun, Isles, Cedar, etc., which form such an extraordinary feature of the Minneapolis park system. About 3,500 feet from the Mississippi, Minnehaha creek, which at this point is only about thirty feet wide, flows over a ledge of rock about forty feet high, and continues through a deep and pic-

* In three plunges the Yosemite Falls descend 2,526 feet, probably the highest falls in North America.

turesque gorge called Longfellow Glen, to the great "Father of Waters."

The geological history of Minnehaha Falls, in conjunction with that of St. Anthony Falls in the Mississippi river, in Minneapolis, is succinctly told in the report of the Minneapolis Park Commissioners for the year 1909.

"Geologists who have studied this region declare that it is one of the most interesting in America and agree that within a recent period — geologically speaking — tremendous changes have taken place in this immediate vicinity. These changes are not supposed to have been brought about by any great cataclysm, but by just such gradual processes as are operating in the world to-day.

"At the beginning of the last glacial epoch — which was subsequent to man's first appearance on earth — there was no Falls of St. Anthony, no Minnehaha Falls, no great river gorge where it now exists, and no chain of lakes such as now skirts the western border of our city.

"There was at one time a very large river flowing through the valley now partially occupied by the Minnesota river, and a smaller branch, corresponding to the upper Mississippi, ran through a valley now partially occupied by Cedar lake, Lake of the Isles, and Lake Calhoun.

"Through the agency of glacial drift, during the latter part of the ice period, the valley of the smaller river became filled up near its confluence with the main stream, and the backed up waters found a new outlet through the present channel.

"At the close of the last glacial epoch — so states Prof. Winchell — the flow of the main stream was greatly reduced, leaving a deep valley into which the waters of the northerly branch fell at a place immediately in front of the present location of Fort Snelling. The bed of this branch, which from that time became the principal stream, was over a limestone ledge, which in turn was supported by a bed of soft sandstone. The action of moisture and frost caused the sandstone to crumble. The support being thus taken away the limestone broke down and caused the falls to recede.

"This process continued to go on until about thirty years ago when the Falls of St. Anthony had receded to their present position, about eight miles above Fort Snelling. At that time the United States government, by means of a system of dykes and

aprons, arrested further recession, and brought nature's work of excavating the great gorge to an end.

"Longfellow Glen, between Minnehaha Falls and the Mississippi Gorge, was formed in like manner; the lower portion by the recession of the falls in the westerly channel of the main river, and that part just below the Minnehaha Cascade by the recession of the same from the place where the waters of Minnehaha Creek fell into the newly formed gorge of the larger stream.

"The high ground on which the Minnesota Soldiers' Home is located, in Minnehaha Park, is said to have been at one time an island between two channels of the river which afterward united into one a short distance up the stream.

"In the case of Minnehaha Falls, the process of recession is still going on at a rate probably as fast as at any time since it began, but yet so slowly as to be hardly perceptible in a single generation.

"While the cataracts have been receding in the directions of the main channels, a similar process has been in operation — but at a much slower rate — that has had the effect to slightly widen the gorges and round and soften their precipitous sides and put them in condition to support vegetation which now adds much to their beauty."

The name Minnehaha first appears in a book entitled "Dacotah, or Legends of the Sioux," by Mrs. Mary Eastman, published in New York in 1849. In the introduction she says that between Fort Snelling and the Falls of St. Anthony "are the 'Little Falls,' forty feet in height, on a stream that empties into the Mississippi. The Indians call them *Mine-hah-hah* or 'laughing waters.'"

William Jones, of the Field Museum of Natural History of Chicago, says that the word Minnehaha is taken from the Teton dialect of the Dakota language, and is a compound, the first part of which, "mini," means water. There are two interpretations of the second part "haha." One is to the effect that it means laughter, but according to the Dakota-English dictionary of Stephen R. Riggs, "haha" as a noun in compounds means cascade or cataract; hence, Minnehaha really signifies "waterfall."

The Indian maiden in Longfellow's poem of Hiawatha is named after the waterfall, not the waterfall after the maiden. The poem recounts how Hiawatha, after visiting his father, Mudjekeewis,

the West Wind, at his home on the gusty summits of the Rocky Mountains, starts homeward, and says:

“ Only once his pace he slackened,
 Only once he paused or halted,
 Paused to purchase heads of arrows
 Of the ancient Arrow-maker
 In the land of the Dacotahs,
 Where the Falls of Minnehaha
 Flash and gleam amid the oak trees,
 Laugh and leap into the valley.
 There the ancient Arrow-maker
 Made his arrow-heads of sandstone,
 Arrow-heads of chalcedony,
 Arrow-heads of flint and jasper,
 Smoothed and sharpened at the edges,
 Hard and polished, keen and costly.
 With him dwelt his dark-eyed daughter,
 Wayward as the Minnehaha,
 With her moods of shade and sunshine,
 Eyes that smiled and frowned alternate,
 Feet as rapid as the river,
 Tresses flowing like the water,
 And as musical as laughter;
 And he named her from the river,
 From the water-fall he named her,
 Minnehaha, Laughing Water.”

When, a quarter of a century ago, Prof. H. W. S. Cleveland, a landscape gardener of national reputation, was engaged by the Minneapolis Park Board to report a comprehensive plan for a park system, it seems not to have occurred to him that Minnehaha Falls and creek would ever be included within the city limits. In 1887, active steps were taken to create a State park to embrace Minnehaha Falls, and in that year the Legislature appointed appraisers to ascertain the value of the falls and about 125 acres of land surrounding them. In 1889 the appraisers reported a valuation of about \$90,000. The citizens of Minneapolis became aware that the country members in the Legislature would not vote the necessary appropriation to pay the award, and they therefore advanced the money and deposited it in the State treasury. The awards were then confirmed and paid and the city of Minneapolis sold bonds and reimbursed the advances and secured a conveyance from the State of the park; so that, while at first it was intended to be a State park, it was paid for by the city of Minneapolis and belongs to the present city park system. There have been some enlargements made since, so that the park now contains 142 acres (exclusive of the Soldiers' Home grounds which are adjoining and contain about fifty acres), and has cost for purchase a total

of \$123,083. In addition thereto, about \$125,000 has been spent for improvements since the park was acquired.

Not content with acquiring the park embracing the falls, the city has also created a parkway along five or six miles of Minnehaha creek, containing 177 acres. For this parkway the city spent \$49,764 for purchase; a donation to the value of \$30,000 was made; and \$67,495 has been spent for improvements.

Very little water passes over Minnehaha Falls. At the time of the visit of our representatives in September, 1910, only a few threads of water ran over the edge of the ledge. There has been no artificial diversion from the watershed, and the small flow appears to be due mainly to natural conditions. During 1910 there was almost no rainfall in that vicinity and the falls suffered in consequence. The Park Board has recently acquired Lake Nokomis, lying about one mile west of Minnehaha Falls, which it expects to use as a reservoir to retain the flood water to maintain the falls when they are depleted by lack of rainfall.

GENERAL DU PONT'S GIFT OF A STATE ROAD TO DELAWARE.

In our former reports we have called attention to many munificent gifts of parks to States and cities throughout the country, upon the principle that these good examples are contagious and that the knowledge of them encourages similar gifts by others.

One of the most notable instances of this sort during the past year is the offer made by General T. Coleman du Pont, of Wilmington, Del., on February 28, 1911, to construct and give to the State of Delaware a boulevard extending the whole length of the State. His offer, in brief, is to acquire a strip of land not less than 100 feet and not more than 200 feet wide, from the northern to the southern boundary of the State; to construct a road therein, and to convey this road and its accessories for a width of thirty feet to the State, reserving the privilege of constructing public utilities such as an electric railway, electric wires, gas pipes, water pipes, etc., on the marginal strips. What appears at first glance to be a sort of bargain by which the donor gives a road and secures valuable accessory franchises presents a different aspect in the light of the statement that it is permissible for any-

one in Delaware to build a railway upon posting a forfeit of \$500 for every mile he intends to construct. The public prints of Delaware have received the proposition in the spirit in which it was tendered and heartily commend General Du Pont's public spirit. It is expected that the projected highway will run from Claymont, Delaware, on the Pennsylvania line, to Selbyville, Del., on the Maryland line, a total distance of 103 miles, passing through Wilmington, Middletown, Smyrna, Dover, Milford, Georgetown and Frankford.

"Good roads are more useful than public libraries or handsome monuments," General du Pont is quoted as saying. "I can do Delaware more service by constructing a modern highway the entire length of the State than I could by erecting a library." The cost of the boulevard, it is estimated, will be close to \$2,000,000.

We are indebted to General du Pont for the following copy of his letter containing his offer:

WILMINGTON, DEL., *Feb.* 28, 1911.

HON. S. S. PENNEWILL, *Governor of Delaware, Dover, Del.:*

MY DEAR GOVERNOR — If the State of Delaware by appropriate legislative action will authorize and enable the same, I through a corporation which I will cause to be organized for that purpose, will acquire, by purchase or condemnation where necessary, a strip of land not less than one hundred nor more than two hundred feet wide extending from some point in the northern part of New Castle county, by as nearly a straight course as may prove feasible and desirable, through the State to the southern boundary thereof, upon which strip of land the said corporation shall have the right to construct, and will construct, a good, modern road, from twelve to eighteen feet wide, according to the travel anticipated for the particular portions thereof, throughout the whole length of the State, the survey of said road to be commenced immediately and the road to be made of stone, gravel, shells, asphalt or such other road-building materials as shall be most available and accessible and as shall, by competent road engineers, be deemed most suited to conditions as they exist at various points along the road, the road to be properly constructed with respect to drainage, to have on either side suitable space, if desired, for planting trees; the portion of said strip of land to be devoted to the road and its accessories to be not less than

thirty feet wide; upon the remaining portion of which first mentioned strip of land the said corporation shall have the right to construct an electric railway, or railways, with tracks and accessories and to maintain and operate the same; to erect, maintain and operate lines of poles and wires for the transmission of electric current, of any kind, to be used for any desirable purposes; to erect, maintain, and operate telegraph and telephone lines and to lay, maintain and use underground pipes and conduits for the transportation of oil, gas, water, steam or anything desirable, and for the transmission of electricity, and the said corporation shall also have the right to use the said remaining portion of said strip of land for planting trees, grass or shrubbery, or for any other purpose that may be desired by said corporation, provided that such purpose is not unlawful and not necessarily detrimental to the use of said first mentioned portion of said strip of land as a highway for vehicular travel.

The said corporation, in the location and acquisition of said strip of land and in the building of the said road, to have the right to use and widen existing roads when desirable, the right to use existing bridges, the right to cross railroads, railways, streams and other existing roads in such manner as shall be safe and practicable.

All the expense of acquiring said strips of land and of building said road to be borne by me or the said corporation. So soon as the said road is completed, the said corporation shall be required to convey title to the thirty-foot wide portion of said strip of land devoted to said road, as aforesaid, unto the State of Delaware, free of cost to the State, and the State shall be required forever to maintain the road in the same condition as when finished and turned over to the State; the State to enact simultaneously with the legislation necessary to authorize the acquisition of said strip of land by said corporation, appropriate legislation adequately providing for the maintenance of said road in the same condition as when finished and turned over, as aforesaid, through such agency as it may deem best.

As a method of insuring the maintenance of the road in the same condition as when finished and turned over, it is suggested that the legislation providing for such maintenance should, inter alia, provide that in case the State should, for a period of time therein prescribed, neglect to repair any portion of the said road after the same shall become in need of repairs, then and in such

event the said corporation shall have the right to forthwith proceed to make said repairs, and upon presenting to the State Treasurer an itemized bill covering the whole cost of said repairs, with six per cent interest to date of presentation, approved as to correctness by the State Auditor, the State Treasurer shall be required to pay the same out of any funds in the treasury of the State not otherwise specifically appropriated; and the said legislation should also provide that said corporation shall have authority to institute any appropriate legal or equitable action against the State or any of the officers of the State to compel the payment to it, by the State, of any amounts expended by it for such repairs, as aforesaid, with 6 per cent. interest, as aforesaid.

If the State should think well of the proposal herein contained and should enact the legislation necessary to effectuate it, such legislation should prescribe a short time within which work must be commenced on said road and a time within which it must be finished, and before the said corporation should acquire its corporate powers, it should be required to deposit with the State Treasurer not less than the sum of fifty thousand dollars, as evidence of good faith, the same to be repaid to said corporation, mile by mile, pro rata, as the road is completed, in portions equal in ratio to the completed part of the road.

If the authority above suggested is given, work on the survey for the road will be started immediately, and work on the road will be pushed until completed.

It may not be desirable to immediately use the part of the said strip of land other than the thirty feet devoted to the road, as aforesaid, for any of the public utilities above mentioned, or otherwise. Indeed, it may be looking far into the future, but I firmly believe that the building of such a highway as I have above indicated, with the lateral roads that soon must follow, will give such an impetus to agriculture and tend to so largely increase the population of the State, that the use of this boulevard for the said public utilities will be practicable and thus every part of the State will be enabled to enjoy all the public utilities that exist in the cities at a minimum cost, because they will be distributed from a single producing station by means of this boulevard as a main trunk.

I desire it to be distinctly understood, however, that I am not to be bound to build an electric railway or establish any of the other public utilities mentioned herein.

I think it would be only fair that the said strip of land should be wholly exempt from taxation until such time as the portion thereof not devoted to the road should be occupied by and used for some one or more of the public utilities hereinabove mentioned, or for some other utilitarian purpose. I should expect such exemption to be provided for.

I have been led to believe that the plan herein outlined can be made legally possible by comparatively simple legislative enactment by the present session of the General Assembly, if the same should commend itself to you and to the Legislative Department of the State.

The use of a corporation has been suggested because it would make my plan more easily feasible legally and might also enable me, some time in the future, to be in part, at least, reimbursed for the cost of the road which is given to the State.

Assuring you of my deep interest in the development of the State and of my profound belief in the efficiency of a State-long highway as a factor in such development, I beg to remain, with personal regards,

Respectfully yours,

T. COLEMAN DU PONT.

On March 31, 1911, the General Corporation Law of Delaware was amended by adding sections 142 to 169 inclusive, covering twenty printed pages, authorizing the formation of a boulevard corporation substantially in accordance with the terms of Gen. Du Pont's offer.

CASCADE TOWN COMPANY v. EMPIRE WATER AND POWER COMPANY, ET AL.

A Notable Colorado Decision Concerning the Value of Scenic Beauty.

In the preceding pages, in referring to the proposal to divert water from the Portage Falls in Letchworth Park, which is in our custody for the State of New York, we have referred to a notable decision rendered by the Hon. Robert E. Lewis in the Circuit Court of the United States within the district of Colorado, sitting at Pueblo, Col., on October 3, 1910, in the cases of the Cascade Town Company and Leander A. Bigger, complainants, against the

Empire Water & Power Company, et al. The decision is one of general interest throughout the country and will constitute a precedent for those who contend that there are "beneficial uses" of water other than money earning. It is of especial interest in this State, as the famous Portage Falls in the gorge of the Genesee river in Letchworth Park are threatened by the project to construct a storage reservoir above the falls and divert the water for power purposes, in a manner almost parallel with the Colorado case, although the magnitude of Letchworth Park, the canyon and the falls is much greater than in the Colorado case.

The Colorado case is briefly as follows:

The Cascade Town Company owns several hundred acres of land on Ute Pass about eleven miles from Colorado Springs, where it has established a summer resort. Features of the place are the canyon and falls of Cascade creek, the waters of which rise on Pike's Peak. The canyon and falls are of rare beauty and constitute the chief attraction. The spray and moisture from Cascade creek sustain a luxuriant vegetable growth, embracing a great variety of trees, shrubs and flowers. The Empire Water & Power Company located a reservoir site on Cascade creek above the canyon and proposed to impound the water and conduct it in pipes down the mountain beyond the property of the Cascade Town Company, thereby diverting the stream flow from Cascade Canyon and converting it into a dry gulch. The Cascade Town Company therefore sued for an injunction which was granted.

The decision of Judge Lewis covers three essential points:

The first one is a question of law of local interest in the State of Colorado, where, as in other arid states of the West, the common law of riparian ownership is subordinate to the law of appropriation.* The complainant company contended that it had riparian rights in the stream which would be infringed by the proposed diversion of water by the defendant. The court, how-

* It may be noted in passing, with reference to its bearing on Letchworth Park, that in the State of New York, with the exception of the Mohawk and Hudson rivers (which are civil law streams) the rivers of New York are common law streams; and that in this State, the owner of riparian property is entitled by the common law to all the water which in the course of nature would flow through his land. No property owner upon a stream in New York State under the common law may divert water which would naturally flow through the property of an owner farther down stream. In Colorado, however, the man who first lawfully appropriates water is entitled to it.

ever, did not accept this view, holding that the common-law doctrine in respect to the rights of riparian proprietors in the waters of natural streams was abolished by the Colorado Constitution. The court therefore held that the complainant company did not have riparian rights, as such, which could be maintained against the acts threatened by the defendant if the latter would constitute a valid appropriation of the water according to the law of Colorado.

The second point covered was to the effect that the threatened acts of the defendant *would* constitute a valid appropriation under the laws of Colorado; but this was of no avail to the defendant in view of the decision on the third point.

The third point covered the question whether the complainant, the Cascade Town Company, had not already lawfully appropriated the waters. The conclusion of the court under this head is the most interesting part of the decision to the country at large. Quoting from the Constitution of Colorado to the effect that "the right to divert the unappropriated waters of any natural stream to beneficial uses shall never be denied," the court calls attention to the fact that neither the manner of making such appropriation nor the acts necessary to be done to constitute an appropriation have definitely been fixed by the Constitution, the statutes or decisions of courts; nor has the term "beneficial use," as above used, been fixed definitely. The importance of Judge Lewis' decision therefore lies partly in the precedent which he establishes in the interpretation of these two terms. He adopts the argument of the solicitor* for the complainant that "beneficial use" is not limited to the development of power, irrigation for agricultural purposes, milling, manufacturing and other direct money-making purposes. "Public health is a beneficial use. * * * Rest and recreation is a beneficial use, and for that purpose water is used to make beautiful lawns, shady avenues, attractive homes, and public parks with lakelets and streams and artificial scenic beauty. * * * No one questions but that public health, rest and recreation is a domestic use as well as a beneficial use. No one, we may add, questions the right to these uses."

Judge Lewis holds that the maintenance of vegetation in Cascade Canyon for the purpose to which it has been devoted by

* Eugene F. Ware, Esq., of Kansas City, Kansas.

the complainant, by the flow, seepage, mist and spray of the stream and falls is a "beneficial use" and also constitutes a valid "appropriation" of the water. He says that it is not necessary to divert the water from its natural bed by means of ditches to appropriate it. The indispensable requirements of valid appropriations are that the appropriator must intend to use the waters for a beneficial purpose and actually apply them to a beneficial use, but the means of application are immaterial. He concludes, therefore, that the complainant had already appropriated the water of Cascade creek for a beneficial use and grants the complainant an injunction restraining the defendant from appropriating it and diverting it from the complainant's property.

This decision is so important as a precedent bearing on the whole subject of the value of scenic beauty that we give Judge Lewis's opinion in full:

"I. THE FACTS.

"Complainant, The Cascade Town Company, owns several hundred acres of land up Ute Pass, about eleven miles from Colorado Springs. Fountain creek flows through Ute Pass in an easterly direction, and as it passes the lands of the complainant company its waters are augmented by those of Cascade creek — short in length of flow but precipitous — which come down from the watershed on the northerly slope of Pike's Peak to the west-erly. The said complainant company and its predecessors in title have owned these lands for many years, and they began improving them as a summer resort more than twenty years ago, and have maintained them as such ever since and have not sought to utilize them otherwise. For that purpose they have constructed hotels there and built cottages, roads and trails on its lands extending up through Cascade Canyon, through which the stream of the same name flows, and on beyond into the mountains, laid out, dedicated to the public and improved a small park in said canyon, made a lake and fountain, built a pavilion or auditorium for conventions, and otherwise improved its grounds, thereby adding to the attractions of the place as left by nature. The complainant company and its predecessors are not, and were not, municipal corporations, but business ventures created for the purpose of maintaining their property as a resort for tourists during the summer season. The place is known as Cascade.

The Midland Railway, which traverses Ute Pass, has a station there. The complainant company has sold some of its property to persons who desired to improve the same as summer homes, and the complainant Bigger has spent about \$15,000 in improving his home on land bought from the company, lying on both sides of Cascade creek just below the canyon. The company obtains an income from those who stop at its hotels and enjoy other accommodations which it offers. It has spent a large amount of money in improvements. The roads and trails up Cascade canyon and on into the mountains were constructed at an expense of fifteen or twenty thousand dollars. It also built a small water works to supply the cottages and its hotels. It advertises the place for the purpose of inducing the public to go there, and for the past quarter of a century it has been visited annually by twelve or fifteen thousand people. It has a permanent population of fifty or sixty people. Among other attractions held out in its advertisements are Cascade canyon and the falls of Cascade creek through the canyon. The canyon and falls are rare in beauty and constitute the chief attraction. Without them the place would not be much unlike any other part of Ute Pass. The canyon is about three-quarters of a mile long and very deep; its floor and sides are covered with an exceptionally luxuriant growth of trees, shrubbery and flowers. This exceptional vegetation is produced by the flow of Cascade creek through the canyon and the mist and spray from its falls. Some of these falls are as much as thirty feet in height, but the difference in elevation between the foot and the head of the canyon is so great that the falls are almost continuous from the head down. The volume of water is the greatest during the summer season. It comes from the melting snows on the north slope of Pike's Peak. But the flow is fairly even, due to the fact that the upper stretches of the watershed are composed of disintegrated granite into which the water first sinks and gradually percolates until gathered into the bed of the stream. The volume is said to be equivalent to a stream about eight feet wide and six to eight inches in depth.

"The vegetation in the canyon and up its sides consists, in part, of pine, spruce, fir, balsam, aspen, black birch, Japanese maple, thimble berry, wild cherry, choke cherry, and aster, columbine, larkspur, wild rose, the red raspberry, wild gooseberry, ferns, mosses, and many other kinds of trees, shrubs and flowers. The stream is annually stocked with trout. The birds

which are found in the canyon, some grouse, a few squirrels, and perhaps a few other wild animals there, are protected by the complainant company. The complainant called a florist of twenty-five years' experience and a landscape gardener of thirty-five years' experience as witnesses. They tell us that the native flora of the country is quite extensive in Cascade canyon, that the evergreen features are perfect, that there are three or four varieties of pines, three of juniper and three of spruce, probably twenty-five varieties of native shrubs, about fifty varieties of native perennials, and several varieties of moss growth, and a large variety of wild flowers and flowering shrubs, that the waterfalls create a spray and mist which, together with the underground seepage down the sides of the canyon, produce this very luxuriant growth, there being at least two hundred varieties of vegetation, and that it is far superior in that respect to any other canyon in the neighborhood, and exceptional. The seepage and the mist and spray give life to the foliage.

"The defendant was incorporated for the purpose, among other things, of generating electricity by water power, and to dispose of the same as a commodity; and to execute that purpose it sent its agents on to the watershed of Pike's Peak, above the head of Cascade canyon, and located a reservoir site and did some acts, at small expense, looking to the execution of that purpose, whereby it intended and expected to impound the waters in such reservoir and later conduct it in pipes down the mountain to and beyond the property of the complainant company. And thereupon these complainants filed their several bills asking that the defendant be enjoined from so doing,—as a threatened injury to their vested rights.

"It is found as a fact that if the defendant do impound the waters of Cascade creek above the falls and conduct it therefrom in pipes as aforesaid, the falls in the canyon and the vegetation on its floor and sides will be largely, if not wholly, destroyed and the canyon hence become a dry gulch, and that all the waters flowing in said stream are needed by complainant company, and are necessary for the aforesaid purposes to which they have been applied by said complainant.

"II. THE LAW.

"1. The first contention of both complainants is that the government, while it was the owner of the lands on which the canyon

and the falls are situate, had riparian rights in the stream and that those rights were conveyed by patent from it, and through mesne conveyances, to the complainants.

"This contention cannot be accepted. There are no riparian rights in Colorado as against a valid appropriation of water.

"In *Sternberger v. Seaton Co.*, 45 Colo. 401, 404, it is said:

"The doctrine in this state that the common law rule of continuous flow of natural streams is abolished, is so firmly established by our constitution, the statutes of the territory and the state, and by many decisions of this court, that we decline to reopen or consider it, however interesting discussion thereof might otherwise be, and notwithstanding its importance."

"And again, page 403:

"The Supreme Court of the United States, in several cases, has approved and indicated its satisfaction with the decisions of the state courts which hold that the common law doctrine has been abolished, and has said that each state, without interference by the federal courts, may for itself, and as between rival and individual claimants, determine which doctrine shall be therein enforced."

"In *Coffin v. Left Hand Ditch Co.*, 6 Colo. 443, 446, it is said:

"It is contended by counsel for appellants that the common law principles of riparian proprietorship prevailed in Colorado until 1876, and that the doctrine of priority of right to water by priority of appropriation thereof was first recognized and adopted in the constitution. But we think the latter doctrine has existed from the date of the earliest appropriations of water within the boundaries of the state. The climate is dry, and the soil, when moistened only by the usual rainfall, is arid and unproductive; except in a few favored sections, artificial irrigation for agriculture is an absolute necessity. Water in the various streams thus acquire a value unknown in moister climates. Instead of being a mere incident to the soil, it rises, when appropriated, to the dignity of a distinct usufructuary estate, or right of property. It has always been the policy of the national, as well as the territorial and state governments, to encourage the diversion and use of water in this country for agriculture; and vast expenditures of time and money have been made in reclaiming and fertilizing by irrigation portions of our unproductive territory. Houses have been built, and permanent improvements made; the soil has been cultivated, and thousands of acres have been rendered immensely valuable, with the understanding that appropriations of water would be protected. Deny the doctrine of priority or superiority of right by priority of appropriation, and a great part of the value of all this property is at once destroyed.

"The right to water in this country, by priority of appropriation thereof, we think it is, and has always been, the duty of the national and state governments to protect. The right itself, and the obligation to protect it, existed prior to legislation on the subject of irrigation. It is entitled to protection as well after patent to a third party of the land over which the natural stream flows, as when such land is a part of the public domain; and it is immaterial whether or not it be mentioned in the patent and expressly excluded from the grant.

"The act of Congress protecting in patents such right in water appropriated, when recognized by local customs and laws, "was rather a voluntary recognition of a pre-existing right of possession, constituting a valid claim to its continued use, than the establishment of a new one." *Broder v. Notoma W. & M. Co.*, 11 Otto, 274.

"We conclude, then, that the common law doctrine giving the riparian owner a right to the flow of water in its natural channel upon and over his

lands, even though he makes no beneficial use thereof, is inapplicable to Colorado. Imperative necessity, unknown to the countries which gave it birth, compels the recognition of another doctrine in conflict therewith. And we hold that, in the absence of express statutes to the contrary, the first appropriator of water from a natural stream for a beneficial purpose has, with the qualifications contained in the constitution, a prior right thereto, to the extent of such appropriation.'

"Congress, as early as 1866, recognized the necessity of the abolition of the common law doctrine of riparian rights in the arid States. Speaking of the act of July 26, 1866, the Supreme Court, in *U. S. v. Rio Grande Irr. Co.*, 174 U. S. 690, 704, said:

"The effect of this statute was to recognize, so far as the United States are concerned, the validity of the local customs, laws and decisions of courts in respect to the appropriation of water."

"And again, at page 702:

"While this is undoubted (the rule of the common law as to riparian rights), and the rule obtains in those states in the union which have simply adopted the common law, it is also true that as to every stream within its domain a state may change this common law rule and permit the appropriation of the flowing waters for such purpose as it deems wise."

"In *Gutierrez v. Albuquerque Land Co.*, 188 U. S. 545, 552, it is said:

"We think, in view of the legislation of Congress on the subject of the appropriation of water on the public domain, particularly referred to in the opinion of this court in *U. S. vs. Rio Grande Irr. Co.*, 174 U. S. 690, 704-706, the objection is devoid of merit. As stated in the opinion just referred to, by the act of July 26, 1866, 14 Stat. 253, Congress recognized, as respects the public domain, "so far as the United States are concerned the validity of the local customs, laws and decisions of courts in respect to the appropriation of water."

"Also *Clark v. Nash*, 198 U. S. 361, 370:

"The rights of a riparian owner in and to the use of the water flowing by his land are not the same in the arid and mountainous states of the West that they are in the states of the East. These rights have been altered by many of the western states, by their constitution and laws, because of the totally different circumstances in which their inhabitants are placed, from those that exist in the states of the East, and such alterations have been made for the very purpose of thereby contributing to the growth and prosperity of those states arising from mining and the cultivation of an otherwise valueless soil, by means of irrigation. This court must recognize the difference of climate and soil, which render necessary these different laws in the states so situated."

"This question had direct consideration by the Circuit Court of Appeals for this circuit in the case of *Snyder v. Colorado Gold Dredging Co.*, opinion in which was filed August 4, 1910. In that case it is said:

"The common law doctrine in respect of the rights of riparian proprietors in the waters of natural streams never has obtained in Colorado. From the earliest times in that jurisdiction the local customs, laws and decisions of courts have united in rejecting that doctrine and in adopting a different one which regards the waters of all natural streams as subject to appropriation

and diversion for beneficial uses and treats priority of appropriation and continued beneficial use as giving the prior and superior right. *Yunker v. Nichols*, 1 Colo. 551; *Coffin v. Left Hand Ditch Co.*, 6 Colo. 443, 447; *Platte Water Co. v. North. Colo. Irrigation Co.*, 12 Colo. 525, 531; *Crippen v. White*, 28 Colo. 298. In so choosing between these two inconsistent doctrines Colorado acted within the limits of her authority, first as a territory and then as a state, and her choice was recognized and sanctioned by Congress, so far as the public lands of the United States were concerned.'

"And again:

"It needs only to be added that, by the settled rule of decision in the Supreme Court of the United States, conveyances by the United States of public lands on non-navigable streams and lakes, when it is not provided otherwise, are to be construed and have effect according to the law of the state in which the lands are situate, in so far as the rights and incidents of riparian proprietorship are concerned. *Hardin v. Jordan*, 140 U. S. 370, 384, 402; *Hardin v. Shedd*, 190 U. S. 508, 519; *Whittaker v. McBride*, 197 U. S. 510; *Harrison v. Fite*, 78 C. C. A. 447, 449, 148 Fed. 781, 783. Here it is not provided otherwise, either by statute or by the patent, and, as has been seen, the local law does not recognize a conveyance of the land as carrying any right to the unappropriated waters of the stream.'

"It is therefore believed that the patent from the government did not pass, and the patentee did not take riparian rights to the waters in question, but that said lands are held by the complainants subject to the law of appropriation of waters as established in this State. And, inasmuch as there is no testimony showing any right to the waters of Cascade creek in the complainant Bigger, other than that of riparian owner, the finding of the court must be against him and his case dismissed, if the alleged threatened acts would constitute a valid appropriation.

"2. If the defendant were permitted to impound and pipe the waters of Cascade creek for the purpose of generating electricity to be sold by it as a commodity, as charged in the bill, it was threatening to do, and admitted in the answer and shown by the proof it intended to do, such acts would have constituted a valid appropriation of said waters under the constitution and laws of the State of Colorado, as they have been construed by the court of last resort in this State. *Lamborn v. Bell*, 18 Colo. 346; *Sternberger v. Seaton M. Co.*, 45 Colo. 401. See, also, *Schwab v. Beam*, 86 Fed. 41, 43.

"3. Does the testimony show an appropriation of the waters of Cascade creek by the complainant company or its predecessors in title, along the falls as they flow through Cascade canyon?

"The people of Colorado dedicated to the public all unappropriated waters of every natural stream within its borders, and made them subject to appropriation as private property. *Const.*

of *Colorado*, art. 16, secs. 5 and 6. Section 6 reads, in part, as follows:

“The right to divert the unappropriated waters of any natural stream to beneficial uses shall never be denied.”

“But neither the manner of making such appropriation nor the acts necessary to be done to constitute an appropriation has been definitely fixed by the constitution, by the statutes or by the decision of the courts. Nor has the term ‘beneficial uses,’ as used in section 6, *supra*, been definitely fixed and limited in its meaning. I cannot better express my own views as to the meaning of that phrase, applicable to the facts here, than to quote a part of the brief of the learned solicitor for complainant:

“The courts have not defined, because they as yet are unable to define, the exact boundaries of the territory known as “beneficial use.”

“Mr. Kinney, in his work on Irrigation, says:

“The purpose contemplated for the use of the water may be irrigation for agricultural or horticultural purposes, mining, milling, manufacturing, domestic or any other purpose for which water is needed to supply the natural and artificial wants of man provided it be for a beneficial use. (Sec. 150.)

“Pomeroy says: (Sec. 47.)

“The purpose may be mining, milling, manufacturing, irrigating, agricultural, horticultural, domestic or otherwise; but there must be some actual, positive, beneficial purpose, existing at the time, or contemplated in the future, as the subject for which the water is to be utilized.

“The public health is a beneficial use, and for that purpose, among others, a city may condemn streams of water. The water when so obtained, may be used and is used in any manner that will promote the public health; it is used for sprinkling the streets, washing the pavements and flushing the sewers.

“Rest and recreation is a beneficial use, and for that purpose water is used to make beautiful lawns, shady avenues, attractive homes, and public parks with fountains, lakelets and streams, and artificial scenic beauty.

“Cities condemn water, and use water for the foregoing purposes. No one questions but that public health, rest and recreation is a domestic use, as well as a beneficial use. No one, we may add, questions the right to these uses.

“The law inside of a city is not different from the law outside of the city. In one sense there is no commercial value to fountains and parks; they do not bring in a revenue, but they are vastly beneficial to the public health, rest and recreation, and such fact is recognized the world over, and there can be no question but that water, applied to their maintenance and creation is a “beneficial use.”

“We say that the creation of a summer resort is a beneficial use. Is it no benefit to the public to spend money in making a beautiful place in nature visible and enjoyable? Is it not in line with public health, rest and recreation? If a person takes a stream and, after putting in water-falls, ponds, bridges, walls, shrubbery and blue-grass sod, works it into a beautiful home, that is a beneficial use. It is a benefit to the weary, ailing and feeble that they can have the wild beauties of nature placed at their convenient disposal. Is a piece of canvas valuable only for a tent-fly but worthless as a painting? Is a block of stone beneficially used when put into the walls of a dam, and not beneficially used when carved into a piece of statuary? Is the test dollars, or has beauty of scenery, rest, recreation, health, enjoyment something to do with it? Is there no beneficial use except that which is purely commercial?

“It would seem that parks and playgrounds and blue grass are benefits and their uses beneficial although there is no profit derived from them; if not,

then the contention of the defendant corporation must be maintained that nothing but money-making schemes are beneficial. The world delights in scenic beauty, but must scenic beauty disappear because it has no appraised cash value? If this defendant corporation takes the water out of Cascade canyon, it can take the water out of the Seven Falls and Cheyenne canyon, and Glen Eyrie, and the beautiful parks, and homes and summer resorts of the state. We feel compelled to say that there are other beneficial uses of the fall of water than the mere production of commodities in competition with others now existing. When the defendant company says the complainants are putting the fall of the water to no beneficial use, it means that the complainants are not ruining the beautiful scenery for cash.'

"It is therefore held that the maintenance of the vegetation in Cascade canyon, for the purpose to which it has been devoted by the complainant, by the flow and seepage, and mist and spray of the stream and its falls as it passes through the canyon, is a beneficial use of such waters within the meaning of said section 6, article 16 of the Constitution, that the complainant intended to use the waters of Cascade creek for that purpose, and has so used them for many years and thereby appropriated the same. The complainant is not required to construct ditches or artificial ways through which the water might be taken from the stream, in order that it might appropriate the same. The only indispensable requirements are that the appropriator, in order to constitute a valid appropriation, first, must intend to use the waters for a beneficial use, and second, actually apply them to a beneficial use. There is express statutory recognition of utilization of lands from natural overflow as one means of appropriation, as in the flooding of meadows by natural overflow without the use of any artificial means whatever. *Rev. Stats. of Colo.*, 1908, sec. 3165; *Humphreys Co. v. Frank*, 46 Colo. 524; *Broad Run Inv. Co. v. Deuel & Snyder Imp Co.*, 108 Pac. (Colo.), 755.

"The Supreme Court of this State, in considering the means necessary to constitute appropriation, in *Thomas v. Guiraud*, 6 Colo. 530, 533, said:

"We do not agree with counsel for plaintiff in error in their position, as we understand it, that the appropriation of water by Guiraud in 1862 was not valid or permanent because he constructed no ditches. Some of the witnesses testify that he did construct ditches, but it is unnecessary for us to weigh the testimony and determine the preponderance thereof upon this question. If a dam or contrivance of any kind will suffice to turn water from the stream and moisten the land sought to be cultivated, it is sufficient, though no ditch is needed or constructed. Or if land be rendered productive by the natural overflow of the water thereon, without the aid of any appliances whatever, the cultivation of such land by means of the water so naturally moistening the same is a sufficient appropriation of such water, or so much thereof as is reasonably necessary for such use. The true test of appropriation of water is the successful application thereof to the beneficial use designed; and the method of diverting or carrying the same, or making such application, is immaterial.'

"And again, considering the same question, that court, in *Larimer Co. R. Co. v. People, ex rel.*, 8 Colo. 614, at 616, declares:

"It is claimed that when the constitution recognizes the right to appropriate water by diversion, it excludes the appropriation thereof in any other manner. Further, that the word "divert" means to take or carry it away from the bed or channel of the stream; that therefore respondent's act of utilizing a natural reservoir in the bed of the stream, and thus storing surplus water for future use, not being a diversion in the sense of the constitutional provision cited, is in conflict therewith. We are not prepared to concede the correctness of counsel's position. It is our opinion that the above is not the most natural and reasonable view to adopt concerning the meaning of the constitution. The word "divert" must be interpreted in connection with the word "appropriation," and with other language used in the remaining sections of that instrument referring to the subject of irrigation. We think there may be a constitutional appropriation of water without its being at the instant taken from the bed of the stream. This court has held that "the true test of the appropriation of water is the successful application thereof to the beneficial use designed, and the method of diverting or carrying the same, or making such application, is immaterial." *Thomas vs. Guiraud*, 6 Colo. 530."

"See, also, *Ft. Morgan L. & C. Co. v. South Platte Ditch Co.*, 16 Colo. 1, 5.

"In *Offield v. Ish*, 57 Pac. (Wash.) 809, it is said:

"The right to use the water is the essence of appropriation. The means by which it is done are incidental."

"See, also, *McCall v. Porter*, 70 Pac. (Ore.) 820, 822.

"It therefore appears that the water of Cascade creek, which the defendant threatens to impound and carry away in pipes, has already been appropriated by the complainant, The Cascade Town Company, for beneficial uses and that it has a vested property right therein which the defendant's contemplated acts, if executed, will destroy. The complainant company may have a decree as prayed, with costs. The bill of complainant Bigger will be dismissed, with costs to the defendant against him."

GRAND CANYON NATIONAL MONUMENT.

Enlargement of the Park Proposed.

In May, 1910, the Board of Trustees of this Society authorized the appointment of a special committee on Grand Canyon National Park with a view to securing an enlargement of the reservation, and on May 23d the President appointed as such committee the Hon. William B. Howland, Chairman, Mr. Herbert L. Bridgman, Mr. H. K. Bush-Brown, Mr. Frederick S. Dellenbaugh and the Secretary. Mr. Dellenbaugh was artist and photographer with Major Powell in his second memorable voyage through the Grand Canyon in 1871-73.

On November 3, 1910, the President of the United States received at the White House, in Washington, Dr. George Frederick Kunz, President of the Society, Mr. Howland, Mr. Dellenbaugh, and Dr. Edward Hagaman Hall, Secretary, who presented verbally and in writing the suggestion of the Society for the extension of the park. The proposition is contained briefly in the following letter, which was supplemented by maps and documents:

NEW YORK CITY, November 2, 1910.

The Hon. WILLIAM H. TAFT, President of the United States, Washington, D. C.:

SIR.—The undersigned Committee appointed by the American Scenic and Historic Preservation Society have the honor to lay before you the following facts with reference to the Grand Canyon National Monument, and, with a view to extending the boundaries of that reservation, very respectfully to ask you to take such action as the law permits and you may deem wise.

The great chasm of the Colorado river in Arizona has two parts—the Grand Canyon, 217½ miles long, and Marble Canyon, 65½ miles long, as the river runs. There is no break in the walls between these divisions, but the canyon is continuous for a total length of 283 miles.

This canyon is one of the natural wonders of the world. It is the greatest eroded canyon in the United States. In some portions it is more than a mile deep, its average depth being about 4,000 feet. It measures from ten to fifteen miles from rim to rim. It has been the subject of historical writers since it was first seen by Coronado in 1540. It contains interesting archaeological remains. It possesses extraordinary scientific interest on account of the causes which formed it and its extraordinary geological exposures. And it presents natural scenery of a character and upon a scale unparalleled in the known world.

In 1893, near the end of President Harrison's administration, an extensive territory lying north and south of the Colorado river in Arizona was established as the Grand Canyon National Forest. On January 11, 1908, President Roosevelt, by virtue of the authority vested in the President by act of Congress approved June 8, 1906, entitled "An Act for the Preservation of American Antiquities," proclaimed the establishment of the Grand Canyon National Monument, embracing an area of 818,560 acres, lying

within the Grand Canyon National Forest. The proclamation declared that it was not intended thereby to prevent the use of the lands for forest purposes, but that both reservations should be effective on the land withdrawn, the National Monument being the dominant reservation. On July 2, 1908, President Roosevelt issued two more proclamations, dividing the Grand Canyon National *Forest* into two parts, without, however, affecting the Grand Canyon National *Monument*. That portion of the National Forest north of the Colorado river was erected into the Kaibab National Forest, embracing 1,080,000 acres; while that south of the river, together with portions of certain other forests, was erected into the Coconino National Forest, embracing 3,689,982 acres. The Grand Canyon National Monument therefore lies along the borders of the Colorado river, partly in the Kaibab and partly in the Coconino National Forests.

Our Society does not request that these relations shall be disturbed, but that the Grand Canyon National Monument shall be enlarged. At present, only about one-half of the Grand Canyon and the Marble Canyon are within the National Monument. One-half of the Grand Canyon to the westward is thus left without protection from vandalism. We very respectfully recommend that the present reservation be extended westward to the 114th meridian, by which extension all of the canyon would be included except a portion of the western bend, which could be included by placing the southern boundary of this western extension at latitude $35^{\circ} 33'$ as shown in the accompanying map. The lines stated will cover the whole of the 283 miles of the great chasm, besides taking in the wonderful contiguous region with its magnificent tributary canyons. No State lines are involved, the region lying wholly within Arizona. There are few settlements in the area designated, and no improvements of any consequence.

Commending this recommendation to your favorable consideration, we have the honor to remain,

Yours very respectfully,

GEORGE FREDERICK KUNZ,
President.

WILLIAM B. HOWLAND,
FREDERICK S. DELLENBAUGH,
EDWARD HAGAMAN HALL,
Secretary.

President Taft received the committee cordially and expressed his entire sympathy with the suggestion, although he was not sure about the advisability of carrying it out by executive proclamation. He had visited the Grand Canyon the preceding year and was enthusiastic in regard to its grandeur.

Our suggestion concerning the enlargement of the reservation was that the boundary should be as follows:

Beginning at the most northwesterly corner of the present Grand Canyon National Monument, thence due west on the extension westward of the northerly line of said Grand Canyon National Monument to a point where said extended line meets the northerly extension of the east boundary of the Dixie National Forest, thence south on this extended line to the north boundary of the Dixie National Forest, thence west and south on the bounds of said forest to the point where the west boundary of the said eastern Dixie Forest turns eastward, thence west on the westerly extension of the said east line to the point where this line intersects the northerly extension of the north and south line passing through the most northerly corner of the western Dixie Forest, thence south on this northerly extended line to the north boundary of the said western Dixie Forest, thence west on the north boundary of said forest to the 114th meridian, thence south on said meridian to latitude 36 north, thence east on latitude 36 to the western boundary of the Hualpai Indian Reservation, thence southerly, easterly and northeasterly, following the southerly bounds of said reservation, to the point where said boundary intersects the western extension of the south boundary of the Coconino National Forest, thence east on this boundary to the point where it turns north, thence still following the bounds of said Coconino National Forest, northerly, easterly, and westerly and northerly to its intersection with latitude 36, thence due north to latitude $36^{\circ} 40'$, thence due west along $36^{\circ} 40'$ to a point on or near $112^{\circ} 30'$ of west longitude which is due south of the northeast corner of section 8, township 38 north, range 2 west; thence northerly to said northeast corner of section 8, township 38 north, range 2 west, thence westerly to the northwest corner of section 7, township 38 north, range 3 west, thence southerly to the northeast corner of section 1, township 37 north, range 4 west; thence westerly to the northwest corner of said section; thence southerly to the northwest corner of section 24, said township; thence west-

erly to the northwest corner of section 21, said township; thence southerly to the northwest corner of section 33, said township; thence westerly to the northwest corner of section 31, said township; thence southerly to the northwest corner of the present Grand Canyon National Monument, the place of beginning.

The suggestion concerning the extension of the reservation met with some opposition in Congress on the ground that it would interfere with the grazing of cattle on public land. We are not opposed to allowing the cattle of the Kanab farmers to graze in the park — provided they make an adequate return to the government for the privilege — but we do believe that the fee in the country including the marvellous scenery of the Grand Canyon should be in the Federal government.

Partly on account of the opposition of the grazing interests and partly in consequence of other projected legislation bearing on the subject of national parks, no progress was made in the direction suggested during the session of Congress which ended March 4, 1911. (See plates 20 and 23.)

Bill to Create a Grand Canyon National Park.

As stated in the foregoing letter to the President of the United States and also more fully in former reports of this Society, the present Grand Canyon Reservation is technically known as a National Monument, not a National Park. The difference between a National Monument and a National Park will be explained under the heading "National Parks Bureau Proposed" following.

On January 31, 1910, the Hon. Frank P. Flint of California, introduced in the Senate of the United States a bill (S. 5,938) entitled "A bill to set aside certain lands in the territory of Arizona now known as the Grand Canyon National Monument and Coconino National Forest as a public park to be known as the Grand Canyon National Park."

In this bill, the boundary of the present monument was followed with three exceptions:

(a) In sections 23 and 24, of township 30 north, range 2 east, the present boundary includes the land for some distance back from the rim of the canyon. This bill proposed to move the

boundary up to the rim at and near the present railway terminus, thus permitting private interests to secure possession of the land at the most accessible point of the canyon.

(b) The bill added to the northeastern corner of the present monument 62 square miles of territory including ten or a dozen miles of Marble Canyon (part of the Grand Canyon).

(c) The bill also added to the northwestern corner of the monument 152 square miles, including about 25 miles of Kanab Canyon.

In a communication to Congress in February, 1911, we expressed disapproval of the first mentioned change but approval of the two additions. We also approved of the change from a National Monument to a National Park, to be under the control of the Secretary of the Interior, and the provisions for the preservation of timber, mineral deposits, natural curiosities and wonders within the park; but we reiterated our wish that the scope of the bill might be extended so as to be commensurate with the suggestion contained in our letter to the President.

The bill, however, failed to pass.

Railroad Franchise Along the Canyon River Opposed.

There was pending in the last Congress a bill (H. R. 2,258) introduced by the Hon. Ralph H. Cameron of Arizona in the first session on March 18, 1909, entitled "A bill granting right of way over certain sections of the Grand Canyon Monument Reserve in Arizona to the Grand Canyon Scenic Railroad Company." The bill proposed to grant a right of way for a railroad along about fourteen miles of the rim of the Grand Canyon to the east and southeast of the terminus of the Santa Fe Grand Canyon Railroad; and for an indefinite distance in another direction "to a point on the unsurveyed lands on the brink of Granite Gorge." Granite Gorge is the gorge of the Grand Canyon fifty miles or more long in the heart of the Grand Canyon National Monument. We strongly opposed this bill on the ground that it granted to a corporation without compensation an enormously valuable franchise in the midst of a public reservation and along the brink of the most wonderful eroded canyon in the known world. If such a franchise were granted, the right of way might be fenced off

and the public excluded from the points of view on the rim of the canyon, and citizens could not gain access without liability for trespass as is now the case at the points along the Hudson river where railroad franchises have been granted. We suggested that coaching from the present railroad terminal might be a better method of transportation than a railroad within the Grand Canyon Monument, as in the Yellowstone Park. It would mar the natural scenery less, and would avoid the great danger of forest fires originating from railroads. If, however, a railroad should prove to be necessary for public convenience in the Grand Canyon Monument we suggested that it should be owned and controlled by the government, and if possible be operated by oil fuel or electricity to prevent forest fires. In our interview with President Taft, he expressed this view as to government ownership and control of any railroad within the Grand Canyon Monument. In this connection we called the attention of Congress to the manner in which the Commissioners of the New York State Reservation at Niagara Falls met a somewhat similar situation. There, a street railway company desired a franchise to run through a street forming part of the reservation. The company was permitted to build the road, at its own expense, under the supervision of the commissioners, and to have a license to use the road for a limited period of years, at a certain compensation to the State, but the road itself is the property of the reservation, the license is revocable, and the commissioners reserve the right to allow the cars of other companies also to pass over the road. Still better than a railroad for the Grand Canyon is the suggestion of Dr. James Douglas to have a wide boulevard near the edge of the rim and then establish an automobile carriage service like the sight-seeing machines such as are used in the city of New York, in Italy, and in the south of France, where they have been used for the past ten years. This would insure a return to the government, as the weather is such that visitors are there all the year around, and would make it much more accessible than at present.

We are happy to record that the railroad franchise bill failed to pass the last Congress, thus leaving the way open for a better alternative.

NATIONAL PARKS AND MONUMENTS.

New National Parks and Monuments.

In our last annual report (1910) we gave a list of thirty-six National Parks and Monuments, of which twenty-six are under the jurisdiction of the Department of the Interior and ten under the jurisdiction of the Department of Agriculture. To these may now be added the following:

DATE.	NAME AND LOCATION.	ACREAGE.
* 1910	Sitka National Monument, Alaska.....	57
* 1910	Glacier National Park, Montana	981, 681
* 1910	Rainbow Bridge National Monument, Utah.....	160
† 1909	Oregon Caves National Monument, Oregon.....	.....

With the foregoing there are now forty National Parks and Monuments, embracing an area of 6,106,918 acres.

Hawaiian Volcanic Wonder Park Proposed.

In connection with the establishment of parks and monuments on our national domain, it is interesting to note that a great National Park for the reservation of the volcanic wonders of Hawaii has recently been proposed. On that island is to be found a natural phenomenon not occurring anywhere else in the world on the same scale, and well worthy of being included among the priceless treasures which should be carefully guarded and rendered accessible to lovers of nature and students of her mysteries. Nowhere else can we find such a stupendous manifestation of volcanic energy, not acting at irregular intervals, but constantly, and thus affording unequalled opportunities to investigators, for this is accessible to all who visit the region.

On the island of Hawaii, the largest of the Hawaiian group, rises Mauna Loa, on whose summit, 13,635 feet above sea-level, is the volcano of Mokuaweoweo; on the eastern slope of the mountain at an elevation of 4,000 feet, is the still more striking and remarkable volcano of Kilauea, the largest active volcano in the world. The proposition now made and strongly urged is to establish two Federal reservations, one of twenty-eight square miles, com-

* Administered by Interior Department.

† Administered by Department of Agriculture.

prising the summit and upper part of Mauna Loa, and the other of sixty square miles, embracing the crater of Kilauea — some twenty miles distant from Mokuaweoweo — and so much of the surrounding territory as is requisite to show the neighboring formations and the characteristic flora of the region. The two reservations are to be connected by a broad roadway. They would be about thirty miles from Hilo and some two hundred miles from Honolulu. (See plate 39.) The crater of Kilauea (see plate 41) is of somewhat irregular shape, the diameter varying from three to five miles. It appears like an immense excavation in a plain. Owing to the changes due to volcanic action, the height of the walls of the crater is subject to frequent variation; in 1823 these walls were 900 feet high, now their height is estimated at about 400 feet. Within the area embraced by the walls is the volcano proper, a pit some 800 feet in diameter, wherein seethes and boils a lake of lava. The surface of this lake rises and sinks as the volcanic energy waxes and wanes, or as the lava breaks a passage for itself through subterranean strata, or through the rim of the pit, which has been formed by the solidification of overflowing lava and rises above the floor of the crater. After overflowing the top of the pit the liquid mass of lava sinks deep down into it; in July, 1894, the lava descended to a depth of from 1,000 to 1,200 feet. As a result of this, sections of the encircling rock become detached and immense masses are plunged into the lake of fire. Some of these masses are sufficiently porous to float for several days, or even weeks, upon the molten lava, and these floating islands of rock constitute one of the strangest appearances of this remarkable volcano. In the native tongue the lake is called Halemaumau, "House of Everlasting Fire." As its manifestations are not explosive, but essentially constant, careful approach to it is unattended by any risk, and thus this weird scene, one realizing and even exceeding the visions of Dante's "Inferno," would be always safely accessible to tourists.

The crater of Mokuaweoweo on the summit of Mauna Loa, in the region of perpetual snow, has a diameter of two and a half miles and is therefore somewhat smaller than Kilauea. It also differs from the latter in that its action is intermittent and explosive, the lava being sometimes hurled to a height of several hun-

dred feet; it frequently breaks a path through the side of the mountain. In 1859 there was an exceptionally severe outbreak, and the lava after piercing the mountain-side at an elevation of 10,500 feet, flowed downward and onward until in eight days' time it reached the sea, distant thirty-three miles.

Apart from the volcano itself the region about Kilauea offers much that is curious and interesting, notably the so-called "Fields of Pele's Hair," a tract covered with fine-spun filaments of lava, blown away by the wind as the spray is cast up out of the fiery lake. In Hawaiian mythology Pele is the goddess of fire. Then there are the wonderful fern trees, the fronds sometimes extending upward to a height of forty feet, and the splendid specimens of the koa tree, the Hawaiian mahogany, with trunks measuring as much as twenty feet in circumference. About the Kilauea volcano, the meteorological conditions are very peculiar, one part of the territory being constantly swept by the trade winds and having an annual rainfall of one hundred inches, while on another portion the yearly precipitation is but ten inches, and an almost continual calm prevails. As a result of this, part of the tract is well wooded and rich in plant life, another part being a desert entirely destitute of vegetation. A singular spectacle within the limits of the proposed Volcano National Park is offered by the "lava trees." (Plate 42.) Liquid lava sweeping through the forest has solidified around the trunks of some of the trees, creating molds eight to fifteen feet high, within which all the wood has burned away, but which stand upright as though they were monuments erected to the memory of the dead trees.

One-half of the territory embraced in the two proposed parks is already owned by the territorial government, and the remainder could probably be purchased for a merely nominal sum, as but little of the land has even the slightest commercial value. Seven miles from Kilauea is a small hotel, and a good automobile road (plate 40) leads thence to the lake of lava, but there is no road or even trail to Mokuaweoweo. The territorial government has expended some \$100,000 for roads already and the building of the additional roads necessary would require Federal aid. A representative of the Sandwich Islands has introduced a bill

intended to secure the permanence of this greatest of our volcanic wonder parks.*

Difference between National Monuments and Parks.

The difference between National Monuments and National Parks, alluded to on page 188 preceding, may be explained as follows:

A National Monument is created by proclamation by the President of the United States by authority of the Act for the Preservation of American Antiquities, approved June 8, 1906. Section 2 of that act reads as follows:

"Sec. 2. That the President of the United States is hereby authorized, in his discretion, to declare by public proclamation historic landmarks, historic and prehistoric structures, and other objects of historic or scientific interest that are situated upon the lands owned or controlled by the government of the United States to be National Monuments, and may reserve as a part thereof parcels of land, the limits of which in all cases shall be confined to the smallest area compatible with the proper care and management of the objects to be protected. Provided, that when such objects are situated upon a tract covered by a *bona fide* unperfected claim or held in private ownership, the tract, or so much thereof as may be necessary for the proper care and management of the object, may be relinquished to the government, and the Secretary of the Interior is hereby authorized to accept the relinquishment of such tracts in behalf of the government of the United States."

The National Monuments set aside under this act by presidential proclamation can be increased or diminished as circumstances may require by like authority. No specific appropriation has ever been made for the care and protection of these National Monuments, and Congress has not authorized the granting of any privileges or concessions therein for the accommodation of visitors thereto. The Secretary of the Interior has placed these several National Monuments under his supervision under the nominal custody of various field officers of the General Land Office, and has instructed them as far as practicable to enforce the following regulations, which have been promulgated for the "proper

* See Mid-Pacific Magazine, March, 1911, Vol. 1, No. 3, pp. 304-322. Lorrin A. Thurston.

care and management of the objects to be protected " in the several National Monuments, to-wit:

1. Fires are absolutely prohibited.
2. No firearms are allowed.
3. No fishing permitted.
4. Flowers, ferns or shrubs must not be picked, nor may any damage be done to the trees.
5. Vehicles and horses may be left only at the places designated for this purpose.
6. Lunches may be eaten only at the spots marked out for such use, and all refuse and litter must be placed in the receptacles provided.
7. Pollution of the water in any manner is prohibited; it must be kept clean enough for drinking purposes.
8. No drinking saloon or bar-room will be permitted.
9. Persons rendering themselves obnoxious by disorderly conduct or bad behavior, or who may violate any of the foregoing rules, will be summarily removed.

None of the states in which the National Monuments under the Interior Department have been set aside have as yet ceded exclusive jurisdiction thereover to the United States.

A National Park differs from a National Monument in the respect that it is created by act of Congress, and can be abolished only by another act. Its existence is more stable than that of a National Monument and its scope is larger. The act creating it contains provisions specifically defining the boundaries thereof, authorizing the prescribing of rules and regulations for their government, and in most cases, the granting of privileges for the accommodation of tourists therein, etc., and the use of the revenues derived therefrom in the management of the respective parks. Appropriations are also made from year to year by Congress for the administration and improvement of National Parks. The majority of the National Parks are set aside as pleasure grounds for the benefit and enjoyment of the people and for the preservation therein of the wonders and curiosities, etc., in a natural condition, as well as for the protection of the game and flora. The boundaries of a National Park being specifically defined by Congress, can only be increased or diminished by similar specific authority, and only such privileges or concessions can be

granted therein as are authorized in the respective acts setting aside the lands specified therein for park purposes.

A Bureau of National Parks Proposed.

During the summer of 1910, the President of this Society conferred with the Hon. Richard A. Ballinger, Secretary of the Interior, as to the advisability of legislation looking to a unified administration of the National Parks and Monuments; and in November of the same year, President Taft expressed to our committee the view that a more systematic method should be devised for managing these various national possessions.

The present situation with respect to the management of the National Parks and Monuments is far from satisfactory. In some cases different departments of the government have overlapping jurisdictions in the same territory. In some cases there is doubt as to which department has jurisdiction. It would, therefore, seem as if these properties ought to be brought under a single administrative head, not only for the more systematic and intelligent transaction of current affairs and for the pursuance of a consistent general policy, but also to prevent confusion in the future in regard to lands, titles, etc.

With respect to the latter, while the cases of the State of New York and the United States may not be exactly parallel, it may be mentioned that for years, there has been great confusion as to the ownership of lands claimed to belong to the State in the Adirondacks. This has been due largely to the sale of land for taxes by State Comptroller's Department, the defective recording of the sales by the local county authorities, the subsequent purchase by the Forest, Fish and Game Department, etc. In times past, hundreds of thousands of acres of land which the State believed it owned have been lost through successful contests of the State's titles; while on the other hand we know of private owners of large areas who are in doubt as to the security of their titles. It has occurred to us that some complications might occur in regard to Federal lands unless their administration were unified and systematized.

In his annual report to President Taft, December 1, 1910, Secretary Ballinger said on this subject:

“As regards the National Parks which have been created and are capable of development as national institutions, a definite policy for their maintenance, supervision, and improvement should be established, which would enable them to be gradually opened up for the convenience and comfort of tourists and campers and for the careful preservation of their natural features. Complete and comprehensive plans for roads, trails, telegraph and telephone lines, sewers and water systems, hotel accommodations, transportation, and other conveniences should be made for each of the National Parks before any large amount of money is expended. The treatment of our National Parks, except as regards the Yellowstone, has not had heretofore the benefit of any well-considered or systematic plans. In all of them the road and trail problems for public travel and convenience to enable tourists to obtain the benefits of scenic beauties are primary, but sewage, water, and electric power problems are, after all, of equal importance.

“The patrol of the National Parks is also a matter of prime importance in their supervision. The system of maintaining regular troops in the Yellowstone, Yosemite, Sequoia, and General Grant Parks has proved entirely satisfactory as a method of patrol. The moral effect of the troops in protecting against malicious mischief and enforcing regulations, and the saving of expense in administration by their use, justify their assignment. I believe, however, that civilian superintendents should have charge of the administrative government of all of the National Parks, with military supervision confined to the enforcement of regulations pertaining to public travel and preservation of game and natural curiosities. Outside of the Yellowstone National Park the administration of all of the parks is embarrassed by the fact that they contain within their bounds certain areas of private lands, which should be acquired by the government, and all private interests, including toll roads, extinguished. The private holdings are as follows: Yosemite National Park, 19,827 acres; Sequoia National Park, 3,716.96 acres; Wind Cave National Park, 160 acres; Crater Lake National Park, 1,337 acres patented land, and 1,121.11 acres unperfected *bona fide* claims; Mesa Verde National Park, 400 acres patented lands, and 480 acres unperfected *bona fide* claims; Mount Rainier National Park, 18.2 acres pat-

ented lands; Glacier National Park, 8,864.40 acres patented lands, and 7,803.71 acres unperfected *bona fide* claims.

"In order that creditable progress may be made in each of the National Parks, after the development of all necessary plans for road and other construction for the convenience of travel and tourists, liberal appropriations will be required and a departmental organization for administrative purposes perfected, capable of efficient field administration and of careful inspection of all public works and the conduct of concessionaires. It will doubtless be necessary in the accomplishment of these purposes to create a Bureau of National Parks and Resorts, under the supervision of a competent commissioner, with a suitable force of superintendents, supervising engineers, and landscape architects, inspectors, park guards and other employees.

"The creation of such a bureau and the planning under it of a consistent and broadly considered scheme for National Parks and resorts to fit the future needs of the United States of America would be in line with the policy under which our first President planned the federal city which now bears his name, without which planning no such civic convenience, beauty, impressiveness, and national dignity as the city of Washington now enjoys would have been possible.

"In all of the parks, except the Yellowstone, great difficulty of administration is encountered from the fact that the department has no jurisdiction to punish offenses in violation of its regulations, and I therefore recommend that jurisdiction be given to the department over all offenses, with a provision of suitable penalties for the violation of the regulations of the department, for the protection of game, and to prevent destruction or injury to government property."

To carry out the idea of a Bureau of National Parks, the following bill was introduced in the Senate January 9, 1911, by the Hon. Reed Smoot, of Utah, and in the House of Representatives, January 30, by the Hon. James H. Davidson, of Wisconsin:

"A bill to establish a Bureau of National Parks, and for other purposes.

"Be it enacted by the Senate and House of Representatives of the United States of America in Congress assembled, That there is hereby established in the Department of the Interior a bureau to be called the Bureau of National Parks, which shall be under the charge of a Commissioner, who shall be appointed by the

President, by and with the advice and consent of the Senate, and who shall receive a salary of six thousand dollars per annum, and there shall also be in said bureau such experts, assistants and other employees as may from time to time be authorized by Congress.

“Sec. 2. That the commissioner shall, under the direction of the Secretary of the Interior, have the supervision, management, and control of the several National Parks, the National Monuments, the Hot Springs Reservation in the State of Arkansas, and such other National Parks, National Monuments, or reservations of like character, as may hereafter be created by Congress.

“Sec. 3. That there is hereby appropriated, out of any money in the treasury not otherwise appropriated, for the general expenses of the Bureau of National Parks, including the pay of the commissioner and necessary experts, superintendents, assistants and other employees, at Washington, District of Columbia, and in the field, and other expenses requisite for and incidental to the general work of the Bureau of National Parks, whether at Washington, District of Columbia, or in the field, to be expended under the direction of the Secretary of the Interior, the sum of seventy-five thousand dollars, to be immediately available.

“Sec. 4. That the Secretary of the Interior shall make and publish such rules and regulations as he may deem necessary and proper, not inconsistent with the Constitution and laws of the United States, for the management, care, and preservation of such parks, manuments and reservations, and for the protection of property and improvements, game and natural scenery, curiosities and resources therein, such rules and regulations to be enforced in such manner as he may prescribe. He shall also, upon terms and conditions to be fixed by him, grant leases and permits for the use of the land, the development of the resources, or privileges for the accommodation of visitors in the various parks, monuments, and reservations herein provided for, for periods not exceeding twenty years. The funds derived from such leases, permits and privileges shall be covered into the treasury; to be expended by the commissioner, under the direction of the Secretary of the Interior, in the administration, maintenance, and improvement of the parks, reservations, and monuments herein provided for.

“Sec. 5. That the parks, monuments, and reservations herein provided for shall not at any time be used in any way contrary to the purpose thereof as agencies for promoting public recreation

and public health through the use and enjoyment by the people of the said parks, monuments, and reservations, and of the natural scenery and objects of interest therein, or in any way detrimental to the value thereof for such purpose.

"Sec. 6. That the commissioner and other officers and employees of the bureau in Washington, when traveling on duty in the field, and the experts, superintendents, assistants, and other employees, when away from their posts of duty in the field, shall be allowed a per diem in lieu of subsistence, to be fixed by the Secretary of the Interior, exclusive of transportation and sleeping-car fares."

As is usually the case with bills transferring jurisdiction from one department to another, a diversity of opinion developed as to the advisability of transferring to the Interior Department the National Monuments now in charge of the Department of Agriculture. For this, and probably other reasons, the bill failed of enactment.

VISITORS TO NATIONAL PARKS AND FORESTS.

In view of the facilities now existing and those which progressive enterprise will provide in the future for reaching our National Parks, it is a wonder why so many Americans spend their time and money touring abroad without first becoming acquainted with the marvelous scenery of their own country. The Secretary of the Interior says that it is broadly estimated that in some years over \$100,000,000 has been spent abroad by American tourists, while only a fraction of this amount is spent by Americans in visiting American parks and resorts. And yet the scenery and natural wonders found in most other countries frequented by Americans are not comparable with those of the great National Parks and National Monuments of the United States.

The number of visitors to some of the National Parks in 1910 was as follows:

Yellowstone National Park	19,575
Yosemite National Park	13,619
Sequoia National Park	2,407
General Grant National Park	1,178
Mount Rainier National Park	8,000
Mesa Verde National Park	250

Crater Lake National Park	5,000
Wind Cave National Park	3,387
Platte National Park	25,000
Sullys Hill National Park	190
Hot Springs Reservation	120,143

In our last report we gave not only a list of the National Parks and Monuments, but also of the National Forests. The latter also draw their quota of visitors. According to the record of the United States Department of Agriculture, the number during the outing season of 1909 was 406,775, and in 1910 about half a million.

With the finest mountain scenery and much of the best fishing and big-game hunting in the United States, the National Forests, made more and more accessible each year through protection and development by the government, are fast becoming great national playgrounds for the people.

The use of the forests for recreation is as yet in its beginning, but is growing steadily and rapidly — in some of the forests at the rate of a hundred per cent. per annum. The Department of Agriculture thinks that the day is not far distant when a million persons will visit them annually.

The records show that the seasonal use of the forests runs from two months in a Colorado forest, such as the Routt, to twelve months in an Alaskan, such as the Tongass. But the uses differ. In Colorado the 2,000 visitors entered the forest to fish, to camp, to climb, and to drink the medicinal waters; in Alaska the 1,000 almost solely to hunt and fish. The 21,000 persons who went into the Coconino forest, Arizona, during nine months, went to camp or to enjoy the scenery. During four months 50,000 persons visited the Angeles, California. The most popular of the forests is the Pike, containing the famous peak of that name. The various attractions within its limits, including the scenic railway, drew 100,000 tourists and others. By principal States the national forest visitors numbered 23,000 in Arizona, 103,000 in California, 140,000 in Colorado, 19,000 in Montana, 10,000 in New Mexico, 33,000 in Oregon, 22,000 in Idaho, 16,000 in Utah, and 12,000 in Washington.

Of the natural wonders and landmarks of interest in the National Forests several have been set apart as National Monuments, among them Cinder Cone, a great lava basin in California; the Gila Cliff dwellings, the extensive remains of a prehistoric race in New Mexico; the unsurpassed Grand Canyon of the Colorado, in Arizona; Jewel Cave, South Dakota; Lassen Peak, the terminus of a long line of extinct volcanoes in the Cascades; the Pinnacles, a collection of remarkable jagged peaks in California; and the Tonto, a group of prehistoric ruins in the Tonto forest in Arizona. The Big Trees, Glacier Park, the Petrified Forest, the Oregon Caves, and numerous other phenomena serve to attract other hosts of visitors.

The sportsman finds his paradise in the National Forests. In many of them big game abounds. The rangers and the guards, besides the service they perform against the spread of fire, often point out the best site for the camper and the easiest route. A record of 9,218 miles of trail cut, 1,236 miles of road laid out, and 4,851 miles of telephone line strung tells what the government has done in the way of pushing the conveniences of civilization into the primeval forest. The day of the wilderness of the savage and the pioneer is swiftly passing; the day of the National Forests as productive resources and as National Parks approaches. The report of last year's administration by the United States Department of Agriculture evidences the rapidity of the transformation.

HETCH-HETCHY VALLEY.

In February, 1910, the Secretary of the Interior issued a citation to the mayor and supervisors of the city and county of San Francisco to show cause why the Hetch-Hetchy valley and reservoir site should not be eliminated from the permit granted by Secretary Garfield on May 11, 1908, for a water supply for that city and county. On May 18 and May 25, 1910, Henry E. Gregory, Esq., counsel for this Society, went to Washington to attend the hearings on this question by the Secretary of the Interior and to advocate the proposed elimination, in accordance with the position of this Society indicated in our former reports. The hearing of May 18 was postponed to May 25, at which time the Secretary of the Interior decided not to give his final decision for

a year, in order that the board of army engineers, detailed by the Secretary of War at the request of the Secretary of the Interior, could examine further into the question and advise him, and also in order that the engineers representing San Francisco might gather more data. Later the decision was postponed to December 3, 1911. The hearing disclosed the remarkable fact that although the city of San Francisco had been authorized to issue \$45,000,000 of bonds for the purpose of increasing the water supply, it had not in its possession adequate data and information to demonstrate how the money will be spent. The representatives of San Francisco themselves asked that the whole question be laid over, to give them time to make the proper surveys. There was some objection to this on the part of the civic associations represented at the hearing on the ground that the city had nine years in which to gather its information and had done nothing. Secretary Ballinger then took the whole matter into his own hands with the suggestion that the engineers representing various phases of the question consult with his own advisory board of engineers and report their conclusions to him. This suggestion was accepted, and the following day, on May 26, 1910, after a private conference, the Secretary announced his decision as stated above. This continuance and postponement are granted for the purpose of enabling the city and county of San Francisco to furnish sufficient field data and information to enable the Department of the Interior to determine whether or not the Lake Eleanor basin and watershed contributory, together with other sources of water supply, available to said city, will be adequate for all present and reasonable prospective needs of said city without inclusion of the Hetch-Hetchy valley.

CONSERVATION OF NATURAL RESOURCES.

National Conservation Congress.

At the Second National Conservation Congress held in St. Paul, Minn., September 5-9, 1910, this Society was represented by Dean Liberty H. Bailey, of the State College of Agriculture at Cornell University — Chairman of our Conservation Committee — and the Secretary of the Society. The other members of the Society's Conservation Committee are Hon. Charles M. Dow, of

Jamestown, N. Y., Mr. Henry E. Gregory, of New York city; Mr. Samuel V. Hoffman, of New York city; Hon. Thomas P. Kingsford, of Oswego, N. Y.; George Frederick Kunz, Ph. D., Sc. D., of New York; Hon. Thomas R. Proctor of Utica, N. Y.; Col. Henry W. Sackett, of New York city, and Charles Delamater Vail, L. H. D., of Geneva.

Report of This Society.

At the Congress, Dean Bailey presented the following report in behalf of this Society:

“The suggestion of the Committee of this Society, that is appointed to co-operate with the National Conservation Commission, must naturally be determined by the objects for which the Society exists. It is the aim of the American Scenic and Historic Preservation Society to protect the interesting features of the natural landscape, to save from obliteration all historic places and objects, to erect suitable historical memorials where they are needed, to promote the beautification of cities and villages, and otherwise to promote in the people a regard for the beautiful in nature and for the historic in human institutions, cultivating this general field by means of free lectures, literature prize competitions, correspondence and other educational means as well as by using its influence to have places and scenery preserved as parks and reservations. The interest of this Society, therefore, lies not so much in the fields of economic production as in the less definite regions of historic appreciation and artistic sensitiveness to surroundings. The report of its Committee on Conservation will naturally not deal with the direct economic questions with which most other co-operative societies and organizations would naturally be concerned.

Appreciation of National Conservation Commission.

“The Committee desires first to express its appreciation of the work of the National Conservation Commission and to pledge itself to co-operate with that Commission in the furthering of its work. The Committee holds itself in readiness to aid in such enterprises as may originate from the National Conservation Commission and which are within the proper province of the American Scenic and Historic Preservation Society. The Committee feels that the establishing of the National Conservation Commission marks a

distinct advance in utilizing for the good of all the people the resources which really belong to all the people, and which should be used for their welfare, rather than exploited for the interest and gain of a few persons or wasted and despoiled by the thoughtlessness of the people themselves.

Two-fold Appeal of Every Natural Object.

“The Committee holds that all natural resources should be protected, utilized in a scientific and unselfish way, and that the heritage of the earth should be passed over to our descendants with the least possible loss consistent with wise use in the present generation. Its special interest in the question, however, lies in the belief that all this effort should harmonize with the preservation of the beauty of our natural landscape and with the conservation of all places and scenes of historic interest.

“It is too little appreciated that every natural object makes a two-fold appeal to the human mind: its appeal in the terms of its physical or material uses, and its appeal to our sense of beauty and of personal satisfaction. As the people progresses in civilization the public mind becomes constantly more sensitive to the conditions in which we live and the appeal to the spiritual satisfaction of life constantly becomes stronger. It is, therefore, of the very first importance that whatever is done by the National Conservation Commission shall be executed in the feeling that not only the physical needs of life be met, but that the earth will constantly be made a more satisfactory place in which to live, and that the lessons of history must exercise an increased influence. It is important that we not only save our forests in order that they may yield timber and conserve our water supplies, but also that they may adorn and dominate the landscape and contribute to the meaning of the scenery. It is important that our coal supplies be not only conserved for their use in the manufactures and the arts, but also that smoke does not vitiate the atmosphere and render it unhealthful, and discolor the objects in the landscape. It is of the greatest importance that water supplies be conserved by storage reservoirs and other means, but this conservation should be accomplished in such a way as not to menace health or offend the eye or destroy the beauty of contiguous landscape. The impounding of waters without regard to preserving natural water falls, streams and other scenery, is a mark of a commercial and a selfish age, and is a procedure that cannot be tolerated in a

highly developed society. It is important that regulations be enacted regarding the operation of steam roads through woody districts not only that the timber may be saved, but also that the natural beauty of the landscape may be protected from fire, and other forms of destruction. The fertility of the soil must be saved not only that products may be raised with which to feed and clothe people, but also that the beauty of thrifty and productive farms may be saved to the landscape.

Scenery a Distinct Asset.

“The property right in natural scenery is a distinct asset to the people, and the best conservation of natural resources is impossible until this fact is recognized.

“On this point we call attention to the following paragraph in the report of the Commission on Country Life:* ‘In estimating our natural resources we must not forget the value of scenery. This is a distinct asset, and it will be more recognized as time goes on. It will be impossible to develop a satisfactory country life without conserving all the beauty of landscape and developing the people to the point of appreciating it. In parts of the East a regular system of parking the open country of the entire State is already begun, constructing the roads, preserving the natural features, and developing the latent beauty in such a way that the whole country becomes part of one continuing landscape treatment. This in no way interferes with the agricultural utilization of the land, but rather increases it. The scenery is, in fact, capitalized, so that it adds to the property values and contributes to local patriotism and to the thrift of the commonwealth.’

“It is especially important, in the opinion of this Committee, that the National Conservation Commission lend its influence to the establishment of reserves in all parts of the country for the preservation of natural features of great scenic interest, for the protection of birds, animals and native plants, and also for the conservation of the lessons of history. The Committee earnestly requests that in the program of the activities of the National Commission these questions may be given their due consideration.

A Few Accomplishments of This Society.

“We may cite a few of the facts accomplished by this Society:

“It was the medium through which the Hon. Wm. Pryor

* Of which Dean Bailey is chairman.

Letchworth of Portage, N. Y., gave to the State a superb tract of 1,000 acres of land embracing the famous Portage Gorge of the Genesee river, including the three picturesque Portage falls. This property, which cost the owner about half a million dollars, will pass into the official custody of the Society, as Trustees for the State of New York, upon Mr. Letchworth's decease. Letchworth Park, as it has been named by the Legislature, possesses not only remarkable scenic beauty, but also high scientific and educational value. The geological strata here exposed have given the name to that extensive group of rocks known as the Portage Group, and the vegetable and bird life of this reservation is remarkably varied and of the greatest interest to botanists and students of nature history.

"The Society also secured the purchase by the State and is official custodian of the famous Watkins Glen at the head of Seneca lake. This property embraces about 105 acres of land, and includes rock exposures which have received the attention of the United States Geological Survey and prominent geologists for many years.

"Through the intercession of the Society, the State has purchased and committed to the care of the Society, thirty-five acres of land on the promontory of Stony Point on the Hudson river. Here, in addition to an interesting exposure of primitive rocks and varied flora, we have the historical associations of Gen. Anthony Wayne's exploit during the Revolutionary War, which evoked the admiration of the leading military men of America and Europe.

"In like manner, the State has purchased and committed to the Society's care, a small reservation on Oneida Lake embracing the remains of Fort Brewerton.

"Ten years ago, Governor Roosevelt requested our Society to represent the State of New York in concerting measures with the State of New Jersey for the conservation of the Palisades of the Hudson river. As the result of this initiative, the State of New York appropriated about \$450,000, the State of New Jersey about \$50,000, and the Honorary President of this Society, Mr. J. P. Morgan, gave \$125,000, and to-day the picturesque cliffs on the west side of the lower Hudson for a distance of thirteen miles, have been rescued from defacement and are in the care of the Palisades Interstate Park Commission.

"As a sequence to this work, and a result of the general sentiment developed in favor of scenic and historic preservation, Mrs.

Edward Harriman recently gave to the State of New York 10,000 acres of land on the west side of the Hudson for a State Park, and she, together with Mr. Morgan, Mr. John D. Rockefeller, Mrs. Sage and others have supplemented the gift with over \$2,500,000 of money.

"Ten years ago we secured legislation by means of which a reservation of thirty-five acres at the head of Lake George was made by the State, for the purpose of preserving the scenery and the ground made historical by events in the Colonial and Revolutionary War.

"With the long and difficult campaign for the preservation of Niagara Falls, you are doubtless familiar, and it need not be repeated here.

City Parks.

"If time permitted, many other instances could be cited in different parts of the country, some connected directly with the Society's work, and all the result of the general sentiment which has been developed during the past twenty-five years in favor of conserving natural scenery and creating urban and extra-urban parks for the benefit of mankind. Not the least important of these in their bearing on conditions of life are the city parks. In New York city, for instance, the Washington Headquarters Park and Joseph Rodman Drake Park were created at the direct instance of our Society; and the famous Central Park, in the creation of which our late President Andrew H. Green, as Controller of the Park, was an important factor, has been protected against invasion by race tracks and many other artificial encroachments by our vigilance. Among the gifts of city parks by private individuals stimulated by the sentiment created by our work we may cite a series of parks embracing about 500 acres and costing with their improvements a quarter of a million dollars or more, presented in 1907 to the city of Utica, N. Y., by Mr. Thomas R. Proctor, a Trustee of this Society. In 1909, another member of the Society, Mr. Henry H. Loomis, gave to the city of Geneva, N. Y., about twenty-six acres of woodland for a city park. In Jamestown, N. Y., a park system has been developed largely under the influence of Hon. Charles M. Dow, a Trustee of this Society. To go West—in Colorado Springs, within two years, there have been two remarkable expressions of this general sentiment which has now become so general that no one Society can claim direct connection with its results. We refer to the series of completed

parks, boulevards and paths embracing over 1,500 acres of superb scenery given to that city by Gen. W. J. Palmer; and the gift of the famous Garden of the Gods to the same city by the heirs of the late Charles W. Perkins of Burlington, Iowa. These two gifts have placed Colorado Springs in possession of what is probably the most remarkable series of city parks of the kind in the United States.

“The sentiment created by this Society has also expressed itself in the beautifying of many cities by the improvement of open spaces, public greens, and churchyards, and the erection of monuments and drinking fountains.

State Parks.

“Of State parks as distinguished from city parks, those which have received the most attention from this Society outside of the five reservations under its immediate control and the Palisades Interstate Park have been the State Park at Niagara Falls and the Adirondack State Park. The State Reservation at Niagara Falls, comprising 112 acres of land and 300 acres of land under water, and including the American Fall and half of the Canadian Fall, was created in 1885; and it was partly on account of the lessons taught by that reservation that the president of the Niagara Commission, the late Hon. Andrew H. Green, ten years later founded the American Scenic and Historic Preservation Society. In the long campaign for the protection of Niagara Falls from the inordinate diversion of their waters and the disfigurement of their environment we have taken a leading part ever since. The Adirondack Park now comprises over a million and a half acres. Here, too, it has been necessary to maintain a constant campaign to protect the forests from destruction by fire, artificial flooding, and the illicit removal of timber.

Efforts in the Southwest.

“In the far southwest our efforts have been directed chiefly to the extension of the Grand Canyon preserve, and the protection of the Hetch Hetchy valley — a part of the Yosemite National Park — from what we believe to be an unnecessary project for flooding a part of the National Park for the purpose of supplying water to San Francisco.

Interrelation of Scenery and Natural Resources.

"In conclusion, we may say of the movement at large for the preservation of remarkable works of nature for the instruction and enjoyment of the people, that it is older than the organized movement for the conservation of the material resources of the country; and if it cannot be said that one is the outgrowth of the other, it is true that they are necessarily closely inter-related and should proceed hand in hand with a mutual regard for each other's claims."

*Co-operation between Forest and Water Commissions
Recommended.*

With respect to the general subject of forest conservation, one who has carefully thought of the subject for years cannot fail to have been impressed with the fact that they who wield the axe seldom plant a tree. The President of this Society has known a number of wood-cutters who, in the past thirty years, have cut down thousands of trees, but they have never planted a single one except in a few instances where they have planted a shade tree near their homes.

The cutting down of trees should no more be permitted even by the owner of the land, than should the indiscriminate burning of food be allowed because the owner had the right to do so. A large percentage of the trees that are cut down were planted voluntarily, or grew naturally generations ago, and it is for the benefit of all mankind that they should be conserved and cared for. They insure a proper distribution of rainfall and melting snows, and these waters should reach the ocean only after they have accomplished their purpose. There should be some way, under government supervision, of preventing the cutting down of trees, and land that has been stripped should be immediately replanted, more especially if the land is not adapted for farming purposes. Tree planting is one profession; foresting and guarding the forests is another; speculating in forests is a third, and the proper cutting down and trimming of trees is a fourth.

Co-operative action on the part of the State Forest and Water Commission is an important factor in the proper development and control of our water supply, and this fact was noted by the writer

in 1909. To this end inspection of forest lands might be made at intervals by the Water Commissioners, while the Forest Commissioners could at the same time examine the sources and distribution of the water supply. This would bring home to the members of both commissions the close connection that exists between these two spheres of activity. As regards the structures to be erected for the storage and distribution of water, it is most important to bear in mind that where beautiful and graceful lines prevail, the cost is often less and the stability greater than when the lines are clumsy and uncouth.*

Necessity for Reforestation.

It is absolutely imperative that lands in the United States not available for agriculture should be reforested or forested as the case may be, and for three purposes:

First, forest growth being continual, unproductive land may thus be made productive to the owner, and would yield a higher taxation to the State.

Second, reforestation would make possible the natural regulation of water supplies.

Third, the operation would be very profitable, for timber is constantly becoming more valuable with the present increase of population.

Use of Convicts and Inebriates in Forestry.

No more original or better means for reforesting the timber has been suggested than that now proposed by Governor Dix, namely, to employ convicts in forestation. If this plan could be adopted in the forests it would mean that the lands adjoining the forests would be rendered more valuable because of the beautiful prospect, the streams and rivers would be increased in volume, and widespread benefit would result. Moreover, the land would be made productive to the State, and at the same time healthful occupation would be given to the convicts which might, perhaps, help to reform them. An almost identical use of pris-

* Much interesting information on the forests of New York State is contained in "Forests of New York," compiled by George Martin Wiley, the Arbor Day Annual for 1911, published at Albany, N. Y., by the State Board of Education.

oners was adopted by Governor Shafroth, of Colorado, in the construction of the scenic highway from Canyon City to the top of the Royal Gorge, in this instance by prisoners from the State penitentiary in Canyon City. They worked in gangs of from twenty to forty, at an expense to the State of only \$6,500. This magnificent scenic highway wends its way through the mountains to the highest points until it meets the edge of the wild gorge, terminating at its very brim in a plateau of forty acres, from which Pike's Peak can be seen to the east and the Sangre de Cristo range to the west, and the railroad wending its way through the Royal Gorge can be faintly distinguished.

Many interesting suggestions were advanced for the utilization of the timber and the preservation of the forests in a paper by Mr. George Walker, read by him before the Society of Chemical Industry, May 11, 1911. See, also, *Collier's Weekly*, June 1, 1911.

APPALACHIAN FOREST RESERVE BILL PASSED.

Text of the Bill.

A notable event in the national movement for forest protection during the past year was the passage of the so-called Appalachian Forest Reserve Bill, which became a law (Public No. 435) with the approval of the President March 1, 1911. The text of the law is as follows:

"An Act to enable any State to co-operate with any other State or States, or with the United States, for the protection of the watersheds of navigable streams, and to appoint a commission for the acquisition of lands for the purpose of conserving the navigability of navigable rivers.

"Be it enacted by the Senate and House of Representatives of the United States of America in Congress assembled, That the consent of the Congress of the United States is hereby given to each of the several States of the Union to enter into any agreement or compact, not in conflict with any law of the United States, with any other State or States for the purpose of conserving the forests and the water supply of the States entering into such agreement or compact.

"Sec. 2. That the sum of two hundred thousand dollars is hereby appropriated and made available until expended, out of any moneys in the National Treasury not otherwise appropriated,

to enable the Secretary of Agriculture to co-operate with any State or group of States, when requested to do so, in the protection from fire, of the forested watersheds of navigable streams; and the Secretary of Agriculture is hereby authorized, and on such conditions as he deems wise, to stipulate and agree with any State or group of States to co-operate in the organization and maintenance of a system of fire protection on any private or State forest lands within such State or States and situated upon the watershed of a navigable river: Provided, That no such stipulation or agreement shall be made with any State which has not provided by law for a system of forest-fire protection: Provided further, That in no case shall the amount expended in any State exceed in any fiscal year the amount appropriated by that State for the same purpose during the same fiscal year.

“Sec. 3. That there is hereby appropriated, for the fiscal year ending June thirtieth, nineteen hundred and ten, the sum of one million dollars, and for each fiscal year thereafter a sum not to exceed two million dollars for use in the examination, survey, and acquirement of lands located on the headwaters of navigable streams, or those which are being or which may be developed for navigable purposes: Provided, That the provisions of this section shall expire by limitation on the thirtieth day of June, nineteen hundred and fifteen.

“Sec. 4. That a commission to be known as the National Forest Reservation Commission, consisting of the Secretary of War, the Secretary of the Interior, the Secretary of Agriculture, and two members of the Senate, to be selected by the President of the Senate, and two members of the House of Representatives, to be selected by the Speaker, is hereby created and authorized to consider and pass upon such lands as may be recommended for purchase as provided in section six of this act, and to fix the price or prices at which such lands may be purchased, and no purchases shall be made of any lands until such lands have been duly approved for purchase by said commission: Provided, That the members of the commission herein created shall serve as such only during their incumbency in their respective official positions, and any vacancy on the commission shall be filled in the manner as the original appointment.

“Sec. 5. That the commission hereby appointed shall, through its president, annually report to Congress, not later than the first Monday in December, the operations and expenditures of the commission, in detail, during the preceding fiscal year.

“Sec. 6. That the Secretary of Agriculture is hereby authorized and directed to examine, locate, and recommend for purchase such lands as in his judgment may be necessary to the regulation of the flow of navigable streams, and to report to the National Forest Reservation Commission the results of such examinations: Provided, That before any lands are purchased by the National Forest Reservation Commission said lands shall be examined by the Geological Survey and a report made to the Secretary of Agriculture, showing that the control of such lands will promote or protect the navigation of streams on whose watersheds they lie.

“Sec. 7. That the Secretary of Agriculture is hereby authorized to purchase, in the name of the United States, such lands as have been approved for purchase by the National Forest Reservation Commission at the price or prices fixed by said commission: Provided, That no deed or other instrument of conveyance shall be accepted or approved by the Secretary of Agriculture under this act until the Legislature of the State in which the land lies shall have consented to the acquisition of such land by the United States for the purpose of preserving the navigability of navigable streams.

“Sec. 8. That the Secretary of Agriculture may do all things necessary to secure the safe title in the United States to all the lands to be acquired under this act, but no payment shall be made for any such lands until the title shall be satisfactory to the Attorney-General and shall be vested in the United States.

“Sec. 9. That such acquisition may in any case be conditioned upon the exception and reservation to the owner from whom title passes to the United States, of the minerals and of the merchantable timber, or either or any part of them, within or upon such lands at the date of the conveyance, but in every case such exception and reservation and the time within which such timber shall be removed and the rules and regulations under which the cutting and removal of such timber and the mining and removal of such minerals shall be done shall be expressed in the written instrument of conveyance, and thereafter the mining, cutting, and removal of the minerals and timber so excepted and reserved shall be done only under and in obedience to the rules and regulations so expressed.

“Sec. 10. That inasmuch as small areas of land chiefly valuable for agriculture may of necessity or by inadvertence be included in tracts acquired under this act, the Secretary of Agriculture

may, in his discretion, and he is hereby authorized, upon application or otherwise, to examine and ascertain the location and extent of such areas as in his opinion may be occupied for agricultural purposes without injury to the forests or to stream flow and which are not needed for public purposes, and may list and describe the same by metes and bounds, or otherwise, and offer them for sale as homesteads at their true value, to be fixed by him, to actual settlers, in tracts not exceeding eighty acres in area, under such joint rules and regulations as the Secretary of Agriculture and the Secretary of the Interior may prescribe; and in case of such sale the jurisdiction over the lands sold shall, *ipso facto*, revert to the State in which the lands sold lie. And no right, title, interest, or claim in or to any lands acquired under this act, or the waters thereon, or the products, resources, or use thereof after such lands shall have been so acquired, shall be initiated or perfected, except as in this section provided.

“Sec. 11. That subject to the provisions of the last preceding section, the lands acquired under this act shall be permanently reserved, held, and administered as national forest lands under the provisions of section twenty-four of the act approved March third, eighteen hundred and ninety-one (volume twenty-six, Statutes at Large, page eleven hundred and three), and acts supplemental to and amendatory thereof. And the Secretary of Agriculture may from time to time divide the lands acquired under this act into such specific national forests and so designate the same as he may deem best for administrative purposes.

“Sec. 12. That the jurisdiction, both civil and criminal, over persons upon the lands acquired under this act shall not be affected or changed by their permanent reservation and administration as national forest lands, except so far as the punishment of offenses against the United States is concerned, the intent and meaning of this section being that the State wherein such land is situated shall not, by reason of such reservation and administration, lose its jurisdiction nor the inhabitants thereof their rights and privileges as citizens or be absolved from their duties as citizens of the State.

“Sec. 13. That five per centum of all moneys received during any fiscal year from each national forest into which the lands acquired under this act may from time to time be divided shall be paid at the end of such year, by the Secretary of the Treasury to the State in which such national forest is situated, to be expended as the State Legislature may prescribe for the benefit of

the public schools and public roads of the county or counties in which such national forest is situated: Provided, That when any national forest is in more than one State or county the distributive share to each from the proceeds of such forest shall be proportional to its area therein: Provided, further, That there shall not be paid to any State for any county an amount equal to more than forty per centum of the total income of such county from all other sources.

“Sec. 14. That a sum sufficient to pay the necessary expenses of the commission and its members, not to exceed an annual expenditure of twenty-five thousand dollars, is hereby appropriated out of any money in the treasury not otherwise appropriated. Said appropriation shall be immediately available, and shall be paid out on the audit and order of the president of the said commission, which audit and order shall be conclusive and binding upon all departments as to the correctness of the accounts of said commission.”

Preparations for Purchasing Lands.

The foregoing law, although couched in general terms, was passed with special reference to the creation of national forests in the Appalachian and White mountains. It will be noticed that section 3 appropriates \$1,000,000 for the year ended June 30, 1910, and \$2,000,000 a year for the next five years, or a total of \$11,000,000. The Comptroller of the Treasury, however, has decided that the first \$1,000,000, appropriated for the fiscal year ended June 30, 1910, must revert to the treasury, because it was unexpended during the fiscal year named in the bill. It was known, when the bill finally passed, that the date of this first appropriation had passed, but as the proposition had been before Congress in one form or another for ten years, and as an opportunity to pass it appeared during the closing days of the last session, it was decided by its advocates to rush it through without risking its chances by amending it to bring it up to date.

The law is not restricted to particular regions, except that lands may be bought only in the States whose legislatures have consented to the acquisition of land by the United States for the purpose of preserving the navigability of streams. The states which have already taken the necessary action are Maine, New Hampshire, Maryland, Virginia, West Virginia, North Carolina, Tennessee, South Carolina, and Georgia.

The first lands to be examined for purchase will be in the Appalachian and White Mountains, which, because of their altitude, steepness, and lack of protection, are in a class by themselves. The area which is believed to need protection is much larger than the the government can purchase. Much difference exists, however, between different parts of the region. Careful examinations which have been going on for the last ten years have proved that the conditions which affect stream flow to an extreme extent are to be found in relatively limited areas, which are scattered more or less widely. By careful selection it is believed that much can be done for the permanent improvement of the watersheds with the purchase of a relatively small part of the land.

The kinds of land which will be considered for purchase, if they lie within the designated areas, are set forth by the government in a circular as follows:

Timbered lands may be bought either with the timber standing on them or with reservation by the owner of the right to cut out the timber under certain rules to provide for perpetuation of the forest. These rules will form a part of the agreement for the purchase of the land. Since, however, the government cannot pay high prices, it is not regarded as probable that much land bearing a heavy stand of merchantable timber can be bought. Culled and cut-over lands may be bought, as well as land covered with brush which is useful for watershed protection, burned land, and abandoned farm land, whether cleared or partially or wholly covered by young timber growth. Good agricultural lands will not be considered. Owners may reserve the right to remove valuable mineral deposits which are known to exist.

Proposals will be received for small as well as for large tracts, although small tracts can be examined only where the purchase of a considerable total of land in the same neighborhood is under consideration. With regard to the price which can be paid, Secretary Wilson indicates that the policy of the Commission will be to make the money available go as far as possible.

"For the most part," he says, "we shall have to buy cut-over lands or lands without much merchantable timber. I want to make it plain at the start that I shall recommend this class of land only when it is offered very cheap. Proffers of land at exorbitant

prices will not be considered. I am frank to say that I hope to see a great deal of public spirit manifested by land owners. I expect some lands to be offered at merely nominal prices in order to aid the government in getting well started upon this wise and necessary policy.

“The lands acquired by the government will be held as National Forests. They will be protected from fire and the growth of the timber will be improved as much as possible. The lands will not be game preserves, but will continue to be open to the public for hunting and fishing in accordance with the laws of the State in which they are situated. All their resources will be available for the public under reasonable conditions. Another point which I wish to emphasize is that we are not going to take from people their homes in order to put the lands into National Forests.”

The areas within which offers of land are desired are approximately as follows:

In New Hampshire, lands in the White Mountain region.

In Maine, lands in a portion of Batchelder's Grant in Oxford county.

In Maryland, a portion of the western part of Garrett county.

In Virginia, parts of Shenandoah, Rockingham, southwestern Warren, western Page, northern Bedford, eastern Botetourt, southern Rockbridge, southern Washington, Smyth, and Wythe counties, and western Grayson county.

In West Virginia, parts of Pendleton, Hardy, Randolph, and Pocahontas counties.

In Tennessee, parts of northeastern Johnson county, Cocke, Sevier, Blount, and Monroe counties.

In North Carolina, parts of Wilkes, Caldwell, Watauga, Buncombe, Yancey, McDowell, southwestern Mitchell, Haywood, Swain, Jackson, Henderson, Transylvania, Macon, Clay, Cherokee and Graham counties.

In South Carolina, a part of Oconee county.

In Georgia, parts of Rabun, Habersham, and White counties.

Upon application to the forest service of the Department of Agriculture, circulars may be obtained giving information concerning the lands which the government may be expected to purchase.

REGULATION OF PUBLIC SIGNS.

Fifth Avenue Omnibus Sign Boards Decision Sustained.

In our Thirteenth Annual Report (1908) on pages 79–81, we recorded the decision of the Supreme Court sustaining the constitutionality of the ordinance of the city of New York which prohibits “any advertising truck, van or wagon being operated or driven in the streets of the borough of Manhattan” under penalty of a fine of \$10. This decision involved the right of the Fifth Avenue Coach Company to display advertising signs upon its coaches. The city sued for an injunction to restrain the company from displaying such signs, which were offensive both artistically and intrinsically. On September 4, 1907, the Coach Company applied to the court for an injunction to restrain the city from interfering with the company’s advertisements. On January 18, 1908, Justice Leventritt, in the Supreme Court, sustained the city. The case was carried to the United States Supreme Court, which, on May 29, 1911, sustained the constitutionality of the city ordinance. This is a notable victory in the campaign against glaring street signs.

Removal of Signs on Public Highways.

On March 7, 1911, the Hon. Wm. L. Ormrod of Churchville, Monroe county, introduced in the Senate a bill entitled “An Act to amend the penal law in relation to guide signs lawfully erected upon highways.” The bill amends section 1423 of chapter 88 of the laws of 1909, entitled “An act providing for the punishment of crime, constituting chapter 40 of the Consolidated Laws,” by adding the following paragraph:

“A person who willfully or maliciously displaces, removes, injures, or destroys a mileboard, milestone, danger sign or signal, or guide sign or post, or any inscription thereon, lawfully within a public highway; or who in any manner paints, puts, or affixes any business or commercial advertisement on or to any stone, tree, fence, stump, pole, building, or other structure which is the property of another, without first obtaining the written consent of such owner thereof, or who in any manner paints, puts, or affixes such

an advertisement on or to any stone, tree, fence, stump, pole, mile-board, milestone, danger sign, danger signal, guide sign, guide post, billboard, building, or other structure within the limits of a public highway is guilty of a misdemeanor. Any advertisement in or upon a public highway in violation of the provisions of this subdivision may be taken down, removed, or destroyed by any one."

This act passed the Senate and was transmitted to the Assembly May 10. Although the main object aimed at in this bill has been sought to be attained by this Society and other civic organizations for several years, the present movement to rid the highways of disfiguring signs bids fair to be more successful than heretofore as it has behind it the added influence of the Automobile Club of America. The interest of the latter has been aroused largely by the fact that owing to the multiplicity of commercial signs on trees, fences, rocks, etc., automobilists, in rapidly traveling along a road, could not readily distinguish guide boards and warning signals, and the situation had actually become dangerous to travel.*

Taxation of Signboards.

In former reports we have strongly advocated the regulation, by State legislation and municipal ordinances, of public signboards, on the ground that the sense of sight is as much entitled to protection from offense as the sense of hearing, smelling or touch, and also on the ground that in many cases signboards are nuisances and dangerous.

During the present session of the Legislature, this subject has been taken up actively under other auspices, and we make note of the following proceedings for future reference.

On February 6, 1911, the Hon. Mauritz Graubard of New York, introduced in the Assembly a bill "to amend the tax law in relation to public advertisements." This bill provides in substance that whenever an advertisement is erected upon any real property publicly advertising any business or amusement or giving public notice of any sort, the real estate shall be taxed per square foot at the rate of one-tenth of one per cent. of the assessed valuation of the property in cities of the first class, at the rate of one-

* This bill became a law, to take effect Sept. 1, 1911.

fifteenth of one per cent. in cities of the second class, and at the rate of ten dollars elsewhere. Legal advertisements and advertisements of business transacted on or immediately adjacent to the premises are excepted. The term "public" advertisement is defined to include electric signs.*

Advertisements in Vehicles — Street Stands — Slot Machines.

On April 17, 1911, the Hon. Dennis J. Harte of Long Island City introduced in the Senate a bill "to amend the tax law by adding article sixteen thereto relating to taxation in cars and other vehicles on public highways and on the display of advertisements and on mercantile privileges in public highways." It imposes upon the privilege of displaying advertisements in or on each car or other vehicle, an annual tax as follows: In cities of the first class \$100, second class \$80, third class \$60, and all other places \$50. Advertisements of the business of the owner of the vehicle are excepted.

For the privilege of maintaining a stand for the sale of books, papers, flowers, candy, etc., for shoe blacking or the rendering of public service, in or on the platform, station or grounds of any railroad or street railway, an annual tax of \$40 is imposed in first class cities, \$30 in second class, \$25 in third class, and \$20 in all other places. Telegraph and telephone stands or booths, and baggage or parcel rooms not leased, are excepted.

Slot machines are taxed as follows: In first class cities \$8, second class \$7, third class \$5 and all other places \$4.

Signs on railroad platforms are taxed fifty cents per square foot. Advertisements relating to the business of the railroad are excepted.†

The Menace of Roof Signs and Water Tanks.

Under the above title, the *Scientific American* of July 9, 1910, had a column article on the danger to human life and limb menaced by water tanks and sign boards placed on roofs. The physical dangers of these unsightly excrescences on the sky line strongly reinforce the aesthetic arguments for their regulation.

* The bill failed to pass.

† The bill failed to pass.

After speaking of the shocking accidents which have occurred in consequence of the collapse of roof tanks insecurely supported, the article speaks of the enormous pressure exerted by the wind upon roof signs. It says:

“Few people outside of those whose duty it is to have expert knowledge of the subject, understand how quickly a heavy wind blowing on an exposed surface will develop tons of pressure.”

Referring to an electric sign on a certain hotel on Broadway, New York city, it says:

“If a layman were asked to make a guess at the total pressure which could be developed against the face of this sign during a gale of wind, he might hazard an estimate of some 15 or 20 tons; and he would be filled with no little astonishment to learn that when the full impact of such a summer tornado as swept over this city three weeks ago, falls upon the structure, the pressure may mount up to nearly 1,000 tons — as the figures will show. The exposed area measures 90 feet in width by 60 feet in height. The maximum wind pressure per square foot adopted by bridge engineers in calculating the wind stresses is from 30 to 40 pounds per square foot. If we adopt 35 pounds, we find that when a summer tornado sweeps over the North river and strikes the sign with its maximum intensity, the load may temporarily reach 945 tons.”

PRESERVATION OF PUBLIC RECORDS.

Destruction of the State Library.

The fire in the Capitol at Albany on March 29, 1911, which practically destroyed the State Library and valuable collections of the State Museum, as well as other public records, was a calamity to the educational interests of the State. This loss is particularly grievous in the destruction of original unpublished manuscripts and archaeological objects relating to the history of the State.

There can be no doubt that these latter losses are the most to be lamented, because they are irreparable. Printed books can in large measure be replaced, with a sufficient outlay of money, and the proud distinction which the State Library enjoyed may thus to a large extent be recovered. But no amount of money can bring back an unpublished manuscript after it has once been

destroyed. It is obliterated forever. Losses like these are losses to civilization. If we reprehend the successive destructions of the Alexandrian Library by Christians and Moslems, the burning of the Arabic manuscripts in Granada by Ximenes, and the holocaust of the colored picture writings of the Aztecs in Mexico by Zumarraga, our own State cannot escape the censure of future generations if it neglects to provide for the preservation of its own historical treasures. We trust that the lesson of the Albany fire may not be lost, and that the State will make liberal appropriations, not only for rehabilitating the State Library and Museum, but also for making facsimiles or rare unpublished documents, translating such as are in foreign languages, and printing them, so that such manuscript treasures as have escaped from this terrible visitation may be protected against the utter annihilation of their contents in the future. This will also make them available for the use of historians and scientists.

It seems to us that the dignity and self-respect of our great State requires that this fundamental source of its proud history should be conserved in the most liberal manner by our legislators.

Printing of New York City Archives Recommended.

At the meeting of the trustees of this Society on April 24, 1911, a resolution was adopted heartily endorsing the following recommendation of Mr. Philip Baer, librarian of the City Library in the New York city hall, which was transmitted to the board of alderman on April 11, by Mr. P. J. Scully, city clerk and clerk of the board of alderman.

OFFICE OF THE CITY CLERK,

City Hall,

CITY OF NEW YORK, April 10, 1911.

Hon. P. J. SCULLY, *City Clerk, The City of New York:*

DEAR SIR.—The recent disastrous fire which occurred at the State Capitol in Albany and the burning of the State Library therein, where valuable and priceless records were destroyed, should awaken the proper authorities in our city to take immediate steps to preserve the records in my care, which are in manuscript form.

by providing for printing and publishing them. The cost of the work will probably not exceed the sum of \$25,000. Should we unfortunately be visited by a destructive fire or other disaster, the printed records would then be accessible in many other public libraries.

In 1895 an appropriation of \$7,000 was made for the purpose of translating and printing the records of the city of New York relating to the Dutch period. A like sum of money was appropriated in 1903 for the purpose of reprinting the records of the English period. The American period, beginning with 1784 to 1831, are, at the present time, almost inaccessible. The importance of having the early records of the city printed so that they will be accessible to all who are interested in the early history of the city, need not be pointed out to you.

In 1902 I recommended that the manuscript proceedings of the Common Council, from 1675 to 1831 (subsequent to the latter date they are in printed form), be printed and published. Since that time, those for the years 1675 to 1776, the English period, have been published and can be found on the shelves of many libraries and societies.

I again recommend that the original records in manuscript, from 1784 to 1831, be printed and published, and we will then have a record of the local Legislature in printed form from 1653 to date.

I further recommend that the "Dutch records" also in manuscript form (Dutch) not yet printed, be translated to conform to those recently translated and printed, consisting of the following:

Minutes of the Burgomasters and Schepens, 1653.

Notarial Records — 10 vols. in original.

No. 1 — Burgomasters and Schepens, 1653-1675.

No. 2 — Burgomasters and Schepens, 1654-1660.

No. 3 — Burgomasters and Schepens, 1658-1660.

No. 4 — Burgomasters and Schepens, 1661-1663.

No. 5 — Burgomasters and Schepens, 1663-1665.

No. 6 — Burgomasters and Schepens, 1662-1664.

No. 8 — Burgomasters and Schepens, 1657-1661.

Record of Burgomasters and Orphan Masters.

Surrogates.

There are eight volumes of translations of the above (in manuscript) by Dr. O'Callaghan, with the following titles:

Vol. 1 — Mortgages of lots and pieces of land in the City of New Amsterdam, 1654-1660.

Vol. 2 — Deeds and conveyances of real estate in the City of New Amsterdam, 1654-1658.

Vol. 3 — Deeds and conveyances of real estate in the City of New Amsterdam, 1659-1665.

Vol. 4 — Register of Solomon Lachaire, Notary Public of New Amsterdam, 1662-1664.

Vol. 5 — Register of Waleyn Van du Vien, Notary Public of New Amsterdam, 1662-1664.

Vol. 6 — Deeds and mortgages of lots and tracts of land in the City of New York and New Orange, 1664-1675.

Vol. 7 — Powers of Attorney, Acknowledgments, Indentures of Apprenticeship, Deeds, etc., 1651-1656.

Vol. 8 — Minutes of the Orphan Court of New Amsterdam from its erection, 1665-1668.

Respectfully submitted,

PHILIP BAER, *Librarian.*

New York County Clerk's Records.

The Capitol fire has also increased the eagerness of the people of New York city for the completion of the new Municipal building opposite the Hall of Records, in order that the other archives of the city and county may be safely housed.

About five years ago a special Commissioner of Records for the city was appointed by the Legislature to arrange and care for the city records. His office has transferred the greater part of the more important records in the old Court House to the Hall of Records and placed them in fire proof cabinets. The work still is going on and an appropriation for its continuance is pending before the Board of Estimate.

Commissioner of Records Andrews recently said:

“The county clerk's records which go back 250 years or more, were stored in the cellar and attic of the County Court House, on wooden shelves, and constantly exposed to destruction by fire. Half of them have been removed and put in steel file cases in the Hall of Records. The remainder still are in the Court House cellar and attic, without any protection whatever against fire or any possibility of saving them if a fire occurred.

"A committee of the Bar Association appointed to investigate their condition made a report just two years ago, in which it stated:

" 'The condition of these records is such that it cannot fail to shame any one who examines them that such a condition should have been permitted to develop or continue; and it is not too much to say that nothing less than Divine Providence, with such assistance as has been afforded by the vigilance of the employees of the county clerk's office, has preserved these records, many of them dating from the earliest days of city, of great historic value and affecting much property interest, not only in this city and State but also in the neighboring states, from complete destruction. They are in general stored on wooden shelves in rooms with wooden floors, which have become so dried with age as to be like tinder. Several rooms are lighted only by unprotected gas jets burning but a few inches from those shelves, and these records are contiguous to boiler and other rooms where were found on the occasion of the committee's visit piles of shavings or light paper.'

"The removal to the Hall of Records of as many as can be put in the space now available has been accomplished in the last year. The conditions are greatly improved. Almost all of the records stored in the cellar of the Court House have been removed. Those remaining in the Court House — about half of the former total — are on wooden shelves, and are not specially protected from fire, except that the lighting now is wholly by electricity.

"In the meantime the utmost vigilance is observed by the county clerk's employees and those of the Commissioner of Records, and for the rest, as the Bar Association suggested in its report, we must put our trust in Divine Providence."

Conclusion of Report.

In addition to the matters mentioned in the foregoing pages, many others of a similar nature have received the attention of the Society. Occupying an almost unique field in this country, the activities of the Society have attracted wide-spread attention, not only throughout the United States, but also in Europe and Asia, and a very extensive correspondence, interstate and international, has developed in consequence of the many applications for information in regard to the various phases of scenic and historic preservation, both within and outside of city limits.

With a view to meeting this growing demand, we have added to this report a number of appendices giving more fully than was practicable in the body of the report various details of matters alluded to therein.

In addition to those already spoken of, we transmit herewith three special reports by the president as follows:

In Appendix H. will be found a description, by the president, of "The Bureau of American Republics," the dedication of which in Washington, D. C., on April 26, 1911, was an historical event of international interest.

In Appendix I. are embodied the results of a brief survey of the movement for the development of city parks in America, by the president.

In Appendix J. are given some notes by the president on "Foreign Regulations for the Conservation of Scenic and Historic Places and Objects," illustrating the serious attention paid to this subject abroad.

All of which is respectfully submitted.

GEORGE FREDERICK KUNZ,

President.

EDWARD HAGAMAN HALL,

Secretary.

APPENDIX A.

DEDICATION OF THE STATUE OF MARY JEMISON,
THE WHITE WOMAN OF THE GENESEE,

At Letchworth Park, September 19, 1910.

MARY JEMISON STATUE.

Narrative of Mary Jemison's Life.

On Monday afternoon, September 19, 1910, a statue of Mary Jemison, the White Woman of the Genesee, erected at her grave in Letchworth Park, by the late William Pryor Letchworth, LL. D., was dedicated under the auspices of the American Scenic and Historic Preservation Society. Letchworth Park is the superb tract of 1,000 acres on the Genesee river, embracing the three famous Portage Falls, in the State of New York, which was given to the State in 1907, by Dr. Letchworth and which is by law in the custody of this Society.* Mary Jemison's grave is on the Council House Grounds of the park, between the old Seneca council house on one side and the log cabin of Mary Jemison's daughter on the other. (See plates 7, 8 and 9.)

The seventh edition of "A Narrative of the Life of Mary Jemison" by James E. Seaver, with geographical and explanatory notes and other interesting matter collected and arranged by Dr. Letchworth was printed by G. P. Putnam's Sons, New York in 1910. (See note on the spelling of her Indian name on page 235 following.) Concerning the literary materials relating to the life of Mary Jemison, who died in 1833, we quote the following from an editorial in the Rochester *Post-Express* of September 19, 1910:

"In 1823 Daniel W. Bannister decided that the life of Mary Jemison ought to be written, and employed James E. Seaver, of Pembroke, N. Y., to collect the materials and prepare the work for the press. He visited her, remained with her several days, and wrote the story of her life as she dictated it. In 1824 the book was published by James D. Bemis, of Canandaigua. It is now excessively rare. The Buffalo Historical Society has a copy, Mr. Letchworth has one, Mr. William K. Bixby of St. Louis is the owner of a copy, and some years ago a Rochester collector sold a copy to Mr. Edward E. Ayres, of Chicago, but we know of no other

* For a full account of Letchworth Park, see the Twelfth Annual Report of this Society, 1907.

perfect copies. The State Library does not contain a copy in any condition, neither does the Library of Congress. Mr. James C. Pilling, who searched the libraries of the world for titles for his Iroquoian bibliography, never heard of a copy; Field does not mention it in his 'Essay,' and the most extensive dealers in Americana in England have informed us that they have been unable to locate a copy on the other side. In 1826 the Canandaigua edition was reprinted in Howden, England; in 1827 exactly the same book was issued under a London imprint; about 1834, Asher Wright, the Seneca missionary, wrote an abridgment, which, perhaps, was the pamphlet published without date or imprint which was sold by Libbie, the Boston auctioneer, to Mr. Ayres a few years ago for \$17; and perhaps it was the basis of the two pamphlets published in Rochester in 1840 and in Utica in 1842, both of which are exceedingly scarce. The second edition of the complete work was published in Batavia in 1842, under the editorship of Ebenezer Mix, and in that year an abridgment of the original work with a wholly imaginative frontispiece was published as a 16mo. in England. In 1844 the Batavia edition of 1842 was reprinted there and in 1847 this was reprinted in England. In 1865 Lewis H. Morgan, of this city, prepared a new edition, the additions being very extensive, and this was issued under the patronage of D. M. Dewy, Rochester's veteran bookseller. In 1859 and again in 1860 the plates of the edition of 1856 were used in bringing out editions of the book in New York. In 1877 the fifth American edition was issued at Buffalo by Mr. Letchworth, who had become the owner of the plates of the edition of 1856. 'An Account of a Visit to the Cattaraugus Reservation in 1873,' by William C. Bryant of Buffalo and 'The Last Hours of the Captive,' by Mrs. Asher Wright were very valuable additions. Chapter XIX, on the Confederacy of the Iroquois and Chapter XX, on the future destiny of the Indian, which were in the fourth edition, were left out, as were also Ebenezer's Mix's article in the appendix on the 'Tragedy of Devil's Hole,' and his chapter on 'The Genesee Country as it Was and Is,' in place of which the editor inserted an account of the removal of the remains of Mary Jemison to Portage. The five unsatisfactory pictures were omitted, and Mr. Letchworth substituted a view of Gardeau, portraits of Thomas Jemison, James Shongo, Red Jacket and Cornplanter, and a few small pictures from Morgan's Report to the Regents, showing Indian implements and weapons. In

1898 Mr. Letchworth got out another edition, the sixth. A frontispiece showing Mary Jemison being arrayed in costume of an Indian maiden, a fine portrait of Mrs. Asher Wright, and a view of Mary Jemison's grave and the old council house were the new illustrations. Some particulars relating to Mary Jemison's parentage and accounts of Dr. Munson's and Henry O'Rielly's interviews with her, were the most important additions to the text. No other book of local character, printed in any other section of the United States, has such a remarkable bibliographical record as this; it is, indeed, the most interesting, and is historically the most valuable book ever written descriptive of Indian life in western New York."

The Statue of Mary Jemison.

The statue of Mary Jemison which was dedicated at Letchworth Park on September 19, 1910, is the work of Mr. H. K. Bush-Brown, formerly of Newburgh, N. Y., now of Washington, D. C. It is of bronze, somewhat larger than life size, and is mounted upon the marble pedestal which Mr. Letchworth had previously erected at the grave. It represents the white girl as she is believed to have appeared, arriving at the Genesee, dressed in Indian garb, carrying her Indian babe on her back, and a small bundle in her right hand. Her attitude and the flow of her drapery indicate the motion of walking. In modeling the statue, Mr. Bush-Brown made careful researches concerning the costume at the Smithsonian Institution at Washington, the American Museum of Natural History in New York and the State Museum at Albany, and particularly had the valuable co-operation of Mr. Arthur C. Parker, a descendant of Red Jacket, who is an archaeologist in the State Museum. The features of Mary Jemison were modeled from those of a girl who was of Scotch-Irish ancestry and who was about the same age as Mary Jemison when she arrived at the Genesee. The face of the babe, showing the distinct Indian cast of features, was modeled after a life study of an actual descendant of Mary Jemison. The dress represented in the statue is similar to those worn by the Shoshonean women and perhaps other western tribes. As Mary Jemison commenced her memorable journey from Ohio she possibly wore a dress of this character. The baby board (ga-os-ha) is of the Iroquois type and was modeled from specimens in the American Museum

of Natural History and New York State Museum. The hoop over the face serves the double purpose of forming a frame for covering the baby's face, and for a protection should a limb crash against it or the board fall when placed on the ground against a tree. The wrappings about the baby are arranged in two bands which, in the originals, are always of different colors, usually red and blue. A covering for the face is arranged to be drawn over the hoop and cover the child's face. In the statue this is pushed back against the mother's shoulders to allow the face of the babe to show. The bands were modeled from specimens then in the New York State Museum,* once owned by Flying Feathers, a Tonawanda Seneca. The breast band or head band which holds the baby board was modeled from one collected in 1853 by Lewis H. Morgan, the first great Indian student and father of the science of American anthropology. The original was woven of elm bark shreds, warp and woof of one material, and was in the New York State Museum collection. The side pouch was modeled from the Red Jacket side pocket which in the original was doe skin embroidered with porcupine quills. The wooden ladle just above it is a characteristic spoon of the Senecas. The belt was modeled from a unique specimen and the decorations are of moose hair and porcupine quills. It was a Morgan specimen. The leggings were modeled from a pair collected at Tonawanda and are typical. The moccasins were designed from a rare pair collected by Mr. Morgan and are illustrated in the "Life of Mary Jemison."

On the base of the statue is Mary Jemison's Indian name, Deh-ge-wa-nus. In the life of Mary Jemison by James E. Seaver, before referred to, Mr. Seaver says that her Indian name was "Deh-he-wa-mis, which being interpreted signifies a pretty girl, a handsome girl, or a pleasant good thing." This spelling is repeated in the running head throughout the book, although Mr. William C. Bryant, at page 243, in a chapter contributed by himself says:

"The orthography of the name conferred upon the captive by the two gentle Indian women who adopted her as their sister is

* All the specimens of the New York State Museum from which various features of the costume were modeled were destroyed by the fire in the Capitol, March 29, 1911.

incorrectly given in the body of this work and the signification is erroneously rendered. The name should be written Deh-ge-wa-nus, and means literally The Two Falling Voices."

This latter spelling is confirmed by Mr. Arthur C. Parker, who is descended from the Seneca Indians and who is archaeologist in the State Museum at Albany. He says:

"Mr. Seaver never spelled Mary Jemison's name correctly. This is self-evident, as there is no m-sound in the Iroquois language. The correct spelling is Deh-ge-wa-nus."

We therefore adopted the latter spelling on the statue. In writing of the statue to Mr. Bush-Brown, Mr. Parker said:

"Your Mary Jemison is one of the most accurate, if not the most accurate, studies of New York ethnology which I have ever seen. It is not only a monument to the heroic captive but a fitting memorial and an accurate one to the nation which adopted her."

Further references to the making of the statue are made in the address by Dr. Kunz and the letter from Dr. Letchworth given hereafter.

Address by Hon. Charles M. Dow on the Gift of Letchworth Park.

The Hon. Charles M. Dow of Jamestown, N. Y., chairman of the Letchworth Park Committee of the Society, presided at the dedicatory exercises, which were held in the Council House grounds in the presence of a large gathering. Upon the platform were Mr. Letchworth, the speakers, and about a dozen other people of prominence.

The exercises were opened by an invocation by the Rev. Louis H. Peirson of Castile, N. Y.

Mr. Dow then spoke as follows:

"*Ladies and Gentlemen.*—We are gathered here at the grave of Mary Jemison, on the seventy-seventh anniversary of her death, to dedicate, as a memorial of what she was and what she represented, this statue erected by the Hon. William Pryor Letchworth, LL. D.

"I shall leave it to another to speak of the life and times of this heroic girl and woman. It is my privilege, as chairman of the Letchworth Park Committee of the American Scenic and Historic

Preservation Society, briefly to recall something of the history of the creation of Letchworth Park and its gift to the State. The statue is an expression of the same quick human sympathy, benevolence and generosity which inspired the park. Both are object lessons of the service of human brotherhood; and to understand the statue, one must understand the Park.

"It is one year more than half a century since Dr. Letchworth made his first acquisition of property here. He was then still engaged in active business; but he had that in him which sought more than the material rewards which fortune bestowed upon his labors. He sought a place close to Nature where he could withdraw from the cares and distractions of business and develop and give expression to another and higher set of faculties. While in his young manhood, and riding on the crest of prosperity, he realized that the fullness of life is in what one gives, rather than in what one gets; and it was here, sitting under the rainbow which gives the name to Glen Iris, that he found the quiet and repose in which he developed those broad ideas of philanthropy which led him eventually to withdraw from business altogether and to devote his life to that noble work for the unfortunate which is his greatest monument.

"In the search which led Dr. Letchworth to this beautiful place, and in the work which he has done to restore its beauty, there is much to remind one of Edgar Allan Poe's story of the 'Domain of Arnheim.' Poe says of his hero that 'in the widest and noblest sense he was a poet. He comprehended, moreover, the true character, the august aims, and the supreme majesty of the poetic sentiment.' It is departing very little from Poe's own words to say of Dr. Letchworth, that while he finds in poetry, in music and in sculpture high expression of poetic sentiment, yet in the many forms and many colors of trees and rocks and streams, he recognizes the most direct and energetic efforts of Nature at physical loveliness. And in helping and conserving this effort of Nature to make beautiful that which the eyes of men should behold, he perceived that he should be employing the best means and laboring to the best advantage in the fulfillment, not only of his own instincts, but also of the august purposes for which the Deity had implanted those instincts in his heart.

"Like the searcher for the mythical Arnheim, Dr. Letchworth sought a place of natural beauty to be made even more beautiful if possible; and like him he found a beautiful stream and a gorge.

But unlike Arnheim, it was not in its pristine loveliness. Here was a scar upon the face of Nature which needed the healing art of the physician.

"Dr. Letchworth at once set himself to the task of restoration. He removed the debris; reforested denuded areas, and in other ways restored the natural conditions. But he did more than simply restore the primitive natural conditions. With singular art and judgment, without violating Nature, he built paths and roads, and bridges and arbors, and shelters, so that others might come and freely share the delights of this charming place. Looking forward then to the time when he could turn his perfected gift over to his fellow men for their perpetual enjoyment, he added to his acquisitions until he was owner of about a thousand acres on both sides of the river, embracing the three famous Portage Falls of the Genesee and the wonderful gorge which they have cut.

"In these environments, with vivid imagination and intense sympathy, his thoughts pictured the life of the aboriginal owners. Here a race, now nearly extinct, once had lived in undisputed proprietorship. Their life was crude and simple, but it was human life, and they represented the childhood of the race. There was human pathos and poetry in their history; and Dr. Letchworth set about to bring back something to remind the present-day visitor of that period, long gone.

"He erected yonder museum and gathered in it specimens of implements used by them in their daily life. Here, in objects of stone, and wood, and metal, their history can be traced, from the primitive days before the advent of European civilization, through the pioneer days to their practical retirement from the banks of the Genesee. Hither he brought a section of the Big Tree under which the Indian sat with the white man and made the treaty by which he yielded his sovereignty to these once domains. Here he brought the Council House in which the natives held their deliberations, in order that it might be saved from destruction and remain for many years to come, a reminder of the Long House of the Iroquois and of the development which made them the most remarkable aboriginal people north of the Rio Grande. Here he brought the cabin which Mary Jemison built for her daughter, and here he brought for reverent sepulture the remains of Mary Jemison herself; and lastly he has erected the beautiful statue of the white girl who grew to advanced womanhood, leading a life of sacrifice and labor among the people with whose life hers became inseparably mingled.

“When nearly half a century of loving thought and generous expenditure of money had wrought this property into a form which in large measure embodied his ideal, he considered more of the best way in which to make it useful to mankind. At one time he had entertained the idea that Glen Iris might be a place to which the waifs of large cities could be brought for summer vacations, but this plan presented limitations which led him to consider if, by some other disposition, it could not be made to confer a larger benefit.

“Early in 1906 his attention was attracted by the announcement that the Governor had signed the bill creating the Watkins Glen State Reservation and entrusting it to the care of the American Scenic and Historic Preservation Society. With confidence encouraged by further knowledge of the work done by this Society founded by the late Hon. Andrew H. Green, the ‘Father of Greater New York,’ and many years President of the Commissioners of the State Reservation at Niagara, Dr. Letchworth, on the 29th of June, wrote to Mr. Walter S. Logan, who had succeeded to the presidency on Mr. Green’s death, expressing his interest in the Society’s objects and asking if he could become a member. Under date of July 3, 1906, Dr. Letchworth joined the Society. On July 19th he wrote to the Secretary of the Society, Dr. Edward Haganman Hall, inviting him to visit Glen Iris in order to confer upon a matter of grave and pressing importance. But Dr. Hall had sailed for Europe a few days before and was unable to respond. Dr. Letchworth then wrote to the President of the Society, Mr. Logan, only to learn that Mr. Logan had suddenly died. He then wrote again to the Secretary inviting him to come to Glen Iris immediately upon his return from abroad. Upon his return from Europe in August, Dr. Hall came to Glen Iris and conferred with Dr. Letchworth. In this conference, Dr. Letchworth was delighted first to find in the Secretary of the Society the son of Chief Justice Benjamin F. Hall of Auburn, between whose family and his own there had been a long standing intimacy; and next, that in the Board of Trustees was the son of his old time friend, Senator Albert G. Dow, of Randolph. In addition to these personal relations, his confidence was enhanced by the presence in the Board of Trustees of such men as our distinguished President, Dr. George Frederick Kunz, a man of international reputation and honors as a scientist; Prof. Liberty H. Bailey, of Ithaca, Dean of the College of Forestry of Cornell University; Hon. Charles S.

Francis, of Troy, American Ambassador to Austria; Hon. Robert L. Fryer, of Buffalo, the banker and former Niagara Falls Reservation Commissioner; Francis Whiting Halsey, of New York, the well-known historical writer and literary critic; Mr. Samuel V. Hoffman, the President of the New York Historical Society; Hon. Thomas P. Kingsford, of Oswego, a Commissioner of the State Reservation at Niagara; Dr. Henry M. Leipziger, the well-known educator; Dr. J. Pierpont Morgan, the financier-philanthropist, and President of the Metropolitan Museum of Art; Col. Henry W. Sackett of New York, legal counsel of the New York *Tribune* and a Trustee of Cornell University; Dr. Charles D. Vail, of Geneva, Librarian and formerly Professor of English Literature of Hobart College; and other men of similar standing.

“As the result of the August Conference, Dr. Letchworth invited a fuller exchange of views with the Trustees, and a committee was appointed, of which I have the honor to be chairman, further to confer with him.

“It is not necessary to recount the visits of our committee to Glen Iris, the delightful hospitality enjoyed, or the profound admiration and respect with which we listened to the unfolding of Dr. Letchworth’s plan — so long conceived, so patiently worked out, and so nearly brought to perfection. It is a privilege accorded to few men thus to hear the telling of the story of an ideal wrought into fact — a story of lofty inspiration and noble purpose to benefit, with his last and greatest gift, his fellow men.

“I need not dwell on the later history of the gift which is publicly known — how Dr. Letchworth with the cordial consent of his relatives decided to give the Park to the State, to be in our custody after his decease; how our committee called on Governor-elect Hughes on December 1, 1906, before he was inaugurated and in behalf of the donor tendered the gift; how Governor Hughes, with a smile of delight, expressed the great pleasure which it gave him, in the midst of the many demands which he was receiving from people who wanted something *from* the State, to receive this offer to give something *to* the State; how Governor Hughes communicated the gift to the Legislature on January 2, 1907, in his inaugural message, and how, after the acceptance of the Legislature, the Letchworth Park bill became, by the Governor’s signature, chapter 1 of the Laws of 1907 — the first statute enacted under his administration.

“Although the title to Letchworth Park vests in the State, by the terms of the deed of gift, Dr. Letchworth retains a life tenure and remains as much its master as ever. The actual custodianship of this Society, therefore, has not yet begun, our present function being only that of friend, and when asked, adviser. Letchworth Park is the unaided work of the donor. He conceived it; he formed the plan, and he has wrought it out. It is our hope that the assumption of our duties as custodian may long be deferred, and that Dr. Letchworth may be spared many years to enjoy the contemplation of his beneficent life work and to be to others a living inspiration to human service.”

Address by Dr. George Frederick Kunz on Scenic and Historic Preservation.

George Frederick Kunz, Ph. D., Sc. D., of New York, President of the American Scenic and Historic Preservation Society, then spoke as follows:

“*Ladies and Gentlemen* — The Hon. Charles M. Dow, chairman of the Letchworth Park Committee has already told you of the founding of the Park, and Dr. Edward Hagaman Hall will give you an account of the life of Mary Jemison. My province will be to say a few words concerning the aims of the Society and give some details regarding the beautiful statue we dedicate to-day. Sixteen years ago, after some years of deliberation, the late Hon. Andrew H. Green, co-operating with a number of the leading citizens of the State of New York, founded the American Scenic and Historic Preservation Society for the purpose of preserving to the people of the State and the nation those sites which were prominent as possessing historic interest, as well as certain localities that have won renown for possessing some peculiarly beautiful feature of natural scenery. These traditions we carefully observe. The object of this Society to preserve the scenic beauty of the country does not only mean to preserve special objects of exceptional scenic beauty, but it means the entire general beauty of the entire country. It means the removal of great, unsightly advertising signs. In its co-operation with the Association for the Protection of the Adirondacks it has sought to prevent the flooding of rivers and lakes, the killing of trees, and the changing of a region of beautiful verdure and picturesque waters into a scene of desolation and waste, where the dead trees haunt the scene like myriads of gaunt spectres.

“The suggesting and the placing of historic tablets, and more than this, the verification of the inscriptions, has prevented many errors in the names, time and place of historic events. In giving accurate advice as to the locations and verification of historic facts, much has been accomplished by a co-operation with historical societies, cities, villages, and churches, both at home and abroad, much good having been, in this way, accomplished.

“Fifteen centuries ago Theodoric the Great, even during his success in wars, was acknowledged as a guardian and conservator of the great and sacred traditions of the antique world. He proclaimed that public respect, rather than compulsion and force, must be the safeguard of the monuments and the beauty of the then Imperial Rome, and it is probably due as much to this example and suggestion as to the inherent love of beauty that this respect exists all over Italy to the present time.

“To create this respect is one of our objects; to educate the public, the corporations and the legislators has been our purpose, and the result has been most gratifying, as is evidenced by the mail received by our secretary, and the valuable suggestions made to us on every hand. Our aid has been called for by churches, cemeteries, committees, and even the State itself. The reports of our Society are published by the State annually, as by law we are required to give an account of our stewardship. That we are acknowledged was shown when the president was invited to examine the watersheds that the State purposed to develop and conserve.

“In the forest of Fontainebleau there stands a stately oak in the last stage of decadence which has stood there since the year 680. For the thirteen centuries that it has endured, this giant oak, Pharamond, as it was named from a king of France who was said to have planted it, has been an object of wonder, of historical association and of reflection. Unless there had been some law to guard this famous old tree it would long have passed away, and we need just such protection in this country for grand and beautiful natural objects. When this Society conducted the ceremonies for the dedication of Stony Point Park, Governor Odell, who was then the chief executive of the State, was amazed to find that 20,000 people attended these ceremonies. This showed that the community in general had a deep-seated interest in things that pertained to history, and that co-operation on the part of a few leaders was all that was necessary to bring out this latent interest and to give the people an opportunity to display it.

"When you can move masses to manifest an interest in public matters in time of peace and prosperity, there will be a like response when the country needs them in time of trouble. If we can rouse the co-operative spirit among our grangers and organizations throughout the country, much can be accomplished in the way of eventually obtaining for every little community a school garden, a school playground, and a school park; and more than that, these associations can be interested in the preservation of our cemeteries in keeping them beautiful and in preventing them from degenerating into hog runs and going to wreck and ruin.

"Had it not been for the founding of this Society, it is very possible that Stony Point Park, which was then an overgrown tract of land, would never have become the beautiful park it is to-day; and Watkins Glen, one of the wonders of the State, would still be in the hands of private owners who never would have preserved its beauty and its magnificently unique historic associations. It was this organization which laid and carried out plans for an appeal to Albany, and this appeal ultimately led to the preservation of thirteen miles of the Palisades of the Hudson river, and later made to embrace sixty miles of the west bank of the Hudson. This park will, for all time, be one of the most beautiful and naturally lovely parks in the entire world, and also, perhaps, the most widely utilized, adjoining as it does a community which now numbers 6,000,000 souls, but which, in a hundred years, will have a population from three to four times as great.

"Once destroyed, such beautiful sites and localities never regain their original attractiveness or beauty. Our late president, Mr. Green, fully realized this fact, and long before the establishment of our Society he was responsible for the constitution of the Niagara Commission, of which our chairman, the Hon. Charles M. Dow, is now president, which placed the preservation of these falls into the hands of the State. This commission has since assumed the importance of national and international authority, owing to the widespread fame it has won. Thus the greatest American cataract, and the gorge which the water has worn out of the ancient rock, will be preserved in their entirety for all time to come, to the pride and delight of the American people, and to the admiration of practically the whole world.

"You have already heard in eloquent words, the details regarding the magnificent gift of this beautiful park to the State of New York by the Hon. William Pryor Letchworth. As we look around at Glen Iris, it is not only a beautiful, but a grand and impressive

work of nature. However, its charm does not wholly depend upon its grandeur and beauty, for historic associations have conspired to make this a place of universal interest. Out of a great number of those who formed the original inhabitants of the region, probably none has made so strong an appeal, or won more sincere sympathy than the patient, plodding, noble woman, Mary Jemison, the Scotch-Irish girl who, having been captured by the Indians in childhood, was forced to cast her lot in with them and to follow their customs thenceforward throughout her entire life. Notwithstanding her early captivity, and her conformity, in the main, to the usages of the original inhabitants of the region, she succeeded in preserving her own individuality, and to this day her story is one of the most thrilling and interesting of any of those that are told of the early settlers of the country, and her life offers a sublime example of patience under the most trying circumstances.

“Thanks to Dr. Letchworth’s interest and care, the body of Mary Jemison rests within a few feet of where we stand. But our host was not satisfied with this. He thought that some image should be created which would henceforth associate her name more permanently with this wonderful glen, and not only serve to perpetuate her memory, but also add a beautiful object of art to the manifold natural beauties of the park.

“In the making of a statue — one that is to be of permanent value and an inspiration to the community — something else must be considered than merely the mass of metal of which it is to be composed. How was this statue of Mary Jemison made? Was it taken from a portrait, or is it a purely ideal creation? These and many other similar questions will be asked. Apparently there is no authenticated portrait of Mary Jemison. However, the transmission by heredity of the most prominent physical characteristics is generally admitted and a careful examination of photographs of her now living and acknowledged descendants enables us to trace distinctly the Scotch-Irish lineaments of their ancestress, and form a sort of composite type that can be accepted as at least approximately correct. Instead, as the highest art is rather the creation of a type than the production of a servile likeness, this apparent drawback may perhaps have served to increase the artistic value of the sculptor’s work.

“Some of you may have heard the colored preacher’s description of the creation of Adam. He said that the Lord made a figure of clay stood it up against the fence to dry, and then

breathed the breath of life into it, whereupon it became Adam. It is beyond the sculptor's skill to impart the gift of life to his creations, but he may be said to have this compensation, that his bronze or marble figure outlasts the creature of flesh and blood. Could Mr. Bush-Brown, like Pygmalion of old, give breath and life to his statue, the reincarnation of Mary Jemison would be doomed to age and pass away as did the original habitation of her soul and spirit.

"As a first step in the creation of the statue, the sculptor found it necessary to determine its eventual form by means of many preliminary sketches and designs on paper. Then came the important consideration of the adaptation of the figure to its environment, and the decision was soon reached that, where the natural aspects were on such a large scale as in this great gorge, a statue of heroic size was required; otherwise it would be dwarfed by its surroundings. The form and dimensions of the figure having been determined, the artist, taking his sculptor's clay, plastoline, modeled an undraped figure, for unless the figure itself is duly and harmoniously proportioned, it can never produce the proper effect when draped. Finally, the draperies and the bundle were added, and the accessory figure of the child was placed in the position best calculated to round out and complete the whole. It was at this stage of the work that the chairman of the Letchworth Park committee, the secretary and myself, had the pleasure of making several visits to the studio at Balmville, a suburb of that historic city of Newburgh on the Hudson, where the illustrious Washington for a time had his headquarters. Our friend, Mr. Bush-Brown, with great patience and courtesy received the various suggestions which were made by Mr. Letchworth and the members of the committee, for the purpose of helping to make this statue as accurate a portrayal of the heroine as possible. Among those who advised was our friend, Mr. Parker, who will unveil the statue, a descendant of one of New York's illustrious Indians, who is now rendering valuable service in archaeological investigations as to the life and customs of the Indians of our own time and of an earlier age. When all the details of the clay model had been satisfactorily completed, a plaster cast was made, and was sent to the Bureau Brothers, the bronze founders of Philadelphia, who cast in enduring bronze this figure which many of us believe to be a likeness, both real and ideal, of the girl whose personality was interwoven with the history of the Indians of this region. Long after most of our political leaders and wealthy men have passed

out of mind, this statue of Mary Jemison will stand here as a commemoration of an humble but striking figure of the past, and the memory of the philanthropic, far-sighted Dr. Letchworth will be an ever-present reality, as enduring as the bronze of which the statue is made.

“It was Dr. Letchworth’s wish that Mary Jemison should be portrayed permanently as she actually was, when, as a little girl, she lived in this region. Therefore the sculptor created a youthful figure of life-like serenity and beauty, which, as time passes and the bronze weathers, will patinate to a beautiful green, and from our record of bronze statues, there is no reason why, if unmolested, it should not stand here two thousand years from to-day.

“As the account of these proceedings will be preserved in the archives of the State, it is only fitting and proper to present here a brief notice of the life and works of our distinguished fellow-member, Mr. Henry K. Bush-Brown. He is the nephew, and was the pupil of the late Henry Kirke Brown, and is known for his colossal Indian Buffalo Hunt, shown at the Chicago World’s Fair, the equestrian statues of General George Meade and General Reynolds at Gettysburg, General Wayne at Valley Forge, the figure of Roman Law at the Appellate Court building in New York, several statues at the New York County Court house, and many others. As the adopted son of his uncle, the eminent sculptor, he learned as a youth, in the latter’s studio to use the implements of the sculptor’s art, and on leaving school became his uncle’s assistant. It was only after several years of this apprenticeship that he entered an art school. In 1886, he married the daughter of Prof. J. P. Lesley, the State Geologist of Pennsylvania, and took his bride with him to Europe where he devoted three years to study. Returning to the United States in 1889, he has since resided in his uncle’s old home and studio, now his own, at Newburgh.

“Dr. Letchworth has reposed his faith in the American Scenic and Historic Preservation Society, and in accepting the trust it is incumbent upon us all to do all in our power to guard and preserve this beautiful glen against all attempts of individuals or corporations, to thwart the purpose of the generous giver; for with the progressive increase in the taste for scenic beauty, there is no doubt that hundreds of years from now beautiful objects like this will be appreciated even more than they are at present. We must therefore prevent all intrusion, and pass on to posterity this

work and the memory of the public-spirited gentleman who, with wonderful generosity, has ceded Letchworth Park and the many beautiful and historically interesting objects contained there to the State and the people of the State for all time."

Address by Dr. Edward Hagaman Hall on the History of Mary Jemison.

Edward Hagaman Hall, L. H. D., of New York, the secretary of the Society, spoke as follows:

"*Ladies and Gentlemen* — It is my difficult duty to recall, in a few words, the remarkable story of the long life of the White Woman of the Genesee.

"Mary Jemison was born of Scotch-Irish parents in the year 1742 or 1743, on the ship William and Mary, between Ireland and Philadelphia. The storm-tossed sea upon which she made her advent into the world seemed symbolical of the troublous life of ninety-one years of which it was the beginning.

"It is a kind of destiny which veils from us at birth the history of our own lives and of the generation into which we are born. How little did the infant daughter of Thomas and Mary Jemison imagine the long years which she was to pass in captivity or voluntary exile among a barbarous race. This tale, though long in enactment, must be brief in recital.

"Soon after their arrival in Philadelphia on the William and Mary, the Jemison family, including the infant Mary, moved to Adams county, Pennsylvania, which had been settled a few years before by Scotch-Irish immigrants. In this frontier country near the middle of the southermost tier, about eight or ten miles from what later became the Gettysburg battlefield, they lived on a farm on Marsh Creek. In the spring of 1755 or 1758 — the date is uncertain — during the French and Indian war, a party of six Shawnee Indians and four Frenchmen descended upon the Jemison farm and captured the father, mother, two younger sons and two daughters. Two older sons escaped. The captors with their captives started in the direction of Fort Duquesne, on the site of the present city of Pittsburg. Two days later, the child Mary was separated from her parents, brothers and sister, whose fate she read subsequently in the bloody scalps which her captors exhibited. Six days more of travel, amid snow and rain, with broken heart, with fainting limbs driven to activity by the scourges of her captors, brought the little prisoner to Fort Duquesne.

“While she was detained there for a few days, two Seneca squaws who had lost a brother in the war with the English under Washington and who had come to the fort to secure, according to Indian custom, a scalp or a prisoner, chose her for adoption as their sister. Thence she was taken down the Ohio in a canoe to a small Seneca village at the mouth of a creek called Shenanjee. There the tatters of her civilized dress were removed and thrown into the river and she was garbed in Indian attire. Then the villagers assembled, and amid lamentations for the deceased relative whose place she was to fill, she was formally adopted into the tribe.

“From this time onward, her life was as if she had been born with a red skin among the primeval forests. She was not allowed to speak a word of English or to practice a civilized art. She forgot how to read, and in a few years she forgot even the prayer which her mother had taught her.

“For four years she followed the migrations of her village people from their summer to their winter habitations on the Ohio.

“About the year 1760 she was espoused to an Indian and had a child which lived only two days. About 1762 she had a son, whom she named after her father Thomas Jemison. When this boy was about nine months old, her adopted family decided to rejoin their nation on the Genesee river. Taking her babe on her back, carrying a few personal effects in a bundle, and accompanied by her three Indians brothers, she made the toilsome journey northward. At Caneadea, on the banks of the Genesee, within the borders of the home territory of the Senecas, she rested for a day. Thence she trudged to Little Beard’s Town, the chief village of the Senecas, on the west bank of the river about midway between the villages of Genesee and Moscow.

“Her husband having died in the meanwhile she was married again, about the year 1765 or 1766, to Hiokatoo, a prominent member of the tribe and had four daughters and two sons.

“It is impossible to compress within the compass of this brief narrative the history of the turbulent scenes through which she passed during the following years. The strife of the French and Indian war was succeeded by that of the War of the Revolution, in which the Senecas, as allies of the British, took a prominent part. War parties went and came, bringing their trophies of victory in the shape of bloody scalps, or priosners to be put to death by horrible torture; or bringing their tales of defeat and

losses to be bewailed and cherished for revenge. The stories of Fort Stanwix, and Wyoming and Cherry valley had their significance in the Seneca wigwam as well as in the frontier cabin.

"At length the terrible vengeance of Sullivan's expedition fell upon the Seneca nation, destroying Little Beard's town and devastating the surrounding country. The power of the Iroquois Confederacy was broken, and the western door of the Long House wrenched from its hinges.

"Chastened but not exterminated, the Senecas gradually reoccupied some of their lands, and Mary Jemison returned to her life on the Genesee.

"In the great council at Big Tree in 1797, her brother presented in her name a claim for land, which, notwithstanding the opposition of Red Jacket, was granted, and she was given a tract measuring six miles east and west and four and three-quarters miles north and south, embracing 17,927 acres, lying both sides of the river and including the Gardeau flats. In 1824, with the consent of the Senecas, she sold all but 1,280 acres to the United States for an annuity of \$300 a year. In the following year, 1825, the Senecas sold all their territorial rights on the Genesee, and moved to the Tonawanda, Buffalo Creek and Cattaraugus Reservations, leaving Mary and her family living on her tract of two square miles. Here she remained six years longer.

"Meanwhile her life had been one of singular diversity. Almost from the day of her captivity she had lived as if she had been born an Indian. In summer she planted, hoed and harvested the corn. In winter she helped bring in the produce of the chase, preserve the meat and dress the skins for clothing. She gathered the firewood, she cooked the food, and partook, according to her age, in all the labors of the Indian woman's life. When she built her house on the Genesee she carried the boards on her back a distance of five miles from the saw-mill. Her home was always a hospitable one. Butler, Brant, and many another white man and red man found shelter, provisions and clothing under her roof. Although living the life of an Indian, her innate humanity never left her. She never witnessed the barbarities of her adopted people with indifference, and at times she pleaded for mercy to their captives.

"Her strange life seems to have been borne with patience and even with a degree of happiness. Through the industry of her own hands she never lacked the necessities of life; and when, on

more than one occasion, she was offered the opportunity to return to civilization, she chose to remain with her adopted people. Her greatest sorrows were caused by the loss of her children.

"In 1831, Mary Jemison, living in comparative solitude on the Genesee, yearned to join her people on Buffalo creek, and having commuted her annuity and sold her land, she moved to a good farm on Buffalo flats. Two years later, by some mysterious operation of the mind, the memories of her childhood rushed upon her consciousness and caused her to repudiate paganism and return to the faith of her parents. In the consolation of the Christian religion, at the age of about ninety-one years, she passed to her eternal rest seventy-seven years ago to-day — September 19, 1833.

"She was first buried in the Mission Burial Ground near Buffalo; but on account of the march of "modern improvements" which threatened the obliteration of her grave, her remains were disinterred and reverently buried here on March 7, 1874.

"Mary Jemison's career is epitomized in our surroundings here to-day. Yonder Council House, brought here from Caneadea, where she first gazed upon the Genesee, marks the beginning of her life in this valley. Her mortal remains, resting under this monument after services held in that same building thirty-six years ago, mark the termination of her pilgrimage. The rude grave stones surrounding this mound, brought from an Indian burying ground, remind us of the vanished people among whom she lived.

"The statue itself speaks to us of a personality and an epoch. The clear cut, saddened features of the white girl recall a tragic and heroic life. The Indian features of the babe on her back, born of an enforced union between two races, speak eloquently of that great historical period in which the Caucasian met the aboriginal American and struggled for the control of a continent.

"May this statue stand for many generations as a reminder of that primitive people who lived their life in this valley according to the knowledge vouchsafed by the Great Spirit and who bravely fought for their native land. May it remind us of our debt to that hardy race of pioneers who, driven by a Destiny more powerful than human will, subdued the wilderness to the beneficent uses of a higher civilization. Above all, may it be an inspiration to emulate the virtues of the White Woman of the Genesee — to

endure sorrow, and labor, and sacrifice with patience and charity, and to 'do our duty in that state of life in which it has pleased God to call us.' ”

Letter of Presentation From Dr. Letchworth.

Dr. Letchworth then rose, amid enthusiastic applause, and after a brief and informal acknowledgment of the tributes which had been paid to him, handed to Mr. Dow the following letter:

“To the American Scenic and Historic Preservation Society, greeting:

“When, in 1874, the remains of Mary Jemison were placed beside the ancient Indian Council House of the Senecas on the grounds now included in Letchworth Park, only the marble base of the monument which it was intended should mark her final resting place was erected. It was then my purpose to complete the monument, as soon as circumstances would permit, by placing thereon a bronze statue of this unfortunate and heroic woman. With this object in view I set about obtaining all possible information respecting the personal characteristics of Mary Jemison from persons who knew her intimately and had frequently visited her in her home, but it was not until recent years that I could give sufficient attention to the subject to take actual steps towards the accomplishment of my long-cherished plan. After careful and deliberate consideration and many conferences with the eminent sculptor Mr. H. K. Bush-Brown, it was arranged that he should undertake the task of making the statue. Mr. Bush-Brown spent much time in studying his subject, and the model which he produced was pronounced historically correct by Professor Arthur C. Parker, Chief of the Archaeological Department of the New York State Museum; and as a work of art it was approved by a committee of the National Sculptors' Society and also by a committee of the American Scenic and Historic Preservation Society consisting of Honorable Charles M. Dow, chairman of the Letchworth Park Committee, and George F. Kunz, Sc. D., Ph. D., President, and Edward Hagaman Hall, L. H. D., Secretary of the Society. For the kindly services rendered by all those interested in the development of the statue I beg to make my grateful acknowledgments.

“When the statue was completed in July last it was placed by Mr. Bush-Brown on the marble base where it now stands, and

subsequently was made permanently secure by the Messrs. Bureau Brothers, bronze founders, of Philadelphia, the work being done in such a manner, with the use of bolts and cement, as to make the statue an integral part of this memorial to Mary Jemison.

"It is my intention and desire that this bronze statue of Mary Jemison shall always remain where it now is placed, and that it shall remain as much a part of these lands and grounds as the grave itself. It has become in law a part of the real estate and passes under your control and management at the same time and upon the same conditions as the rest of the property.

"Respectfully,

"WILLIAM PRYOR LETCHWORTH.

"LETCHWORTH PARK,
TOWNSHIP OF GENESEE FALLS, N. Y.

September 19, 1910.

"STATE OF NEW YORK, }
COUNTY OF WYOMING, } ss.:
TOWN OF GENESEE FALLS. }

"On this nineteenth day of September, in the year one thousand nine hundred and ten, before me, the subscriber, personally appeared William Pryor Letchworth, to me personally known to be the same person described in and who executed the foregoing instrument, and he duly acknowledged that he executed the same.

"CAROLINE BISHOP,

"Notary Public."

Address by Mr. Arthur C. Parker on Woman's Place Among the Indians.

The unveiling of the statue was under the direction of Mr. Arthur C. Parker, archaeologist of the State Museum at Albany, N. Y. Mr. Parker was born on the Cattaraugus, New York Indian Reservation in 1881. He is a member of the Bear clan of the Senecas, his Indian name being Ga-wa-so-wan-neh. His mother is of Scotch-English descent and his father a descendant of the Ganiodain line of Seneca sachems. His grandfather, N. H. Parker, a successor in office of the celebrated Cornplanter, was a graduate of Albany Normal School. His father's brother was General Ely S. Parker. Both his father and mother were

graduate teachers. Mr. Parker is also descended from Handsome Lake. While a small boy his parents moved to a suburb of New York city. He has been associated with museum and expedition work for the American Museum of Natural History and the Peabody-Harvard Museum. It was under the personal tutorage of Prof. F. W. Putnam, that he received his training in anthropology. He was appointed archaeologist of the State Museum, by the Civil Service Commission in 1906. He is the author of "Excavations in an Erie Indian Village," "Iroquois uses of Maize" and editor of a work on Iroquois myths. At present he is carrying out his plans for a series of mammoth ethnological groups depicting the culture-history of the Iroquois. These groups of life casts and huge paintings will be installed in the Myron G. Clark Hall of Iroquois Ethnology in the new Education Building in Albany.

Before the unveiling of the Jemison statue, Mr. Parker spoke as follows:

"Ladies and Gentlemen.—In considering the position of an Indian woman in her tribe, no doubt, most of us are influenced by the conventional school book description which, I assure you, is most misleading as applied to the Iroquois. Lest you pity her too much and pity the condition of a captive white woman, permit me first to say that embodied in the constitution of the Confederacy of the Five Nations we find recorded in most emphatic language a recognition of the nobility of womanhood. Those sterling qualities that under stress bring out the wonderful moral courage of woman never received greater appreciation than that given by the Iroquois Indian.

"Though as a co-sharer in the burdens of life woman labored in lodge and field, through her council speaker her voice rang out with authority in the Confederate senate, and no warrior, no chief, no sachem ever rose to so high a position that he could disregard it with impunity. Man might be the hunter, the forester, the warrior, the statesman, but woman was the bulwark and foundation of Iroquois society and government. As the court of the last resort in all important matters she was man's political superior. Such was the position of woman in the aboriginal Empire State.

"During the tragic events of a border conflict in which the Iroquois found himself plunged, and face to face struggled with

a powerful invader whose unfamiliar agencies of offence he could only match with his own desperate devices, there came to the Seneca-Iroquois a little captive white girl snatched from her parents. Startled and crushed at first, she splendidly rallied. Among them she grew to maidenhood, and, as the wife of an Indian, to motherhood. Singularly tried by circumstances she remained ever a woman whose pure impulses, never sullied, were ever directed to justice and charity. Her life was a leavening influence to the people of her adoption and its nobility excited their admiration and reverence.

“Worthy of marble and bronze is the White Woman of the Genesee! Worthy is she because of the fortitude, the patience, the tender sympathy, the motherly devotion which she ever exhibited even in the most trying circumstances. Her wonderful moral courage, her modesty, her heroism and her gentle heart compel our appreciation and reverence.

“It is with such emotions that Mrs. Kennedy (Ga-wen-no-is), a descendant of Mary Jemison of the fourth generation, and Miss Carlenia Bennett (Ga-o-yo-was) of the sixth generation, and I, a descendant of the people among whom she dwelt, unveil to you this bronze statue of Mary Jemison, known to the Seneca Indians as Deh-ge-wa-nus of the Heron clan.

“Amidst these scenes so near those of her life, her sorrows and her smiles, she gazes forth into the beautiful valley.

“A legend of old tells that the Sun God in passing over this spot always paused to view these wondrous falls, to watch the play of the rainbow and to inspect the mighty seam in the rock. Who knows but that, as the ancient story tells, the Sun Spirit lingers again with us in this rare spot to look upon this fitting tribute of an appreciative heart to a noble woman, Mary Jemison, the White Captive of the Genesee!”

Unveiling the Statue.

At the conclusion of Mr. Parker's address, and under his direction, Mrs. Kennedy and Miss Bennett pulled the cords which parted the flags which veiled the statue, the audience at the same time standing. Mrs. Thomas Kennedy, whose maiden name was Sarah Jemison, is the daughter of Buffalo Tom or Thomas Jemison, grandson of the child represented on the back of Mary Jemison in the statue. Mrs. Kennedy is the wife of one of the

ex-presidents of the Seneca nation, a man of some prominence and means. Her Indian name, Ga-wen-no-is, means outpouring voice. She wore a large medal which was given to her father, Thomas Jemison, by President Jackson as a token of esteem, and a smaller one, the Letchworth medal, given her father who attended the last council on the Genesee at this spot in 1872. Miss Carlenia Bennett is of the sixth generation from Mary Jemison and is also a grand-daughter of the celebrated runner Deerfoot. Her Indian name, Ga-o-yo-was, means sweeper of the sky.

Address by Dr. Charles D. Vail.

Charles Delamater Vail, L. H. D., of Geneva, N. Y., a Trustee of the American Scenic and Historic Preservation Society, spoke highly of the value of art in perpetuating the inspiring traditions of the human race. He concluded his address, which was extemporaneous, with an appreciative and feeling reference to Dr. Letchworth which seemed happily to voice the profound emotion that so obviously dominated all the proceedings of the day — an emotion of love and personal regard for this modest but great philanthropist whose life had been graciously spared to see a fitting conclusion of his unselfish labors for his kind and for his native commonwealth.

Dr. Vail then read a letter from the sculptor, Mr. Henry K. Bush-Brown, describing the ideal which he had endeavored to embody in the statue. At the conclusion of the letter Dr. Vail asked the audience to rise and pay a standing tribute to this beautiful work of art so uniquely illustrating in what sense and to what extent art is the natural hand-maiden of history and preserving to the future a voiceful ideal of "The White Woman of the Genesee."

Letter from Mr. H. K. Bush-Brown on Art and Our Nation's History.

The letter from Mr. Bush-Brown which Dr. Vail read was as follows:

"When we circumscribe the history of any people we find we have included only the ideals of a few individuals, yet those ideals contain the sum of human wisdom that stands for the sacrifice of countless beings covering centuries.

“To illustrate by example, what would all the blood and strife of the Revolution have amounted to without the noble altruism of Washington? He was the soul and embodiment of the ideals of the leaders and the whole people. Yet the Revolution itself, nay, even the whole movement of settlers to America was but the outgrowth of centuries of struggle against oppression in various forms. Everyone is interested in history for it is the only means of understanding the present or providing for the future.

“We are strong just in proportion as we grasp the opportunities of the present. They are ours only as momentary opportunities; it is to take advantage and move forward or stand until we move backward. We are ourselves a part of history. Great were the opportunities of the past and great will be the opportunities of the future, but neither the past nor the future is ours — we have only the present and our opportunities are just what we make of them. We can no more separate ourselves from the responsibility of our opportunity than we can change the color of our skin or increase our stature.

“America, or the United States, has always stood for progress because we have ideals to live for, and courage to strive. Let us hold on to and glorify our ideals, for they are the only vital things of life.

“Here at this grave is one of the opportunities to demonstrate the ideals of life — to show that everyone, no matter how lowly, can lead a noble life, a life full of ideals and happiness. Among my hearers there is none who would change his or her opportunities for those of an Indian squaw. Mary Jemison had most humble opportunity, yet she so lived that it has been worth while to erect this statue to her memory, in the knowledge that those who come after us when they see this beautiful place and its surroundings and the setting of this statue will look up to the blue sky, ‘thank God and take courage.’

“I have tried to have her face and figure express the gentleness and sweetness of her nature as well as the strength and courage of her character. It is a great lesson to know that out of the worst of calamities we may have some degree of opportunity and finally learn:

“‘That not a worm is cloven in vain,
That not a moth with vain desire
Is shriveled in a fruitless fire
But that subserves another gain.

“‘That nothing walks with aimless feet,
That not one life shall be destroyed
And cast as rubbish to the void
When God has made the pile complete.’

"This has been my theme and the motive of the statue of Mary Jemison, and I leave it to you all and to the others who are to come after, to say how far I have succeeded in interpreting her life to the world."

Address by Dean L. H. Bailey on Country Life.

Dean Liberty H. Bailey, Director of the State College of Agriculture at Cornell University in Ithaca, N. Y., and a Trustee of this Society, spoke extemporaneously on the subject of country life. Following is an epitome of what he said:

"These impressive ceremonies set many thoughts into vibration and call up many memories of times and scenes long past. We endeavor to reconstruct before our imaginations the streams and forests and hills that formed the habitations and hunting-grounds of the sturdy and simple folk who have now passed away. It is a beautiful country, this Genesee valley in which they lived. It has now become the home of a prosperous and contented people. Cities have grown up, farms have been cut out from the forests and all the arteries of a complex civilization have been run through it. We are immersed in the affairs of our time; and yet we never stop to reflect but that our dreams run back to the days of the Indian domination and we conjure up again the wigwam, the canoe, the hunter and the fighter, and the long war expedition and the war dances. These old events and scenes will always live in the memory of our race; and the farther we are removed from them, no doubt the greater will be their poetic and magic charm.

"We have heard inspiring addresses in these ceremonies to-day. We have all been interested to follow them. My own thoughts, however, take a somewhat different direction. I am interested in this ceremony primarily because it sets up another landmark in the affairs and the activities of the broad, open country.

"The general tendency of the civilization of our time is to dump everything into the cities, particularly into the large cities. It is there that we assemble our treasures of art, our libraries, our dramatic skill, our specimens of architecture; and it is there that the aspiring men also assemble to work out their destinies. And yet the resources are drawn from the open country. There have been events in the open country. Great men have lived there. Episodes have transpired. Things have come to pass. We should be interested to record these events of the open country, as well

as the events that are associated with the congested city. Every new memorial in the open country is one additional reason for people to live in the open country.

"It is the habit of the time that when men have acquired their wealth they establish themselves for their remaining days in the city or a suburb of the city. Here is a man,* however, who long ago took the opposite course. After he had secured his competence in the city he went back to the country, symbolizing thereby the truth that the salvation of the city is the country, and that the city owes an obligation to the country whence its resources come. He established himself by the side of these beautiful falls, veiled in their rainbows and their mystery, to rescue them from vandalism; and during a period of half a century he has continuously restored the surroundings to something like their native condition. He has carefully planted trees and has nursed them. He has taken care of the land. He has preserved the whole great and wonderful area from exploitation; and he has collected here the mementos of the people who once roamed the banks of this rugged river. It is an example worthy of emulation; for he has accomplished much for a quiet countryside.

"In accomplishing this Mr. Letchworth has set us all a great example. Persons will not live contentedly in the open country if the country provides nothing more than subsistence. The ideals of all the people are to be quickened. Imaginations must be fed. The spiritual reaction to surroundings must be cultivated. Everything that adds local historic and romantic interest to a region adds to its attraction as a place in which people shall live.

"To the young man or woman, that occupation appeals most that promises to provide the greatest means of self-expression. I want to see the open country so attractive and the farms so remunerative, that an energetic and forward-looking young man may express himself as completely on a farm as in a profession, or in the making of a poem or a book, or the construction of a work requiring engineering skill. Everything that contributes to make the farming country appeal to youth is a contribution to our general welfare.

"This Society owes an obligation to the open country as well as to the city. The city drains the country. It takes everything itself. It discards and destroys the waste. It returns very little

* Referring to Dr. Letchworth.

to the country on which it lives. The time must come when a real economic and social co-ordination must be found between the city and the country. Our civilization depends on finding it. One means of bringing this about is to record the episodes, the events and the persons who have figured in the history of the open country, before their memories shall have been forgotten.

"We come here, therefore, under these trees, feeling the wind in our faces, looking into the blue sky above us, for the purpose of dedicating one more landmark to the memory of those who have made this region eventful, and to add our testimonial to the worthiness of him who has provided the occasion."

Remarks by Mr. H. A. Dudley who saw Mary Jemison.

Mr. H. A. Dudley of Warsaw, N. Y., aged 86 years, who was in the audience, was invited to relate a reminiscence of Mary Jemison whom he saw when he was seven or eight years old. Mr. Dudley said that in 1831, when he was living in Perry, he saw Mary Jemison when she was on her way from Gardeau to the Buffalo Reservation. She was then traveling in a wagon accompanied by two or three other wagons and the few members of her household. They had stopped in Perry, unhitched the horses and were feeding them at the feed box at the rear of the wagon. Mary Jemison lay on a bed in the wagon. Mr. Dudley said that he and other children of the neighborhood improved the opportunity to climb into the wagon and it was thus that he saw the venerable "White Woman." According to his recollection there were four or five wagons in the caravan containing the household effects.

At the conclusion of Mr. Dudley's remarks, the benediction was pronounced by the Rev. Louis A. Peirson of Castile.

Indian Ceremony of Dedication.

On the morning following the unveiling of the monument, that is to say, on Tuesday, September 20, 1910, an Indian dedicatory ceremony was held. The ancient rule is that only the closest of friends and nearest of kin shall be at the grave side. Mr. Letchworth was represented by Miss Isabel Howland of Sherwood, N. Y., his cousin, and Miss Caroline Bishop, his secretary. Mr.

James N. Johnston of Buffalo represented the people of Mary Jemison's natal soil and her parents. Representing the Indian family and her adopted nation were Mrs. Thomas Kennedy, Miss Carlenia Bennett, and Mr. Arthur C. Parker before mentioned.

The maiden was handed two ears of squaw corn by Mrs. Kennedy and was bidden to cast four handfuls of the grain on the grave from the foot to the head. Mrs. Kennedy then made a short address in which she said:

"This is the corn which so often you cultivated. Many times you husked it in harvest and in the following spring sowed it again, and it grew. It is a symbol that as it dies only to spring up anew, likewise we shall live again. The birds eat it from the ground where we place it and fly again to the skies. This is like the body that tarries on the earth to eat of its fruits, but flies upward when the Great Wisdom knows it is time."

At Mrs. Kennedy's request Mr. Parker laid the grave fire and lighting it from four points, threw upon it the incense ordained for such purposes, the tobacco herb which the Seneca knew as O-yen-kwa-o-weh. The leaf from which it was cast was thrown to the flames and an evergreen bough placed over the flames of the grave fire. The ears of corn were then handed by Mrs. Kennedy to Miss Bishop with the instruction that they should be preserved as a memorial of the event. To the Indian all these things are symbolic and things to be obeyed.

As the party left the grave side, Indian file, each one gave one glance over his shoulder to see that the thin blue stream of smoke still lifted to the skies and with this last glance went away.

Mr. Parker, speaking of the dedication of the monument, wrote afterwards to Dr. Letchworth:

"I am deeply impressed by the event which passed by so successfully. It was not only an honor to 'The White Woman of the Genesee' but also one to my people. It is with feelings of most profound gratitude to you that I look back upon the event."

APPENDIX B.

FOURTH OF JULY, 1910, IN THE CITY OF NEW YORK.

ACCOUNT OF A CELEBRATION DESIGNED
TO ESTABLISH A MORE RATIONAL
WAY OF OBSERVING INDEPENDENCE DAY.

FOURTH OF JULY, 1910, IN THE CITY OF NEW YORK.

The Mayor's Independence Day Committee.

On May 26, 1910, the Hon. William J. Gaynor, Mayor of the city of New York, appointed a committee of prominent citizens to arrange for the celebration of the following Fourth of July in a manner which would appeal to the patriotism and historical interest of the people and at the same time reduce as far as possible the dangers to life, person and property due to the use of explosives. This was part of the general movement for what was popularly called a "safe and sane Fourth." The committee, known as the Mayor's Independence Day Committee, was composed of the following named persons:

Hon. George McAneny, President of the Borough of Manhattan; Hon. Alfred E. Steers, President of the Borough of Brooklyn; Hon. Cyrus C. Miller, President of the Borough of the Bronx; Hon. Lawrence Gresser, President of the Borough of Queens; Hon. George Cromwell, President of Richmond Borough; Louis Annin Ames, Howard Bradstreet, Lewis Sayre Burchard, James S. Cushman, George S. Davis, Hon. Gherardi Davis, Henry P. Davidson, Joseph Livingston Delafield, Hon. Frank L. Dowling, John H. Finley, LL. D., William E. Fitch, M. D., Joseph B. Gilder, Luther H. Gulick, M. D., Edward Hagaman Hall, L. H. D., Lee F. Hanmer, Hamilton Holt, August F. Jacacci, Prof. Joseph French Johnston, Dean Frederick Keppel, George F. Kunz, Ph. D., Sc. D., Charles R. Lamb, Chester S. Lord, Mrs. Clarence H. Mackay, William Allen Marble, William H. Maxwell, Ph. D., LL. D., Hon. Samuel Marx, Hon. Samuel Parsons, Hon. Eugene A. Philbin, E. J. Preston, Mrs. Isaac L. Rice, Victor Ridder, Jacob A. Riis, Maj.-Gen. Charles F. Roe, Theodore P. Shonts, Com. Maurice Simmons, Hon. Charles B. Stover, James E. Sullivan, Hon. Calvin Tomkins, Alfred E. Talley, Hon. Joseph Versch, John H. Van Tine, Mrs. Schuyler Van Rensselaer, Hon. Rhinelander Waldo, Hon. Archibald Wat-

son, Evert Jansen Wendell, Edmund Wetmore, Louis Wiley, Col. George A. Wingate, Gen. George W. Wingate and Mrs. Egerton L. Winthrop.

The committee was organized with the following general and committee officers:

Chairman, John H. Finley, LL. D., President of the College of the City of New York.

Vice Chairman, Mr. William Allen Marble, Acting President of the Merchants' Association of New York.

Secretary, Mr. William A. Johnston, of the editorial staff of the *New York World*.

Treasurer, Mr. James S. Cushman.

Committee on City Hall Celebration: George F. Kunz, Ph. D., Sc. D., President of the American Scenic and Historic Preservation Society, Chairman; Mr. Joseph Livingston Delafield, Secretary.

Committee on Sports: Mr. James E. Sullivan, Chairman; Mrs. Egerton L. Winthrop, Jr., representing the Girls' Committee, and William H. Maxwell, Ph. D., LL. D., City Superintendent of Schools, representing the Board of Education.

Committee on Fireworks: Hon. Samuel Marx, member of the Board of Aldermen, Chairman.

Committee on Decorations: Mr. Charles R. Lamb, who was Chairman of the Committee on Decorations of the Hudson-Fulton celebration, Chairman; Mr. Louis Annin Ames, Secretary.

Committee on Parade: Maj.-Gen. Charles F. Roe, N. G., N. Y., Chairman; Lieut.-Col. George A. Wingate, N. G., N. Y., Secretary.

Committee on District Celebration: Luther H. Gulick, M. D., the educator and authority on physical education, Chairman; Mr. Lee F. Hanmer, Secretary; Dr. William H. Maxwell, representing the Board of Education.

Committee on Music: Mr. Louis Wiley, Chairman.

Committee on Finance: Hon. Herman A. Metz, ex-Comptroller of the city of New York, Chairman; Mr. James S. Cushman, Vice-Chairman.

Committee on Press: Mr. E. J. Preston, Secretary of the Daily Newspaper Club, Chairman; Mr. Victor Ridder of the *New Yorker Staats Zeitung*, Secretary.

Finances.

It was Mayor Gaynor's idea that this should be a celebration of the citizens, by the citizens and for the citizens, and therefore that the funds to defray the expenses should be supplied as far as possible by private subscription. On June 20, 1910, he wrote to President Finley as follows:

CITY OF NEW YORK,
OFFICE OF THE MAYOR.

June 20, 1910.

Dr. JOHN H. FINLEY, *President College of City of New York:*

DEAR PRESIDENT FINLEY.—I have in mind your request of Saturday, that I ask the public to make contributions toward the expenses for the Fourth of July celebration. I enclose to you my check for \$100, my contribution according to my means. I am certain that the people of New York will respond quick enough if you let them know that you want money for the necessary expenses. The best way is to get the newspapers to help you. They will collect the money quick enough. It would be too bad for the celebration to fail in any respect for lack of means. I think, however, that all societies uniting in the celebration should furnish their own music. That is the custom, as I understand it; and the National Guard does the same thing.

Sincerely yours,

W. J. GAYNOR,
Mayor.

The response to the appeal for popular subscriptions was adequate to the needs of the celebration. The total expense of the celebration was in the neighborhood of \$35,000. Of this amount, about \$14,000 was raised by private subscription for general expenses; the city appropriated \$15,000 for fireworks; and the organizations participating in the parade paid their own expenses, amounting to about \$6,000 for bands, horse hire and transportation.

Exercises at the City Hall.

The civic center of the celebration was the City Hall. The exercises at this point were entrusted to the American Scenic and Historic Preservation Society. The official program read as follows:

City of New York.
Programme
of the
Independence Day Exercises
at the City Hall,
July 4th, 1910,
Under the Auspices of the American Scenic and
Historic Preservation Society.
IN THE ALDERMANIC CHAMBER,
9:30 A. M. to 10:15 A. M.
Historical Ceremonies and Reception,
Dr. George F. Kunz, Presiding.
Address: "The Heroines of the Revolution,"
Mrs. William Cumming Story,
of the Daughters of the American Revolution.
Address: "The City Hall of New York and Its History,"
Dr. Edward Hagaman Hall,
Secretary American Scenic and Historic Preservation Society.
Poem: "City Hall Park,"
Arthur Guiterman.
Address: "City Hall."
Written by Hon. John Bigelow, New York's First Citizen;
Read by Dr. William Edward Fitch.
Address: "Patriotism."
Mr. Arthur W. Colborne.

ON CITY HALL STEPS.
10:15 A. M.

Review of the Parade by His Hon. Mayor Wm. J. Gaynor, Delegations from Patriotic Societies and the Grand Army of the Republic as Guard of Honor.

Following the Parade
11:15 A. M.

Music—"Stars and Stripes" Henry Liss's Military Band
"Object of the Celebration" John H. Finley, LL.D.
Song—"The Star Spangled Banner" People's Choral Union
Music—"My Own United States" Band
Reading of Declaration Col. W. D. H. Washington
Song—"Battle Hymn of Republic" Choral Union
Lincoln's Gettysburg Address Hon. Samuel Marx
Music—"American Home Songs" Band
Address His Honor, Mayor Gaynor
Song—"America" Choral Union
Music—"On the Firing Line" Band

On the back of the program were printed the names of the officers of the general committee and sub-committees, previously given.

Notwithstanding the early hour at which the literary exercises began in the aldermanic chamber, that spacious room was filled to overflowing.

Address by Dr. George Frederick Kunz.

George Frederick Kunz, Ph. D., Sc. D., presided in the aldermanic chamber and opened the exercises. He said:

"About a century ago this charming bit of architecture was dedicated to civic service. Many have held office within its walls. Nearly all of those did honor to the city; but whatever has transpired, owing to the human frailties of those who served here, this building has always maintained its purity and dignity even as fine gold when freed from the baser substances with which it is sometimes combined. Through the same process by which time changes the handsome bride into the charming grandmother with her silvery locks, our City Hall is to-day as classically pure as in the days of its youth, thus exemplifying the saying of the great Keats:

'A thing of beauty is a joy forever.'

"Since the building was dedicated to the public service, the city has had many mayors, some of whom have been among the greatest and most respected officials, but the city never had one who manifested so keen an interest in the welfare of the city and its citizens, irrespective of race and creed, as present chief executive. It was he who appointed the present Independence Day Committee to celebrate the Fourth of July in a sane, instructive and patriotic manner, and the American Scenic and Historic Preservation Society, of which Andrew H. Green was the founder, was asked to arrange for the ceremonies at the City Hall.

"We are assembled here to-day to commemorate a safe, sane, and patriotic Fourth of July, and to think soberly and reverently of those who made this day possible by giving their lives and homes for their country's sake.

"History fails to tell us of a single man who devoted months to the development of brute strength to be pitted against another man for a purse, gate receipts, and moving picture royalties thus desecrating the glorious Fourth."*

Address by Mrs. William Cumming Story.

Dr. Kunz then introduced the next speaker with the following words:

"The women of the Revolution were as eager and as zealous in their fight for liberty as were the men. These qualities they

*Alluding to the Jeffries-Johnson prize-fight in Reno, Nev., on that day.

maintain to this day. It has never failed them. We are to hear from an ardent citizen, proud of her Revolutionary lineage, about the women of the Revolution. I take pleasure in presenting to you Mrs. William Cumming Story, of the Daughters of the American Revolution."

Mrs. Story spoke as follows:

"Twenty years ago a body of American women, who descended directly from the men who rendered material aid to their country during the Revolutionary period, banded themselves together to perpetuate the memory of the early American patriots, and to uphold the ideas of our great republic. This body became known as the Daughters of the American Revolution, and it has attained a place of prominence and importance among the Patriotic organizations of this country.

"It is with special pride and deep appreciation of the honor conferred upon me, that I respond to this call made upon me as a Daughter of the American Revolution to speak upon the topic, 'Heroines of the American Revolution.' It is indeed a privilege to be permitted to take part in this celebration known as the Celebration of a Safe and Sane Fourth of July, and it is an honor to be called upon to raise my voice as the first woman to speak in this historic place. And, in behalf of the splendid type of American womanhood that stood bravely forth, ready and able to bear her share of the trials, the perils and responsibilities of her time, I desire to say that our Society honors itself in commemorating certain Revolutionary heroes by naming many of the branch organizations of the National body, known as chapters, for some man or woman who faithfully served the cause of American Independence during the revolutionary period; and some 248 chapters are named for the heroines of the American Revolution.

"While our hearts thrill with the recital of the heroic deeds of Molly Pitcher, Margaret Corbin, Jane McCrea, Deborah Champion, Hannah Winston and many others dear and familiar to us, how many brave hearts had to bear perhaps the greatest test of heroism and endurance — that of bravely giving of their dearest treasures, their sons, husbands and fathers to their country's cause, silently enduring the weary waiting which is the lot of those who remain behind to guard the home alone.

“It is hard to choose among the long array of noble women, and, in giving the story of one — Betty Zane — which is especially picturesque, I long to give the record of many others.

“In 1770, a solitary Virginian stood on a high bank of the Ohio river just above the mouth of Wheeling creek, which was soon to be the scene of a bloody conflict between two races, and the abiding monument of a young girl's heroism. This young man was Ebenezer Zane, a native of Berkeley county, Virginia, where he was born Oct. 7, 1747. Young Zane built a cabin, and then returned to Berkeley for the family who were to share his humble home. A wife, two brothers and a younger sister made up the family party. Traveling in those days was difficult and dangerous, so it was not until 1772 that the Zanes started on their westward journey. And at the age of sixteen Betty Zane began her new life in the rough-hewn log cabin by Wheeling creek, as near as can be ascertained from the scant records. In the year 1764, the Six Nations of the great Indian Confederacy in the American Colonies, after a pitched battle with the colonists at Bushy Run in western Pennsylvania, in which they were defeated, had made a treaty, by the terms of which warfare for a time came to an end. These six nations were the Mohawks, Oneidas, Onondagas, Cayugas, Senecas and the Tuscaroras. When four years later, in 1768, it was decided to fix a definite boundary between the possessions of the Indian natives and those of the English colonists, the chiefs of the several tribes attended a meeting called by Sir William Johnson, the king's superintendent of Indian affairs. The meeting took place at Fort Stanwix, now Rome, N. Y., and the six great chiefs signed the paper of agreement by making their marks. It was English folly that at last broke the treaty of 1764, after ten years of peace; the blunder for which the colonists had to pay dearly. “Corn-stalk,” the great Indian chief, had been killed by the whites, who had suspected him unjustly, and the savages had begun war on the Virginia border. Lord Dunmore ordered Col. Angus McDonald to go to the relief of the frontier settlers, and in 1774, under the superintendence of Ebenezer Zane, Fort Henry — at first called Fort Fincastle — was built. It was said that the famous Gen. George Rogers Clarke planned this fortification which was a parallelogram, with enclosures of pickets eight feet high and with blockhouses at each corner. The fort was built in an open space and its main entrance was through a gateway on its eastern side, adjoining the straggling hamlet of Wheeling, which consisted of about twenty-

five log houses. It was three years later before the Wheeling creek pioneers had to use their fort as a place of refuge and defense. One day in 1777, Colonel Shepherd, who was the military commander of Fort Henry, noticed signs of Indians in the neighborhood, and, feeling sure that an attack would be made on the garrison, ordered the settlers to shut themselves in the blockhouses. The next morning savages were observed in the corn-field outside the palisades, and Capt. Samuel Mason was ordered to take thirteen of the garrison force and drive them off. The little garrison force numbered only forty-two fighting men, several of whom were old men or boys. From the loopholes of the blockhouses the besieged saw Mason's men cut down one by one by musket ball or tomahawk, until not a white man of the little band of fourteen was left. They saw that a much larger force of savages was upon them than they had supposed. Mason and one man whom they had seen fall were only wounded, and they escaped by being hidden by the fallen field timbers, though they were unable to give the slightest aid during the long week that followed. Reduced now to twenty-six defenders, and with a force of from 380 to 500 Wyandots hemming them in on three sides, they were in a desperate plight. Yet they fought on from day to day, always hoping for the help that did not come. Shepherd knew now that Simon Girty, the renegade, the traitor, the spy, was at the head of that savage horde, and he grimly decided to die rather than surrender. Girty offered terms if he would yield, but the Fort Henry commander sent word back by the bearer of the flag of truce: 'Tell your leader, never to *him!* *Not while there is one American to fire a musket!*' A splendid message from a brave man, for now only twelve men remained to fight nearly 500. And during this time little Betty Zane was running bullets, and sometimes firing muskets to relieve the worn-out men. Then one day Colonel Shepherd stood with white, tight-drawn lips before the dauntless band, facing the horrible realization that the ammunition was almost used up. In a few hours there would not be a bullet for those brave twelve men to load with. Outside, sixty feet away from the fort, in Ebenezer's log cabin was a keg of ammunition. Who would dare risk death from bullet, or tomahawk, in the face of 500 foes? Several men offered themselves, but every man's life possessed a hundred-fold value that day. While the volunteers stood in silence before their leader, Betty Zane, putting her hand on the commander's arm, said: 'I'll go!'

‘You!’ exclaimed Colonel Shepherd in amazement. ‘Oh, no, you are not strong enough, nor fleet enough, Mistress Betty, besides—’ ‘Sir,’ said the brave girl, ‘it is because of the danger that I offer. If I, a woman, should be killed, ’twere not so great a loss as if one of these men should fall. You cannot spare a man, sir. Let me go!’ And so the matter was settled. The gate was opened and swift as a deer sped the girl through the gates, beyond the pickets, toward the little log cabin. Courage is the virtue most admired by the North American Indian, and as the five hundred Wyandots saw the flying figure of the girl pass directly before them, not a hand was raised to bow or musket, not a man of them fired at Betty Zane. She entered the cabin, seized the keg of ammunition, wrapped her apron about it, and then once more ran the gauntlet of the Indians’ fire, and this time there was need of desperate haste, for the Indians guessed her burden, and a shower of arrows and shot was sent flying after her. But they fell harmlessly about her or broke against the walls of Fort Henry as she gained the entrance, and thus did Betty Zane save the fort.

“The recital of such record as that of Betty Zane must inspire all with the lesson of splendid courage. It must remind us, that, in forgetfulness of self we can alone achieve the best development of character. We must learn that a woman’s part in the peril and responsibility of times that try men’s souls must be met in a spirit worthy of the patriots of our land. And we must remember that, to be consistent, we must in our own lives endeavor to express the high ideals for which our ancestors stood.”

Address by Dr. Edward Hagaman Hall.

Dr. Kunz then said:

“A quarter of a century of his life one of our citizens has devoted to the traditions of the past, winnowing the mists from the historic realities, and finding the truth often more startling than legend. No one has accomplished more than he in marking historic sites and in preserving the beauties of natural grandeur in our country to posterity. I take pleasure in presenting Dr. Edward Hagaman Hall, Secretary of the American Scenic and Historic Preservation Society.”

Dr. Hall gave a short address on the history of the City Hall and City Hall Park. The facts which were very briefly reviewed

by the speaker are given more at length in the history of City Hall Park printed in the Fifteenth Annual Report (1910) of this Society.

Poem by Mr. Arthur Guiterman.

The poet of the day was introduced by the Chairman with these words:

"For a dozen years it has been our delight to read occasional charming bits of historic verse and those of local tradition. These have generally emanated from one source, and it seemed most appropriate for the Committee to call on this poet, a graduate of the College of the City of New York, to consult with his muse and to embody her thoughts in some verse on our beautiful City Hall. I take pleasure in calling upon Mr. Arthur Guiterman."

Mr. Arthur Guiterman read the following original poem, entitled "City Hall Park:"

Does Freedom ask a gilded shrine?
 Not so; her chosen fanes shall be
 The lowly altars, made divine
 By deeds of men who would be free.

Great walls may show the pride of Kings;
 More dear to us this hallowed earth
 Where they who strove for nobler things
 Than wealth or conquest, proved their worth.

For here, when blasts of Tyranny
 In hearts unconquered woke the flame,
 The Stalwart Sons of Liberty
 Raised up their Tree in Freedom's name;

And — first to brave insulting foes,
 To guard their rights against attack —
 They held this ground with sturdy blows
 And drove the braggart Redcoats back!

Aye, here the dreamer sees again
 The camp, the rill of steel, and hears
 The steady march of those true men
 Who fought the war of seven years.

They won; we hold the sacred spot
 Where echoed Freedom's bugle call —
 Our City's treasured garden-plot
 Where sprang that Tree which shelters all.

Letter from Hon. John Bigelow.

The chairman presented William Edward Fitch, M. D., to read a letter from Hon. John Bigelow, the author, lawyer and diplomat,

who was born at Malden in 1817. Referring to Mr. Bigelow, Dr. Kunz said:

“When this City Hall was young, there was born on the banks of the Hudson one who first saw Lafayette from a peach orchard. When the peach orchard view had satisfied him he saw him at a nearer range. He has served this city, the State, and his country in many positions of trust, which he has always filled with dignity and honor, and at the age of ninety-three he is still a man young in mind; still blessed with that never-failing gift of wit which is one of his greatest attractions. He may justly be called New York’s first citizen, and he has honored the occasion by preparing a paper on the ‘Past, Present and Future of City Hall.’ All honor to the Hon. John Bigelow, whose paper will be read by Dr. William Edward Fitch.”

Dr. Fitch then read the following:

“THE SQUIRRELS,

HIGHLAND FALLS-ON-HUDSON.

June 22, 1910.

“*Gentlemen of the Committee.*—I cordially approve of your plans for providing a ‘sane method of celebrating the anniversary of our birthday as a nation’ and at the same time of providing for the de-vandalization of the City Hall and its birthright park. Both of these enterprises chime the harmony by which, and by which only, our commercial metropolis can hope to keep in step with the march of civilization.

“When John Adams proposed that the youth of our country should be taught to celebrate the anniversary of the Declaration of our Independence by the free use of noisy and combustible explosives he knew full well that the declaration which inaugurated the emancipation of the North American colonies on the 4th of July, 1776, was big with a war between the feeblest military organization then in existence, and the most formidable naval power in the world. He naturally, therefore, and with pre-Adamsite enthusiasm, set to work to inflame the military spirit of the country for its impending trials by familiarizing its youth with the noise and combustible explosives of mimic war.

“All this was wisdom in its day. Times change and we change with them.

“For nearly a century twisting the British Lion’s tail was the pleasing sorcery with which our inspiring politicians were wont to charm the Celtic voter and win for himself

‘That called fame on such gentle acts as these.’

But now our typical Nimrod*, while hunting in the London jungle, instead of twisting the British Lion’s tail, sports not with Amaryllis in the shade, but with the tangled curls of its Royal Lion’s terminal.

“Peace is now the burden of that lion’s familiar roar, and Senator Root supported by Andrew Carnegie, or *vice versa*, has gone to The Hague to persuade it to have all its teeth extracted and its toe nails clipped as the very first clause of the Constitution of the new Parliament of Peace. The triumphant adoption of that resolution will probably be celebrated by excluding the Chinese fire-crackers from our country as we do the people who manufacture them, and henceforth and forever more the lions and the lambs will lie down together as usual, whether on the inside or the outside of each other, to be adjudicated by the new Parliament of Nations.

“There may be some doubt of the unanimous adoption by The Hague Peace Parliament of the proposed fundamental resolution; but I have no doubt of your ability to inaugurate, and this very year, a sane, dignified and appropriate method of annually commemorating the birthday of the American Union, for which the time chosen seems to be peculiarly propitious. I pray that your efforts may be crowned with perfect success.

“It was in the fall of the year 1835, and as a student of law, that I first made my home in the city of New York. For the fourteen succeeding years I think I may safely say that on an average as often as every other secular day, when not casually absent from the city, I climbed the City Hall steps, visited one or more of its court rooms and the judges’, county clerk’s or sheriff’s offices. The leaders of our bar on my arrival and for the ten succeeding years were George Wood, George Griffith, Frank Brockholst Cutting, J. Prescott Hall, Robert Sedgwick, John Anthon and David Graham, the author of a book of procedure in universal use by the profession in those days, but to which the Fields code a dozen years later proved as fatal as the mineral oil soon after proved to the tallow dip.

* Referring to ex-President Roosevelt.

“At the bar, and rapidly climbing to the leadership at the same time, were Daniel Lord, Charles O’Conor, James T. Brady and William M. Evarts, who during that period made his debut as a barrister in a criminal case which gave him almost as much notoriety before he was thirty years of age as he won later from his defenses of Henry Ward Beecher and Andrew Johnson. I heard the important part of Evarts’ work in the criminal case, and he took me over in his carriage to the Brooklyn court to hear him sum up for the defense of Beecher. He seemed to me as fully equipped for the leadership of the bar in the first case as in the Beecher case at a much later period. Like Minerva he seemed born full grown for his profession.

“The judges of note at that time were, in the Federal Circuit Court, Judge Betts; in the New York Supreme Court, Samuel Jones, who not infrequently visited the land of dreams during a trial or an argument, but whom no one ever accused of having missed a single point of the counsel’s argument when he came to charge the juries or to announce a decision. Judge Oakley had the reputation of being so well grounded in the principles of law that he rarely consulted a volume of reports or cited a precedent, yet enjoyed and deserved the reputation of being the soundest judge in the City Hall. He was as much noted for his taste for novels as for his distaste for case learning. Judge Aaron Vanderpoel, who succeeded Murray Hoffman and who was heralded on his appointment as the Kinderhook Roarer, a title he had earned by the carrying power of his voice, occasionally demonstrated in Tammany Hall as the champion of the policies of President Jackson. He was personally popular, but he was not so sound a lawyer as he had been effective as an advocate.

“I would not wish to give the impression that I haunted the City Hall so faithfully in those days in the service of multitudinous clients. Almost any excuse was sufficient for a visit to one or another of the courts, for there I always found a number of lawyers waiting the conclusion of a trial or argument and the call of the calendar, when a new case was liable to be called. Here let me say that I have never found elsewhere or at any time such uniformly agreeable and interesting male society as the waiting lawyers that in those days I used to encounter inside the New York bar. I was always sure to find in the largest portion of them, better trained intellects than could then or can even now be found in any other profession or calling. Hence it is not

strange that the lawyers constitute the dominating class in the cabinets, and in our legislative councils, and are becoming more and more the indispensable steerers of all important corporate trusts.

"For many reasons therefore the City Hall Park is to me classic ground, far more classic than the Colosseum of Rome, and for obvious reasons. The struggles in our New York forum were waged for the settlement of controversies between our fellow citizens and according to principles of justice and equity; while the Colosseum was only a theatre for the display of the relative physical prowess of wild beasts and slaves. I can recall even now the pride I used to feel at times in climbing the steps of our City Hall, that it was a Temple of Themis erected expressly to reconcile the differences of those who took refuge in it, peacefully and according to everlasting principles of justice and equity; that I was one of its priests; that it has been from its foundation the finest specimen of architecture in the country; the forum of municipal legislation and the seat of our courts for the administration of justice long before Canal street had ceased to be a babbling brook.

"The City Hall Park is hallowed by even more enduring associations than the architecture of its Temple of Themis. It was in that park, then known only as the Fields, that on the 6th of July, 1774, Alexander Hamilton, while yet a student at Kings College — now the Columbia University, of which every New Yorker grows annually more proud — made his first experiment as a public speaker to denounce what is now known in history as the Boston Port Bill. Irving in his biography of Washington, referring to this occasion, says:

"Hamilton was present, and, prompted by his excited feelings and the instigation of youthful companions, ventured to address the multitude. The vigor and maturity of his intellect, contrasted with his youthful appearance, won the admiration of his auditors; even his diminutive size gave additional effect to his eloquence."

"The City Hall Park is hallowed by other as tender and yet more enduring historic associations than any I have yet referred to. It was in that park, while still known only as the Fields, that by order of General Washington the Declaration of Independence of the American colonies, which has made the 4th of July an American holiday throughout the world, was first officially given to the public. By the General's orders it was read to the several brigades then quartered in and about the city in the City Hall

Park at 6 o'clock in the evening of the 9th day of July, 1776, when our nation, though only five days old, was already in more senses than one an infant *in arms*.

“What associations can make any fraction of God's acre sacred, if these do not? What people could ever expect to endure that would allow the monumental memorials of such associations to be degraded in the eyes of its offspring or displaced to gratify the lusts of greed and the economies of Mammon? Be it the distinction and achievement of your association to demonstrate to the world that the spirit that inspired the immortal Declaration of Independence which first proclaimed the birth of a government of the people, by the people, for the people, was never more alive in New York city than it is to-day. That such is the case your association can and therefore will be expected to demonstrate on the approaching anniversary of our national holiday. This demonstration you will make,

“*First*, by instituting proceedings for the speedy devandalization of the City Hall Park, which would mean to clear and clear it of every existing structure upon it except the City Hall itself, from Chamber street to and including the toe of the original park, now occupied by the Federal post office and court rooms;

“*Second*, by having Mr. Parsons * directed at once to make it the handsomest park of its size in the world and plant its entire street borders with the longest lived and best forest trees that thrive in our climate, fifty feet apart the one from the other.

“*Third*, by transferring the courts and other municipal business to some suitable place to be provided for them and making the City Hall a repository for municipal archives exclusively to which reference is rarely to be made, except for historical purposes. Their segregation to such a repository would add infinitely to their value, and be a substantial relief from other crowded repositories.

“A poet has said what has reached the dignity of a proverb, that ‘one touch of nature makes the whole world kin.’ Who can begin to estimate the effect upon the financial and commercial interests of our Commonwealth, if all the frequenters of Wall street were permitted twice a day to take a glance at the City Hall Park after Mr. Parsons has made it an astonishment lesson?

“In conclusion let me assure you that no New Yorker will ever begrudge any expense that may be required to consecrate the City Hall and its park as a symbol of their city — the favorite refuge

* Hon. Samuel Parsons, landscape architect of the parks.

of the oppressed of all nations and the Pilgrim's Shrine for those who wish for evidence that the best of all governments is that which governs least, and the worst that which governs most.

Yours gratefully and respectfully,

JOHN BIGELOW.

Address by Mr. A. W. Colborne.

The chairman introduced the last speaker as follows:

"Two years ago there was a public gathering at this City Hall and ceremonies of much dignity were carried on by a number of organizations to celebrate this glorious Independence Day. These thousands were brought together and the ceremony was presided over by one who will favor us with a naddress on 'Patriotism.' I present to you Mr. A. W. Colborne, former president, but now vice-president of the American Volunteer Cadets."

Mr. Colborne then spoke on the subject of patriotism. We regret that we have been unable to secure a copy of his address for publication.

The Reviewing Stands.

As the exercises in the aldermanic chamber drew near a close the sound of music outside of the City Hall announced the approach of the military and civic parade under command of Major-General Charles F. Roe, and upon the conclusion of Mr. Colborne's address the assemblage proceeded to the platform erected in front of the City Hall steps. On the south side of the plaza facing the official reviewing stand was another stand with a seating capacity of several hundred. Every seat and every other point of vantage were filled with spectators. The plaza itself was kept clear for the procession which came down Broadway, crossed in front of the City Hall, and dispersed through Park Row. On the stand on the south side of the plaza was a chorus from the People's Choral Union. On the reviewing stand were Mayor Gaynor, the Borough Presidents, Police Commissioner Baker, Fire Commissioner Waldo, and other city officials; President Finley, Chairman of the Independence Day Committee; Dr. Kunz, Chairman of the Committee on City Hall Exercises; and many other prominent men. Upon the arrival of the procession, they were joined by Major-General Roe and his aide Captain Cornelius Vanderbilt.

The brilliancy of the scene in front of City Hall was enhanced by the artistic decorations planned by Mr. Charles R. Lamb, the artist, whose many original suggestions for the improvement of the streets and public places of the metropolis have caused him to be called the "Baron Haussmann of New York city." The arrangement of the mayor's stand, boxes and platforms was designed to give an artistic setting for the City Hall, which is regarded as one of the finest pieces of architecture in the city. The stands were screened from the sun by canopies of red, white and blue canvas, supported on tall poles in the Venetian style. In front of the boxes was a privet hedge, and growing flowers were placed in troughs along the upper edge of the boxes. On the pediments of the balustrade on top of the portico of the City Hall were small bay trees and rows of small cedars adorned the top of the building. Long chains of green leaves were hung in festoons from the roof all around the building and groups of American flags were placed between the windows. The artist's idea was carried even to the boutonnières worn by the members of the committee. In these button-hole bouquets, the national colors were represented by red carnations, white carnations and blue cornflowers.

The Procession.

The composition of the procession which marched past the City Hall was as follows:

Platoon of Mounted Police.

Grand Marshal,

Major-General Charles F. Roe.

Chief of Staff,

Lieutenant Colonel George Albert Wingate.

Aides,

Lieutenant Colonel William W. Ladd,

Lieutenant Colonel Gilford Hurry,

Lieutenant Colonel Nathaniel B. Thurston,

Lieutenant Colonel William H. Chapin,

Lieutenant Colonel John N. Stearns, Jr.,

Lieutenant Colonel George W. Bunnell,

Lieutenant Colonel William G. Le Boutillier,

Lieutenant Colonel Frederick T. Leigh,

Lieutenant Colonel Benjamin B. McAlpin,

Lieutenant Colonel Edward B. Bruch,

Colonel John B. Holland,

Captain Louis M. Greer,

Captain Cornelius Vanderbilt,

Captain Adrian H. Mather.

Squadrons A and C, National Guard, New York, as escort.

FIRST DIVISION.

Detachments of United States Army.

SECOND DIVISION.

National Guard of the State of New York,
 Brigadier General George Moore Smith, Commanding.
 First Company Signal Corps as escort.
 Ninth Provisional Regiment, Coast Artillery Corps.
 Thirteenth Provisional Regiment, Coast Artillery Corps.
 First Battalion, Field Artillery.
 Field Hospital.

Colonel Daniel Appleton, Commanding First Brigade:
 Seventh Regiment, Infantry.
 Twelfth Regiment, Infantry.
 Seventy-first Regiment, Infantry.
 Sixty-ninth Regiment, Infantry.
 Brigadier General John G. Eddy, Commanding Second Brigade:
 Second Company, Signal Corps, as escort.
 Fourteenth Regiment, Infantry.
 Forty-seventh Regiment, Infantry.
 Twenty-third Regiment, Infantry.

THIRD DIVISION.

Naval Militia of the State of New York,
 Commodore Jacob W. Miller, Commanding.
 Second Battalion.
 First Battalion.

FOURTH DIVISION.

United Spanish War Veterans.
 Captain Anthony J. Griffin, U. S. W. V., Commanding.
 Company A, Second New York Sons of Veterans Reserves,
 Senior Vice Commander D. A. Glover, Commanding.

FIFTH DIVISION.

Board of Education of the City of New York.
 Dr. James J. Sheppard, Marshal.

SIXTH DIVISION.

Fire Department of the City of New York.

SEVENTH DIVISION.

Department of Street Cleaning of the City of New York,
 Supt. John S. Carroll, Commanding.

EIGHTH DIVISION.

Italian Rifle Guard,
 Captain Joseph Bruno, Commanding.
 Hebrew-American Brigade,
 Major M. Alperstein, Commanding.
 Company C, Veteran Guards,
 Capt. Edward L. Reid, Commanding.
 "The First Separate Company,"
 Captain J. Charles Siegelman, Commanding.
 Bohemian Gymnasium "Sokol."
 Platoon of Mounted Police.

The various organizations formed in the streets from Twenty-sixth to Thirty-first streets, both inclusive, adjacent to Fifth avenue. The line of march was down Fifth avenue to Fourth street,

thence to Broadway, thence to City Hall Park, thence through the park in front of the City Hall to Park Row. Upon reaching Park Row the organizations turned alternately uptown and downtown, and were dismissed as they reached Lafayette street and Broadway respectively.

Address by Dr. John H. Finley.

As soon as the procession, which, it was estimated, contained 8,000 persons, had passed, Dr. Kunz, as chairman of the City Hall Committee, presented Dr. Finley with the following words:

“When the celebration of Independence Day was seriously considered by His Honor the Mayor, he looked about and chose one who was in sympathy with the people — the man whose name appears as the organizer and father of every good movement in this city for the civic, literary, official and international. He gives the best of his personality to all that he enters into. He is the head of the greatest civic institution of higher education in the city, under whose guidance it has prospered and grown to a position of great dignity and value. I take pleasure in presenting to you Dr. John H. Finley, president of the College of the City of New York, and president of the Independence Day Committee, who will inform us as to what is being done to-day.”

Dr. Finley spoke as follows:

“*Mr. Mayor and Fellow Citizens* — This celebration represents in its purpose the feeling, widespread I believe, that there should be a common observance of this day befitting its significance in our history; that it should not be permitted to become in our calendar merely one more day of rest or a holiday full of menace to life and with no benefit to our civic spirit. The program arranged for the day is not an adequate expression of that feeling, so short has been the time for its preparation, but it marks the beginning, I hope, of a more rational and purposeful observance of this first of our national holidays.

“The Hebrews were commanded, long ago, to leave their houses and live seven days out in tents or booths, in drenching rains or under scorching suns, that they might be kept mindful of the fact that their forefathers had come out of bondage. Can we do less than to keep as a people one day at least, here in the city as well as in the country, since there are millions who must stay in the

city even on a holiday, when we shall remember for the strengthening of our own courage and faith that our fathers fought their way out of dependence into freedom which has made possible this wonderful city in the greatest republic of all times?

"The object of this celebration is not to glorify the past, but to keep in us, who are of varying traditions and ideals, the spirit that was in those who made this day possible in our history. If we remember them it is for our own sakes and not theirs. They are beyond the need of our praise. We are not beyond the need of their glorious example of sacrifice.

"It is to help especially those who have not been longer on this continent than our Revolutionary fathers had been in 1776 to love this country as they did. It is to breed in the busy man of to-day the devotion to country that made young Nathan Hale whose statue stands yonder, regret that he had only one life to lose for his country, which is now our country. It is to give prophecy in the children of to-day, gathered in hundreds of centers all over the city while we are assembled here — to give prophecy in them of a nobler democracy to-morrow."

The Mayor's Address.

Dr. Kunz introduced the Mayor as follows:

"Although a century old, our City Hall for ninety-nine years has served as the seat of civic government. We have had many Mayors, some of whom have been our greatest and most respected citizens; but have we ever had a Mayor who manifested so keen an interest in the welfare of the city and its citizens, irrespective of race or creed, as our present chief executive? I have the honor of presenting to you the gentleman who appointed the Independence Day Committee to celebrate the Fourth of July in a sane, instructive, and patriotic manner; the Hon. William J. Gaynor, Mayor of the city of New York."

Mayor Gaynor said:

"*Dr. Finley, Ladies and Gentlemen* — The Mayor of the city and other officials of the city are proud of the city of New York to-day and of the people of the city. (A voice: 'We are proud of the Mayor.')

"The committee which got up this celebration is also proud of the city and of the people of the city. They met some discouragement in the getting of it up. There were some people who

thought that some of the soldiers might get sunstruck, or that some of you might get sunstruck, but we all knew that the people of this city and the National Guard were of a more heroic frame of body and spirit than that.

“What we have seen this day in the city of New York and also see in the similar celebrations taking place all the way across the continent even to the Pacific coast; what we see in these celebrations demonstrates beyond a doubt that the spirit of patriotism which found first expression in the Declaration of Independence and then in the Constitution of the United States, and afterward in the great address of Lincoln at Gettysburg, has not abated one jot or tittle among the real people of this country.

“It demonstrates beyond any doubt that the people of this country are still true to the principles of freedom in which our government was founded. This government of ours is a government of laws and not a government of men, and that is the keynote to it all.

“For the first time in the history of the human race that one great principle was vitalized on this continent. This is what we call a free government, a government of the people by themselves. A free government is the exact opposite of a despotism. In a despotism the despot, or the few who make up the despotism, do as they see fit. They take your life, they take your property, they interfere with your liberty at will.

“This is a government of men. Ours is a government of laws. Ours is a free government. That is to say, the people themselves meet and make their own laws. If there be so many of them that they cannot meet, then they choose their delegates to legislatures, and these legislatures make the laws of the people, being the voice of the people. And then, after you make your laws in that way, you elect men from among yourselves, just as you have elected this city government which is assembled here to-day.

“You elect men from among yourselves, not to do as they like, not to trample on you, not to club you, not to wrong you, not to put a hand on you, not to touch your property, not to touch your person, except in so far as you have allowed it, and only in the way in which you have allowed it in these laws which you have made. That, my friends, is the distinction between a government of laws and a government of men; and our government is a government of laws.

“There may be a few people in this country prone to laugh at the safeguards of liberty, of personal property, expressed in

the Constitution of the United States and of every State in the Union. But, my friends, there is no man in this country whom we cannot dispense with almost without missing him, not one. On the other hand, and in contrast, there is not one of these great safeguards of life, liberty, property and freedom written into the fundamental instruments of government in this country that we can dispense with and still preserve our liberty and our freedom; that is to say, still preserve our free government, and that again is to say, our government of laws as distinguished from a government of men.

“That is the one great thing to be taught all over this continent to-day — that this is a government of laws and not a government of men; that the men put into office are mere instruments in the hands of the law to carry out the law, and not to do a thing outside of the law. Men put in office are to abide by these safeguards, and not one of them can we dispense with, whereas we can dispense with any man, and, as I say, hardly miss him.

“You do well to come here to celebrate this day. The events of this day demonstrate not only that these principles still survive in the minds and the hearts of the people who have been born in this free country, but also that they are felt strongly in the hearts of those who have come to us from other countries seeking freedom, seeking government of laws and not of men. And, my friends, never let that die out in this country. A celebration like this recurring every year or every few years on the day of our independence will serve to keep these principles alive, and even make them grow larger and larger among us forever and ever as long as this country shall endure.”

The other features of the program at the City Hall as previously printed were duly carried out.

Other Features of the Celebration.

At 2.30 P. M. free athletic games were held in eighteen parks in different parts of the city under the direction of Mr. James E. Sullivan. At these competitions, gold, silver and bronze medals were awarded to the winners. These games attracted great throngs and were greatly enjoyed.

At 3 P. M. there was a relay race for a distance of two miles down Fifth avenue, from One Hundredth street to Sixtieth street, for the Greater New York championship. The prizes offered

were twenty silver cups for the winning team, presented by the *New York World*, and a large silk flag given by Mrs. Clarence Mackay.

At 9 p. m. there were firework displays in seventeen different parks.

The Committee on District Celebrations distributed 100,000 copies of the Declaration of Independence throughout the city.

In every part of the city there was a general festival feeling, and the young people especially indulged in all sorts of wholesome sports. Owing to municipal regulations, however, fireworks were not sold promiscuously, and the day was noticeable for the absence of the din of explosives which has characterized Independence days for so many years.

President Finley's Report to the Mayor.

On the evening before the Fourth, President Finley sent the following report to the Mayor:

“I am glad to be able to report that the response of the citizens to the appeal for funds is such as to make certain that your Independence Day Committee will be able to meet all the expenses of the celebration planned for Monday. That these expenses are far below the original estimate is due in part to the effective service of several members of the committee, Dr. Maxwell, Mrs. Winthrop, Dr. Stitt and others, in providing through the public school teachers for the organization and supervision of exercises in more than 200 districts, to the generous co-operation of the park commissioners of the several boroughs in providing music and conveniences for the game, to Commissioner Edwards for granting the use of the grand stand at Twenty-sixth street, and to the Board of Estimate and the Board of Aldermen in meeting by appropriation the expense of the fireworks. The activities of Gen. Wingate's committee in Brooklyn, anticipating those of this committee, should also be recognized as contributing much. I had hoped that the fund raised by general subscription would be large enough to permit the committee to reimburse the National Guard for its special expenditures and it is possible that this can be done in some measure as subscriptions are still coming and will still be solicited.

"I have satisfaction in advising you of the general and valuable co-operation of the press of the city and of the willing aid of the heads of the various city departments. I ask your special thanks for the chairmen and secretaries of the several sub-committees, General Roe, and Colonel Wingate, Messrs. Marx, Sullivan, Kunz, Lamb, Wiley, Gulick, Preston, Delafield, Ames, Hanmer and Ridder, and for James S. Cushman, treasurer, and William A. Johnston, secretary, who have given practically all of their time during the last two weeks and more to this public enterprise at great private sacrifice."

The Mayor's Appreciation.

On the 5th of July Mayor Gaynor was asked if he was pleased with the observance of the Fourth, and replied:

"Yes, indeed, I was pleased. The parade was fine. I served my time as a member of the National Guard, and I used to think that we looked fine when we turned out, but I never saw the National Guard look as fine as yesterday. The city may well be proud of the soldiers.

"A few persons did all they could to create dissension in the Guard about parading, but they failed. It is astonishing how mean some people can be. I want to express my sincere thanks to General Roe for calling out the National Guard. Most of the people seem to think that I called them out. General Roe came to me at the very beginning and entered into the matter in the most whole-souled way, as did also Colonel Appleton and other officers.

"I wish also to express the thanks of the mayor to Dr. Finley and his committee. Considering the short time, only three weeks, in which they had to do their work they did wonders. And the community subscribed all the money that was necessary.

"Last, but not least, I desire to express the mayor's thanks to Alderman Marx, who was the first person to speak to me about the celebration and who did as much as any other man to make it a success."

Chairman, Secretary and Treasurer Thanked.

At the meeting of the Independence Day Committee, held a few days later, the following resolution was unanimously adopted:

"*Resolved*, That the Independence Day Committee appointed by His Honor the Mayor of the city of New York hereby expresses

its very hearty appreciation of the valuable labors and sacrifices of its chairman, John H. Finley, Ph. D., LL. D., president of the College of the City of New York; its treasurer, Mr. James S. Cushman, and its secretary, Mr. William A. Johnston, in the efforts to establish this year the rational observance of the Fourth of July as a national holiday. To the prestiged name and wise counsel of the chairman and to the untiring devotion of the chairman, treasurer and secretary, have largely been due not only the cordial public support accorded to the committee but also the conspicuous success of the celebration, which has notably reduced the number of deaths and accidents, lessened the fire losses, and placed the observance of Independence Day upon a higher plane of patriotism than for many years past.

“Resolved, As a further evidence of the sentiments of this committee, that the secretary be requested to transmit to each of the above-named officers a copy of these resolutions, attested by the signature of the vice-chairman of the general committee and the signatures of as many chairmen of sub-committees as may conveniently be obtained.”

Results of a “Safe and Sane Fourth.”

Some of the headings in the newspapers on the 5th of July indicate the success of the new way of celebrating.

“Quiet Fourth a Blessing. Ear-splitting, Nerve-racing Rumpus is Quelled. Absence of Serious Accidents. The Sick in the Hospitals Enjoyed Day of Rest Instead of Usual One of Horror.”

“Safe and Sane Fourth of July a Great Success. Only One Quarter the Number of Accidents Reported in Former Years.”

“Quiet Fourth. From All Over the Country Come Reports of Greatly Reduced Fatalities and Accidents as Result of Sane Celebrations.”

“Safe and Sane, but Glorious. Fire-cracker Silent. Fourth Arrives in Unprecedented Quiet.”

“Great Fourth with No Noise or Fatalities. Safe and Sane Celebration Proves Immense Success. Few Accidents and Fires in City Due to Burning of Powder.”

“Noiseless Fourth in New York a Success.”

“Praise Showered upon Sane Fourth. Passing of Old Time Celebration Viewed with Satisfaction by Many Cities.”

A graphic statement of the beneficent effects of the abolition of explosives is contained in a despatch dated Chicago, September 2, 1910, as follows:

"The list of deaths and accidents due to the celebration of the Fourth of July shows a notable improvement this year, according to statistics compiled by the *Journal of the American Medical Association* which were made public here to-day. The decrease in accidents is most marked in those sections where restrictive legislation has been put in effect, the journal says:

"The summary shows that there were 2,923 persons injured this year, of whom 131 died. In 1903, 4,449 persons were injured, of whom 466 lost their lives. The grand total for eight years shows that 37,526 persons have been injured in Independence Day celebrations. Of these 1,662 died, 604 as the direct result of their injuries and 968 from tetanus following injuries. One hundred and twenty-two persons have lost their eyesight, 551 have lost the use of one eye, 432 have lost the use of arms, legs or hands, and 1,541 have been crippled by the loss of fingers.

"Massachusetts had this year only one-seventh of the injuries it had the previous year; Missouri, New Jersey, and New York reduced their injuries to one-third; Illinois and Ohio, to one-half; Pennsylvania reduced its injuries to two-thirds of last year's, while Indiana, Iowa and Wisconsin show larger totals than a year ago."

Large Fireworks Company Bankrupted.

Partly as a result of the decreased demand for fireworks due to the "safe and sane Fourth" movement, and partly as a result of claims for damages to person and property due to fireworks, the directors of the Pain Manufacturing Company of New York, one of the largest pyrotechnic concerns of the city, applied to the Supreme Court on March 15, 1911, to be adjudged bankrupt. According to the petition, the company had only \$10,000 of unincumbered assets to meet \$145,000 worth of claims. The application of the directors contains the following paragraph:

"The reason for the condition of the company is that the business conducted by the corporation does not begin until June and runs for several months. The main business is done around and immediately previous to the Fourth of July of each year. But for the last few years and since the movement for what is com-

monly known as the 'sane Fourth' has spread over the country, the volume of business of the company has steadily decreased, so that at the present moment, the amount of business the company is enabled to do is not sufficient to warrant its continuance in business under the belief that dissolution may possibly be averted.'

The loss of business, however, was not the only factor of the company's embarrassment. It was confronted with claims amounting to more than \$500,000 for accidents and fatalities due to fireworks. This is a strikingly eloquent fact, the moral of which is well pointed out in an editorial in the *New York Times* a day or two later, as follows:

"The agitation for a 'sane Fourth of July' has forced the largest of the fireworks corporations to apply for an order of dissolution. It is bankrupted by the decline of its business and by the suits for damages caused by accidental explosions of its products. The revolution of public sentiment against the use of fireworks has wrought calamity to the companies making them, but substantial benefit to the country.

"The cracking and sputtering of fireworks never expressed a patriotic emotion. The rejection of this manner of observing the nation's birthday shows that the day is being regarded with greater reverence and with real national spirit. In all the great cities the pageants which replace it, conducted by their various city departments and including millions of school children, have not only heightened the spectacular values of the parades, but have become centers of cultural and educational interest. It means much for a polyglot city like New York that the tens of thousands of children of foreigners should unite in this patriotic celebration. Their floats exhibiting the customs and historic events of the nations from which the United States drew its original colonists and its later increments of population are not an exotic feature. True, pageantry and the carnival spirit were imported from abroad, but they have become quickly domesticated with the peoples who have united here their various characters under one government and one flag. Symbolic representations of national events are more appropriate to the observance of Independence Day than the sound of revolvers and cannon crackers and the flare of rockets and pinwheels in 3,000-mile bands of meaningless and perilous flashes from coast to coast."

APPENDIX C.

PROCEEDINGS AT THE DEDICATION OF A TABLET TO MARK
THE SITE OF
FORT NUMBER ONE,
On Spuyten Duyvil Hill, New York City, November 5, 1910.

FORT NUMBER ONE.

Dedication of Tablet, November 5, 1910.

On Saturday afternoon, November 5, 1910, a tablet erected by Mr. William C. Muschenheim upon his house at Spuyten Duyvil Hill, in New York city, to mark the site of Fort Number One of the Revolution, was dedicated under the auspices of the American Scenic and Historic Preservation Society, assisted by the pupils of Public School No. 25 and Public School No. 33 of the Borough of the Bronx. (See plates 10 and 11.)

The military history of Spuyten Duyvil Hill may be said to date back to aboriginal times, for here history says was located the fortified Indian village of Nipnichsen. The Revolutionary history of the site is narrated in the address of Lieutenant Jenkins, which is given hereafter. The tablet was placed on the eastern side of Mr. Muschenheim's house, which stands upon the site of the old redoubt about 200 feet northwest of the Hudson monument on the crest of the hill.

The arrangements for the exercises were made by Mr. Muschenheim, Hon. Frank D. Wilsey, School Commissioner; Hon. John W. Davis, District Superintendent of Public Schools, and the Secretary of the Society. The ceremonies began at 2 p. m.

George Frederick Kunz, Ph. D., Sc. D., President of the Society, presided.

The exercises were opened by an invocation by the Rev. D. Baines Griffiths of Spuyten Duyvil.

Address by Dr. George Frederick Kunz.

The opening address was delivered by Dr. Kunz, as follows:

“*Ladies and Gentlemen* — It was my privilege, as president of the American Scenic and Historic Preservation Society, to accept the kind invitation of our host, Mr. William C. Muschenheim, to be present at the ceremonies of the unveiling of this tablet and to give an official and authenticate account of the proceedings. The

description of these ceremonies will thus appear in the ensuing year in the report of our Society, published by the State of New York, as prescribed by law.

"This tablet, designed to commemorate an important defense point during the Revolution, is placed upon the site of the first of a chain of forts, occupying the most important strategic points from the Hudson river eastward to University Heights, and erected as a line of defense for the then distant city of New York.

"To-day's sunlight is most welcome after the long storm which has passed over us; but this storm was merely a spring zephyr compared with the storm and stress through which the founders of our great republic passed in the dark days of the Revolution, when they were exposed to all the perils of war and were at the same time deprived of most of the necessities of life. They fought for the welfare of a land containing less than half the population of New York State to-day. How much more, therefore, should we strive to safeguard a nation which has outgrown the wildest dreams of Washington, Franklin, and the other Revolutionary patriots.

"Whether Spuyten Duyvil and the adjoining region was selected by certain men, within the last half-century, for their homes because the natural beauties and the historical associations of this region seemed to provide favorable conditions for the growth of high ideals, or whether one after another of these men was endued with the spirit of philanthropy and zeal for the public welfare by the mere contemplation of that greatest of all State monuments, the Palisades, rising from the shore of the majestic Hudson, it matters little. Among these true philanthropists, animated by public spiritedness and noble energy, I name with pride William E. Dodge, George W. Perkins, James Douglas, and William C. Muschenheim. Of these Mr. Dodge and Mr. Douglas bought, over twenty years ago, a mile and a half of the river front directly opposite, in order to preserve this particular tract in all its wonderful natural beauty. By the efforts of Mr. Perkins, who found a fulcrum in his public-spiritedness and a lever in his combination of zeal, earnestness and untiring energy, the Palisades as a whole have been saved from the dangers incident to varied ownership. To the attainment of this end Mr. Perkins freely devoted both time and money, and the first success was due to the assistance of friends whose interest he had aroused, and to the hearty co-operation of the states of New York and New Jersey. Thus it is that we now have this great natural park, which has

recently been extended into the Highlands by the munificent gifts of Mrs. Harriman and nearly a score of others.

“It is to Mr. Muschenheim’s inspiration, however, that we are indebted for the existence of the Fort Tryon tablet and the Hudson Monument. Thus both Spuyten Duyvil and Riverdale have contributed their full share toward the preservation of our great State park and its conservation and care throughout all time.

“As we look, with a curious and antiquarian interest, upon the stone hatchets, the arrow-points, the war canoes, and the wigwams of those who attempted to fight the white man with his gun and his ships, just so some day those who come after us will look upon our great forts, our rapid-fire guns, our dreadnoughts, and all the other implements of war which, at the present time, impress us as mighty and unerring engines of destruction. Doubtless when this time comes war will be looked upon as impossible, owing to the severity with which it could be waged and the total destruction it would compass. The time is approaching when international peace tribunals will be established for the protection of the smaller and weaker members of the family of nations — the little sisters and brothers — against the aggressions of any great military or naval power which may seek to oppress a weak and defenceless land. It might be thought that the enforcement of the decrees of such a tribunal could entail unpleasant consequences, but if the offending nation were made to realize that every man’s hand would be against it the evil purpose would probably be abandoned.

“Indeed, this idea is not so modern as it is claimed to be, for the principle is well illustrated by a usage of certain Indian tribes. A few years since, while visiting the reservation of the Cattaraugus Indians in company with Mrs. Harriet Maxwell Converse, who labored all her life for these people, we inquired for a certain well-known Indian. We were told that he was not well. When we inquired what ailed him we learned that some friends had reasoned with him the evening before. We were further confidentially informed that it was an Indian custom, when an Indian made himself obnoxious and overbearing, or encroached upon the rights of any other Indian, for two or three of his tribe to call upon him and argue with him. If that failed, they pounded him. If he proved strong enough to withstand the assault, six or eight men would call upon him. Frequently it required some twenty or thirty persons to convince him that he was wrong, and sometimes, alas!

he remained so obstinate that he never recovered from the convincing process, but passed away during one of these strenuous reasoning periods.

“If the era of universal peace has not yet dawned, we are gradually emerging from an age of strikes, with its lawlessness, its stone-throwing, its pistol-play, etc., which often resulted in bloodshed and death, into an era of arbitration, with conference committees at whose sessions a corporation counsel with the salary of the President of the United States, may be arrayed against a labor leader who receives more than did our first President, George Washington.

“The story of the placing of this tablet will be related by the Hon. Frank D. Wilsey, our school commissioner, who will tell us the educational value of historical tablets, and will give us the history of the chain of forts. The strategic value of these defences and much valuable historical information will be learned from the address of Lieut. Stephen Jenkins, of the United States Navy.

“Let me say that the best public investments are the erection of just such tablets as these, for they give us history; they inspire the young to emulate the deeds and virtues of their ancestors; they give us a knowledge of the past which becomes an inspiration for the future, and they thus do much for the development of good citizenship, serving to make us all better men and women, and rendering us the readier to help our country in the event of foreign wars or interior dissensions.”

Historical Address by Lieut. Stephen Jenkins, U. S. N.

Lieut. Stephen Jenkins, of Mount Vernon, N. Y., formerly of the United States Navy, then delivered the historical address, as follows:

“*Mr. Chairman, Ladies and Gentlemen* — With the possible exception of the Mohawk Valley — the Tryon county of colonial days — and the Lake Champlain region, there is no section of our State which possesses such romantic legendary and historic interest as the ancient county of Westchester; and no part of it is more interesting than this section of Kingsbridge. Wherever we go — wherever we look, we find something of historic interest. Below us, at the western entrance of Spuyten Duyvil creek, there was the first conflict on these shores between the European and the Aborigine, when the Half Moon of Henry Hudson anchored on

its way down the river after its voyage of discovery and exploration and fired its falcons at the curious Indians who approached it in their canoes. Some of them were killed, and the animosity of the Indian was aroused against the incoming white — an animosity that was to produce the wars, the massacres and the tragedies of that first half century of settlement.

“ Upon this bold promontory a tribe of the Manhattans had their village and stronghold, which they called Nipnichsen; and if we examine the land below us we shall find the heaps of oyster shells which are reminders of the Indian's love for the succulent bivalve and of his feasts. On the south and east is the Indian stream Muscota — the Spuyten Duyvil creek of the present — the origin of whose name is one of those historical mysteries for whose solution so many delightful theories have been advanced. ‘ Spitting Devil,’ ‘ Spouting Devil,’ ‘ Spiking Devil,’ ‘ Spikendevil ’ are a few of the ways in which the name occurs in old papers, maps, and documents. It is not my intention to advance any theory of my own to account for the name — though I have one.

“ Nature, having provided the magnificent island of Manhattan, also furnished a way to get to it from the mainland by means of the ford, or ‘ wading-place ’ of the old documents, which made the island accessible at low tide. The Indians called this section Shorrackkappock — ‘ the sitting down place,’ according to Bolton. May it not have been so called from the fact that travelers had to sit down and wait for low tide in order to cross? The ancient ford is about where the present Broadway crosses the stream. John Archer, the manor-lord of Fordham Manor, established his village near the ‘ wading place,’ and from ‘ ford ’ and the old Anglo-Saxon ‘ ham ’ — house, or houses — we get the name of Fordham.

“ The town of New Harlem established a ferry to the mainland at Morrisania early in its career; but, though the approach to the ancient ‘ wading place ’ was boarded up and travelers were forbidden to use it, yet they found it more convenient and economical and continued to use it despite the restrictions of the Harlem authorities. At last, Harlem made a virtue of necessity and, since the mountain would not come to Mahomet, the prophet had to go to the mountain — the ferryman, Johannes Verveelen, moved his clumsy boat and primitive inn to the ford, in attempting to pass through which *en spijt den duyvel*, the brave sounder of brass, the worthy trumpeter, Anthony Van Corlaer, had lost his life in 1664, when on his all important errand to summon the Dutch farmers

of the mainland to the defence of New Amsterdam — this, according to the veracious chronicler, Diedrich Knickerbocker. Then came the first Frederick Phillipse, ‘the Dutch millionaire,’ as the English called him; and in 1693 he received his patent for the manor of Philipsburgh and erected a bridge, ‘the King’s bridge’ at the ford. In 1713, it was moved to its present site. Unless something is done to preserve it, one of our oldest relics will soon disappear, as the creek is filled in to the western side of its abutments, and I understand it is to be filled in to the east also. This will be a great pity; for besides its connections with colonial days, it was important during the Revolution. Over it Washington’s defeated and disheartened army retreated in September, 1776, and over it again, in November, 1783, Washington, Governor George Clinton and a guard of honor crossed with their faces to the southward to resume once more the possession of the city of New York.

“Another personage in whom we are interested is the first white owner of all this land, *de Jonkheer Adriaen Van Der Donck*, the first lawyer who came to New Amsterdam. After his death his property was inherited by his widow, Mary Doughty, who subsequently married Hugh O’Neale, of Patuxent, Maryland, and together they deeded the land to her brother, Elias Doughty, who sold it during the time of Governor Nicolls to several purchasers, this land upon which we are standing being a part of the Betts and Tibbetts tract. Tibbetts give his name to Tibbett’s brook — the Mosholu of the Indians — and also to this promontory, which has been called at various times, Shorrack-kappock, Tibbetts’ Neck, Berrien’s Neck and Spuyten Duyvil Neck.

“Phillipse, in accordance with the patent for his manor, maintained a tavern on the island of Papparinemo, on the Westchester side of the ford. Cooper, in his novel of ‘Satanstoe,’ has his hero, Corney Littlepage, stop at the tavern on several occasions and introduces the landlady as Mrs. Lighte; but the tavern was also known as ‘Cock’s Tavern.’ It is believed that the old stone building is incorporated in the mansion erected by General Macomb, long occupied by the late Mr. Godwin. During its occupancy by Mrs. Macomb, Edgar Allan Poe was a frequent visitor, as the cottage in which he, his wife, and his mother-in-law lived is only about a mile away.

“Before leaving the vicinity of the bridge, I may mention the attempts of General Macomb and his son to convert the Harlem river into a mill-pond and the erection of a tide mill west of the

bridge. These attempts met with failure, and the old mill became in time a public nuisance and danger; but it was at last blown down in a heavy gale and removed itself out of the way, much to the satisfaction of the inhabitants of the neighborhood.

“Before the year 1798, when Coles constructed the first Third avenue, or Harlem, bridge and the post-road known to-day in the Borough of the Bronx as the Boston road, all travelers passing to or from the island of Manhattan and the mainland were obliged to cross Spuyten Duyvil creek, either by ford, ferry or bridge. Here began the great Boston road, dating from 1677 and winding up the opposite hill across the site of the new Jerome Park reservoir on its way to Williamsbridge and Eastchester. In 1703 the provincial assembly established by law the Albany post-road from Kingsbridge up the east side of the Hudson to the ferry at Crawlew, opposite the city of Albany. Crawlew is the ancient Greenbush, the present Rensselaer. A hundred years later the Highland Turnpike Company straightened the road out, widened it and erected toll-gates. The first stages traveled over the road in 1786.

“Looking across the valley to the east, we see Tetard’s hill, where the Huguenot dominie after whom it was named purchased a farm and established a school previous to the Revolution. He became a chaplain in the American army and accompanied his former neighbor, Richard Montgomery, in the invasion of Canada. After the war he became a professor in the college, formerly called King’s, but reopened as Columbia. Just north of Tetard’s hill was the farm of Captain Richard Montgomery, and north of him was the Van Cortlandt property, now within the park of that name. At the foot of Tetard’s hill still stands the Farmer’s bridge, erected in 1759, principally by the efforts of Benjamin Palmer and Jacob Dyckman as a free bridge in opposition to the toll bridge of Colonel Phillipse. On the Westchester side was the village of Fordham, occupied during the war by Emmerick and his chasseurs, who made a hospital of the old Dutch church at Fordham and who used the houses, fences and outbuildings of the village for fuel.

“In the year 1700 Jacobus Van Cortlandt bought from his father-in-law, Frederick Phillipse, some land at a bend of Tibbetts’ Brook called George’s Point. Here he erected his house, dammed the stream and built saw and grist mills. The dam is still there, the mills were there less than ten years ago, and the foundations of his house, and some old pottery were found about seven years

ago when grading north of the dam. It was in 1748 that Frederick Van Cortlandt, son of Jacobus, built in what is now Van Cortlandt Park the mansion often mis-called 'the manor-house.' The real manor house belonged to Stephanus, the brother of Jacobus, and is near the mouth of the Croton river. The house in Van Cortlandt Park has entertained Washington, Rochambeau and other distinguished guests. North of the house is Vault Hill, the ancient burial-place of the Van Cortlandts, where the archives of the city of New York were hidden when the city was evacuated by the Americans in 1776, and where, in 1781, Washington kept his camp-fires burning to deceive Clinton, while the allied armies were scurrying across the Jerseys on their way to Philadelphia and Yorktown. To the west of Van Cortlandt Park and of Broadway lies the upper portion of this promontory, still showing, despite improvements, the rough, hummocky quality of the ground. It was in these rough places that the surviving members of Nimham's band of Stockbridge Indians sought refuge after their crushing defeat by Simcoe, Tarleton and Emmerick in the northeast corner of Van Cortlandt Park, at the spot known as 'Indian Field.' On the grounds of Seton Hospital is a deep gully, which is known specifically as 'Indian Cave.' Tradition says two of the Indians hid here from their pursuers. A tree in the same neighborhood is pointed out as the tree from which a Cowboy was hanged. As this section was in the possession of the British throughout the war, I am afraid that tradition errs, and that the fruit once borne by the tree was *Skinner* and *not* Cowboy.

"Such briefly, is a sketch of the associations that cluster around this vicinity. Let us turn to the time and circumstances which bring us together on this spot to-day.

"The importance of fortifying the pass at Kingsbridge was recognized at an early period, and immediately after the news arrived of that fight at Lexington and Concord, without any formal order from the Committee of One Hundred, numbers of men were employed in dragging cannon from the city to this point. Though the Provincial Congress appointed a committee to report upon a plan of entrenchments, nothing was done. On May 25, 1775, however, the Continental Congress resolved:

"First, that a post be immediately taken and fortified at or near King's-Bridge, in the Colony of New York, and that the ground be chosen with a particular view to prevent communication between the city of New York and the country from being interrupted by land;

“Secondly, that the militia of New York be armed and trained, and in constant readiness to act at a moment's warning; and that a number of men be immediately embodied * * * to prevent any attempts that may be made to gain possession of the city, and to interrupt its intercourse with the country.’

“These resolutions, with instructions to keep them as secret as possible, reached the Provincial Congress at New York on the 29th of May; and a committee was accordingly appointed ‘to view the ground at or near Kingsbridge, and report to this Congress whether the ground near Kingsbridge will admit of making a fortification there, that will be tenable.’ The committee consisted of Captain Richard Montgomery, Henry Glenn, Robert Yates and Colonels James Van Cortlandt and James Holmes, these last two of Westchester county, both of whom later became loyalists.

“The cannon of which mention has already been made, were about two hundred and fifty in number and were of all sizes, shapes, qualities and materials; brass, bronze and iron; good, bad and indifferent. About fifty were stored at John Williams’ (Williamsbridge), a hundred at Valentine’s Hill, in Yonkers, and the remainder at Kingsbridge and the northern end of Manhattan, and all were left unguarded and without protection, even from the weather. On the 17th of January, 1776, most of them were found spiked, while others were found to be choked with stones, but all were in an unserviceable condition. Suspicion fell upon the loyalists of Westchester county, and the deed was brought home to two loyalists of Mamaroneck, the purchase of a quantity of rat-tail files leading to their conviction and imprisonment. The guns were put in repair at an expense of twenty shillings each and were afterwards mounted on the American fortifications.

“The committee of which Montgomery was the chairman reported June 3, 1775, as to the fortifications at Kingsbridge. They recommended that a post of three hundred men be established near Hyatt’s tavern, Manhattan, and selected sites on Tetard’s Hill to the east and on Tibbett’s Hill to the west of the bridge for the establishment of redoubts when the troops had been properly organized, so that the work could be done by them. Major-General Charles Lee was ordered to the command of New York and its environs, and work was begun upon the suggested redoubts; but it was not until Washington arrived in person after driving Howe out of Boston that any great progress was made

upon the fortifications. Early in the month of June, 1776, he visited the neighborhood of Kingsbridge and carefully inspected the ground. Realizing the importance of the place as the only means of land communication with the rest of the country, he selected seven sites for redoubts, two of which, the Cock Hill fort on Inwood Hill, overlooking the mouth of Suyten Duyvil creek, and a fort on Marble Hill, afterwards called by the British Fort Prince Charles, were on the island of Manhattan; the remaining five were on the mainland. He immediately set two Pennsylvania regiments at work upon the forts and also various bodies of militia as they reported for duty. In orders of July 2, 1776, General Mifflin was placed in direct command of the Kingsbridge neighborhood, with instructions to complete the work as rapidly as possible, so that work was carried on night and day. The landing place of the British was, of course, a matter of conjecture; but Mifflin believed that Howe would land his troops at Yonkers and construct a line of strong entrenchments from the Hudson to the Harlem, thus shutting the Americans within the city. Mifflin therefore pushed the work as rapidly as possible.

"These posts, which in October fell into the hands of the British and which were increased to eight, were situated as follows: (I use the British nomenclature.)

"Forts numbers 1, 2 and 3 were situated on this neck, number 1 being built so as to command the Hudson and the mouth of Spuyten Duyvil creek. It was a square, a stone redoubt and was utilized as the foundation of the house build upon this site by Mr. Cameron. Number 2 was a circular redoubt to the east of number 1, about the middle of the neck, and was called Fort Swartout by the Americans in honor of Colonel Abraham Swartout, whose regiment built it; and number 3 was on the east side of the neck, commanding the bridge. A small battery was also built about where the Spuyten Duyvil station is now located. This battery, with the Cock Hill fort on Manhattan, was to prevent the enemy from entering the creek in boats. Upon the Sauthier map made for Sir William Howe, this hill is miscalled Tetard's Hill, and Fort number 2 is miscalled "Fort Independence."

"The real Fort Independence of the Americans which was the largest and most important of all the redoubts, was situated on the Montgomery farm, on the slope of Tetard's Hill, and commanded the Albany and the Boston post-roads. Its ramparts furnished the foundations for the house built by the late William O.

Giles; and when the cellar was dug there were unearthed eleven cannon, seven cannon balls, calthorns and other military implements. Number 4 was a square redoubt measuring about seventy feet on each side, located on the old Tetard farm, due south of Fort Independence and commanding the Farmer's bridge. Its remains can be seen at the lower end of the Jerome Park reservoir, a few hundred feet east of Sedgwick avenue.*

"Numbers 5, 6, 7 and 8 were British forts strung along the bank of the Harlem; they were small in size and were constructed previous to the attack on Fort Washington in November, 1776. Number 8 was the most important of these as it controlled the pontoon bridge over which the enemy drove the products of his raids, and in addition, it was the principal protection for De Lancey's corps of Loyalists against whom the patriots displayed an apparently implacable hatred. The site of the fort is marked by a boulder on the grounds of the New York University. It was the last of the British redoubts to be evacuated and demolished.

"As if to confirm Mifflin's idea of the landing place of the British, on the 12th of July, the *Rose* and *Phoenix*, British vessels of war, with several tenders sailed up the Hudson, and, being unaware of the American fortifications on Cock Hill and at the mouth of the creek, anchored off the entrance to the creek. Their ignorance was soon dissipated, for the batteries opened on them and did great execution. The vessels then proceeded up the river as far as Fort Montgomery in the Highlands. Their presence in the river alarmed the Americans and more troops were sent to Kingsbridge. On the 13th of August, Major-General Heath was appointed to the Highland command, extending to the Harlem river. Upon the 17th, the British vessels were anchored off Mt. Saint Vincent (then called the Yonkers), and Generals Heath and George Clinton witnessed from their heights a very gallant attempt by the Americans to destroy the two vessels and their tenders by means

* The ground within the enclosure of Fort No. 4 was carefully excavated in the summer of 1910 by Messrs. Reginald P. Bolton, Edward Hagaman Hall and W. L. Calver, who found the remains of brick fireplaces, and many military relics, including regimental buttons of privates of the 13th Pennsylvania Regiment and the following British Infantry Regiments: 4th, 10th, 17th, 26th, 28th, 44th, 52d, 54th, 57th, 64th, and 71st Highlander, and also an officer's button of the 17th British. Prior to the publication of the British Headquarters map by B. F. Stevens & Co. of London, in 1900, it was supposed that Fort Independence was Fort No. 4. But a comparison of the headquarters map with the drawing in Von Krafft's Journal and Von Krafft's reference to the forts has convinced Messrs. Hall, Bolton and Calver that Independence and No. 4 were different forts.

of fire-ships. One of the tenders was destroyed, but the rest of the vessels dropped down the stream the next morning, easily passing through the obstructions in the river between Forts Washington and Lee, much to the chagrin of Washington and his engineers. A few days later Mons. Martin, a French engineer, was assigned by Washington to complete the work in the neighborhood, and Clinton's brigade was ordered into camp, the regiment of Colonel Swartout occupying this neck and building these redoubts, and a pontoon bridge was thrown across the creek between King's bridge and the Hudson. A similar bridge was constructed by the British at the same place later.

"Then followed the battle of Long Island on August 27, 1776, the evacuation of the city and the battle of Harlem Heights, and by the end of September, with the exception of 5,000 troops at Fort Washington and its outworks, the army was gathered along the Harlem from Kingsbridge to the Sound, waiting for Howe's next move. On the eve of the Westchester campaign, it may not be amiss to quote from Dr. Galloway of the British army, who thus sums up conditions in the two armies:

"The British army was commanded by able and experienced officers; the rebel, by men destitute of military skill or experience and, for the most part, taken from the mechanic arts or the plough. The first were possessed of the best appointments, and of more than they could use; and the other, of the worst, and of less than they needed. * * * And the one were veteran troops, carrying victory and conquest wheresoever they were led; the other were new raised and undisciplined, a panic-struck and defeated enemy, whenever attacked.'

"Yet, the campaign that ensued in Westchester county disproved Napoleon's statement that God is on the side of the biggest battalions, unless we consider the sagacious American commander-in-chief as the equivalent of many men.

"On the 12th of October, Howe landed at Throgg's Neck and the withdrawal of the American troops from Kingsbridge began, all the redoubts being dismantled and deserted by the 21st of October. They were reoccupied and strengthened by the enemy between November 7th and 15th. The British also had a very important outpost at Upper Cortlandt's which stood on the site of the Warren Sage house at Mosholu. From here throughout the war many marauding expeditions started into the neutral ground. In January, 1777, Washington ordered Heath to attempt the cap-

ture of Fort Independence and the other posts. General Lincoln captured Upper Cortlandt's, and there is no doubt that numbers 1, 2 and 3 were temporarily abandoned by the British, for on the 18th, the Americans lowered a gun down Tibbett's hill in order to get better range of the Hessian outposts on Manhattan. With the withdrawal of the Americans the forts were reoccupied. In the summer of 1777 Lord Cathcart commanded in this vicinity, and in November, 1778, the three forts on this neck had a garrison of 110 officers and men.

"To be stationed here was probably a not altogether unpleasant job, for there was considerable social life for the officers. The old Tibbett's house stood on the east side of the neck in a grove of locust trees. The Tibbetts of the Revolutionary period were Loyalists, and, in consequence, lost their property by confiscation. It was bought by Samuel Berrien, who had married Dorcas, a daughter of George Tibbett; another daughter was the wife of the celebrated James DeLancey of the Westchester Light Horse. Though the Berriens were good Whigs, their house, which still stands at the end of the neck, was a resort of Loyalists as well as that of Tibbett, owing to the protection afforded by the three forts on the neck above.

"In 1779 the seat of war was changed to the South, and, in consequence, many of the troops in this neighborhood, especially the partisan corps, were withdrawn for active service against Marion, Sumter, Gates and Greene. By the middle of September of that year all the redoubts, with the exception of number 8, were dismantled and as thoroughly demolished as could be and the guns and stores removed to the fortifications on Manhattan, which were further strengthened on account of this abandonment of the outposts. None of these redoubts was occupied by either side again, except Fort Independence, which was occupied for a few days by General Lincoln and the Marquis de Chastellux during the grand reconnaissance of the allied armies in the summer of 1781, but it was not refortified.

"In conclusion let me say that I do not believe that that nation is blessed which has no history. When I studied international law, I learned a definition which I have never been able to accept. It was 'Peace is the normal condition of mankind.' Everything that is possessed of life, whether in the vegetable or the animal kingdom, gives the lie to that definition; and the histories of all nations still further emphasize the fact that war, horrible as it is,

is the normal condition of mankind. So long as man is constituted as he is, he will feel pride and glory in the wars of his country, especially when those wars have been undertaken in great and righteous causes. Our history is short compared with that of other nations of the world; it should be, therefore, all the easier to learn. A knowledge of history inculcates patriotism, and that is something that is absolutely necessary in this land of ours with its heterogeneous population, if a free government and free institutions are to endure. Let this good work of marking and preserving historic sites go on. Every one who gazes upon this tablet about to be unveiled will learn something more than he knew before and will feel a thrill of pride in the stubborn resistance of those patriots of the Revolution who through eight years of war fought on with the determination to be free. All of our patriotic societies are doing most excellent work; but the society under whose auspices this celebration is held, the Scenic and Historic Preservation Society, is entitled to still greater credit; for it not only assists in marking historic spots, but also tries to secure to us and our posterity the preservation of those natural beauties which surround us, and to prevent their demolition or defilement by those whose cupidity is greater than their sense of the fitness of things, or whose ideas of utility mean simply destruction. All honor, too, to the men whose liberality sustains and helps this and similar societies to go on with their good work; and especial honor is due this afternoon to our host, Mr. William C. Muschenheim, to whose generosity we are indebted for the tablet about to be unveiled."

Address by Hon. Frank D. Wilsey.

The Hon. Frank D. Wilsey spoke as follows:

"I am here in a dual capacity to-day: First, as representing a public-spirited citizen, who is so modest that he does not wish to appear on the program; secondly, as a member of the Board of Education.

"Mr. Muschenheim has for many years taken a deep and abiding interest in local history. There is no place more fraught with Revolutionary memories than Spuyten Duyvil: and now that Mr. Muschenheim is one of us here, he has interested the American Scenic and Historic Preservation Society in the work of Redoubt No. 1. As a member of the Board of Education, which body in the inculcating of patriotic feelings in the minds of

700,000 pupils committed to its care strongly favors the study of local history, I wish to thank Mr. Muschenheim and the American Scenic and Historic Preservation Society for seconding the Board of Education's efforts. The Bronx has the honor of having a uniformed corps in one of its schools, this corps being armed and equipped by the Board of Education. I refer to Dr. Young's school in One Hundred and Forty-ninth street. Mr. Hugo Newman, principal of Public School No. 33, has also a military body in his school, the field music of which is with us to-day, showing that our boys have a living interest in the work that is here going on.

"To-day our thoughts bridge the chasm of the centuries and revert to the heroes who lived their lives amid the scenes with which we are familiar — the beautiful Hudson on whose bosom the navies of the whole world could ride, the Palisades smiling in the sunshine of a summer morning or frowning in the storms of winter, and all the natural beauties of this locality, so familiar to us were part of the setting for Fort No. 1. A witty Frenchman once said that there was only one absolutely essential element in the love of a man for a woman and that was propinquity — with much more truth may we say that the most effective way to develop interest in great historic events is to get near to the place where these events transpired.

"It has been said that the typical American is utterly lacking in reverence. Mark Twain's account of his emotion when he stood at the tomb of Adam is taken as representative of the mental attitude which makes sport of the memorials of antiquity. But this is not the spirit in which *we* find ourselves — and by *we* I mean Americans in general — when we stand on a spot hallowed by the blood of those who died that we might live in a free and glorious land, and it is just this matter of *place*, this association with the region, a particular locality — *a spot*, that is perhaps, the most potent factor in the strengthening of patriotic sentiment and loyal enthusiasm in those in whom, otherwise, the 'deeds of old' would be only history — a story.

"What American boy does not thrill as he stands on Bunker Hill — at the grave of Myles Standish in Duxbury — at Ticonderoga — at Fort Moultrie — on the field of Gettysburg? Or, to turn from the scene of war and battle, and take more homely examples of the interest revived by the localizing of what would else be a mere tale, do we not know how the formerly uninteresting

became of absorbing interest when we entered the little Poe cottage — when we looked up at the cliffs scaled by Montgomery at Quebec — when we stepped into the historic rooms at Fraunces Tavern — when we noted the said remnants of the Hamilton trees — or even when (not so very long ago) we stood by the last shoot from the root of what once was the pear tree planted by Peter Stuyvesant. I might pursue this line of thought till I wearied you, and speak of the joy the classical student would experience were he standing on the spot whence Abraham journeyed when he ‘went West’ to find the promised land — where Darius stood while his bridge was building across the Hellespont — or where rested the mummy of Rameses the Great. Yet to all these places he might go.

“Were there no other reasons for marking by appropriate memorials the spots where history was made, this one would be sufficient for me, speaking, as I do, as a member of that board which deals with the boys and girls growing up to take our places in the development and government of this beloved land of ours, that every one of these memorials will do its part in making intelligent patriots of the rising generation.

“It is inspiring to see a group of 500 or more children — 90 per cent. of whom are foreign born — salute the flag: and it is the function of these memorials to foster and extend that budding patriotism, to make those who ‘pledge allegiance to *my* flag’ grow in love for *my* nation, *my* country, *my* land, the land *I* love, the land *I* will live for, and if need be, die for.

“So, whether the spot be at Bowling Green, or Washington Heights, in Pelham Bay Park, or at Spuyten Duyvil — whether it commemorate events, civic or military, literary or artistic, humble or exalted, local or national, let us, by all means, and in a worthy manner, place such memorial as shall make it forever impossible to let the memory of the ‘days of old’ — are we not ‘the ancients?’ — fade from the minds of posterity.”

Unveiling of the Tablet.

The tablet was then unveiled by Misses Dorothy Radley (granddaughter of Mr. Muschenheim), Hope Johnson, Helena Cox and Jane McKelvey of Spuyten Duyvil, and a salute was given by the drum corps of Public School No. 33 of the Bronx (Mr. Hugo Newman, principal), and by the uniformed military battalion of

Public School No. 25 of the Bronx (Dr. Frank Young, principal), under command of Lieutenant Jenkins. There were about 700 boys in these two organizations and they were a picturesque and interesting feature of the gathering. While the assembly stood, all joined in singing the Star Spangled Banner, led by Miss Marie W. Kroger and accompanied by the orchestra provided by Mr. Muschenheim.

The inscription on the tablet reads as follows:

The foundation of this house is a part of
FORT NUMBER ONE
Which was erected by the Continental Army
in August, 1776;
Occupied by the British November 7, 1776;
Dismantled in 1779,

And remained "debatable ground" until the
close of the American Revolution. One of a
chain of eight forts north and east of Spuyten
Duyvil creek and Harlem river, extending from
this point to the site of New York University.

Erected by Wm. C. Muschenheim, 1910.

The tablet was designed by Mr. Charles R. Lamb and was made by the firm of J. & R. Lamb.

The Rev. Francis X. Kelly, of Kingsbridge, pronounced the benediction.

After the exercises refreshments were served by Mr. Muschenheim to the school children and to the principal guests.

APPENDIX D.

CHANCELLOR ROBERT R. LIVINGSTON OF NEW YORK
AND HIS FAMILY.

By JOSEPH LIVINGSTON DELAFIELD.

(All rights reserved by the Author.)

CHANCELLOR ROBERT R. LIVINGSTON OF NEW YORK AND HIS FAMILY.

By JOSEPH LIVINGSTON DELAFIELD.

(All rights reserved by the Author, January, 1910.)

The first Chancellor of the Empire State, Robert R. Livingston, lived in stirring times. By his marked ability and untiring energy he made himself so much a part and parcel of the great events of his day and generation, that no history of the colony and State of New York, or of the nation, is complete without frequent reference to his work. He was born when the spirit of rivalry between the colonies was at his height; he entered into active public life when the horizon was dark with the war clouds of the Revolution and he passed away in the midst of the turmoil of the second war with Great Britain.

He was one of a large and influential family whose members, through several generations in America, loyally supported each other, becoming a power in the colonies and in the nation. His father, Robert R. Livingston, a Judge of the Supreme Court of the Colony of New York, was an ardent patriot. His mother, Margaret, was the only child of Col. Henry Beekman, of Rhinebeck, who survived infancy. Judge Livingston was the only child of Robert Livingston, the founder of the Clermont branch of that family, who was the second son of Robert Livingston, the first proprietor of the Manor of Livingston and the first of the name in America. The manor lands extended along the easterly bank of the Hudson river for several miles and lay opposite the Catskill mountains. At the death of the first proprietor they passed with all their manorial rights to his eldest son, Philip Livingston, excepting the most southerly part fronting on the river. That part the patentee gave to his second son in recognition of his bravery and shrewdness in discovering and frustrating a plot formed by a band of discontented negroes for the murder of the

Livingston family and the destruction of the manor house. On this section of the manor the new owner built for himself a large stone residence, pleasantly situated on the bank of the river and commanding a beautiful view of the mountains beyond, and named his property Claremont, which was later shortened to Clermont. He had been educated in England, where he was admitted a barrister, and then returned to practice law in his native land. A profound scholar, thoroughly versed in the classics and modern languages, he kept adding continually to his store of knowledge, and learned to read and write the German language after he had attained the venerable age of eighty years. When the first news of hostilities arrived at Clermont from Boston it gave an exaggerated account of the battle of Breed's Hill. This so aggravated the elder Livingston, who was then an octogenarian, that he expressed a wish to go to the front; and in reply to his son, the Judge, who asked him what he believed he could do there, the old man said: "If I stopped a bullet I might save a better man."

The future Chancellor was born in New York city on November 27, 1746, and his boyhood was chiefly spent at his father's house in that city, where, while young Livingston was yet at college, his father, who had been for many years in the active practice of the law, was appointed on the Supreme Court bench, which position he held until his death. At an early age the young man came in contact with the leading spirits of those eventful years, who frequented the home of the judge, recognizing in the latter the courage, ability and learning which were largely instrumental in shaping the great future of the bench and bar of New York. Able friends the Judge had everywhere and in all walks of life, and his amiable disposition, which prompted one of the leaders of an opposing faction to say to him in parting: "I do not believe that you have an enemy in the world," laid the foundation of a wide and helpful acquaintance for his children with all parties in society and in the State. Judge Livingston, like his father, did not hesitate to affix his signature to petitions and remonstrances against the treatment accorded by Great Britain to her colonies, and, in consequence, both were marked men who would have lost their property if not their lives, had England been successful in opposing the struggle for independence.

With such surroundings and in the company of such men Robert R. Livingston, Jr., grew to manhood. He was graduated from King's College, now Columbia University, in the city of New York, in his eighteenth year. The Judge, writing to his father at Clermont, attributes to the college student "talents which must not be buried on a farm." And this ability was recognized elsewhere, for William Livingston, afterwards the war Governor of New Jersey, and William Smith, the colonial Justice, sought and obtained the young graduate as a student at law in their offices. Upon completing his professional studies he was for a short time in partnership with John Jay. During these years, just preceding the Revolution, his father and Philip Livingston, Jr., in connection with many of the leading men of the day, were strenuously opposing the Stamp Act and advocating, through the Sons of Liberty, the prerogatives of the people. The young lawyer was quick to identify himself with the party opposed to Great Britain and helped to draw the lines between the powerful elements in the Province of New York known later as the Tory party and the then growing Whig party.

The close friendship which existed between Judge Livingston's family and the Alexander and Stevens families of New Jersey was the more firmly knit by the future Chancellor taking to wife in New York city on September 9, 1770, Mary Stevens, the only daughter of Hon. John Stevens, later of Castle Point, New Jersey, who had been born at her father's early residence in New Jersey in 1752. For the next few years he pushed forward steadily, not only in his profession, but also in the political life of the times, obtaining an appointment in 1773 under the crown as Recorder of the city of New York, which position he retained for two years, when he was superseded on account of his sympathy with the prevailing revolutionary spirit. As Recorder he presided at the trial of the more important criminal cases.

In the spring of 1775 Judge Livingston moved his family to Clermont, where they had been accustomed to spend the summer months, and the future Chancellor likewise made Clermont his home, establishing himself in the modest house which he had built not long after his marriage. Hardly had the three generations of Livingstons: Robert, the founder of the Clermont branch;

his only child, Robert R., the colonial Judge, and his children, been gathered at Clermont when in June, 1775, the elder Livingston passed away, leaving all he possessed to the Judge, who, however, was not destined to enjoy this splendid property long, for in December of the same year he died while his wife was in attendance at the death bed of her father in Rhinebeck.

Judge Livingston left no will and consequently the entire estate passed, under the colonial law, to the eldest son, which disposition did not seem to young Livingston just towards his brothers and sisters nor in accordance with what would have been his father's wish had the latter been spared to make a will. The remedy he devised was characteristic of the man. As soon as the circumstances would permit he arranged that they should all meet at the old Clermont house. As the new head of the family he occupied the principal place at the table; a tall man of large frame, well proportioned, his features large but regular, his eyes keen and understanding, altogether a commanding figure; the far end of the board was graced by his wife; his widowed mother took her place at his right; on either side his brothers and sisters: Janet, whose husband, Gen. Richard Montgomery, was killed at the storming of Quebec; Margaret, who later married Thomas Tillotson, a surgeon in the Revolutionary army; Henry B., later a colonel in the Revolutionary army; Catherine, who later married Rev. Freeborn Garrettson, a pioneer Methodist minister; John R., later a prominent merchant; Gertrude, who later married Morgan Lewis, a Colonel and Quartermaster-General in the Revolutionary army; Joanna, who later married Peter R. Livingston, a statesman during the Revolutionary period; Alida, who later married John Armstrong, a Major-General in the Revolutionary army; and Edward, later the jurist and United States Secretary of State. When all were seated he, accompanying the act with a few simple but appropriate words, distributed deeds which conveyed to each of his brothers 30,000 acres and to each of his sisters 20,000 acres out of his father's estate. He retained for himself the Clermont property.

In March, 1775, while the Colonial or General Assembly of New York, which had refused to choose delegates to the Continental Congress, was yet in session, a call was issued by the

Citizen's Committee of Sixty to the several counties in the State for the election of delegates to a provincial convention. Under this call Robert R. Livingston, Jr., with two others, was chosen from Dutchess county. When the Convention met in New York city, on April 20, 1775, Mr. Livingston found a most distinguished company of his friends, among them Philip Schuyler, Walter Livingston, Lewis Morris, Isaac Roosevelt, William Floyd and Jacob Blackwell. It sat but two days and elected twelve delegates to the second Continental Congress, of which number Mr. Livingston was one. Four of these signed the Declaration of Independence. This election was later approved by the first Provincial Congress, the supreme legislative body in New York. In April, 1776, the people of Dutchess county again elected Mr. Livingston, now the head at Clermont, as one of their representatives, this time in the third Provincial Congress, which convened in New York city on the 14th of May, 1776, and continued in session until the last day of June. In this Congress appeared as deputies some of the leading patriots, among whom may be mentioned Francis Lewis, John Jay, Joseph Hallett, James Duane and George Clinton. The anticipated attack on the city by the British forces made their final adjournment necessary.

In the spring of 1776 Mr. Livingston had so far distinguished himself in the second Continental Congress which met in Philadelphia, that he was placed on the committee of that Congress which reported the draft of the Declaration of Independence and to this instrument he is said to have affixed his signature. He did not sign the final copy of that famous document because his public duties prevented his returning to Philadelphia from New York, where he had gone to attend the sessions of the fourth Provincial Congress. This Congress to which he had been elected, from Dutchess county, met on July 9, 1776. In those days the confederation of the thirteen colonies was still a doubtful issue and the importance of a national government had not yet come to be recognized; so, when Mr. Livingston was urged to return from Philadelphia and take the leadership in preparing the first constitution of his own State, he promptly accepted the call, and on August 1, 1776, was appointed the chairman of the committee which drew that constitution, a part of the final draft of which is in his hand-

writing. In the meantime the fourth Provincial Congress had read and approved the Declaration of Independence and had altered its own name to the Convention of the Representatives of the State of New York. The committee reported on March 12, 1777, and on the 20th of the following month the first Constitution of the State of New York was adopted. With some intermissions this Convention was in session at White Plains, Harlem, Kingsbridge, Fishkill and Kingston, successively, until May 13, 1777, when it dissolved. Among its members, besides many of the men above mentioned, were Peter R. Livingston, Abraham Yates, Jr., James Beekman and William Duer. It provided an interim form of government by electing a Council of Safety, to which it delegated its powers, pending the first meeting of the Legislature, and of which Mr. Livingston, Pierre Van Cortlandt and Gouverneur Morris were members.

During the colonial period there had existed in New York a supreme court of equity jurisdiction known as the Court of Chancery, presided over by a Chancellor in the person of the Governor of the Province. This court was recognized by the first Constitution as then in existence, and the Convention on May 8, 1777, just before dissolving, appointed Robert R. Livingston the first Chancellor. The Constitution provided that the Chancellor should hold no other public office except that of delegate to the General or Continental Congress on special occasions. This provision was the cause of Mr. Livingston's reappointment as Chancellor on June 27, 1783, doubts having arisen as to whether he had not vacated his office by accepting that of Secretary of Foreign Affairs, under Congress. The first rules of the Court of Chancery were framed by Chancellor Livingston in 1787. He remained in that office until October 2, 1801, resigning only after twenty-four years of active service in the highest judicial position in the State. He has left no written records which have been made public, but doubtless his decisions and notes will some day come to light among his private papers, which are now zealously guarded by his descendants, and then the first Chancellor will occupy in the minds of the people and of the bench and bar of this country the high place which is his due.

His appointment as Secretary of State came in August, 1781,

and he served in that capacity until June, 1783. On retiring he received the thanks of Congress and an assurance of the high sense they entertained of the ability with which he had discharged the important trusts reposed in him.

During the period of his chancellorship he was three times sent as a special delegate to the Continental Congress from October 18, 1779, to April 1, 1780; from September 12, 1780, to March 1, 1781; and from December 2, 1784, to the end of that session.

The original State Constitution provided for a Council of Revision to consist of the Governor, the Chancellor and the Judges of the Supreme Court, and all bills which had passed the Senate and Assembly had to be presented to this Council and have its approval before they could become laws. This Council met in Albany, and its work, in which Mr. Livingston took a leading part, was of vital importance in shaping the legislation of the infant State.

In 1777, to create a diversion in favor of General Burgoyne, General Vaughan was sent from New York, up the Hudson, with a considerable force. He landed at several points destroying the towns and the estates of those who had thrown in their lot with the cause of liberty. The two Livingston houses at Clermont were not to be spared. Almost at the same time with the news of his commission as Chancellor Mr. Livingston learned of their destruction and of the flight of his mother and younger brothers and sisters from the Clermont mansion. So great was his faith in the ultimate success of the colonies and so much confidence had he in the ability of the colonial troops to protect the Hudson valley that he at once commenced to rebuild the old Clermont house, the wings of which had remained standing. This work was directed by his mother, and in about a year's time Clermont was again the hospitable home so well known to all who had occasion to use the Hudson valley.

Mr. Livingston's kindly spirit and desire for the welfare of those with whom he came in contact is aptly illustrated by an occurrence during one of the long, hard winters of the war for independence when he and Mrs. Livingston were making old Clermont their headquarters. His mother had been able to secure for her younger children the services of a school master, Dominic

Doll, a learned minister. In the kindness of her heart she determined that the dominie should not be deprived of the society of his only child, and the pretty fraulein became, for the time being, a part of the Clermont household. The sleigh was at the door to take the Chancellor to Albany. As he took leave of the young lady he said to her: "What shall I bring you from Albany?" She replied, with a laugh: "A good husband." He responded: "So I will." He kept his word and invited a handsome young Dutchman of good character and fair prospects to visit Clermont. The guest enjoyed his visit and in a reasonable time returned and carried the young fraulein away as his bride.

A fragment of the returns, on the occasion of the election of the first Governor of New York, shows that Mr. Livingston was considered for the office, as he was given a nominal vote in the northern counties. The returns for the southern counties have been lost. Twenty-one years later his friends induced him to run for Governor and he received their loyal support throughout the State, the count showing but 2,380 plurality for his successful rival. The votes he received on the first occasion were doubtless unsolicited, for during that summer a number of the leading statesmen had met the Chancellor at Clermont to determine the best man for the gubernatorial chair. After a time the discussion as to the merits of the several candidates grew warm and it became evident to all that a strong man, not yet brought forward, would have to be named in order to preserve harmony. Just at this point Mrs. Livingston, the Judge's widow, who with other ladies of the family had been interested listeners, asked: "Why would not George Clinton do?" His name was approved by all, some among them exclaiming: "He is the man! Why did we not think of him at once?" His subsequent election proved the wisdom of her choice.

Anticipating the evacuation of New York city, the Legislature of 1779 passed an act appointing the Chancellor on a commission to govern the southern district of New York during the period which might ensue between the evacuation by the British and the first meeting of the Legislature thereafter. This commission organized on November 25, 1783, and continued in the immediate charge of the affairs of the cities of New York and Brooklyn until

the 12th of the following February. Its work was of the greatest importance towards restoring the depleted cities, and had Mr. Livingston's special care and attention.

Much trouble was experienced in settling the boundary between New York and Massachusetts, and in 1784 the questions involved having become acute, James Duane, John Jay, Robert R. Livingston, Egbert Benson and Walter Livingston were appointed by the Legislature the New York commissioners to treat with a body of gentlemen of equal distinction who represented Massachusetts. The work of this commission resulted in the friendly relations between the sister States which have since remained unbroken. When New York was asked to renounce all claim to the territory which is now Vermont, it displayed the same spirit of devotion to the public good which prompted it in 1780 voluntarily to surrender its claim to the western territory, and in 1790 appointed Mr. Livingston and others commissioners, who, meeting with the Vermont representatives, established a boundary line for the new State, which has not since been materially altered.

Mr. Livingston was elected from New York county a member of the State Convention which met at Poughkeepsie and in which his party, largely through his efforts, prevailed in bringing about, on July 26, 1788, the ratification of the first Constitution of the United States. He administered the oath of office to General Washington, as the first President thereunder, on a balcony of the Federal Hall in Wall street, New York city, on the 30th day of April, 1789. As a speaker he was able and popular, having inherited the courtly manner of his father and the command of language which distinguished the Rev. John Livingston, his last Scotch ancestor, and to the multitude assembled on that day he closed his, the principal speech of the occasion, by the words uttered in his clear voice: "Long live George Washington, President of the United States," which were caught up by the enthusiastic people and echoed in prolonged response.

President Washington desired the Chancellor to accept an appointment as Minister to France, but Mr. Livingston saw fit to decline the offer because he felt that he could be of greater service to his country by retaining his office as Chancellor. In 1801 President Jefferson, among the first acts of his administra-

tion, offered Mr. Livingston a place in his cabinet as the Secretary of the Navy. This position the Chancellor declined, and the President then prevailed upon him to accept the appointment of Minister to France. There he was received by Bonaparte with great cordiality, and enjoyed, during his residence of nearly five years in the French capital, the warm friendship of that remarkable personage. In this position as Minister, the inherent advantages of a charming personality, good birth and talent, combined with a well-trained mind, large landed estates and a comfortable income, gave him unusual influence in his intercourse with the prominent officials of the French government. He conducted the negotiations in 1803 for the purchase of the Louisiana territory by the United States, bringing all his influence to bear against powerful factions at home and abroad who were opposed to the transfer. Bonaparte favored the sale and said, in effect: "This accession of territory strengthens forever the power of the United States, and I thus give to England a maritime rival that will sooner or later humble her pride." At the right moment Chancellor Livingston was able to call the attention of Talleyrand and of Marbois to extracts from a speech of Senator James Ross, of Pennsylvania in the United States Senate, threatening war and demanding in behalf of the entire west that the Mississippi river should forever run unvexed to the ocean, free from the interference of any foreign power. The predominating American feeling, so well illustrated in that speech, paved the way for the Chancellor to arrange all of the conditions of the transfer except only the amount of the moneyed consideration, the French officials deeming the sum that he was authorized to offer insufficient. Monroe arrived in Paris in time to be present at the closing of the negotiations and was the bearer of the necessary authority to enable the representatives of the respective governments to meet on the question of value. When the contract, which effected the transfer of the Louisiana territory to the United States, had been signed and the commissioners, Marbois, Monroe and Livingston, rose, the latter was able to express in a few words the intimate feelings of the three: "The treaties which we have just signed will cause no tears; they prepare centuries of happiness to innumerable generations of human beings; from this day the United States take their

place among the powers of the first rank." The claim of the United States against the French government, for remuneration for the then recent and extensive spoliation on their commerce, was presented by Minister Livingston, who effected an eminently satisfactory settlement, but Congress, although more than a century has since passed, has not yet paid to the rightful owners the money received under that settlement. Upon resigning his office he traveled with his family over a large part of Europe, spending thus the better part of a year. He then returned to Paris and took leave of Napoleon, who, in token of his regard, presented to Mr. Livingston a handsome snuff box on the cover of which was a miniature likeness of the Emperor, painted by Isabey, and set in a circle of diamonds. The Emperor's brothers, Louis and Joseph, became Livingston's firm friends, and Joseph, when an exile in America, spent many months as a member of the Clermont household.

Early in his career Chancellor Livingston had made himself thoroughly conversant not only with the theoretical side of steam mechanics, but also with its practical application, and was familiar with Watt's efforts in Europe; Fitch's experiments on the Delaware and in New York, in the course of which Mr. Livingston assisted the inventor to bring out the boat which was operated on the Collect pond; and with Rumsey's work. In 1794 he was one of those on board Morey's steamboat on its trip from Hartford to New York. In 1798, the year of Fitch's death, he had so far persuaded himself of the value and practicability of the steamboat that he procured from the Legislature of the State of New York an act vesting in him the exclusive right to navigate all kinds of boats which might be propelled by fire or steam on all the waters within the jurisdiction of the State, for the term of twenty years. Under this act he employed the well-known English engineer, Nesbit, and constructed a steamboat in March of that year at De Koven' bay, on the Hudson, near Clermont, which, however, failed to meet the conditions of the law namely: that within a year from its passage a craft must be put in operation whose speed would be at least four miles an hour. His second effort in the same year made in conjunction with his brother-in-law, John Stevens, and Nicholas Roosevelt, was attended with no bet-

ter success, and he thereupon, for the time being, abandoned the project. While in France, as the American Minister, he became acquainted with Robert Fulton, who was then engaged with his experiments with submarines. The meeting of these two men marked a turning point in the history of the world. Both were bent upon the same design, namely: the practical application and production of a steamboat. They agreed upon a series of experiments which were conducted at Plombières, a French watering place, and which resulted in a determination to build, with the Chancellor's money, an experimental boat on the Seine. The plans of this boat, with a model, were submitted to a commission of *savants* which had been appointed by Bonaparte to investigate and report. She was sixty-six feet long and eight feet wide, and was completed early in 1803, but unfortunately went to the bottom just before her maiden trip, having been broken in half during a heavy wind by the weight of the engine and machinery. Not discouraged, they raised and rebuilt her and the proposed trial trip was made with measurable success in August of that year before a great multitude of Parisians. The accident, however, had its effect. The commissioners reported adversely to the First Consul and thus, perhaps, France lost the opportunity of introducing steam navigation to the world.

This experiment on the Seine was, however, so satisfactory to Chancellor Livingston and his partner that they determined to continue their efforts in America; and the Chancellor, through friends at home, procured a re-enactment of the act of 1798, which had expired, by which new legislation the provisions of the old act were extended to Fulton and himself for a term of twenty years. The engine for the proposed boat was ordered in 1803 from Watt & Bolton, in England, for shipment to America, without any specification being given that firm, of the object to which it was to be applied, and directions were given so that the usual model should be altered to conform to sketches furnished by Fulton. Much delay was experienced in the construction of this engine, and it did not arrive in New York until 1806, when Mr. Livingston and his partner immediately commenced building, again with the former's money, the first American steamboat which was to embody the results of their combined experience and knowl-

edge. After several months' work she was launched, in the spring of 1807, from the shipyard of Charles Brownne near Corlear's Hook, and fitted with her engine and machinery. By the middle of August of that year everything was complete, and the boat, which had been named the *Clermont*, made its maiden trip, crossing the Hudson river to the Jersey shore and returning under its own steam power, viewed by crowds of enthusiastic spectators. A day or two later, namely, on August 17, 1807, the *Clermont* commenced her first voyage, now famous in the annals of the world, to Albany and back. She accomplished it against head winds at an average speed of five miles an hour, thus determining definitely and forever the efficacy of navigation by steam. When she left New York she had on board, besides Chancellor Livingston and Fulton, about forty of their friends, among them a number of gentlemen of science; two of the Chancellor's brothers, John R. Livingston and Col. Henry B. Livingston; a cousin, John Swift Livingston; one if not both of the Chancellor's daughters and their husbands; Fulton's fiancée; and Mrs. Thomas Morris. When she arrived on her way north at the Staatsburgh landing, near Rhinecliff, Major-General Morgan Lewis, whose term of office as Governor of New York had just expired, and his family, joined the Chancellor on board. Shortly before reaching Clermont the Chancellor, in a graceful speech, formally announced the engagement of Harriet Livingston to Fulton, and furthermore prophesied: "The name of the inventor will descend to posterity as that of a benefactor to the world and it is not impossible that before the close of the present century vessels may even be able to make the voyage to Europe without other motive power than steam." This bold prediction was received with incredulity, and one of his brothers was heard to say: "Bob has had many a bee in his bonnet before now, but this steam folly will prove the worst one yet." At the Clermont dock, the landing place for the Chancellor's residence, the steamboat was received by the assembled people with great rejoicing, and remained the first night, finishing the journey to Albany on the following day. Almost immediately thereafter she was advertised as a packet boat between New York and Albany, and continued running during the major part of that season.

Many improvements were made on the *Clermont* during the

winter of 1807-8, and her success was the incentive to others to build and put in operation two steamboats on the Hudson river. These, it was soon found, were identical in form and structure with one which the Chancellor's line was in the act of building, known as *The Car of Neptune*. The opposition, finding it necessary to abandon their new boats, determined to test the act which the Chancellor had obtained and which excluded them from operating on the river. The litigation thus started was finally decided in the Chancellor's favor, and the navigation by steam power, of the State, remained in the exclusive possession of Mr. Livingston and his partner until the decision in the case of *Gibbons vs. Ogden* in the United States Supreme Court in 1824 which broke the monopoly.

Chancellor Livingston's interest in steam navigation did not cease with the *Clermont*, for in the next six years, which immediately preceded his death, he took an active interest in the construction, operation and improvement of steam craft, and added to his Hudson river line some five or six steamboats, the *Paragon*, constructed in 1812, being perhaps the best known, and two or more steam ferry boats, plying between New York and New Jersey, the first of which was put in operation in that year. Mr. Livingston was appointed in 1811 on the first canal commission which explored and laid out the route of the Erie canal. In 1813 he with Fulton and Stevens assigned their rights to navigate the waters of Lake Champlain to a company of gentlemen formed in Albany. Without his means and influence it would scarcely have been possible for Robert Fulton to have shown his genius and triumphed as an inventor and benefactor of mankind. Truly it has been said that Robert R. Livingston was the "father of steam navigation in America."

At the close of the Revolution, Chancellor Livingston built a large house near the ruins of his burned home at Clermont, and just south of the site of the old Clermont mansion, rebuilt for his mother and occupied by her until her death. He chose a plan for the new house similar in form to the letter "H." It was one of the most commodious in the country, having a river front of one hundred and four feet and a depth of ninety-one feet, and consisted of a main body of two stories and attic, with four pavilions

attached, one of which was the library. The projecting pavilions in front were separated by a terrace on which opened the windows of the dining room on one side and of the parlor on the other and which was filled with orange, lemon and myrtle trees, not then common. A conservatory ran the length of the house on the south side and in it the tables were set for dinner on state occasions, they being so constructed as to admit of the most ornamental of the tropical plants rising through their center. Two head gardeners cared for the greenhouses and gardens. A butler kept a general supervision of the house and its valuable contents, being distinguished by carrying a huge bunch of keys. The rest of the servants were negroes.

Mr. Livingston had fine literary tastes and kept adding continually to his library, more especially so on his return from France when he brought with him many rare volumes, besides many other costly and beautiful things which went to decorate his house, among them a service of silver of an unusual number and variety of pieces; Gobelin tapestries which hung as portieres and covered the walls of the drawing room and the seats and cushions of the inlaid mahogany furniture; tables and ornaments of marble and lava; Bohemian glass; a musical clock in the shape of a ruined column; engravings and paintings, among them a portrait of Henry IV, and a good deal of ornamental furniture of a style which had not yet found its way into the United States.

The New York and Albany turnpike lay some distance from the river, and from it the house was approached by a long avenue through the virgin forest. The lawn at the back sloped away to the river and was dotted with fine old forest trees. From the porch a beautiful view of the Hudson and of the Catskills delighted the eye. The Chancellor had a great fondness for agriculture and kindred pursuits and took special interest in agriculture and mechanical improvements and innovations. He constructed substantial farm buildings, to which he later added many foreign devices. There the produce of the farm was stored and the cattle housed in winter; there too he kept a variety of vehicles for farm and family use, and the farm implements, some of which were new of their kind in the United States, when he brought them over. He introduced into this country the Merino sheep from the

then celebrated flock of Rambouillet in France, and at the time of his death there are said to have been in the United States at least 60,000 descendants of the Clermont flock of which 1,000 were at Clermont. In those days the wants of the family had largely to be supplied off the estate, and the "madam's" house was a market on which the tenants had come to depend; consequently, the larder had always to be well stocked and this was in itself a considerable undertaking. When fall came and the produce had been gathered in from the farm and orchard, then the live stock was reduced, beef pickled, hams cured and sausages made. Christmas was the holiday of the year and the landlord's house a place of well wishing and abundance, dispensed by the lady of the house. Mrs. Livingston was known throughout the country side for her generosity, kindliness and helpfulness towards all who stood in need. A contemporary in alluding to her, says: "No one ever left Clermont empty handed."

The house and grounds vied for beauty and appointments with the best in the land and it was seldom that some of Mr. and Mrs. Livingston's many friends or acquaintances, made during his active public career, were not their guests. Public men sought Mr. Livingston's advice in affairs of State, and his eminence in his profession and wide practical experience singled him out for consultation in matters of importance.

Whenever he was called upon to remain for a length of time away from home Mrs. Livingston would accompany him. Their elder child, Elizabeth Stevens Livingston, was born May 5, 1780, while they were on a visit to her parents in New Jersey. Their only other child, Margaret Maria Livingston, was born April 11, 1783, at Philadelphia, while Mr. Livingston was Secretary of Foreign Affairs. Elizabeth married Edward P. Livingston, and on the death of her grandmother established her family in the old Clermont homestead, which later she inherited from her father. Margaret was "her mother's daughter," an accomplished and beautiful girl, whose fascination some thought consisted perhaps more in grace and expression than in symmetry of feature. Kotzebue, the German dramatist, saw her and Mrs. Livingston in Paris, when her father was Minister, and in his memoirs alludes to her as "the youngest sister of the modest Venus." Her man-

ners united high polish with perfect simplicity. She was an expert rider and a good shot, having when young frequently accompanied her father on his walks with his gun. It is reported that on such occasions he had been known to shake his head and say of her: "A fine boy spoiled." Like her elder sister she was a graceful dancer, having been taught by Verbec, a French opera dancer, whom the Chancellor brought over from Paris, and who became the father of the art in America. The sisters were popular in New York, where the Chancellor and his family were in the habit of spending the winter months. There Margaret met Robert L. Livingston to whom she was married when but fifteen years of age. She never lost her beauty and grace of carriage, and for many years displayed considerable artistic ability, more especially in portrait painting.

Mr. Livingston died in his house at Clermont on the 26th day of February, 1813, in the sixty-seventh year of his age; his widow keenly felt her loss. So constant had been their companionship and so mutual their regard and respect that she never recovered from the shock, and deprivation hastened her end, which came on the 22d of March, 1814, while on a visit to Washington. The year of her widowhood she had passed with her youngest daughter, who had inherited the Chancellor's home at Clermont, and in the company of her grandchildren.

Following is a recapitulation of the salient events in Chancellor Livingston's career, followed by a genealogy of his descendants:

1. ROBERT R. LIVINGSTON, was the eldest son of Judge Robert R. and Margaret (Beekman) Livingston, of "Clermont," Columbia county, N. Y. He was born at New York city, N. Y., November 27, 1746, and died at "Clermont," February 26, 1813. He married in New York city, N. Y., September 9, 1770, MARY STEVENS, the only daughter of Hon. John and Elizabeth (Alexander) Stevens of Castle Point, Hudson county, N. J. She was born in Hunterdon county, N. J., 1752, and died at Washington, D. C., March 22, 1814. He graduated in 1765, at Kings College now Columbia University in the city of

New York, studied law under his kinsman, William Livingston, afterward Governor of New Jersey, and was admitted to the bar in New York in October, 1773. He was appointed Recorder of the city of New York under the crown in 1773, retaining the office two years, when he lost it on account of his sympathy with the prevailing revolutionary spirit. He was a member from Dutchess county, of the New York Provincial Convention of 1775; of the Third New York Provincial Congress of 1776, and a delegate from New York to the Second Continental Congress of 1775-6 held in Philadelphia, Pa. He was one of the committee of that Congress which drew the Declaration of Independence, but that famous document failed to receive his signature because he had gone to New York to attend the Fourth New York Provincial Congress of 1776-7, which prepared under his direction as chairman of the committee, the first constitution of that State. He was three times a special delegate to Continental Congress in 1779, 1780 and 1784. He was appointed Secretary of Foreign Affairs in August, 1781, holding the office until 1783. He became the first Chancellor of the State of New York in 1777, and remained in office until 1801, when he resigned, after twenty-four years of active service in the highest judicial position in the State. He was a member of the New York Convention held in Poughkeepsie in 1788, to ratify the Constitution of the United States and administered the oath of office to George Washington, as the first President thereunder, in the city of New York, on the 30th day of April, 1789. In 1801, he was appointed United States Minister to France and again in 1803. As Minister he negotiated the Louisiana purchase and settled the French spoliation claims. He was early interested in the development of steam navigation and himself conducted a number of experiments, besides giving encouragement to others. He supplied the funds for the construction of the *Clermont* and organized and maintained the first steamboat company in the world which company operated the Hudson river line. He was appointed in 1811 on the first Canal Commission, which explored and laid out the route of the Erie canal. Chancellor and Mrs. Livingston had issue two children.

FIRST GENERATION.

Children of (1) Chancellor Robert R. and Mary (Stevens) Livingston.

2. ELIZABETH STEVENS LIVINGSTON, b. Hunterdon county, N. J., May 5, 1780; d. New York, June 10, 1829; married "Clermont," Columbia county, N. Y., November 20, 1799, EDWARD PHILIP LIVINGSTON, (son of Philip P. and Sarah (Johnston) Livingston of Jamaica, West Indies, whose father Philip Livingston was a signer of the Declaration of Independence), b. Jamaica, West Indies, May 24, 1779, d. "Clermont," Columbia county, N. Y., November 3, 1843. He m. secondly MARY C. BROOME, by whom he had no issue. Graduated Columbia College, 1796. He was elected New York Senator under the first constitution from the middle district in 1808-9, 1810, 1811, 1812, and under the second constitution from the third district in 1823, 1824, 1838, 1839; was elected Presidential Elector from New York State in 1820 and Elector-at-large and President of the Electoral College, 1832; was appointed Regent of the University of the State of New York, 1827, and resigned in 1831; was elected Lieutenant-Governor of the State of New York in 1830 and served two years. They resided in the Judge Robert R. Livingston mansion at "Clermont," Columbia county, N. Y. Issue eleven children.

3. MARGARET MARIA LIVINGSTON, b. Philadelphia, Pa., April 11, 1783; d. "Clermont," Columbia county, N. Y., March 8, 1818; m. "Clermont," Columbia county, N. Y., 1799, ROBERT L. LIVINGSTON (son of Judge Walter and Cornelia (Schuyler) Livingston of Albany and New York city, N. Y., whose father Robert Livingston was the third and last lord of the Manor of Livingston), b. New York city, N. Y.; d. "Clermont," Columbia county, N. Y., January 7, 1843. His sister Harriet Livingston married Robert Fulton. Mrs. Livingston was a noted beauty and displayed great artistic ability. He was a successful merchant. They resided in the Chancellor Robert R. Livingston mansion at "Clermont," Columbia county, N. Y. Issue nine children.

SECOND GENERATION.

Children of (2) Edward P. and Elizabeth Stevens (Livingston) Livingston.

4. ROBERT CLERMONT LIVINGSTON, b. Paris, France, June 10, 1802; d. Paris, France, July, 1802.

5. MARY LIVINGSTON, b. "Clermont," Columbia county, N. Y., August 20, 1804; d. New York, April 3, 1819, unm.

6. ROBERT CLERMONT LIVINGSTON, b. "Clermont," Columbia county, N. Y., September 27, 1806; died "Clermont," Columbia county, N. Y., April, 1811.

7. MARGARET LIVINGSTON, b. "Clermont," Columbia county, N. Y., August 17, 1808; d. New York, April 28, 1874; m. "Clermont," Columbia county, N. Y., October 4, 1827, DAVID AUGUSTUS CLARKSON (son of Thomas Streatfeild and Elizabeth (Van Horne) Clarkson); b. September 6, 1793; d. November 24, 1850. Issue three children.

8. EDWARD LIVINGSTON, b. "Clermont," Columbia county, N. Y., October 16, 1810; d. "Clermont," Columbia county, N. Y., March, 1815.

9. CATHERINE LIVINGSTON, (twin) b. "Clermont," Columbia county, N. Y., October 10, 1813; d. "Clermont," Columbia county, N. Y., June, 1815.

10. ELIZABETH LIVINGSTON, (twin) b. "Clermont," Columbia county, N. Y., October 10, 1813; d. New York city, N. Y.; m. New York city, N. Y., 1833, DR. EDWARD HUNTER LUDLOW (son of Gabriel V. and Elizabeth (Hunter) Ludlow;) d. New York city. He was trustee of the medical department of Columbia College, 1872, also an auctioneer. Issue four children.

11. EMMA LIVINGSTON, b. "Clermont," Columbia county, N. Y., September 29, 1815; d. "Clermont," Columbia county, N. Y., July 24, 1828.

12. CLERMONT LIVINGSTON, b. "Clermont," Columbia county, N. Y., September 4, 1817; d. "Clermont," Columbia county, N. Y., November 4, 1895; m. firstly "Oakhill," Columbia county, N. Y., October 8, 1844, CORNELIA LIVINGSTON

(dau. of Herman and Sarah Lawrence (Hallett) Livingston, of "Oakhill," Columbia county, N. Y.); b. February 29, 1824; d. September 21, 1851. By whom he had two children.* He resided in the Judge Robert R. Livingston mansion at "Clermont," Columbia county, N. Y.

13. ROBERT EDWARD LIVINGSTON, b. "Clermont," Columbia county, N. Y., May 25, 1820; d. New York, January 20, 1889; m. New York city, N. Y., December 19, 1854, SUSAN MARIA CLARKSON de PEYSTER (dau. of Capt. James Ferguson and Susan Maria (Clarkson) de Peyster); b. May, 1821. Issue four children.

14. MARY LIVINGSTON, b. "Clermont," Columbia county, N. Y., June 23, 1823; d. "Clermont," Columbia county, N. Y., November 17, 1898; m. "Clermont," Columbia county, N. Y., June 17, 1849, LEVINUS CLARKSON (son of Levinus and Ann Mary (Van Horne) Clarkson); b. 1823; d. "Clermont," Columbia county, N. Y., April, 1861. Issue two children.

Children of (3) Robert L. and Margaret Maria (Livingston) Livingston.

15. MARIA LIVINGSTON, b. "Clermont," Columbia county, N. Y., January 1800; d. Savannah, Ga., December, 1830; m. June 22, 1816, JOHN C. TILLOTSON (son of Thomas and Margaret (Livingston) Tillotson); b. Rhinebeck, N. Y., May 16, 1791; d. New York, December 18, 1867. Appointed District Attorney, Ulster county, N. Y., 1822, and Member of Assembly from Ulster county, N. Y., 1824. Issue seven children.

16. CORNELIA LOUISIANA LIVINGSTON, b. "Clermont," Columbia county, N. Y., December 24, 1802; d. December 22, 1830; m. "Clermont," Columbia county, N. Y., December 1, 1822, Capt. CHARLES GOODWIN RIDGELY (son of Dr. Lyde and Abby (Levy) Goodwin of Baltimore, Md.); b. Baltimore, Md., July 2, 1784; d. Baltimore, Md., February 4, 1848. His name was changed from Charles Ridgely Goodwin, by act of the Legislature. He was appointed a Midshipman in the United

* Information as to the second and third marriages of Clermont Livingston omitted at the request of his son.

States Navy, October 17, 1799; Acting Lieutenant, May, 1804; Lieutenant, 1807; Master Commandant, 1813; Captain, 1815. Issue four children.

17. ADELAIDE MARGARET LIVINGSTON, b. "Clermont," Columbia county, N. Y., October 10, 1806; d. New York city, N. Y., December, 1885; m. "Clermont," Columbia county, N. Y., November 22, 1826, WILLIAM BAYARD CLARKSON (son of Gen. Mathew and Sarah (Cornell) Clarkson); b. October 3, 1798; d. New York city, N. Y., March 19, 1875. Captain 127th Regiment, N. Y. Infantry, 1821. Issue ten children.

18. ROBERT LIVINGSTON, b. "Clermont," Columbia county, N. Y., March 5, 1810; d. April 23, 1839; m. New York city, N. Y., June 1, 1836, FRANCES ANN CLARKSON GOODHUE (dau. of Jonathan and Catherine Rutherford (Clarkson) Goodhue); d. Lenox, Mass., August 26, 1857. No issue.

19. WALTER LIVINGSTON, b. "Clermont," Columbia county, N. Y.; d. young, unm.

20. EUGENE AUGUSTUS LIVINGSTON, b. "Clermont," Columbia county, N. Y., August 30, 1813; d. Nice, France, December 22, 1893; m. firstly, Philadelphia, Pa., December 7, 1841, HARRIET COLEMAN (dau. of Edward and Mary Jane (Ross) Coleman, of Philadelphia, Pa.); b. Lancaster, Pa., July 5, 1820; d. Philadelphia, Pa., May 3, 1848. They had issue two children; m. secondly, Philadelphia, Pa., June 23, 1851, ELIZABETH RHODES FISHER (dau. of Coleman and Mary (Read) Fisher, of Philadelphia, Pa.); b. Philadelphia, Pa., June 5, 1828; d. New York city, N. Y., May 5, 1878. They had issue five children. He received from his mother that part of "Clermont," which is in Dutchess county, N. Y., known as "Tiviot," and built himself a country seat there fronting on the river. He divided his time between this country place and his residence in the city of New York.

21. MATILDA CORINNA LIVINGSTON, b. "Clermont," Columbia county, N. Y., February 22, 1815; d. Island of Madeira, January 23, 1839, unm.

22. MONTGOMERY LIVINGSTON, b. "Clermont," Columbia county, N. Y., August 31, 1816; d. "Clermont,"

Columbia county, N. Y., August, 1855; m. MARY COLDEN SWARTOUT (dau. of Samuel Swartout); d. 1867. He was a successful artist and resided in the Chancellor Robert R. Livingston mansion at "Clermont," Columbia county, N. Y. They had no issue. She married secondly, 1857, CLERMONT LIVINGSTON (son of Edward P. and Elizabeth Stevens (Livingston) Livingston.) By whom she had no issue.

23. MARGARET MARIA LIVINGSTON, b. "Clermont," Columbia county, N. Y., November 17, 1817; d. February 26, 1848; m. January 2, 1840, SCHUYLER LIVINGSTON (son of Schuyler and Eliza (Barelay) Livingston of New York city, N. Y.). He m. firstly ELIZA B. HOSIE (dau. of Andrew and Ann (Gerard) Hosie), by whom he had issue four children; he m. thirdly MISS CARROLL by whom he had no issue. They had issue two children.

THIRD GENERATION.

Children of (7) David Augustus and Margaret (Livingston) Clarkson.

24. EDWARD LIVINGSTON CLARKSON, b. September 19, 1828; d. April 19, 1829.

25. ELIZABETH CLARKSON, b. "Clermont," Columbia county, N. Y., April 12, 1830; d. May 22, 1860; m. June 6, 1854, GEORGE GIBBS BARNWELL (son of William Wigg and Sarah Reeve (Gibbes) Barnwell, of South Carolina); b. Beaufort, South Carolina, November 28, 1826; d. Charleston, South Carolina, February 11, 1902. Issue two children.

26. THOMAS STREATFEILD CLARKSON, b. New York city, N. Y., March 19, 1834; d. New York city, N. Y., December 12, 1898; m. April 26, 1855, MARY WHITMARSH (dau. of Richmond and Cornelia (de Peyster) Whitmarsh); b. June 13, 1854; d. Tivoli, N. Y., August 24, 1908. Issue eight children.

Children of (10) Dr. Edward Hunter and Elizabeth (Livingston) Ludlow.

27. ELIZABETH LUDLOW, d. Tivoli, N. Y., young, unm.

28. EDWARD PHILIP LIVINGSTON LUDLOW, b. Sing Sing, N. Y., 1835; m. April 7, 1863, MARGARET TONNELE

HALL (dau. of Valentine Gill and Susan (Tonnele) Hall); b. New York, 1840. Issue two children.

29. GABRIEL AUGUSTUS LUDLOW, b. 1838; d. New Rochelle, N. Y., 1844.

30. MARY LIVINGSTON LUDLOW, b. Tivoli, N. Y., April 24, 1843; m. April 24, 1861, VALENTINE GILL HALL, JR. (son of Valentine Gill and Susan (Tonnele) Hall); b. New York city, N. Y., March 27, 1834; d. Tivoli, N. Y., July 17, 1880. Issue seven children.

Children of (12) Clermont and Cornelia (Livingston) Livingston.

31. MARY LIVINGSTON, b. "Oakhill," Columbia county, N. Y., August 14, 1845; d. "Clermont," Columbia county, N. Y., July 26, 1876; m. "Clermont," Columbia county, N. Y., September 7, 1864, Col. FREDERICK DE PEYSTER (son of Maj.-Gen. John Watts and Estelle (Livingston) de Peyster); b. December 13, 1842; d. Dutchess county, N. Y., October 30, 1874. He was Assistant Surgeon of United States Volunteers in the Civil War. Issue two children.

32. JOHN HENRY LIVINGSTON, b. "Oakhill," Columbia county, N. Y., July 8, 1848; m. firstly, New York, November 2, 1871, CATHARINE LIVINGSTON HAMMERSLEY (dau. of John William and Catharine Livingston (Hooker) Hammersley, of Poughkeepsie, N. Y.); b. September 24, 1850; d. New York, April 19, 1873. They had issue one child.* M. thirdly, New York, November 9, 1906, ALICE DELAFIELD CLARKSON (dau. of Howard and Alice (Delafield) Clarkson, of New York city, N. Y.); b. New York city, N. Y., January 9, 1872. They have issue one child. He graduated from Columbia College in 1869, and from the Columbia College Law School in 1871.

Children of (13) Robert Edward and Susan Maria Clarkson (de Peyster) Livingston.

33. CATHARINE GOODHUE LIVINGSTON.

34. ROBERT R. LIVINGSTON, b. New York, March 8,

* Information as to the second marriage of John Henry Livingston omitted at his request.

1858; d. April 16, 1899; m. April 15, 1884, MARY TAILER (dau. of Edward Neufville and Agnes (Süffern) Tailer). Issue two children.

35. EDWARD DE PEYSTER LIVINGSTON, b. 1861.

36. GOODHUE LIVINGSTON, b. New York city, N. Y., February 23, 1867; m. April 8, 1896, LOUISA ROBB (dau. of James Hampden and Cornelia V. R. (Thayer) Robb); b. New York city, N. Y., January 5, 1877. Issue two children.

Children of (14) Levinus and Mary (Livingston) Clarkson.

37. EDWARD LEVINUS CLARKSON, b. "Clermont," Columbia county, N. Y., July 29, 1850.

38. ROBERT R. L. CLARKSON, b. "Clermont," Columbia county, N. Y., June 21, 1855; m. November 6, 1886, MARY LUDLUM OTIS (dau. of James and Mary (Ludlum) Otis); b. Bellport, Long Island, N. Y., October 2, 1865. Issue four children.

Children of (15) John C. and Maria (Livingston) Tillotson.

39. JOHN HOWARD TILLOTSON, b. "Clermont," Columbia county, N. Y., April 3, 1817; d. Mongaup Valley, Sullivan county, N. Y., May 23, 1886; m. 1841, ALICE LIVINGSTON (dau. of James Duane and Sarah (Swift) Livingston). No issue.

40. RICHARD MONTGOMERY TILLOTSON, b. "Clermont," Columbia county, N. Y., December 15, 1818; d. Leavenworth City, Kansas, March 22, 1874; m. MARY PARKE (dau. of David and Catherine (Maxwell) Parke); b. Chester, Pa., October 7, 1831. Issue one child.

41. ROBERT LIVINGSTON TILLOTSON, b. March, 1821; d. Yorktown, Va., June 13, 1863; m. MARY GILLESPIE (dau. of Judge William and Elvira (Hurd) Gillespie, of Sullivan county, N. Y.); b. July 8, 1833; d. March 11, 1892. He was elected special county Judge and Surrogate of Sullivan county, N. Y., 1854, and was with the Army of the Potomac at Yorktown. Issue one child.

42. MARGARET MARIA TILLOTSON, b. February 2, 1824.

43. CATHERINE TILLOTSON, b. October 26, 1826; d. July 23, 1827, unnm.

44. MARIA LIVINGSTON TILLOTSON, b. November 1, 1828.

45. CORNELIA RIDGELY TILLOTSON, b. October 4, 1830; m. January, 1854, Col. WILLIAM PRATT WAINWRIGHT (son of Eli and Mary S. (Pratt) Wainwright). He was Col. 76th Regiment, N. Y. Infantry Volunteers. Issue three children.

Children of (16) Charles Goodwin and Cornelia Louisiana (Livingston) Ridgely.

46. MARGARET MARIA RIDGELY, b. New York, April 11, 1824; d. New York, November 25, 1863; m. July 2, 1846, JAMES SCHOTT, of Philadelphia, Pa. (son of James and Rebecca (Bryan) Schott); d. New York. Issue four children.

47. ELIZABETH AUGUSTA RIDGELY, b. "Clermont," Columbia county, N. Y., September 10, 1825; d. July 29, 1864; m. October 14, 1852, WILLIAM HENRY HUNT (son of Hon. Thomas and Louisa (Gaillard) Hunt, of Charleston, South Carolina); b. Charleston, South Carolina, 1824; d. St. Petersburg, Russia, February 27, 1884. United States Minister to Russia. Issue seven children.

48. CORNELIA ADELAIDE RIDGELY, b. New York, February 12, 1827; d. New York, October, 1857; m. Baltimore, Md., July 1, 1846, ST. GEORGE CROGHAN (son of Col. St. George and Serena (Livingston) Croghan); b. Louisville, Ky.; d. Virginia, 1861. Issue four children.

49. CORA RIDGELY, b. October, 1828; d. July, 1829.

Children of (17) William Bayard and Adelaide Margaret (Livingston) Clarkson.

50. WILLIAM BAYARD CLARKSON, b. 1827; d. March 15, 1836, unnm.

51. ROBERT LIVINGSTON CLARKSON, b. 1829; d. February 13, 1830, unnm.

52. EUGENE LIVINGSTON CLARKSON, b. Saugerties, N. Y., 1831; d. Scarborough, N. Y., 1904, unnm.

53. ROBERT LIVINGSTON CLARKSON, b. Saugerties, N. Y., December 6, 1833; m. April 28, 1858, ANNE AYSCOUGH SANDS (dau. of Admiral Joshua R. and Harriet (Stevens) Sands); b. Hoboken, N. J., October 21, 1836. Issue eleven children.

54. FANNY MATILDA CLARKSON, b. Saugerties, N. Y., 1836.

55. MONTGOMERY HOWARD CLARKSON, b. Saugerties, N. Y., 1838.

56. WALTER LIVINGSTON CLARKSON (twin), b. Saugerties, N. Y., October 15, 1840. Graduate Columbia College, 1860.

57. HOWARD CLARKSON (twin), b. Saugerties, N. Y., October 15, 1840; m. New York city, N. Y., April 21, 1868, ALICE DELAFIELD (dau. of Dr. Edward and Julia (Floyd) Delafield of New York city, N. Y.); b. New York city, N. Y., March 3, 1849. Graduate Columbia College, 1860. Issue five children.

58. ADELAIDE LIVINGSTON CLARKSON, b. Saugerties, N. Y., 1842.

59. WILLIAM CLARKSON, b. Saugerties, N. Y., 1844; d. Saugerties, N. Y., February 28, 1844, unm.

Children of (20) Eugene Augustus and Harriet (Coleman) Livingston.

60. EUGENE LIVINGSTON, b. Philadelphia, Pa., January 8, 1845; d. "Tiviot," Tivoli, Dutchess county, N. Y., December 31, 1862, unm. Private in the Civil War, 95th Regiment, Company E, New York Volunteers, 1862, died of consumption contracted by exposure when stationed at Washington, D. C.

61. MARY COLEMAN LIVINGSTON, b. "Tiviot," Tivoli, Dutchess county, N. Y., August 17, 1847; m. New York city, N. Y., December 1, 1868, MATURIN LIVINGSTON DELAFIELD (son of Major Joseph and Julia (Livingston) Delafield, of New York city, N. Y.); b. New York city, N. Y., February 17, 1836. Graduate Columbia College, 1856. Residence, "Fieldston," Riverdale-on-Hudson, New York city, N. Y., country seat, "Sunswyck," West Hampton Beach, Long Island, N. Y. Issue eight children.

*Children of (20) Eugene Augustus and Elizabeth Rhodes
(Fisher) Livingston.*

62. ADELAIDE LIVINGSTON, b. Paris, France, June 8, 1852; d. Nice, France, April 17, 1909, unm.

63. ELIZABETH LIVINGSTON, b. New York city, N. Y., March 30, 1857.

64. KATHERINE McCALL LIVINGSTON, b. New York city, N. Y., November 7, 1858; m. New York city, N. Y., June 1, 1882, WILLIAM BRANDFORD SHUBRICK CLYMER (son of George and Mary (Shubrick) Clymer of Washington, D. C.); b. Washington, D. C., March 19, 1855; d. Cambridge, Mass., May 9, 1903. Issue one child.

65. RICHARD MONTGOMERY CALENDER LIVINGSTON, b. New York city, N. Y., April 7, 1861.

66. WALTER EUGENE LIVINGSTON, b. New York city, N. Y., March 17, 1863; m. Elizabeth Slingerland.

*Children of (23) Schuyler and Margaret Maria (Livingston)
Livingston.*

67. MATILDA CORINNA LIVINGSTON, b. New York city, N. Y., November 26, 1841; m. December 24, 1864, FREDERICK WILLIAM SATTERLEE (son of Douglas and Nancy Anne (Satterlee) Satterlee). Issue two children.

68. MARGARET LIVINGSTON, b. February 22, 1844; d. young, unm.

FOURTH GENERATION.

*Children of (25) George Gibbes and Elizabeth (Clarkson)
Barnwell.*

69. ROBERT MORGAN GIBBES BARNWELL, b. "Clermont," Columbia county, N. Y., June 27, 1858; m. November 14, 1883, ELIZABETH MARIE (dau. of Albin and Sarah (Slosson) Marie); b. New York, February 9, 1860. He graduated at Columbia College, 1880. Issue two children.

70. MARGARET ELIZABETH BARNWELL, d. 1860, unm.

Children of (26) Thomas Streatfeild and Mary (Whitmarsh) Clarkson.

71. DAVID AUGUSTUS CLARKSON, b. "Clermont," Columbia county, N. Y., March 30, 1858; m. October 4, 1898, MARIA MESIER REESE (dau. of William Henry and Mary Augusta (Willes) Reese); b. New Hamburg, Dutchess county, N. Y., January 3, 1870.

72. FREDERICA CLARKSON, b. May 14, 1859; d. December, 1879.

73. CLERMONT LIVINGSTON CLARKSON, b. August 9, 1861; m. New York city, N. Y., April 11, 1898, ADELAIDE LIVINGSTON CLARKSON (dau. of Howard and Alice (Delafield) Clarkson, of New York city, N. Y.); b. New York city, N. Y., January 29, 1870.

74. RICHARD CLARKSON, b. October 19, 1862; d. October 21, 1862.

75. CORNELIA VAN KORTLANDT CLARKSON, b. November 17, 1867; d. January 17, 1869.

76. MARGARET LIVINGSTON CLARKSON, b. Tivoli, N. Y., April 15, 1870; m. September 28, 1907, D. McRA LIVINGSTON (son of Robert L. and Mary Singleton (McRa) Livingston).

77. EDITH ELEANOR CLARKSON, b. December 3, 1872.

78. HELENA VAN KORTLANDT CLARKSON, b. March 1, 1877; m. Tivoli, N. Y., May 26, 1909, EDWARD CRARY CAMMANN (son of Herman H. and Ella (Crary) Cammann).

Children of (28) Edward P. L. and Margaret Tonnele (Hall) Ludlow.

79. SUSAN LIVINGSTON LUDLOW, b. New York city, N. Y., June 19, 1866; m. HENRY PARISH, JR. (son of Henry Parish).

80. EDWARD HUNTER LUDLOW, b. New York city, N. Y., December 11, 1868.

Children of (30) Valentine Gill and Mary Livingston (Ludlow) Hall, Jr.

81. ANNA REBECCA HALL, b. New York city, N. Y., March 17, 1863; d. New York city, N. Y., December 7, 1892;

m. ELLIOT ROOSEVELT (son of Theodore Roosevelt). Issue two children.

82. ELIZABETH LIVINGSTON HALL, b. New York city, N. Y., August 26, 1865; m. STANLEY MORTIMER. Issue two children.

83. VALENTINE GILL HALL, 3d, b. New York city, N. Y., November 12, 1867.

84. MARY LIVINGSTON HALL, b. New York city, N. Y., October 4, 1869; d. New York city, N. Y., December 3, 1872.

85. EDWARD LUDLOW HALL, b. New York city, N. Y., March 17, 1872; m. JOSEPHINE B. ZABRISKIE (dau. of Augustus and Josephine (Boream) Zabriskie).

86. EDITH LIVINGSTON HALL, b. New York city, N. Y., m. February 16, 1904, WILLIAM FORBES MORGAN, JR. (son of William Forbes and Ellie (Robinson) Morgan); b. New York city, N. Y., September 22, 1877. Issue two children.

87. MAUDE LIVINGSTON HALL, b. New York city, N. Y., April 9, 1877; m. April 21, 1900, LAWRENCE WATERBURY (son of James and Kate (Furman) Waterbury); b. Westchester, N. Y., March 31, 1878. Issue two children.

Children of (31) Col. Frederick and Mary (Livingston) de Peyster.

88. MARY LIVINGSTON de PEYSTER, b. "Clermont," Columbia county, N. Y., December 22, 1865; d. Dutchess county, N. Y., September, 1874, unm.

89. CLERMONT LIVINGSTON de PEYSTER, b. "Clermont," Columbia county, N. Y., June 12, 1867; d. December 2, 1889, unm.

Child of (32) John Henry and Catherine Livingston (Hammersley) Livingston.

90. KATHARINE LIVINGSTON LIVINGSTON, b. New York, April 10, 1873; m. June 2, 1900, LAWRENCE TIMPSON (son of Theodore Timpson, of Dutchess county, New York). Issue three children.

Child of (32) John Henry and Alice Delafield (Clarkson) Livingston.

91. HONORIA ALICE LIVINGSTON, b. New York city, N. Y., February 7, 1909.

Children of (34) Robert R. and Mary (Tailor) Livingston.

92. ROBERT REGINALD LIVINGSTON, b. August 4, 1888.

93. LAURA SUFFERN LIVINGSTON, b. New York, March 19, 1891.

Children of (36) Goodhue and Louisa (Robb) Livingston.

94. GOODHUE LIVINGSTON, JR., b. New York city, N. Y., March 30, 1897.

95. CORNELIA THAYER LIVINGSTON, b. November 20, 1903.

Children of (38) Robert R. L. and Mary Ludlum (Otis) Clarkson.

96. JAMES OTIS CLARKSON, b. "Clermont," Columbia county, N. Y., July 11, 1888.

97. MARY A. CLARKSON, b. "Clermont," Columbia county, N. Y., July 6, 1889.

98. PAULINE LIVINGSTON CLARKSON, b. New York city, N. Y., April 1, 1893.

99. ELIZABETH CLARKSON, b. New York city, N. Y., March 28, 1896.

Child of (40) Richard Montgomery and Mary (Parke) Tillotson.

100. JEANETTA CATHERINE TILLOTSON, b. Leavenworth, Kan., November 11, 1871; m. January 30, 1890, JOSEPH HAYES ACKLEN (son of J. A. S. and Adelia (Hayes) Acklen); b. Nashville, Tenn., May 20, 1850. Issue seven children.

Child of (41) Robert Livingston and Mary (Gillespie) Tillotson.

101. HOWARD TILLOTSON, b. Mongaup Valley, Sullivan county, N. Y., November 2, 1850; m. November 5, 1879, ALMA

C. BURR (dau. of Andrew and Deborah Jane (Fayerweather) Burr); b. Bethel, Sullivan county, N. Y. Issue three children.

Children of (45) Col. William Pratt and Cornelia Ridgely (Tillotson) Wainwright.

102. JOHN TILLOTSON WAINWRIGHT, b. June 9, 1864; d. Colorado Springs, February 22, 1900; m. April 19, 1897, ANNA RUTHERFURD PEABODY (dau. of Arthur J. and Eleanor E. (Russell) Peabody). Issue one child.

103. WILLIAM PRATT WAINWRIGHT, JR., b. June 19, 1866.

104. CHARLES HOWARD WAINWRIGHT, b. August 19, 1869.

Children of (46) James and Margaret Maria (Ridgely) Schott.

105. CHARLES RIDGELY SCHOTT, b. Baltimore, Md., November 11, 1847; d. New York city, N. Y., July 11, 1878; m. March 30, 1872, ELLEN LINDSAY FISHER (dau. of Joseph Coleman and Sarah (Lindsay) Fisher, of Philadelphia, Pa.); b. Indiana, January 31, 1846. Issue two children.

106. SCHUYLER LIVINGSTON SCHOTT, b. Dundaff, Pa., May 5, 1849; d. Richmond, Va., 1875.

107. REBECCA CORNELIA SCHOTT, b. New York, November 24, 1850; m. firstly, September 1, 1870, WILLIAM ENGLES SCHOTT (son of William and Mary (Mixwell) Schott of Philadelphia, Pa.); b. September 1, 1847; d. Philadelphia, Pa., February 22, 1882. They had issue one child. M. secondly, May 15, 1902, WILLIAM HENRY WETMORE (son of Abram Brinkerhoff and Martha Emma (Fobes) Wetmore); b. New York, February 24, 1864.

108. MARGARET RIDGELY SCHOTT, b. New York, September 14, 1853; d. New York, March 11, 1856.

Children of (47) William Henry and Elizabeth Augusta (Ridgely) Hunt.

109. RIDGELY HUNT, b. New Orleans, La., January 31, 1854; m. firstly, Washington, D. C., November 3, 1886, VIR-

GINIA de LANCEY KEARNY (dau. of Gen. Philip and Agnes (Maxwell) Kearny); b. Newark, N. J., November 5, 1861; d. Flushing, Long Island, N. Y., January 14, 1897. They had issue two children. M. secondly, October 16, 1901, MARGARITA CRESS (dau. of Louis and Margaretta (Brantly) Cress); b. Charleston, South Carolina.

110. THOMAS HUNT, b. New Orleans, La., May 16, 1855; m. New York, April 14, 1888, HELEN JEWETT (dau. of Hugh Judge and Sarah (Guthrie) Jewett); b. Ohio.

111. RANDELL HUNT, b. New Orleans, La., October 30, 1856; d. San Francisco, Cal., January 24, 1898; m. St. Paul, Minn., May 5, 1880, EMILIE RADCLIFFE (dau. of Abraham M. and Mary (Lane) Radcliffe); b. Fort Wayne, Indiana. Issue five children.

112. WILLIAM HENRY HUNT, b. New Orleans, La., November 5, 1857; m. August 31, 1882, GERTRUDE UPSHUR (dau. of Admiral John H. and Kate A. (Williams) Upshur); b. Germantown, Pa., July 31, 1861. Issue four children.

113. LIVINGSTON HUNT, b. New Orleans, La., November 3, 1859; m. July 7, 1892, CATHARINE HOWLAND HUNT (dau. of Richard Morris and Catharine Clinton (Howland) Hunt); b. New York city, N. Y., May 22, 1868. Pay Director in United States Navy. Issue one child.

114. CORNELIA RIDGELY HUNT, b. New Orleans, La., February 4, 1861; m. Washington, D. C., November 15, 1905, Dr. WILLIAM KELLY NEWTON (son of Isaac and Hannah Humphreys (Claudwell) Newton, of Paterson, N. J.); b. New York city, N. Y., April 23, 1850; d. Paterson, N. J., December 20, 1909. He m. firstly Harriet Eckart.

115. GAILLARD HUNT, b. New Orleans, La., September 8, 1862; m. Washington, D. C., October 24, 1901, MARY GOODFELLOW (dau. of Henry and Eleanor (Brent) Goodfellow); b. Washington, D. C., April 16, 1871. Issue two children.

Children of (48) St. George and Cornelia Adelaide (Ridgely) Croghan.

116. CORNELIA LIVINGSTON CROGHAN, b. Louisville, Ky., May 9, 1847; d. San Francisco, Cal., May 30, 1878; m.

March 31, 1869, HORATIO GEORGE HORNER (son of William and Sophia (Shadwell) Horner); b. Chester, England, 1841; d. Redwood City, Cal., 1874. Issue one child.

117. LUCY SERENA CROGHAN, b. Ulster county, N. Y., May 23, 1850; m. December 11, 1866, SPENCER COCHRANE BROWNE (son of John Ross and Lucy Anna (Mitchell) Browne); b. Washington, D. C., September 9, 1845; d. Oakland, Cal., November 23, 1896. Issue five children.

118. GEORGE CROGHAN, b. "Locust Grove," Louisville, Ky., March 27, 1852.

119. ELIZABETH AUGUSTA CROGHAN, b. Ulster county, N. Y., July 31, 1854; m. 1876, Lieut. DUNCAN KENNEDY (son of Duncan and Clarissa (Spencer) Kennedy); b. Albany, N. Y., December 28, 1847; d. Cuba, April 12, 1906. Issue one child.

Children of (53) Robert Livingston and Anne Ayscough (Sands) Clarkson.

120. ADELAIDE LIVINGSTON CLARKSON, b. Newport, R. I., April 1, 1859; m. October 22, 1879, EDWIN JEREMIAH SPALL (son of Capt. George and Ann (Ballard) Spall); b. New York city, N. Y., March 7, 1852. Issue one child.

121. HARRIETTA STEVENS CLARKSON, b. New York, August 16, 1860; m. February 13, 1884, ARTHUR VAN VECHTEN (son of Junius and Helen (Van Vechten) Van Vechten); b. Brooklyn, New York city, N. Y., September 26, 1859. Issue five children.

122. ROBERT GOODHUE CLARKSON, b. New York city, N. Y., February 13, 1862; m. Darien, Conn., May 8, 1889, EMILY HARTMAN WRIGHT (dau. of Edward Markoe and Catherine Floyd (Delafield) Wright, of New York); b. New York city, N. Y., April 8, 1866. Issue three children.

123. EUGENE LIVINGSTON CLARKSON, b. December 16, 1863.

124. WILLIAM BAYARD CLARKSON, b. Fairfield, Conn., August 1, 1865.

125. ANNE SANDS CLARKSON, b. New York city, N. Y., November 15, 1866.

126. FANNIE MATILDA CLARKSON, b. January 28, 1868.

127. ALICE DELAFIELD CLARKSON, b. New York, July 27, 1869.

128. EUGENE LIVINGSTON CLARKSON, b. August 20, 1870.

129. EUGENE LIVINGSTON CLARKSON, b. October 20, 1871.

130. MAUD LIVINGSTON CLARKSON, b. Stratford, Conn., June 25, 1875.

Children of (57) Howard and Alice (Delafield) Clarkson.

131. ADELAIDE LIVINGSTON CLARKSON, b. New York city, N. Y., January 29, 1870; m. New York city, N. Y., April 11, 1898, CLERMONT LIVINGSTON CLARKSON (son of Thomas Streatfeild and Mary (Whitmarsh) Clarkson); b. August 9, 1861.

132. ALICE DELAFIELD CLARKSON, b. New York city, N. Y., January 9, 1872; m. New York city, November 9, 1906, JOHN HENRY LIVINGSTON (son of Clermont and Cornelia (Livingston) Livingston); b. "Oakhill," Columbia, N. Y., July 8, 1848. Issue one child.

133. JULIA FLOYD CLARKSON, b. New York city, N. Y., October 23, 1875; m. New York city, N. Y., April 28, 1897, EUGENE DEXTER HAWKINS (son of Dexter A. and Sophie T. (Meeks) Hawkins). Issue two children.

134. CORNELIA LIVINGSTON CLARKSON (twin), b. New York city, N. Y., April 19, 1878.

135. EMILY DELAFIELD CLARKSON (twin), b. New York city, N. Y., April 19, 1878; d. New York city, N. Y., December 9, 1887.

Children of (61) Maturin Livingston and Mary Coleman (Livingston) Delafield.

136. MATURIN LIVINGSTON DELAFIELD, JR., b. New York city, N. Y., September 29, 1869; m. firstly, New York city, N. Y., November 21, 1893, LETTICE LEE SANDS (dau. of Charles Edwin and Letitia Smith (Campbell) Sands); b.

Anandale, N. Y., August 10, 1871, by whom he had no issue; m. secondly, Dover, County Kent, England, October 21, 1909, HONORINE JULIA ELISABETH DANIEL DE PERNAY (dau. of Count Alphonse Pierre Eugene and Joanna Anna Amelia (de Correa) Daniel de Pernay); b. Paris, France, April 11, 1869. She m. firstly Louis Albert Maffert de Pelzer, by whom she had issue one child.

137. JOSEPH LIVINGSTON DELAFIELD, b. New York city, N. Y., March 19, 1871; m. New York city, N. Y., May 5, 1906, MARY RENWICK SLOANE (dau. of William Milligan and Mary Espy (Johnston) Sloane); b. Princeton, N. J., May 14, 1879. Issue one child.

138. JOHN ROSS DELAFIELD, b. "Fieldston," Riverdale-on-Hudson, New York city, N. Y., May 8, 1874; m. New York city, N. Y., June 14, 1904, VIOLETTA SUSAN ELIZABETH WHITE (dau. of John J. and Louisa Lawrance (Wetmore) White); b. Florence, Italy, May 10, 1875. Issue two children.

139. JULIA LIVINGSTON DELAFIELD, b. "Fieldston," Riverdale-on-Hudson, New York city, N. Y., October 14, 1875; m. New York city, N. Y., April 30, 1901, FREDERICK WILLIAM LONGFELLOW (son of Clark and Amanda B. (Gardner) Longfellow); b. Machias, Maine, February 13, 1870. Issue three children.

140. EDWARD COLEMAN DELAFIELD, b. "Sunswyck," West Hampton, Long Island, N. Y., July 10, 1877; m. New York city, N. Y., April 30, 1900, MARGARETTA STOCKTON BEASLEY (dau. of Mercer and Mary (Stockton) Beasley, Jr.); b. Trenton, N. J., November 2, 1878. Issue three children.

141. MARY LIVINGSTON DELAFIELD, b. "Fieldston," Riverdale-on-Hudson, New York city, N. Y., November 23, 1878.

142. HARRIET COLEMAN DELAFIELD, b. "Fieldston," Riverdale-on-Hudson, New York city, N. Y., May 7, 1880; m. New York city, N. Y., April 28, 1906, JARVIS POMEROY CARTER (son of Dr. Henry Skilton and Florence (Russell) Carter); b. New York city, N. Y., October 30, 1881. Issue two children.

143. EUGENE LIVINGSTON DELAFIELD, b. "Sunswyck," West Hampton, Long Island, N. Y., August 16, 1882;

m. Tennant, N. J., September 26, 1906, MARGARET NEVIUS WOODHULL (dau. of John T. and Margaret S. (Nevius) Woodhull); b. Trenton, N. J., March 22, 1879. Issue one child.

Child of (64) William B. S. and Katherine McCall (Livingston) Clymer.

144. GEORGE CLYMER, b. Washington, D. C., April 13, 1883; m. Boston, Mass., April 4, 1905, SUSAN WELLES STURGIS (dau. of Russell and Anne Outram (Bango) Sturgis, Jr.). Issue one child.

Children of (67) Frederick William and Matilda Corinna (Livingston) Satterlee.

145. CARROLL LIVINGSTON SATTERLEE, b. New York city, N. Y., July 3, 1865; d. New York city, N. Y., March 17, 1874.

146. FREDERICK ROWLAND SATTERLEE, b. New city, N. Y., June 24, 1869.

FIFTH GENERATION.

Children of (69) Robert Morgan Gibbes and Elizabeth (Marie) Barnwell.

147. MORGAN GIBBES BARNWELL, b. New York, December 3, 1884; d. New York, April 3, 1886.

148. CLERMONT LIVINGSTON BARNWELL, b. Tuxedo Park, N. Y., June 7, 1888.

Children of (81) Elliott and Anna Rebecca (Hall) Roosevelt.

149. ELEANOR ROOSEVELT, m. FRANKLIN DELANO ROOSEVELT (son of James and Sarah (Delano) Roosevelt). Issue one child.

150. G. HALL ROOSEVELT.

Children of (82) Stanley and Elizabeth Livingston (Hall) Mortimer.

151. EDITH MORTIMER.

152. STANLEY MORTIMER, JR.

*Children of (86) William Forbes and Edith Livingston (Hall)
Morgan, Jr.*

153. BARBARA LIVINGSTON MORGAN, b. New York city, N. Y.

154. WILLIAM FORBES MORGAN, 3RD., b. Tivoli, N. Y.

*Children of (87) Lawrence and Maude Livingston (Hall)
Waterbury.*

155. LAWRENCE WATERBURY, JR., b. New York city, N. Y., February 9, 1901.

156. ANNE LIVINGSTON WATERBURY, b. New York city, N. Y., November 19, 1904.

*Children of (90) Lawrence and Katherine L. (Livingston)
Timpson.*

157. THEODORE TIMPSON, b. Dutchess county, N. Y., 1901.

158. KATHERINE LIVINGSTON TIMPSON, b. Dutchess county, N. Y., February 19, 1903.

159. ROBERT CLERMONT LIVINGSTON TIMPSON, b. Benton House, Hampshire, England, May 14, 1908.

Children of (100) Joseph Hayes and Jeanetta Catherine (Tillotson) Acklen.

160. JEANETTA ACKLEN, b. Nashville, Tenn., May 7, 1891.

161. JOSEPH HAYES ACKLEN, JR., b. Nashville, Tenn., September 10, 1892; d. Nashville, Tenn., October 22, 1899.

162. CATHERINE PARKE ACKLEN, b. Nashville, Tenn., November 17, 1894.

163. PAULINE ACKLEN, b. Nashville, Tenn., January 28, 1896.

164. WILLIAM HAYES ACKLEN, b. Nashville, Tenn., November 2, 1900; d. Nashville, Tenn., January 15, 1907.

165. MARIA LIVINGSTON ACKLEN, b. Nashville, Tenn., October 8, 1904; d. Nashville, Tenn., December 30, 1907.

166. RICHARD MONTGOMERY ACKLEN, b. Nashville, Tenn., June 21, 1908.

Children of (101) Howard and Alma C. (Burr) Tillotson.

167. ROBERT LIVINGSTON TILLOTSON, b. Mongaup Valley, Sullivan county, N. Y., October 23, 1880.

168. EDITH MARIA TILLOTSON, b. Mongaup Valley, Sullivan county, N. Y., July 9, 1882; m. February 3, 1906, GEORGE HUNTINGTON FITCH (son of George Huntington and Mary Ann (Bliss) Fitch); b. Mystic, Conn., July 31, 1864.

169. ALICE MONTGOMERY TILLOTSON, b. Mongaup Valley, Sullivan county, N. Y., February 22, 1890.

Child of (102) John Tillotson and Anna Rutherford (Peabody) Wainwright.

170. JOHN TILLOTSON WAINWRIGHT, b. Rye, N. Y., October 8, 1898.

Children of (105) Charles Ridgely and Ellen Lindsay (Fisher) Schott.

171. JULIAN RIDGELY SCHOTT, b. New York city, N. Y., September 7, 1874; d. Newport, R. I., July, 1880.

172. CHARLOTTE SCHOTT, b. New York city, N. Y., October 16, 1877; m. September 20, 1904, WALTER COLES CABELL (son of John Grattan and Agnes (Coles) Cabell); b. Richmond, Va., October 13, 1874. Issue one child.

Child of (107) William Engles and Rebecca Cornelia (Schott) Schott.

173. MARGARET RIDGELY SCHOTT, b. Philadelphia, Pa., October 5, 1872; m. June 14, 1905, WILLIAM ORDWAY PARTRIDGE (son of George Sidney and Helen Derby (Catlin) Partridge); b. Paris, France, April 11, 1861. Issue one child.

Children of (109) Ridgely and Virginia de Lancey (Kearny) Hunt.

174. RIDGELY HUNT, JR., b. Washington, D. C., September 16, 1887.

175. VIRGINIA LIVINGSTON HUNT, b. Washington, D. C., July 19, 1890.

Children of (111) Randell and Emilie (Radcliffe) Hunt.

176. RADCLIFFE HUNT, b. Fargo, N. D., September 13, 1881; d. Wabasha, Minn., January 10, 1886.

177. WILLIAM HENRY HUNT, b. Fargo, N. D., September 16, 1882; d. Wabasha, Minn., January 10, 1886.

178. GAILLARD HUNT, b. St. Paul, Minn., July 8, 1884; d. St. Paul, Minn., January 21, 1886.

179. FLORIDE LOUISA HUNT, b. St. Paul, Minn., December 8, 1887.

180. NATHALIE HAMMOND HUNT, b. San Francisco, Cal., August 13, 1889.

Children of (112) William Henry and Gertrude (Upshur) Hunt.

181. ELIZABETH RIDGELY HUNT, b. Fort Benton, Montana, July 22, 1883; m. September 18, 1906, GEORGE WASHINGTON THOMPSON (son of William Prall and Grace (Hal-lester) Thompson of New York); b. New Rochelle, N. Y., April 7, 1878. Issue one child.

182. WILLIAM HENRY HUNT, JR., b. Washington, D. C., April 12, 1886.

183. HELEN UPSHUR HUNT, b. Helena, Montana, February 28, 1889.

184. GERTRUDE LIVINGSTON HUNT, b. Helena, Mont., November 19, 1898.

Child of (113) Livingston and Catherine Howland (Hunt) Hunt.

185. LIVINGSTON HUNT, JR., b. Newport, R. I., August 12, 1894.

Children of (115) Gaillard and Mary (Goodfellow) Hunt.

186. GAILLARD HUNT, b. Washington, D. C., April 9, 1903.

187. HENRY GOODFELLOW HUNT, b. Cherry Hill, Va., September 22, 1907.

Child of (116) Horatio George and Cornelia Livingston (Croghan) Horner.

188. MARY SOPHIA HORNER, b. April 30, 1870.

Children of (117) Spencer and Lucy Serena (Croghan) Browne.

189. CORNELIA RIDGELY BROWNE, b. Oakland, Cal., February 23, 1868; d. Oakland, Cal., June 22, 1882.

190. JOHN ROSS BROWNE, b. Oakland, Cal., June 14, 1870; d. Oakland, Cal., January 6, 1871.

191. LUCY MITCHELL BROWNE, b. Oakland, Cal., January 30, 1873; m. September 16, 1902, SYDNEY McMECHEN VAN WYCK, JR. (son of Sidney McMechen and Nannie Churchill (Crittenden) Van Wyck); b. Oakland, Cal., May 28, 1868.

192. FLORENCE ELIZABETH BROWNE, b. Oakland, Cal., September 2, 1875.

193. SPENCER COCHRANE BROWNE, JR., b. Oakland, Cal., March 1, 1885.

Child of (119) Duncan and Elizabeth Augusta (Croghan) Kennedy.

194. DUNCAN KENNEDY, JR., b. Annapolis, Md., November 29, 1876.

Child of (120) Edwin and Adelaide Livingston (Clarkson) Spall.

195. EDWARD CLARKSON SPALL, b. Stratford, Conn., September 14, 1880.

Children of (121) Arthur and Harrietta Stevens (Clarkson) Van Vechten.

196. ROBERT CLARKSON VAN VECHTEN, b. Brooklyn, New York city, N. Y., November 10, 1884.

197. ARTHUR LIVINGSTON VAN VECHTEN, b. Brooklyn, New York city, N. Y., February 4, 1887.

198. EUGENE MONTGOMERY VAN VECHTEN, b. Roselle, N. J., May 7, 1889.

199. HARRIETTE CLARKSON VAN VECHTEN, b. November 1, 1893.

200. SCHUYLER LIVINGSTON VAN VECHTEN, b. July 21, 1896.

Children of (122) Robert Goodhue and Emily Hartman (Wright) Clarkson.

201. DOROTHY DELAFIELD CLARKSON, b. Sewaren, N. J., November 28, 1890.

202. ROBERT LIVINGSTON CLARKSON, b. Sewaren, N. J., July 26, 1892.

203. WILLIAM BAYARD CLARKSON, JR., b. Sewaren, N. J., August 1, 1894.

Children of (133) Eugene Dexter and Julia Floyd (Clarkson) Hawkins.

204. DEXTER CLARKSON HAWKINS.

205. HOWARD CLARKSON HAWKINS, d. young.

Child of (137) Joseph Livingston and Mary Renwick (Sloane) Delafield.

206. JOSEPH LIVINGSTON DELAFIELD, JR., b. New York city, N. Y., January 20, 1910.

Children of (138) John Ross and Violetta S. E. (White) Delafield.

207. JOHN WHITE ROSS DELAFIELD, b. New York city, N. Y., May 12, 1905.

208. RICHARD MONTGOMERY DELAFIELD, b. New York city, N. Y., January 9, 1909.

Children of (139) Frederick William and Julia Livingston (Delafield) Longfellow.

209. JULIA DELAFIELD LONGFELLOW, b. "Fieldston," Riverdale-on-Hudson, New York city, N. Y., April 28, 1902.

210. FREDERICK LIVINGSTON LONGFELLOW, b. Roque Bluff, Maine, August 18, 1903.

211. ELIZABETH DELAFIELD LONGFELLOW, b. New York city, N. Y., February 14, 1905.

*Children of (140) Edward Coleman and Margaretta Stockton
(Beasley) Delafield.*

212. MATURIN LIVINGSTON DELAFIELD, 3RD, b. New York city, N. Y., March 17, 1901.

213. MARGARETTA STOCKTON DELAFIELD, b. New York city, N. Y., November 3, 1904.

214. EDWARD COLEMAN DELAFIELD, JR., b. New York city, N. Y., February 14, 1906.

Children of (142) Jarvis Pomeroy and Harriet Coleman (Delafield) Carter.

215. JARVIS DELAFIELD CARTER, b. New York city, N. Y., May 16, 1907.

216. HARRIET DELAFIELD CARTER, b. New York city, N. Y., March 21, 1909.

Child of (143) Eugene Livingston and Margaret Nevius (Woodhull) Delafield.

217. EUGENE LIVINGSTON DELAFIELD, JR., b. Glen Ridge, N. J., November 6, 1907.

Child of (144) George and Susan Welles (Sturgis) Clymer.

218. WILLIAM BRANDFORD SHUBRICK CLYMER, b. Boston, Mass., January 20, 1906.

SIXTH GENERATION.

Child of (149) Franklin Delano and Eleanor (Roosevelt) Roosevelt.

219. FRANKLIN DELANO ROOSEVELT, JR., d. New York city, N. Y., November 1, 1909.

Child of (172) Walter Coles and Charlotte (Schott) Cabell.

220. CHARLOTTE RIDGELY CABELL, b. Newport, R. I., December 30, 1906.

*Child of (173) William Ordway and Margaret Ridgely (Schott)
Partridge.*

221. MARGARET LIVINGSTON PARTRIDGE, b. New
York city, N. Y., March 6, 1909.

*Child of (181) George Washington and Elizabeth Ridgely (Hunt)
Thompson.*

222. GEORGE W. THOMPSON, JR., b. July 12, 1907.

APPENDIX E.

THE FORT LEE PHYTOSAUR.

By JESSE E. HYDE,

Department of Geology, Columbia University.



THE FORT LEE PHYTOSAUR.

By JESSE E. HYDE.

Department of Geology, Columbia University.

[NOTE: Following is a summary of an address delivered by the writer at a meeting of the American Scenic and Historic Preservation Society held in the city of New York on January 10, 1911. (See page 64 preceding.) Since this manuscript was sent to the printer, members of the corps of the American Museum of Natural History have determined that the remains are not those of a dinosaur, but one on the Phytosauria, another extinct group intermediate between the dinosaurs and crocodiles. It is probable that in life it remained close to the banks of streams and did not roam far over the supposedly semi-arid plains of Triassic time as the dinosaurs are supposed to have done and as it is intimated in the latter part of this paper that it may have done.—J. E. H.]

The discovery of the remains of a large vertebrate, which was probably a dinosaur, within sight of New York city, and the realization that these creatures once wandered over the site of Manhattan Island have aroused in the minds of the present inhabitants a passing but more than usual interest in the huge reptiles of the past. The former presence of such animals in the eastern United States has long been known and a few skeletons have been recovered, but this is the first to be found nearer to New York city than the Connecticut valley. (The mastodon is, of course, excluded from consideration, being a mammal and of relatively very recent date.) Thus, while it is to be expected that the skeleton may be of some importance geologically and paleontologically, the principal interest to the vast majority of people centers in its presence so close to the metropolis.

The skeleton was detected late in February or early in March of 1910 by Messrs. A. C. Boyle, Jr., now of the University of Wyoming; D. D. Condit, of Columbia University, and the writer, in the bank of the Hudson river almost immediately below Fort Lee and possibly 100 yards above the ruins of the old pavilion at the toe of Fort Lee point. The spot is about opposite to One Hundred and Sixtieth street of New York city. It was so low in the bank as to be splashed by the waves by full tide and

possibly covered by unusually high floods. It was imbedded in the hard, red, mud rocks, which, with coarse sandstones, underlie the Palisade trap sheet. The bones were exposed in section along a vertical surface for perhaps six feet and to a thickness of less than a foot.

Because of uncertainty as to the exact nature of the material, the writer revisited the spot late in March with Mr. C. N. Fenner, an assiduous student of the New Jersey Triassic, and small fragments were secured, which, on testing, showed the presence of the element phosphorus, an almost certain indication in this case that the material was bone.

With this assurance the matter was placed entirely in the hands of the authorities of the American Museum of Natural History in New York city, who at once entered into negotiations to obtain permission to remove the twenty or twenty-five feet of sandstone which covered the block in which the animal was entombed. After considerable delay, the consent of the owners of the land was secured and a few days before Christmas, almost a year after the discovery, the dinosaurian sarcophagus, perhaps eight feet in length by four in width and two feet thick, was transferred to the museum. (See plate 24.)

Soon after the matter had been formally turned over to the museum, Dr. George F. Kunz, the President of the American Scenic and Historic Preservation Society, being told of the find, became very much interested and offered every influence of the Society to aid in obtaining permission to quarry the block, or, if necessary, the title to the spot, and it is probable that had not the matter at that time been wholly in the hands of the museum authorities, the Society would have had a very considerable part in the securing of the remains.

The immediate geological relationships of the sediments in which the specimen was found need be only briefly reviewed. The Secretary of the Society, Dr. Edward Haganan Hall, has vividly and accurately portrayed the structure of Manhattan Island and the Palisades in the Society's publications,* and the reader is referred to his description for a full, popular account.

* The Palisades of the Hudson river. Eleventh Annual Report, 1906, of the American Scenic and Historic Preservation Society, pp. 193-198, pl. opp. p. 192.

The remains were found in rocks which belong to the Newark series, which is generally conceded to be Upper Triassic in age. This series consists largely of sandstones and shales. The time of their formation was a period of volcanic activity in eastern North America, and, as a result, while they were accumulating, molten rocks were frequently poured out on the surface and formed broad lava fields, to be later covered by more muds and sandstones. The Orange mountains are formed of such hardened lavas.

But sometimes the melted rocks rising through the crust did not break through the overlying mass of sediments, but spread out as a sheet hundreds of feet below the surface, and hardened there. The Palisade trap sheet was formed in this manner. Most citizens of New York city (one dare not say all) are familiar with the Palisade rock, at least from a distance. But few have ever observed the sandstones and shales which underlie the sheet. They can be seen at many points, but nowhere better than at the spot where the dinosaur was found and for some distance along the water's edge above and below that spot. It is in these sandstones and shales that the dinosaur was preserved. This fact is emphasized because some have thought that it was found in the Palisade trap sheet. On the contrary, it would be almost impossible to have it preserved if the trap rock in its molten condition had come in contact with the bones.

As just stated, the rocks in which it was found are a part of what is known as the Newark series, belonging in the Upper Triassic. This means that among land vertebrates the animal is very old, although by no means the oldest. The geologist is not accustomed to thinking of geological time in terms of years or of any other unit which marks human progression, but the attempt has occasionally been made to express its lapse in that way. The latest is by Professor Schuchert, of Yale University,* according to whose calendar the Fort Lee dinosaur is about 10,000,000 or 11,000,000 years old. This figure is so vast that it has no meaning whatever to the human mind, but it is of significance when compared with the age which Professor Schuchert assigns to the entire series of fossil-bearing rocks, that is, back to the beginning of

* Bull. Geol. Soc. Am. Vol. 20, pl. 101.

the Cambrian, about 30,000,000 years. These figures are, of course, only approximations, and widely different results have been obtained by different persons attempting to determine them, although estimates frequently give much greater figures.

Rocks of the Newark series are found in two principal areas in the eastern United States. One of these is in the Connecticut valley, extending from the northern part of Massachusetts southward to the Sound. The other begins at the west shore of the Hudson river in New York and New Jersey and extends from there southward as a distinct belt lying southeast of the Highlands. It is continued across Pennsylvania and Maryland into northern Virginia, lying southeast of the Appalachians throughout. In addition a few scattered patches are found as far south as North Carolina.

Abundant footprints of dinosaurs, many of them very large, are found in the Connecticut valley deposits, and some six or eight skeletons have been recovered, none of them of an animal over eight feet in length. The last of these skeletons was found during the past winter at Mt. Holyoke, Mass. In the Appalachian belt of Triassic, on the other hand, footprints are scarce, and so far as the writer is aware, no bones have been found except a few at Upper Milford, Pa., in 1847. Thus the new one is certainly the first one to be found in New Jersey and probably the most complete yet obtained in the Appalachian belt, although itself quite imperfect. If the present indications are correct it will also have the distinction of being about fifteen feet in length.

When the New York city papers announced the discovery, considerable interest was aroused in the question of whether or not the dinosaur was a commuter. Probably, in fact almost certainly, it was. Without entering into a discussion of how it is known, the geography of the vicinity of New York at the time when the animal was in the flesh may be briefly outlined. When the dinosaur was alive the area east of the present Hudson river from the Highlands of the Hudson at least as far south as New York bay, was probably one of mountainous altitude. Similarly, as at present, the Highlands belt of New Jersey was probably a mountain range, but it is not necessary to suppose any great elevation for either. Between them and occupying the present Triassic belt, was

a broad, flat trough in which sands, gravels and muds were accumulating, not under water as in the ocean (the idea of a few years ago), but on the surface of the land as in the case in the Sahara and the western deserts to-day. For we know that the Newark series was accumulated sub-aerially and probably under a semi-arid climate. Intermitten streams and storm floods carried the debris from the mountains on either side into this basin and gradually filled it. The abundance of mud-cracks shows the continual recurrence of shallow water and conditions of desiccation. The Hudson river did not exist until long periods after. It was across these broad, sandy stretches and mud flats that our dinosaur roved, and since no river or other natural barrier obstructed the path, it is but reasonable to suppose that it, or its kind, at times wandered into the confines of what is now New York city.

The Fort Lee dinosaur probably can never be mounted in its natural pose, as are many of the skeletons of these animals in the various museums of the country. As has been said, it was found at the water's edge and certainly some of it has been removed by the wash of the Hudson's waves — how much is not yet determined. In addition, the Palisade trap sheet was intruded as a glowing-hot, molten mass at no great distance above where the skeleton was imbedded, and the heat has so altered the bones that they are very tender and fragile. Imbedded as they are in a very tough matrix, all that can be hoped for is to uncover them and place them on exhibition scattered across the surface of the slab, just as they were covered after being scattered by the elements over the surface of the old stream flood-plain of Triassic time, 10,000,000 years ago.



APPENDIX F.

PALISADES AND HIGHLANDS INTERSTATE PARK.

CEREMONIES OF CONVEYANCE AT BEAR MOUNTAIN,

October 29, 1910.



PALISADES AND HIGHLANDS INTERSTATE PARK.

CEREMONIES OF CONVEYANCE AT BEAR MOUNTAIN, OCTOBER 29, 1910.

In the Fifteenth Annual Report (1910) of the American Scenic and Historic Preservation Society, we gave an account of the generous tender of 10,000 acres of land and \$1,000,000 of money made to the State of New York by Mrs. Mary W. Harriman and the concurrent offers of money amounting to over \$1,500,000 additional by a number of public-spirited men and women. We have also given, in the body of the present report (pages 116-122, *ante*) further particulars concerning the legislation bearing on the subject, and the vote of the electors of the State on November 8, 1910, ratifying the act of the Legislature authorizing the issue of \$2,500,000 of bonds for the extension and improvement of the park under the jurisdiction of the Palisades Interstate Park Commission.

In anticipation of the fulfilment of the conditions of Mrs. Harriman's offer, the ceremony of conveying her gift took place on a small plateau at the foot of Bear mountain in the Highlands, overlooking one of the most picturesque stretches of the Hudson river, on Saturday, October 29, 1910. By invitation the American Scenic and Historic Preservation Society was officially represented by its President, George Frederick Kunz, Ph. D., Sc. D. Simultaneously with the conveyance of the Harriman gift, a tract of 700 acres of State land, once intended for a new prison reservation, was also officially turned over to the Palisades Interstate Park Commission in accordance with the act referred to in the body of this report.

The Palisades Interstate Park Commission is composed of the following members:

Hon. Nathan F. Barrett, of New Rochelle, N. Y.

Hon. William B. Dana, of Englewood, N. J.

Hon. Abram De Ronde, of Englewood, N. J.

Hon. Franklin W. Hopkins, of Alpine, N. J.

Hon. William A. Linn, of Hackensack, N. J.

Hon. George W. Perkins, of New York, N. Y.

Hon. William H. Porter, of New York, N. Y.

Hon. D. McNeely Stauffer, of Yonkers, N. Y.

Hon. Edwin A. Stevens, of Hoboken, N. J.

Hon. J. Du Pratt White, of Nyack, N. Y.

Mr. Perkins is President of the New York Commission as organized for the State of New York, and Mr. Stevens is President of the Commission as organized for New Jersey. Mr. White is Secretary.

Arrival of Ceremonial Party.

The 10.15 A. M. train northbound on the West Shore railroad made a special stop at Bear mountain to allow those from New York to alight conveniently near the place where the ceremonies were to be held. Soon after the arrival of the company, luncheon was served in the large house near the railroad, which was once used by the prison warden while superintending the convicts formerly working on the now abandoned prison site.

After luncheon the party proceeded in automobiles and afoot to a small plateau on the summit of a hill about half a mile back from the river, where a temporary platform had been erected for the ceremonies. There were about 150 persons present including:

Mrs. Mary W. Harriman, Hon. Howard R. Bayne, Mr. and Mrs. W. J. Beardsley, Hon. and Mrs. Abram De Ronde, Mr. Charles H. Dickey, Mr. Charles T. Ford, Mr. Averill W. Harriman, Miss Carol Harriman, Mr. Roland Harriman, Hon. and Mrs. Franklin W. Hopkins, Mrs. Hoppin, George Frederick Kunz, Ph. D., Sc. D., Mr. Abram R. Lawrence, Judge Robert S. Lovett, Hon. and Mrs. William J. McKay, Mr. George McLaughlin, Mrs. J. Pierpont Morgan, Hon. Benjamin B. Odell, Hon. Rutledge I. Odell, Mr. Charles A. Peabody, Hon. and Mrs. George W. Perkins, Miss Dorothy Perkins, Mr. and Mrs. Henry Phipps, Mr. and Mrs. William H. Porter, Mr. Sereno S. Pratt, Maj.-Gen. Charles F. Roe, Mrs. Herbert L. Satterlee, Miss Adelaide Skeel, Mr. George S. Skiff, Mr. and Mrs. Leonard H. Smith, Hon. and Mrs. D. McN. Stauffer, Adj.-Gen. William Verbeck, Mr. and Mrs. John C. West, Capt. George A. White, Hon. and Mrs. J. Du Pratt White.

A Beautiful Scene.

Although the company was small, the ceremony, in its remote and picturesque environment, was one of the most impressive along the Hudson since the memorable series of ceremonies during the Hudson-Fulton celebration in 1909. Nature itself had provided the setting. On three sides of the little plateau were the hills which form the rugged ground clustering about Bear mountain. Just across the Hudson towered Anthony's Nose, jutting out into the river, and toward the north rose the summit of Storm King, the highest and most rugged of the mountains. All were colored red and gold by the autumn foliage, a natural picture on which the group of men and women on the plateau gazed in admiration during the hour or more of the ceremony. (See plate 15.)

All that was artificial about the scene was the platform which had been constructed at the edge of the plateau, a flagstaff which had been reared and a gun from West Point under command of Sergeant H. C. Leib, which fired the salute to the flags of New York, New Jersey and the nation as they were raised by the daughters of Mrs. Harriman and of Mr. Perkins over the land which was being given as a playground for the public.

Conveyance of Abandoned Prison Tract.

The ceremony was opened by the Hon. William J. McKay, of Newburgh, a member of the New Prison Commission, who presented to the Palisades Interstate Park Commission the deed to the 700-acre tract once intended for the new Sing Sing prison. In the course of his address Mr. McKay said:

"It seems to have been the custom for those in possession of this tract of land to transfer it to others to be used for a better purpose. The red men were compelled to leave it to be occupied by the first white settlers. The Hessians, when in the employ of the English government at the time of the Revolutionary War, when in camp on this same tract, were attacked so bravely and so fiercely by our forefathers that they were not only compelled to retreat, but so many of them were slain that for many years the beautiful lake on this property was known as Bloody pond or Hessian lake. Through the courtesy of the Palisades Interstate Park

Commissioners the New Prison Commission is able to make a more orderly retreat from the land which was at one time designed to be a prison reservation. Had the land remained in possession of the Prison Commission, it would have been occupied in future years by from 1,500 to 2,000 convicts, but since the new purpose had been decided upon it would add greatly to the beauty of the interstate park.

"It is therefore with great pleasure that the Commission of New Prisons formally transfers this 700-acre tract of land on old Bear mountain to the Commissioners of the Palisades Interstate Park of New York and New Jersey. And we know from what you have performed in the preservation of the beautiful Palisades along the Hudson that every dollar given for use of your Commission by the States of New York and New Jersey will be honestly and prudently expended."

Prison Tract Accepted.

The Hon. J. Du Pratt White, a member and the Secretary of the Palisades Interstate Park Commission, formally accepted the prison tract, saying that the Commission was fully appreciative of the trust imposed upon it. He said that the Commission believed that the Legislature, in rescuing the tract from use as a penal reservation and dedicating it to the public as a park, had done wisely.

After sketching the probable scope of the park in future years and mentioning the other large gifts to the park, provided the voters approved the action of the Legislature in providing for a bond issue of \$2,500,000 for the use of the Palisades Interstate Park Commissioners, he continued:

"One of these donors, George W. Perkins, is, and has been from the first, the President of the Interstate Park Commission of New York. I would not feel it right if I should not avail myself of this my first public opportunity to speak of his work as a commissioner. Besides his last handsome contribution of \$50,000 he has in the ten years during which we have served expended thousands of dollars from his private purse for the conducting and furtherance of the various features of the work of this Commission — expenditures that never will appear in the annals

of the Commission, and still further at a time that was critical in the history of the work he contributed quietly the sum of \$12,000. His time, his thought, his advice, and his energy have unstintedly been devoted toward the accomplishment of what has been done. I say this with confidence that it will meet with the approval and receive the confirmation of my fellow-commissioners, although absolutely without consultation with them."

Letter from Justice Hughes.

The following letter from Mr. Justice Charles E. Hughes, recently Governor of the State of New York, was then read:

EXECUTIVE CHAMBER,
ALBANY.

HON. GEORGE W. PERKINS, *President, Palisades Interstate Park Commission, New York City:*

DEAR SIR.—I thank you for the invitation to be present on the occasion of the delivery to the Palisades Park Commission of the lands and money which Mrs. Harriman has given to the State, and of the formal assumption by the Commission of the control of the site which had been set apart for a prison and is now to form a part of the proposed park.

It would give me the greatest pleasure to meet with the Commission on this auspicious occasion and again to express my appreciation of the important benefaction which the State has received and of the exceptional opportunity which lies within its grasp.

I sincerely trust that the people will approve at the coming election the extension of the Highland park and the creation of the necessary obligations of the State for that purpose, so that the other gifts which have been so generously offered may be secured. Surely no one at this time can adequately estimate the benefit to the people of the State, and particularly to those who live in Greater New York, of this public recreation ground of unrivaled beauty, close to the metropolis.

I send you my best wishes for this new enterprise, and I congratulate the members of the Commission on their opportunity to serve the State in connection with it.

Very sincerely yours,

CHARLES E. HUGHES.

Letter from Governor Fort.

The following letter from the Hon. J. Franklin Fort, Governor of New Jersey, was also read:

STATE OF NEW JERSEY,

EXECUTIVE DEPARTMENT,

TRENTON, N. J., Oct. 21, 1910.

MR. GEORGE W. PERKINS, *President, Palisades Park Commission, New York City*:

MY DEAR MR. PERKINS.—Your letter of the 13th inst. was duly received and I have delayed a reply hoping to be with you on the 29th, but I now find that public engagements make this impossible.

I very much regret that I cannot be present when Mrs. Harri-man presents the State with the deeds for the splendid gift of land which she is contributing to the great State Park. It is very gratifying to me that the Legislature of New Jersey, at its last session, appropriated \$500,000 toward this project, provided the State of New York appropriate \$2,500,000 — about which, I take it, there is no doubt, as the people will certainly vote at the coming election for the necessary bond issue for this purpose.

I look upon the completion of this enterprise and the establishment of the Henry Hudson boulevard as of very great importance to the people of the States of New York and New Jersey. No work of a public character within my knowledge has been performed more creditably than the work of your Commission in carrying out this great Palisades Park project.

The preservation of the Palisades which the Commission has already accomplished, was in itself a splendid work, and when to this is added Mrs. Harriman's great gift and a boulevard making it possible for the citizens of New York and New Jersey to avail themselves of her generosity, there will have been established a monument of which every one may well be proud. The population of the two States is growing so rapidly that there is constantly arising a greater interest in public breathing places for the people, and this one will be the most superb of its kind anywhere in the Eastern States.

Let me join with your Commission in recognition of the splendid public spirit which has actuated Mrs. Harriman and the other

individuals who, in addition to gifts of land, are contributing to the enterprise something over \$2,500,000 in money, and express the hope that its full fruition may soon be an accomplished fact.

With kind regards, believe me,

Sincerely yours,

JOHN FRANKLIN FORT.

Letter from Mayor Gaynor.

The following letter from the Hon. William J. Gaynor, Mayor of the city of New York, was read:

OFFICE OF THE MAYOR,

NEW YORK.

Oct. 27, 1910.

GEORGE W. PERKINS, Esq., *President of the Palisades Park Commission, New York City:*

DEAR MR. PERKINS.—I should be most glad to attend personally the ceremonies at Bear Mountain-on-the-Hudson on Saturday, October 29th, on the occasion of the turning over to the Palisades Park Commission of 10,000 acres of land by Mrs. Harriman as a gift and of 700 acres of land by the Prison Commission and also the giving of a check for \$1,000,000 to the Commission by Mrs. Harriman for the development of the land. I hope it will be remembered that on the forthcoming election day the people of the State are to vote on the question of authorizing an issue of \$2,500,000 State bonds to be used also in the development of the Park. Private individuals have already contributed the sum of \$2,500,000 for that purpose, and the people of the State may well contribute a like amount by authorizing the said bond issue. The park will be one of the grandest in the world, lying along the Palisades on the Hudson, and easily accessible from the New York side of the river by ferries established at intervals. It will be a great thing for the people of the city of New York and the whole State.

Sincerely yours,

W. J. GAYNOR,

Mayor.

The Governor's Thanks to Mrs. Harriman.

Adjutant-General Verbeck, representing the Hon. Horace White, Governor of the State of New York, was introduced by Mr. J. Du Pratt White, and said that he was instructed by the Governor to thank Mrs. Harriman and the other donors for their unparalleled gift, the magnitude and benefit of which could hardly yet be appreciated by the people.

Flag-raising and Salute.

At the conclusion of Adjutant-General Verbeck's address "colors" were sounded by Bugler Edward Glaser, of West Point Military Academy. As the bugle notes echoed among the mountains, a large American flag, the gift of Mr. Eben E. Olcott, was unfurled, and the halyards handed to Miss Carol Harriman and Miss Dorothy Perkins. As the Stars and Stripes rose toward the top of the flagstaff two more flags, those of New York State and New Jersey, were raised and an artillery salute of nineteen guns was fired. At the same time everyone stood up and the men bared their heads.

Conveyance of Mrs. Harriman's Gift.

At the conclusion of the salute, Mr. Averill W. Harriman, son of Mrs. Harriman, who had been sitting near his mother, rose with an envelope in his hand, and, advancing to the middle of the platform, addressed the Hon. George W. Perkins, President of the Palisades Interstate Park Commission, as follows:

"In accordance with a long-cherished plan of my father to give to the State of New York, for the use of the people, a portion of the Arden estate, and acting in behalf of my mother, I now present to the Commissioners of the Palisades Park the land comprising the gift. I also hand you my mother's contribution to the expense of future development of the Harriman Park. It is her hope and mine that through all the years to come the health and happiness of future generations will be advanced by these gifts."

He handed the envelope containing three checks, one for \$500,000, the other two making up the difference of the \$1,000,000, to Mr. Perkins. The deed for the 10,000 acres of land was with the checks.

Mr. Perkins' Address of Acceptance.

Holding the envelope in his hand, Mr. Perkins said:

"Beyond all doubt this day is to be a historic one, for it marks the veritable beginning of what will certainly become one of the largest, most beautiful, and practical recreation grounds in all the world.

"For ten years persistent effort has been made by the Palisades Park Commission to stop the destruction of the Palisades of the Hudson and to acquire by purchase the entire face of the Palisades from Fort Lee to Nyack. This has been accomplished, and the title to this long stretch of unsurpassed scenery is now vested in the States of New York and New Jersey, and all question of the Palisades of the Hudson being destroyed or despoiled is forever disposed of and the matchless grandeur of this section preserved for the people for all time.

"When the Palisades Commission took up its work ten years ago the Palisades were practically unknown except as viewed from a distance, and were rarely visited by any one. As the blasting was stopped the cliffs were made somewhat accessible to the people of New York and New Jersey, and in increasing numbers during the last few years people have come to use this district for park purposes.

"During the season of 1909 over 1,000 permits were issued to various people to have picnics and camps along the shore. During the season just closed about the same number of permits were issued, and it is estimated that approximately 5,000 people enjoyed the shores of the Palisades during their holidays and Sundays. In addition, many hundreds visited the district for a few hours at a time.

"The natural and uninterrupted pathway from New York city to the Highlands of the Hudson is at the foot of the Palisades along the west bank of the river; for on this strip of land running from a point opposite Grant's Tomb to Nyack, can be constructed a roadway without a single intersecting street.

"As the Palisades Park Commission was completing its work of acquiring the face of the Palisades, and contemplating the construction of this roadway, Mrs. Harriman made her priceless offer to the State of New York of 10,000 acres of land and \$1,000,000 for a great State park.

"With this generous gift as an incentive the Commission was immediately able to secure these other gifts: John D. Rockefeller,

\$500,000; J. Pierpont Morgan, \$500,000; Margaret Olivia Sage, \$50,000; Helen Miller Gould, \$25,000; Ellen F. James and Arthur Curtiss James, \$25,000; William K. Vanderbilt, \$50,000; William Rockefeller, \$50,000; George F. Baker, \$50,000; James Stillman, \$50,000; John D. Archbold, \$50,000; Frank A. Munsey, \$50,000; Henry Phipps, \$50,000; E. T. Stotesbury, \$50,000; E. H. Gary, \$50,000; V. Everit Macy, \$25,000; George W. Perkins, \$50,000; Cleveland H. Dodge and James McLean, \$25,000.

"It was further able to secure an appropriation from the State of New Jersey of \$500,000, and was able to induce the New York Legislature to authorize the issuance of \$2,500,000 of bonds, subject to a favorable vote by the people at the November elections — the proceeds of this bond issue to be used in the further development of the park. The several contributions enumerated above, including that of New Jersey, and aggregating about \$2,125,000, are conditioned, however, on the people of New York voting favorably on the \$2,500,000 bond issue proposition on the 8th of next month.

"If such a favorable vote obtains, then the Commission will immediately be put in possession of something over \$5,500,000. This money will be used for the purpose of stopping the blasting that is now going on at Hook mountain and other places in that neighborhood on the west bank of the Hudson river, for building a roadway on the west shore of the Hudson at the foot of the Palisades, from Fort Lee to Nyack; for connecting that roadway with other roads that will lead directly into the great domain which Mrs. Harriman has this day formally presented to the State.

"This land in turn will be connected, through other purchases, with the 700-acre tract of land at Bear mountain, which has to-day been turned over to the Palisades Commission by the Prison Commission, said land by an act of the Legislature last winter having been abandoned as a prison site. This Bear mountain tract runs down directly to the Hudson river at Bear mountain, where an excellent landing can easily be constructed; so that the entire new park district can be made accessible both by land and water.

"This great new recreation ground for the immense population so near at hand will, in area, be approximately the size of Manhattan Island. Only the few of us who have thus far had the good fortune to become somewhat acquainted with this tract of land, through occasional visits to it, realize its great natural beauty and

have obtained some small conception of what a priceless gift is being offered to the millions of people who are living so close at hand.

"On behalf of all these people the Palisades Park Commission to-day sincerely thanks Mrs. Harriman for her great generosity. Her gift to the people, of a domain and a fortune, has made the great project possible.

"I assure you, Mrs. Harriman, that each and every member of the Palisades Park Commission deeply appreciates the responsibility attached to the trusteeship that you and other friends of the project are to-day reposing in us, and our one aim and object will be to push the work forward so that it will be accomplished with credit and satisfaction to one and all, and, when finally completed, be in all respects a fitting monument to the memory of the man who knew and loved these hills so well, who labored so steadfastly to gather these lands together, with the dream that some day the people might come to know them, enjoy them, love them as he did."

Cheers for Mr. Perkins and Mrs. Harriman.

At the conclusion of the ceremony, as the company was about to leave, Mrs. Harriman rose and said that she wished every one present to give three cheers for Mr. Perkins.

"I think they should be for Mrs. Harriman instead," exclaimed Mr. Perkins, but his words were drowned by the cheers.

"And now three for Mrs. Harriman," shouted some one, and again the echoes were awakened by hearty cheers for her.

APPENDIX G.

CENTRAL PARK IN THE CITY OF NEW YORK.

By EDWARD HAGAMAN HALL, L. H. M., L. H. D.

INTRODUCTION.

Central Park, in the city of New York, is the most famous city park in the United States. Its distinction lies not in its size nor its diversity, but rather in the skill with which it was built, the influence which it has exerted on park construction elsewhere, and its physical relation to the happiness and welfare of the densely-populated community in which it is located.

Central Park has not only a history of its own, but it has also inherited from the years before its creation a history which well deserves to be preserved. It cannot fail to add to the interest of the visitor to the park to recall that in Colonial days the Royal Governor, Council and Colonial Assembly once met within its borders; that the northern end was fortified and occupied during the War for Independence; that Washington was there; that it was fortified again during the second war with Great Britain; that for many years it was the seat of a celebrated charitable and educational institution—the Academy and Convent of Mount St. Vincent; that during the Civil War the old Arsenal housed troops en route to the front to fight for the preservation of the Union, and that the Mt. St. Vincent buildings gave them asylum when they were brought back wounded from the field of battle.

In the half century which has elapsed since Central Park was created a new generation has come upon the ground. The city has grown 416 per cent., and the park means more, or should mean more, to the city than ever before. And yet there seems to be an iconoclastic spirit in the air at the present time. The projects for intruding buildings into the park, or to introduce distracting and discordant features never contemplated in the original plan, or to cut down the size of the park, or even to abolish the park altogether and sell the land for building lots, are manifestations of

an insensibility to the meaning and function of the park which, if not counteracted, bode ill for its future.

In the following pages an effort has been made to describe the physical characteristics of the area, the historical events which have occurred within its borders, the spirit and purpose of its founders, and the painstaking labors of its builders, in the hope that the interest aroused thereby may, in some small measure at least, contribute to the preservation of this inestimably beneficent institution.

CENTRAL PARK.

CHAPTER I.

GEOLOGY AND TOPOGRAPHY.

Location and Area of the Park.

Central Park in the city of New York is a rectangular area 2,718½ feet, or a little more than half a mile, wide, and 13,507¾ feet, or over two and a half miles long, embracing 843+ acres. It is bounded on the north by One Hundred and Tenth street, on the east by Fifth avenue, on the south by 59th street, and on the west by Eighth avenue or Central Park West as it is called. It lies in almost the geographical center of Manhattan Island in a zone where the island is about two miles and a quarter wide. Its northern boundary is six miles from Kings Bridge, its eastern boundary about a mile from East river, its southern boundary five miles from Battery, and its western boundary about three-quarters of a mile from the Hudson river.

In narrating the history of Central Park, one naturally begins with its geology, not only because the story of the rocks is fundamental and interesting in itself, but also because the very existence of the park as a park is due to those remote physical events which produced here a wilderness of rocky hills and swampy vales which, at the time when this land was taken for a park, were regarded as irreducible to other uses.*

The Rock Floor of the Park.

The noble rocks which thrust their twisted and distorted masses up through the thin mantle of soil and which add so much to the picturesqueness of the park, are parts of the very ancient rock floor of Manhattan Island which elsewhere is almost completely covered by buildings and pavements. This rock floor is a schistose

* In the following description, it has been the aim of the writer to invest the physical features of the Park with interest for the ordinary visitor and to avoid technicalities as far as possible. Those who desire to enter more deeply into the scientific details of the geology may consult with profit the "First Annual Report on the Improvement of Central Park, New York," dated January 1, 1857; the "Geologic Atlas of the United States, New York City Folio," published by the United States Geological Survey in 1902; "The Configuration of the Rock Floor of Greater New York," by William Herbert Hobbs, published by the United States Geological Survey in 1905; and the works cited in the latter.

gneiss or a gneissoid schist called Hudson schist in the New York City Folio of the Geologic Atlas of the United States Geological Survey but by the local geological authorities classified as Manhattan schist. It is called Hudson schist because it is connected stratigraphically with the great area of slate and shale along the Hudson river farther north which have been called Hudson slate and Hudson shale by geologists. In fact the Hudson schist, Hudson slate and Hudson shale are the same kind of original rock in different phases of alteration. Together they make the "Hudson formation." The name Manhattan schist, however, is more distinctive.

These rocks are very, very old — not so old as the Fordham gneiss which lies north of Spuyten Duyvil creek and which crops out on Manhattan Island along the line of Seventh avenue as far south as One hundred and Thirty-fifth street, nor as old as the limestone outcrops at Inwood, but vastly older than the trap rock of the Palisades or the old red sand stone which underlies them, on the New Jersey side of the river.* They are metamorphosed or altered rocks, originally deposited as sediments on the bottom of the great inland sea which occupied the site of New York in Siluric time. It is difficult to understand how remote that period was, for geologists do not reckon time by years, but by periods according to the character of the fossils found in the rocks. But in order to give a general idea of the relative duration of the periods, some geologists like Dana, Walcott and Schuchert have made certain rough estimates of ratios and years; and from a chart drawn by Schuchert† we have prepared the following table giving a rough estimate of the age of the fossil bearing rocks. The total represents the time which is estimated to have elapsed since Archean time. In this table, the chronological sequence is from the bottom upward:

* We are indebted to Prof. J. F. Kemp of the Department of Geology of Columbia University for the following note: "We classify the rocks of the city as follows, omitting the glacial drift, and mentioning them in order from the oldest to the latest: Fordham gneiss, Inwood limestone, Manhattan schist and pegmatite veins. The Fordham gneiss enters Manhattan along Seventh avenue and can still be seen, but it ceases to outcrop somewhere about 135th street. All the exposures in Central Park are Manhattan schist. The two formations are at times much alike, but the Manhattan schist is predominantly more micaceous and more thinly foliated than the Fordham gneiss. Generally speaking the rocks in the Park are schists. Possibly a hand specimen might be considered here and there as a gneiss, but never as Fordham gneiss."

† Bulletin of the Geological Society of America. Vol. 20, plate 101.

<i>Era</i> (Old name)	<i>Period</i> (Old name)	<i>Period</i> (New name)	Per cent of era	<i>Years</i> in period	<i>Era</i> (New name)	<i>Years</i> in era
Tertiary or Cenozoic...	{ Pleistocene..... Pliocene..... Miocene..... Oligocene..... Eocene..... }	{ Neogenic..... Eogenic..... }	50	1,500,000	Neozoic.....	3,000,000
			50	1,500,000		
Mesozoic.....	{ Cretaceous..... Jurassic..... Triassic..... }	{ Cretacic..... Comanchic..... Jurassic- Triassic..... }	30	2,700,000	Mesozoic.....	9,000,000
			20	1,800,000		
			25	2,250,000		
			25	2,250,000		
Palæozoic.....	{ Permian..... Pennsylvanic..... Mississippian or Sub-car- boniferous..... Devonic..... Siluric..... }	{ Permian- Pennsylvanic..... Tennesseic..... Mississippic..... Devonic..... Siluric..... }	9	1,620,000	Paleozoic.....	10,260,000
			12	2,160,000		
			7	1,260,000		
			8	1,440,000		
			11	1,980,000		
	{ Ordovician or Lower Silu- rian..... Cambrian..... }	{ Cincinnati- Cambrie (Ordovician) Canadic..... Ozarkic..... Acadic..... Taconic..... }	5	900,000	Eopaleozoic.....	7,740,000
			10	1,800,000		
			8	1,440,000		
			9	1,620,000		
			5	900,000		
	{ Cambrian..... }	{ Ozarkic..... Acadic..... Taconic..... }	6	1,080,000		
				30,000,000		30,000,000

As the Hudson epoch occurred near the end of the Lower Siluric period, it will be seen that on the basis of the foregoing time table the Central Park rocks are about 22,000,000 years old.

How the Rocks were Formed.

At that time, the geography of this region was utterly unlike what it is now. At that period, a great mediterranean sea of salt water, called the Appalachian Sea, extended from the region of the lower St. Lawrence river southwestward across the site of New York to an unknown distance beyond. The southeastern shore of this mediterranean sea was southeast of New York and its northwestern shore at one time was as far away as Wisconsin. Between this sea and the Atlantic ocean lay a long stretch of continent, the ocean shore of which was far beyond the present Atlantic shore.

At that time there was probably no marked diversity in climate in different parts of the earth, and it is not likely that the difference in temperature between polar regions and the region of New York was greater than that between cold temperate and warm temperate. In the sea which then overflowed the site of New York, fishes, which were the earliest vertebrates and which had but recently appeared, were the highest order of animals. If there were animals on the adjacent land, they were probably not higher than low orders of insects. And plant life had progressed little if any beyond the seaweeds.

While this was the situation, and while the site of New York was still submerged beneath the primeval flood, the rocks forming the marginal continent to the eastward were disintegrated by the action of the elements in the slow process of time, and the clayey-sandy waste, which was washed down-hill toward the west and northwest, was deposited as a thick sediment on the bottom of the inland sea. That sediment was the material of which the Central Park rocks were formed.

Subsequent Geological Events.

To the student who is interested in the story of the rocks of Central Park, two or three questions about their origin will naturally occur. If their material was deposited under water,

how is it that they are now above water? And if originally deposited in water where their strata must have been horizontal, how is it that the strata of the Central Park rocks are tipped up at all angles, sometimes almost vertical? These and many other questions open up a great vista of inquiry which is one of the fascinating things about geology, and the search for detailed answers to them would well repay the inquirer. In these pages, however, we can give only the briefest intimation of the answer, which is that in the millions of years which have elapsed since that very remote period tremendous events, involving profound changes, have taken place in the geological history of this region.

During Siluric time, there were very slow alterations of elevation and depression in the land surface, with a net gain in elevation. In the nearly 2,000,000 years of Devonian time, there were more violent and striking changes in the earth's surface. A mountain range rose and wasted away in New England, New York and New Jersey, until the land area was worn down to a monotonous low land. Then came the Carbonic periods covering between 6,000,000 and 7,000,000 years, near the close of which the sediments of the interior sea and the older rocks which formed part of the adjacent continent, from the St. Lawrence to Alabama, along the line of the Appalachian and Alleghany mountains and crossing the site of New York, were compressed by slow but tremendous movements of the earth, in consequence of which the strata were thrown into convolutions, twisted all out of their former shape, and, on account of the heat generated by the great pressure, changed in character. It was probably in this period of mountain growth that the sediments before alluded to were converted (or metamorphosed, as geologists term the transformation) into what is now called Manhattan schist. In the crumpled folds of the Central Park rocks, therefore, we have what might be called a seismograph or record of the birth of the old Appalachian mountains which once occupied the site of the modern Appalachian system but which in the course of slow ages were worn away to mere hills. Then came the interesting Jura-triassic period of 4,500,000 years, during which the old Appalachian mountains were worn down to very low elevations and the lower land was reduced proportionately. In this period the Atlantic shore probably moved

nearer to the site of New York, but the latter still remained submerged in the margin of a shallow basin of wide extent. In this basin sandy sediments of great thickness were deposited, forming the Newark sandstones and slates. In this period dinosaurs and other saurians roamed over the site of New York city and New Jersey, and their dead bodies were entombed in the accumulating sediments. The fossil skeleton of one of these saurians was discovered in the sandstone lying under the trap rock of the Palisades opposite One Hundred and Sixtieth street in 1910 and is now preserved in the American Museum of Natural History. (See article entitled "The Fort Lee Phytosaur" by Mr. Jesse E. Hyde at page 359 of this report.) In some red sandstone boulders in Central Park, carried there by ice of the glacial epoch from New Jersey, one may see reminders of the period when the phytosaur may have wandered above the site of Central Park; but if the phytosaur was ever a member of the prehistoric zoological garden of the park, his feet never touched the present rocks of the park, for it must be remembered that the Manhattan schist lay a long way below the sandstone of his period.

In the years which have elapsed since the Jura-trias, many other important events have occurred of which we have no conspicuous record in Central Park. There were more oscillations in the level of the earth. Whenever the land was raised above the sea the elements attacked it and wore it down. Whenever it subsided below the sea level new sediments were deposited upon it, to become future rocks. During these changes, the site of New York became permanently lifted above the sea level and all the rock deposits above the Manhattan schist were worn away. The Atlantic shore receded to its present position. The Hudson river and adjacent channels were worn in the rocks, and the geography of Manhattan Island assumed its present form.

So far as the native rocks of Central Park are concerned, we have no exposures to represent the rock-making events since the Manhattan schist was formed, for the later formations which once lay above it have been worn away. The reason why we have Manhattan schist 22,000,000 years old on Manhattan Island almost on the same level as the Newark sandstone only 12,000,000 years old on the New Jersey side of the Hudson river is that in the

various upward and downward movements of the earth's surface and in the great horizontal pressure and consequent folding of strata which have occurred from time to time, there appears to have been a great crack or fault along the line of the lower Hudson, by reason of which the Manhattan rocks have been brought up to a higher level than the rocks of the same age in New Jersey, and the overlying strata of the more modern periods have been worn away.

The rocks of the park everywhere show violent dislocations, due apparently first to a general upheaval of the entire mass, and then to lateral displacement and contortion by movements accompanying the intrusion of veins of granite. There is no uniformity in the strike or dip of the strata. In some places the strata are vertical or nearly so, their dip varying from eighty degrees northwest to eighty degrees southeast; in other places they vary from forty degrees to sixty degrees to the northwest and to the southeast. The prevailing direction of the strike is north-northeast. The granite veins pass through the rocks in almost every direction. In many localities there are also more or less extensive masses of quartz of a lenticular shape, gradually thinning out toward the northeast and southwest.

Marks of the Ice Age.

Of some of the events of these long lapses of time since the formation of the Central Park rocks we have records, as we have seen, in the crumpled laminae and broken and distorted folds of the rocks. We have upon their surfaces, however, the graven record of the Ice Age. That was not so very long ago, geologically speaking. Reckoned on the rate of the recession of Niagara Falls, which were born with the retreat of the glacier, the glacial epoch may have been only 20,000 or 30,000 years ago. When the great ice sheet descended from the north and covered Manhattan Island, the axis of its progress lay west of and parallel with the Hudson river, but it spread out fan-wise toward the southeast and southwest. A portion of it thus crossed diagonally from New Jersey to New York, bearing with it pieces of broken rock which it had gathered up on the way. Some of these broken rocks, or boulders, were left in Central Park, together with finer materials

brought along in the ice or by the streams of water caused by the melting ice. Other pieces of rock were carried onward, to be deposited on Long Island or elsewhere toward the southeast. When these rocks were imbedded in the under side of the moving glacier, they acted like graver's tools on a large scale and made furrows or striae in the rocks. These grooves, more or less parallel to each other and varying in direction from twenty to forty degrees east of south, may be seen in different parts of Central Park. They are generally observable on the western or northwestern slopes of the rocks and are best seen when the sun is in the south or southwest when the light makes the shallow relief more distinct. Following are some of the places where they may be observed:

On a large rock lying at the intersection of the lines of One Hundred and Third street and Sixth avenue if projected, in the northeastern corner of the North Meadow. This rock is crossed by the path which skirts the northern side of the North Meadow and is at the highest point of the path.

On a rock lying at the south side of the North Meadow, about midway between East Drive and West Drive, about in line with Ninety-ninth street.

On a small exposure of rock on the southwest side of the knoll upon which the obelisk stands. It is on the left hand side, going southward, of the path between the obelisk and the old Croton reservoir.

On a rock on the left hand side of the same path a few hundred feet farther south. It is opposite the big iron grating in the masonry of the reservoir.

Continuing southward and westward around the lower end of the reservoir to the Belvedere or observatory at its southwestern corner, going down the steps toward the south, taking the right hand path, and going about 110 paces from the Belvedere steps, one finds a glaciated rock on the right hand side of the walk, southwest of the rustic summer house.

Glacial scratches may also be seen on a rock in the southwestern part of the Ramble, on the west side of the end of the lake opposite the boat house. It lies about at the intersection of the line of Sixth avenue with a cross line drawn about midway between Seventy-fourth and Seventy-fifth streets, if projected.

Gold Bearing Rock.

The rocks of Central Park contain gold-bearing veins of quartz, but not rich enough in the precious metal to make gold-mining profitable. About the year 1881 or 1882, when workmen were excavating for a roadway in the vicinity of the Arsenal Building, the contractors became quite excited over the discovery of traces of what they believed to be gold. They therefore took to the laboratory of the well-known consulting mining engineer and metallurgist Albert R. Ledoux, A. M., M. S., Ph. D., of New York, some samples of granite or gneiss containing a few narrow layers of quartz which showed some specks of iron pyrites. Dr. Ledoux told them that pyrites frequently carried gold in the older rocks, and while undoubtedly neither the vein nor the value was large enough to pay, he would nevertheless make an assay. Several pieces were assayed and were found to contain from \$1.00 to \$1.75 of gold to the ton. Dr. Ledoux, writing to the author, says:

“There is nothing unusual in this. The old Silurian rocks of the Adirondacks frequently contain from a few cents to a dollar per ton in gold; and in the '70's, some miners sank a shaft on a small quartz vein in granite on Storm King Mountain on the Hudson, from which they extracted gold at the rate of from \$1.00 to \$2.50 per ton, but as it cost \$4.00 to \$5.00 a ton to get it out, they ascertained that it was a hopeless proposition. I have frequently seen specks of pyrites in rocks excavated from street or building openings north of Central Park, and within the last few days a contractor, excavating the site of a large hotel south of 42d street, asked our price for assaying, saying that he had found pyrites in the rocks and wanted to know if it contained gold.”

The Natural Soil.

The natural soil of the park is largely composed of “drift” deposited by the ice or glacial waters, but is also partly made up of the decomposed native rock of the park. It consists of gravel, sand and loam, interspersed with pebbles and boulders of different kinds of rocks, and affords a scant covering to the uneven rock floor, varying from a few inches on the hillsides to thirty feet in some of the narrow intervening valleys. The gravel, sand and loam are composed of disintegrated schist, mica, slate and granite.

The natural soil is therefore very poor, and in the construction of the park it has been necessary both to augment it in quantity and to enrich it in quality.

The pebbles and boulders, much rounded and water worn, vary in size from a few inches to seven feet in diameter and include different varieties of trap, gneiss, syenite, granite, mica, slate, amphibolite, white, gray and red sandstones, conglomerates, limestone and slate. The trap boulders are similar in mineralogical character to the diorite at Bergen, N. J. Some of the granite pebbles are similar to the granite in the Highlands. The syenite is also similar to that found in the Highlands. Some of the gneiss boulders appear to have come from the Highlands of New York and New Jersey. The red conglomerate is similar to that occurring in the Green Pond mountains of Orange county, N. Y.

Old Water Courses.

As might be inferred from what we have previously said about the upheavals and crumpling of the rocks of Central Park, the surface of the park has been thrown into a very striking and varied relief, rising as high as 137 feet above tide water on the knoll just within the western wall between Eighty-third and Eighty-fourth streets and 130 feet on the "Great Hill" between One Hundred and Fifth and One Hundred and Sixth streets, and falling as low as only five feet above tide water in the extreme northeast corner of the park. The bold heights at the northern end of the park, overlooking the plains of Harlem, lent themselves admirably to the purposes of the military engineers in the periods of the War for Independence and the War of 1812-1815. All over the park, the fine outcroppings of the rock form one of its greatest charms. They present a constant variety of scenery, so that the landscape is never monotonous and frequently contains delightful surprises. One of these little surprises is the "Cave" which one reaches by entering the park at West Seventy-ninth street, crossing the East Drive, walking over the Bank Rock bridge which spans the head of the lake opposite West Seventh-seventh street, and climbing the path a few rods to the east. Here a cleft in a bold pile of natural rock has been covered artificially in such a skillful manner by the landscape architect as to form

what appears to be a natural cave, and it is not surprising that children find it a favorite resort for play and that their lively imaginations invest it with all sorts of strange legends.

The longitudinal back bone of Manhattan Island in the latitude of Central Park lies between the park and the Hudson river. From this line of elevation the ground slopes quickly westward to the Hudson and gradually eastward to the East river. Central Park, therefore, lies on the eastward slope of the island, and in its natural condition was dissected by five streams flowing in a generally eastward or southeastward direction.*

De Voor's Mill Stream.—One of these streams rose as a tiny brook in the rocks near Columbus avenue and Seventy-second street, entered the park between Sixty-fifth and Sixty-sixth streets, flowed southeasterly to the point where the lines of Sixth avenue and Sixty-third street would meet if projected, then expanded into a little lake, continued southeasterly, southerly, westerly, and southerly, and left the park on Fifty-ninth street about 600 feet west of Fifth avenue. Thence it continued in a generally southeasterly direction until it emptied into the East river at Turtle Bay, at the foot of Forty-seventh street. In its course it had gathered enough water to furnish power for a mill set up near its mouth by David Duffore, who, in 1677, was granted a tract of sixty acres on Turtle Bay. This brook was therefore known as Deffore's or De Voor's Mill Stream. The enlargement of the little pond above-mentioned now forms the lake in the southeastern corner of Central Park. All other traces of De Voor's Mill Stream have been buried beneath the streets and buildings of the city.

South Branch of the Saw Kill.—A second stream rose on the rocky ridge near Columbus avenue and Eighty-fifth street, flowed in a southerly direction to Manhattan Square (now occupied in part by the American Museum of Natural History) where it spread out into a pond. It then continued southeasterly and entered Central Park at Seventy-fifth street and flowed directly across the park, going out between Seventy-fourth and Seventy-

* In this paper, when directions are stated in general terms as northward, or eastward, etc., reference is had to the direction of the avenues and streets, which, of course, is not strictly correct, as the avenues run east of north and west of south, and the streets at right angles to the avenues. When directions are expressed in degrees and minutes, however, they refer to the actual points of the compass.

fifth streets on the east side. Continuing in a generally easterly course, it crossed Avenue A about seventy-five feet south of Seventy-fifth street and emptied into the East river at the foot of Seventy-fourth street. In Central Park it received three tributaries, one from the south and two from the north. The enlargement of this stream forms the lake south of the Ramble. Outside of the park it has been completely obliterated. In its day this stream was a famous landmark. On its banks, just where it crossed Avenue A, Jan Van Bommel in 1664 erected a saw mill, from which the stream was always known as the Saw Kill. The mill itself was the southern terminus of the boundary line between New York and Harlem, as more fully described hereafter.

North Branch of the Saw Kill.—A third stream rose near Central Park West and Eighty-ninth street; flowed easterly to about the middle of the park, then took a diagonal course to Fifth avenue between Eighty-third and Eighty-fourth streets (site of the Metropolitan Museum of Art), thence continued in the same general direction until it joined the Saw Kill near Seventy-fifth street and Third avenue. This stream has been obliterated entirely. The reservoir in the park north of Eighty-sixth street occupies a large part of the meadow through which it once flowed.

A fourth brook of small importance rose within the park opposite West Ninety-fourth street, flowed northeasterly and then easterly, making its exit at Ninety-ninth street, and continuing to East river.

Montanye's Rivulet.—A fifth stream rose in the vicinity of Ninety-fifth street and Columbus avenue and entered Central Park at One Hundred and First street. Continuing in a generally northeasterly direction to the intersection of the imaginary lines of Sixth avenue and One Hundred and Ninth street, it flowed around the base of the heights in the northeastern part of the park and emptied into Harlem creek at Fifth avenue and One Hundred and Seventh street. Just before the stream left the park and entered into Harlem creek, it formerly received from the north a small tributary, originating somewhere west of Eighth avenue and One Hundred and Tenth street. This tributary has been obliterated. It is possible, however, to follow the course of the present stream within the park, by one of the most romantic walks in that

enclosure. Entering at the West One Hundredth street gate, one sees lying in the ancient valley immediately to the northward a charming little pond named The Pool, which is an expansion of this streamlet. Following its outlet through the stone arch called the Glenspan Bridge under the West Drive, one comes to the Loch (once the Lotos Pond); and continuing through another stone arch called Huddlestone Bridge under the East Drive, he reaches the Harlem Mere, formed by the further impounding of its waters. This little stream was known in colonial times as Montanye's Rivulet, taking its name from Abraham de la Montayne who owned adjacent land on the north and east. The Montanye farm subsequently passed into the possession of the Nutter family, from whom the name of Nutter's Battery, mentioned on page 425 following, was derived.

Little Mill Creek.—A sixth stream rose in the vicinity of Manhattan street and One Hundred and Twenty-fourth street, flowed southeasterly to a point on One Hundred and Fifteenth street about 250 feet west of Fifth avenue, then turned toward the south, entered the park at One Hundred and Tenth street a few rods west of Fifth avenue, and joined Montanye's Rivulet just before it entered Harlem Creek. Harlem Creek was also known as Mill Creek, and this affluent from the north was called North Branch of Montanye's Kill or Little Mill Creek. This stream has also disappeared.

We shall have more to say of Harlem Creek in the following chapter, for it had an important bearing on the history of the northern end of the park.

Dr. Tanner's Spring.—In various parts of the park springs of very pure water issue from the rocks. One of these, which has acquired no little reputation, is located about 325 feet east of the western wall of the park and about seventy-five feet north of the northerly line of Eighty-second street if protracted, and is frequently called "Dr. Tanner's Spring." Many people resort to the spring to drink the water and to get water to take away with them in bottles. Its popularity is due in part to the belief that Dr. Henry S. Tanner, whose famous fast of forty days and forty nights was terminated on August 7, 1880, sustained himself on water from this spring during his prolonged abstention from food.

This tradition is true only in part. Dr. Tanner began his fast with the idea of abstaining from water as well as food, but, compelled by thirst, soon began to drink water. As his fast progressed, his stomach rejected water and all kinds were tried — Croton water, purified Croton, well, spring, and two or three kinds of mineral water. The water which was most acceptable to him was water charged with carbonic acid gas. Among these various changes he tried the Central Park spring water, but it is not correct to assert that he “sustained” himself on it. The water of the spring is very pure but is not known to possess any medicinal properties. Before Central Park was created, a path which entered the park area at what is now Central Park West and Eighty-second street, led to the spring, which was on the southerly margin of Seneca village alluded to on page 443 following.

CHAPTER II.

HISTORY PRIOR TO THE REVOLUTION.

Indians and Wild Animals.

Of the Indian history of the area embraced within Central Park we have only three known facts, all relating to the north-eastern section. The first is that "the road over which the Indians from Wiekquaskeek passed daily" ran over the route later followed by the old Post Road as described hereafter. The other two facts are the Indian names for the flats which lay on the northern and southern sides of Harlem Creek and which extended just across the Fifth avenue line into the park northeast of McGown's Pass Tavern. The flat lying on the northern side was called by the Indians Conymokst, and by the Dutch Otterspoor (otter tracks) on account of the tracks of the amphibious tenants of the land and adjacent waters. This flat was later known as Van Keulen's Hook, from the name of its early Dutch owner. The tract on the southern side of the creek was called by the Indians Rechawanis, which Riker, in his History of Harlem, translates as Great Sands. This was later known as Montanye's Point and still later as the Benson or McGown Farm. On account of the rugged and barren character of the Central Park area, it was not adapted to the cultivation of maize, tobacco or any other Indian crop. We may therefore safely infer that the visits of the Indians were mainly confined to their travels along the well-worn trail, with possibly a digression to mount some commanding height to spy upon the movements of the Harlem pioneers, or to chase some wild beast for the sake of its flesh or pelt.

That bears, wolves and other ferocious animals abounded among the retreats afforded by the wilderness of which Central Park formed a part we have ample evidence. There is a record of a bear hunt in the winter of 1679-80, when bruin ventured as far as the farm of John Robinson on the Saw Kill and was killed after a lively chase. Wolves were especially destructive to the cattle roaming in the woodlands of Harlem Common and in 1685

Governor Dongan granted special permission to the settlers "to hunt and destroy the said wolves." After the predatory animals were exterminated, foxes, rabbits, and other small game attracted sportsmen for pleasure, and prior to the Revolution, McGown's Pass Tavern was a favorite resort for gentlemen coming from the city with their fox-hounds to hunt. Even so late as the first half of the nineteenth century, Central Park was a good hunting ground, and the late Charles H. Haswell, author of "Reminiscences of an Octogenarian," who was born in 1809, says that "notably the site of Central Park and the low ground between it and the East river furnished ample extent for an entire day's shooting." At this late period, woodcock, snipe, foxes, rabbits and squirrels were the principal game bagged.

The Albany Post Road.

From the preceding description of this uninviting little wilderness in the heart of Manhattan Island, one can readily understand why civilization shunned it for a long time. There were desirable farm lands to the north, east, south and west, but the area of Central Park was so rocky, rugged and barren, that the settlers avoided it as completely as possible, and it was only because of necessity that in its earliest history one of the paths of travel passed through its northeastern corner.

The first great longitudinal thoroughfare of Manhattan Island which followed probably a path blazed by the Indians, and which was later known as the old Albany Post Road, came up from New Amsterdam on the east side of the park approximately along the line of Third avenue, but at Eighty-second street it bent to the northwestward to avoid several tidal inlets and marshes which deeply indented the shore of the East river. One of these inlets made in directly westward from the Harlem river between One Hundred and Sixth and One Hundred and Eighth streets, its head extending up to the heights of Central Park just within the Fifth avenue line. This inlet was the Harlem Creek, Mill Creek or Montanye's Kill, referred to at the close of the preceding chapter. On the south side of this creek was an extensive and impassable marsh. To avoid this obstacle, the old highway from New Amsterdam to Spuyten Duyvil Creek bent toward the northwest at Third

avenue and Eighty-second street and ran to Fifth avenue at Ninetieth street; thence ran along the line of Fifth avenue to Ninety-second street; thence entered the bounds of the present park, and followed the line of the East Drive as far as McGown's Pass Tavern in the latitude of One Hundred and Fifth street. Thence, instead of following the course of the East Drive as it now winds around to the west, the old road ran down the slope toward the northeast to about the line of One Hundred and Eighth street, where it forked. One branch, running toward the left, emerged from the Park at One Hundred and Tenth street and Lenox avenue, and continued on to King's Bridge partly along the line of St. Nicholas avenue. The other branch, running to the right, crossed Little Mill Creek or the north branch of Montanye's Kill, emerged from the park at about Fifth avenue and One Hundred and Ninth street and ran to the old village of Harlem.

Bloomingdale Road.

On the west side of the park there was another colonial thoroughfare which was somewhat connected with its history. That was the Bloomingdale Road, which left the old Post Road at what is now Madison Square and followed the line of Broadway approximately as far as Morningside Heights. It just skirted the southwestern corner of the park.

Bloomingdale New Cross Road.

Before the Revolution, these two highways were connected by a road known as Aphthrop's Lane, Jauncey's Lane, or the Bloomingdale New Cross Road. This road left the Post Road (now East Drive) opposite Ninety-sixth street, ran westward to Central Park West between Ninety-third and Ninety-fourth streets, and thence between those streets to the Bloomingdale Road which in that latitude ran between the present Amsterdam avenue and Broadway.

Harlem Line as Fixed in 1666.

In colonial days the territory of the park lay partly within the bounds of the city of New York and partly within the bounds of the town of Harlem.

In the charter granted by Gov. Nicolls in 1666, confirming the privileges of "a certain town or village commonly called and known by the name of New Harlem," the dividing line was described as a line "drawn to run north and south, with the variation, that is to say, north to the very end of a certain piece of meadow ground commonly called the Round Meadow, near or adjoining to Hudson's river, and south to the Saw Mills over against Hog Island, commonly called Ferkin's Island." * This line ran diagonally from West One Hundred and Thirtieth street and the Hudson river to the mill on the Saw Kill, previously described, which stood immediately east of Avenue A about seventy-five feet south of East Seventy-fifth street. It cut across Central Park from the northwest corner at Eight avenue and One Hundred and Tenth street to Fifth avenue at Ninety-sixth street.

This line is interesting, among other things, because it represented a north and south line, "with the variation" of the compass at that time. It is also interesting because it was associated with Gov. Nicolls' futile attempt to fasten an English name upon Harlem. In this charter of 1666, fixing the above line and confirming the privileges of Harlem, the Governor imposed the condition that "from and after the date of these presents, the town shall no longer be called New Harlem but shall be known and called by the name of Lancaster." So far, then, as this charter had any force, the northeastern corner of Central Park lay in the town of Lancaster in the early English regime. But while New Amsterdam peaceably acquiesced in the English name of New York, the Dutch of New Harlem sturdily resented the name of Lancaster, and so completely ignored it that it does not appear in a single document or record of that period, so far as known, except the charter itself.

Harlem Common Lands and the Line of 1775.

In fixing the north and south line before described, the Nicolls charter granted the inhabitants of Harlem the privilege of commonage west of that line but did not say how far. There subsequently arose, therefore, a perplexing question as to where the Harlem common lands ended and where the lands of the corpora-

* Blackwell's Island.

tion of New York began. In the efforts to settle this controversy, various surveys were made, numerous conferences were held between committees of Harlem and New York, and large amounts of energy, time, money, liquor and tobacco were expended. One of these efforts was made in 1727 and in the Common Council minutes of December 29, 1727, we find the following entry:

“Order’d the Mayor issue his Warrant to the Treasurer to pay Mr. Edward Blagge or Order the sum of four pounds Sixteen Shillings and four pence half penny Current Money of New York in full for Wine, Rum, Beer, Pipes, Tobacco and Other Expences of this Corporation for Running the Harlem Line, and Expences at his House by A Committee of this Corporation in October last as Appears by his Acct. which is Audited and allowed.”

This is only one of several similar entries. If the surveyors shared the wine, rum and beer consumed on these occasions, it is not surprising, perhaps, that their lines were erratic and that no two of them agreed. At any rate, for some reason, the dispute was not settled until the Assembly passed an act on April 3, 1775, fixing the line as follows:

“Beginning at a Bass Wood Stump from whence grow several Cyons, beginning on a certain Point on the East Side of Hudson’s River on the South Side of the Bay lying before a certain Piece of Meadow commonly known by the Name of the round Meadow or Mutje David’s Fly, from which Stump the South end of Jacob Vreelandt’s House on the West Side of the said river bears North 85° West, the South Side of Stephen Bourdett’s House North $4^{\circ} 15'$ West, the South Side of Samuel Prince’s House North $53^{\circ} 15'$ West, and the large Bluff Point on the West Side of the said River North 19° East;

“And from thence running South $1^{\circ} 30'$ East 110 chains and 80 links, to a Heap of Stones on the Southwest Side of a large flat Rock, from whence a large White Wood tree bears North 67° West distant 67 links;

“And from thence running North 56° West 4 Chains and 70 Links to a red Cedar Stake with a Heap of Stones about it;

“Thence South 35° West 51 Chains and 29 Links to a small Pepprage Tree marked with a Blaze and three Notches on three sides standing 4 Chains from the Bloomingdale new cross Road measured on a Course from the Tree South 35° West, and from the West (sic) Bank of Hudson’s River 57 Chains and 75 Links measured on a Course from the said Tree North 56° West;

"And from thence running with a direct Line on a Course South 18° East 120 Chains to an ancient Heap of Stones on the East Side of a Brook, which Stones are said to have been the Foundation of a Saw Mill mentioned in a Patent from Richard Nicolls Esquire formerly Governor of the Colony of New York to the Township of Haerlem;

"And from thence along the said Brook as it now runs to the East River, the Distance from the said Heap of Stones to where the said Brook empties into the East River between a Ledge of Rocks being 13 Chains on a Course of South $55^{\circ} 30'$ Minutes East;

"All which said Courses and Bearings were run and taken as the Magnetic Needle then Pointed."

With reference to modern landmarks this line may be described as follows:

Beginning at the foot of West One Hundred and Thirtieth street and going in a straight line (coincident with the line of 1666) across the northwest corner of Central Park to a point within the park 594 feet east of Central Park West and sixty-six feet north of the north side of One Hundred and Seventh street if projected. This point is in the West Drive, a rod or so east of the footpath which crosses it and leads up to the Block House.

Thence running toward Central Park West 310 feet to a point about 284 feet from the avenue and sixty-six feet north of the north side of One Hundred and Seventh street if projected. This point, where the red cedar stake and heap of stones were, lay on or just north of the north side of the West Drive.

Thence almost parallel with the park wall but converging a little toward it to a point about 148 feet inside the park midway between Ninety-fourth and Ninety-fifth streets if projected. This point was 264 feet from the Bloomingdale New Cross Road, also called Apthorp's Lane, which ran between the lines of Ninety-third and Ninety-fourth streets. This line was the eastern boundary of the property acquired by Teunis Ides about the year 1688 or 1689. The line between his property and Harlem Patent was run in 1690.*

* Concerning the Ides property, a strip of which is included in Central Park, and concerning the Bloomingdale Cross Road, we have the following interesting facts from Mr. James A. Deering, counselor-at-law, of New York: "Theunis Ydesen about the year 1688 or 1689 obtained a patent for a tract of land extending from about the present 86th street to 107th street,

Thence in direct line diagonally across the park, crossing Fifth avenue and Eighty-seventh street, to the old mill site at Seventy-fifth street and Avenue A.

The lands embraced between the line of 1775 and the line of 1666 constituted the Harlem Commons. These lines are shown on a "Map of the Harlaem Commons . . . with the avenues and streets passing through the same . . . by Charles Clinton, Decr. 1824," being map No. 21 in the Register's Office in the Hall of Records. The magnetic bearing given on this map, however, differ from those given in the act of 1775, probably on account of the variation of the compass in the meantime. Most of the lands of Central Park lying south (or, more correctly speaking, southwest) of the line of 1775 were common lands of the city of New York.

Jansen's Half Way House.

Partly on account of the fact that the old highway ran through the northeastern portion of the park, partly on account of the proximity of that section to Harlem village, and partly on account

and from the Harlem Commons to the Hudson river. The ownership of Theunis Ydesen (thereafter usually written Teunis Ides) among conveyancers is the recognized source of the title to the land within the tract mentioned. By deeds from his heirs, and from Dennis Hicks to whom his heirs had conveyed a portion of the tract, Charles Ward Apthorp in the years 1762 and 1763 acquired title to a portion of the tract extending from about the present 89th street to 99th street, and from the Harlem Commons to the Hudson river. At the time Apthorp so acquired title the Cross Road had not been laid out, nor is there any official record of the laying out thereof, this being the only public road on the island, so far as I have any information, the laying out of which does not appear upon some official record of the city. The Cross Road is referred to in a mortgage made by Charles Ward Apthorp to the Marine Society of the City of New York, dated April 20, 1785, wherein it is designated as "the cross road leading from the said Bloomingdale Road to the Great Post Road from New York to Kingsbridge." Charles Ward Apthorp died in May, 1797, intestate. Proceedings to foreclose the mortgage made by him to the Marine Bank were instituted in March, 1798, and the premises were sold by the sheriff in 1799 to Hugh Williamson, a son-in-law of Apthorp. Williamson and the other heirs in 1801-2 partitioned the land east of the Bloomingdale Road, and in the several conveyances or releases made by them the road is described as 'the cross road leading from the said Bloomingdale Road to the Great or Post Road from New York to Kingsbridge.' In subsequent conveyances made by the heirs of Apthorp and in court partition proceedings, the road is variously referred to as 'the Cross Road to Harlem,' 'a lane or road leading from the Bloomingdale Road to Harlem Commons,' 'road leading to Harlem,' 'the public cross road leading to Harlem,' and 'the public Cross Road.' Its designation as Apthorp's Lane does not appear in any of the conveyances made by any of the descendants of Apthorp apparently earlier than 1859 when it is referred to as 'a certain road or lane formerly leading from the Bloomingdale Road to the Harlem Commons, and which said lane or road is known as Apthorp's Lane.'"

of the natural advantages of the site, the neighborhood of McGown's Pass was the first part of the present park area to achieve a place in history.

The first house erected within this area of which we have a record was that built for Cornelis Jansen in 1684 on the west side of the Old Post Road at the foot of the hill about in the line of One Hundred and Ninth street. Jansen had purchased a small piece of land upon Montanye's flat adjacent to Montanye's rivulet, embracing this site, and on April 30, 1684, hired Adrianus Westerhout to build him a house twenty-two by thirty-six feet in size. For this house, which was to be finished by June 20th at latest, the carpenter was to be paid "800 guilders in fat cattle, wheat and rye." Here Jansen established a tavern which soon became famous under the name of the Half Way House. In the plan of the road commissioners laying out the road from New York to Harlem, in pursuance of an act of the Assembly of 1707, the commissioners say that the road should run "from the Saw Kill Bridge along Mr. Codrington's fence to the Half Way House, about northeast; from the bridge by the Half Way House the road to turn to the right hand and so over the creek to Harlem." This locates the house in the northeastern corner of the park on the western side of the bridge over Little Mill creek or the north branch of Montanye's Kill.*

Thus early was laid the foundation for the traditions of public hospitality which have characterized that locality ever since. Jansen died in 1689 and his widow continued to keep the tavern. On October 13, 1694, she was allowed pay "for entertaining His Excellency the Governor on his return from Connecticut."

Dyckman's Stone Tavern.

Half a century later, the rites of hospitality were performed in a new hospice erected on the top of the hill to the southward, now practically identical with the site of the present McGown's Pass Tavern. The transactions leading up to this new establishment were as follows: In the drawing of lots in 1712 by the

* A little north of this site, after the Revolution, Valentine Nutter built a residence the north corner of which touched 110th street at 6th avenue; whence the name Nutter's Battery given to one of the works erected in 1814. See page 425 following.

citizens of Harlem, Samuel Waldron drew lot number seven in the first division, a ten acre portion of which on the east side of the highway was identical with the McGown place of later days. By exchange, Abraham de la Montanye added this to a lot which he possessed adjacent on the south, including the site of the Black Horse Tavern of later times. In 1729, Montanye sold out to his brother-in-law, George Dyckman, and in 1748, George Dyckman sold twenty acres to Jacob Dyckman, Jr., and Adolph Benson. The latter two divided the property, Jacob Dyckman, Jr., taking the portion including the site later known as McGown's. Here Dyckman built a stone tavern which he maintained for about ten years.

That the Dyckman Tavern was an institution of capacity and dignity is evidenced by the interesting fact that the Colonial Assembly met here from October 24 to November 11, 1752, when the Assembly Chamber in the old English City Hall (later Federal Hall), which stood at Wall and Nassau streets, was out of repair. The Governor and Council, while in attendance on the sessions, stayed at the neighboring house of Benjamin Benson, which stood where the house of Alderman S. Benson McGown subsequently stood, in East One Hundred and Sixth street, near Third avenue.

The Royal Governor of the colony at that time was Admiral George Clinton (who is not to be confounded with George Clinton, first Republican Governor of the State). He was a son of the Earl of Lincoln and father of Sir Henry Clinton, the latter of whom came to McGown's Pass in 1776 (as we shall see a little later) under circumstances of which Sir George little dreamed as he presided over the distinguished body assembled here in 1752.

The meeting of the colonial government at this place is confirmed by the following extract from a law which the Assembly passed on the last day of its session, November 11. The act, entitled, "An act for the payment of the salaries and services of the government until the first day of September, 1753," after making appropriations for the salaries of Governor Clinton and other functionaries, continues:

"To Alexander Lamb as doorkeeper to the General Assembly . . . for providing firewood for the use of the General Assembly; for payment of the use of Mr. Dyckman's house; and for

sundry repairs necessary to be made in the Assembly Chamber in the City Hall in New York, the sum of twenty-four pounds and ten shillings."

It is a tribute to the natural attractions of the McGown's Pass locality, which have never been lost, and to the amplitude of the accommodations provided by Mine Host Dyckman's capacious stone tavern, that the government preferred coming here to holding its meeting in one of the numerous city taverns.

Colonial Taverns and Governors.

And apropos of colonial taverns and colonial Governors in general, it may be mentioned in passing that there was often a peculiar bond of sympathy between the two. The observant Professor Peter Kalm, who visited New York in 1748 (during Governor Clinton's incumbency), remarks upon this subject that "the King appoints the Governor according to his royal pleasure, but the inhabitants of the Province make up His Excellency's salary. Therefore, a man entrusted with this place has greater or lesser revenues according as he knows how to gain the confidence of the inhabitants. There are examples of Governors in this and other provinces of North America, who, by their dissensions with the inhabitants of their respective governments, have lost their whole salary, His Majesty having no power to make them pay it. If a Governor had no other resource in these circumstances he would be obliged either to resign his office or be content with an income too small for his dignity; or else conform himself in everything to the inclinations of the inhabitants. But there are several stated profits which in some measure make up for this. No one is allowed to keep a public house without the Governor's leave, which is only to be obtained by a certain fee, according to the circumstances of the person. Some Governors, therefore, when the inhabitants refused to pay them a salary, have hit upon the expedient of doubling the number of inns in their province."

Clinton was one of the class of Governors to whom Prof. Kalm refers who was perpetually at odds with the people. He insisted on the dignity of the royal prerogative, and could not conciliate the inhabitants. The consequence was, he had a strenuous time with an obstreperous Assembly over his salary, and complained bitterly to the Lords of Trade of his meagre support.

But far be it from us to suggest that the inauguration of Dyckman's Tavern during Clinton's administration was an artificial product of an impoverished Governor's needs and consequent enterprise. There was, no doubt, a natural demand for it just at this place. The brevity of the intervals between the numerous houses of refreshment that sprang up along the ancient thoroughfare from the Battery to Spuyten Duyvil creek — the Province Arms, the Bull's Head, the Dove, the Black Horse, Dyckman's (later McGown's), Day's, the Bluebell, the Dutch tavern at King's Bridge, and their intermediates, are eloquent testimonials of the consuming thirst generated by the journey from one end of the island to the other, and the pressing need for frequent places of alleviation. And we may conclude that Dyckman filled the proverbial "long felt want" when he opened his inn on the heights in the northeastern corner of Central Park, whether he had gubernatorial incitement thereto or not.

But grateful as a suffering public must have been to Jansen and Dyckman as founders of the first "hospice" at this midway station between the termini of the island, it has allowed their names to be forgotten, so far as identification with this spot is concerned, and has perpetuated in their stead the name of the next owner, to whom we must now give our attention.

McGown and McGown's Pass.

In the year 1740, Captain Daniel McGown, a seafaring man whose name indicates his Scotch antecedents, married the widow Shourd (born Catharine Benson). They had one child, Andrew, who was born December 3, 1745, and whom we shall call Andrew McGown, Sr.* Captain McGown was lost at sea some years before the Revolution — in 1759 one writer says — and soon thereafter his widow Catharine bought from Jacob Dyckman, Jr., the old stone tavern on the hill and ten acres of land. Dyckman re-

* Andrew McGown, Sr., married on November 21, 1784, Margaret Benson (who was born in 1766 and died in 1851.) He died October 17, 1820. They had the following named children: Andrew McGown, styled Major Andrew McGown or Andrew McGown, Jr., who was born September 5, 1785, and died March 1, 1870; Samson Benson McGown, born November 30, 1787, and died January 20, 1791; Catherine Maria McGown, born February 4, 1794, died January 15, 1816; a son who was given the name of the deceased child Samson Benson McGown, and who was born June 8, 1797, lived on the south side of 106th street between Third and Lexington avenues, was an alderman of New York, and died July 21, 1884; and Daniel McGown, who was born September 23, 1798, and died December 14, 1830.

tired to his property near Spuyten Duyvil, and Mrs. McGown, with the assistance of her son Andrew, maintained the tavern. Thereafter the place was known as McGown's Pass.

The question has often been asked, "What was (or is) McGown's Pass?" Gen. Joseph G. Swift, in his description of the works at McGown's Pass in 1814, says: "Over McGown's Pass is a blockhouse." This blockhouse was half-way down the north-east side of the hill from the McGown house to the bridge, and spanned a gap in the earthworks through which the highway ran. The road here ran through a shallow hollow between the great rock on which Fort Clinton was built on one side, and a lesser outcropping on the other side. Gen. Swift evidently regarded this little hollow on the hill-side as the pass, and the general usage of the word would seem to confirm the opinion that either this, or the road running through it, was the pass.

John Randel, Jr., civil engineer, who surveyed the upper part of the island for the commissioners of 1807, says, "The Barrier Gate at McGown's Pass was at 107th street, 116 yards east of Sixth avenue." This coincides with Gen. Swift's location, at the point designated as McGown's Pass on the accompanying map of Central Park.

A more typical pass, however, is the valley, running in a generally northeasterly direction from One Hundred and First street and Eighth avenue to the edge of Harlem Plain at the foot of McGown's Hill. The hills on either side of this valley are from ninety to 130 feet high. Through this valley ran the rivulet before described and now converted into the Pool, the Loch, and its connecting thread. In an illustrated description of the northern end of Central Park printed in 1859, the valley is called "McGown's Pass." "The extreme northwest corner of the park," it says, "is occupied by a large hill, which bounds McGown's Pass on the west."

Another and more modern writer refers to the rivulet "flowing through the Pass," meaning this transverse valley.

Thus, while the topography of the locality tends to confirm the latter meaning, the usage of the majority of early map makers and writers goes to support General Swift's meaning; and we are pretty safe in regarding McGown's Pass as that portion of the

ancient but still traceable King's Bridge Road, running from the East Drive at McGown's Pass Tavern, down across the lawn on the northeast side of the hill to the present Harlem Mere.

Here at this much traveled "Pass," the widow McGown and her son Andrew not only found mental diversion from the traffic of this important thoroughfare, but they also found ample patronage for the public house which they maintained.

On maps of the Revolutionary period, the house on the east side of the road corresponding to the present McGown's Pass Tavern is marked "McGown's," and on the other side of the road, a few rods to the south, is the "Black Horse Tavern."

CHAPTER III.

CENTRAL PARK DURING THE REVOLUTION.

Occupation by the British,

The commanding position of McGown's Pass on the main north and south highway of Manhattan Island, midway between its extremities, and at a point where the encroachment of Harlem creek and marsh narrowed the island to a width of only about 2,100 yards, gave this place and the adjacent heights dominating Harlem Plain great strategic value to the military engineer. A British description of New York Island during the Revolution refers to McGown's Pass as a place "where a few troops might stop an army." (See plate 67.)

The active military history of the place begins with the occupation of the island by the British on September 15, 1776, although prior to that date many bodies of troops had marched up or down through the pass, and many a train of heavy wagons or artillery had plodded by the old tavern on the way from or to the then distant city.

After the American defeat on Long Island, August 27, 1776, and the retreat to Manhattan Island, the British manoeuvred to "bottle up" the Americans on the island. Washington saw his peril and by September 10 began the removal of valuable stores from the city preparatory to ultimate evacuation. On September 11, a general council of war voted to evacuate the island below Harlem. Then the rumbling of wheels, the crack of whiplashes, and the shouts of drivers urging their burdened beasts over the hill, increased, and through the dust pulverized by pounding hoof and rolling tire tramped many a soldier who was soon to trudge back through this pass to the city as a prisoner of war.

On the night of the 14th, Washington had moved his headquarters from the city to the Morris Mansion in One Hundred and Sixtieth street, but all the armament and stores were not yet removed from the town, and about 4,000 troops still garrisoned various points on the lower half of the island.

Early on the morning of September 15, 1776, the occupants of the tavern heard a heavy bombardment from the British war-ships lying in the East river designed to silence the American battery on Horn's Hook (at the foot of East Eighty-ninth street) and to cover the British landing at Kip's Bay (foot of East Thirty-fourth street). The sound reached Washington's Headquarters in One Hundred and Sixtieth street and presently the occupants of McGown's house, looking out of their north windows, might have seen the General approaching at full speed on horseback. The chief dashed across the bridge, up the hill, past the house and disappeared in a cloud of dust to the south. Before he arrived at Murray Hill, the British had landed and the American army was in full retreat for the heights above Harlem.

It was well on in the afternoon when the British General Sir Henry Clinton's corps advanced up the Kingsbridge Road toward McGown's Pass. As it neared the latitude of the present Ninety-second street, where the road then entered the territory of Central Park, it encountered Colonel Smallwood's brave Maryland troops which had been posted there to observe the enemy and cover the retreat of the American battery at Horn's Hook. Clinton manoeuvred to cut off the latter, but they retreated safely up through the pass to Harlem Heights beyond. These were the only Americans to retreat through the pass, that day. All the others, from the Connecticut men at Kip's Bay to Putnam's command in the city, including the troops of Fellows, Parsons, Douglass, Wadsworth, Scott, Silliman and Knox, escaped by way of the Bloomingdale Road on the west side to the heights north of Harlem Plain.

The British troops, going up the east side, cut "across lots" through the park by way of the Bloomingdale New Cross Road to the Bloomingdale Road, but too late to intercept the Americans. That night, the British outposts took position at the Black Horse Tavern, McGown's Pass, while the main body of the King's troops stretched clear across Central Park, their right resting on the East river at Horn's Hook and their left on the Hudson at Ninety-sixth street.

"Felix Oldboy," in "A Tour Around New York," tells an entertaining story to the effect that on September 15, 1776,

Daniel McGown was with the American army; that his son Andrew, aged twelve, was ordered by the Hessians arriving on the McGown farm to guide them to the American camp; that the boy gaily led the British troops across country toward the North river in a different direction from that taken by the Americans; and that "thus did a boy of twelve save the army of his country from destruction."

The only trouble with this story is that it is not true. Daniel McGown, father of Andrew McGown of McGown's Pass, had been dead seventeen years. Andrew was born December 3, 1745, and was therefore over thirty years old, not a boy of twelve. The next Andrew had not yet been born, his advent being nearly ten years after this alleged event. Furthermore, few of the troops escaped by way of McGown's Pass, and if the grown-up Andrew had piloted the Hessians toward the North river he would have led them directly to the flying columns escaping by way of the Bloomingdale Road.*

Battle of Harlem.

On the next day, September 16, 1776, was fought the Battle of Harlem Heights. At that time, two German battalions under Von Donop occupied McGown's Pass. They were Block's and Minegerode's men. While the battle was raging over on Morning-side Heights, where the Columbia University buildings now stand, the British, feeling the tremendous pressure of the American assault, called for artillery support. There were two three-pounder brass cannon at McGown's Pass under command of Lieut. Wallace of the Royal Artillery, but there were no horses to haul them to the scene of conflict. Capt. John Montresor, aide-de-camp to General Howe, perceiving the situation, had the cannon dragged over by hand. The armies were then contending in the bloody buckwheat field where Barnard College now stands. Nearing the scene, the artillery opened and fired sixty rounds apiece, but it was unable to save the British, who retired to their lines. These were

*In volume 14, folio 77, of "Manuscripts of the Colony and State of New York in the Revolutionary War," in the Comptroller's office at Albany, there is a record showing that the State charged the United States 5 pounds, 11 shillings and 6 pence for money paid to Andrew McGown, May 21, 1776, for subsistence furnished to the American army. It is possible that McGown rendered other services of which there is no documentary record.

the only cannon used on the battlefield of Harlem Heights. Lord Cornwallis is thought to have made his headquarters at the Black Horse Tavern on that day.

An Improbable Story about Nathan Hale.

The writer has heard it claimed that Nathan Hale was captured at McGown's Pass when he fell into the British hands on the night of September 21, 1776. This statement must be taken *cum grano salis*. It belongs to that numerous category of plausible fictions which are so misleading to the ready believer and not a little perplexing to the critical historian. Hale might have been captured here, but not a vestige of evidence has come to light up to the present time to prove it. The best authority on Nathan Hale is the painstaking and discriminating work of Prof. Henry P. Johnston published in 1901. Professor Johnston thinks it quite possible that Hale tried to escape from New York through the British lines at Harlem, and gives a hypothetical map of his route on Manhattan Island indicating his effort to pass them near One Hundred and Seventh street and North river, but he admits that this is purely speculative. He concludes with the general statement that "the weight of evidence is in favor of New York or vicinity as the place of capture," but as to establishing the exact point his "searches have not met with success as yet."

Fortifying the Heights.

From September 16 to October 12, 1776, the British were vigorously employed erecting fortifications from McGown's Pass, along the heights in the northern part of Central Park and westward to the North river. The following entries in a British orderly book show something of the progress of the work:

"Sept. 20, 1776. All the fascines and pickets to be carried to Jones' house near the North River and to Major Musgrove's advanced post to the left of McGown's House.

"Sept. 21. A working party of 400 men will parade to-morrow and march to McGowan's House.

"Sept. 24. The working party at McGowan's Hill to consist of 200 men only until further orders.

"Sept. 25. The working party at McGowan's Hill will consist of 100 men only till further orders."

There is a manuscript map of this line of defenses in the New York Historical Society. The Sauthier map shows a redoubt in 1776 where Fort Clinton was erected, 1814, and another where Nutter's Battery was erected in 1814.

There was evidently an extensive encampment in the western part of Central Park on what was formerly called the Great Hill, now called the Circle, lying between the West Drive and Eighth avenue opposite One Hundred and Fifth street. In making some excavations on the north side of this hill in 1864, the park workmen found about two feet below the surface distinct traces of a military camp. The ground, in spaces about eight feet square, was compactly trodden and in the corner of each space was a recess, rudely built of stone, for a fire place, with pieces of strap iron fashioned into the shape of pot hooks. Shot and bayonets were also found in the vicinity. Pieces of strap iron, bent into the shape of the letter S for the purpose of hanging kettles over a fire are almost invariable accompaniments of Revolutionary campsites. The writer has excavated many of them on different campsites of that period.

Battle of Fort Washington.

The manuscript map of the attack on Fort Washington on Saturday, November 16, 1776, shows Earl Percy's brigade of British troops camped in the northern end of Central Park, right resting on McGown's Pass, and marching through the pass to the attack. The Sauthier map also shows them proceeding by the same route.

The capture of Fort Washington was followed by the saddest spectacle ever witnessed at McGown's Pass. The scene of the capitulation of Fort Washington was four miles to the northward. The British casualties were seventy-eight killed and 380 wounded. The Americans had fifty-four killed and ninety-three wounded, and surrendered 2,818 prisoners. About 5 p. m., the prisoners, many of whom had already been plundered by the Hessians and all of whom showed the effects of a desperately fought battle, were formed in detachments and started on their march to New York. About 7 o'clock they began to file through McGown's Pass, the kindly shades of evening veiling their humiliation; and for several

hours that night the crisp November air resounded with the tramp of Washington's defeated soldiers on their way to years of suffering, many on their way to death, in the British prisons of the city.

Seven Years of British Occupation.

With the capture of Fort Washington, the British secured complete control of Manhattan Island, which they retained for seven years. They therefore had undisturbed possession of McGown's Pass for all that time.

From the nature of the situation, it is impossible to follow the course of events at the pass during that period with much detail. When we do catch glimpses of the garrison, it appears to be composed of the mercenary troops known under the general term of "Hessians." With the British in secure possession of the island and the waters surrounding it, and with the great demand for troops and guns in other directions, it is not probable that the garrison was large or the armament heavy.

The opening months of the year 1780, however, saw an unusual activity all over the island for a very remarkable reason. In January and February of that year, a cold wave froze up the Hudson river and the harbor so solid that a detachment of British cavalry marched from Staten Island to New York on the ice and heavy cannon were hauled across the river from Paulus Hook (Jersey City). The island having been robbed of its insular character and its occupants of their naval advantage, the British apprehended an attack from the Americans, and every post on the island was on the *qui vive*. "If the enemy (the Americans) had crossed over at Harlem or on the North river anywhere to the south of the line of McGown's Pass, the 42d Regiment, Brigade of Losberg, and the two Anspach Battalions, were to have advanced to positions which Gen. Knyphausen had fixed upon from Col. Clarke's house to the circular redoubt on the East river, and several light field pieces were fixed upon sleighs ready to march to wherever they might be wanted."

The British at this time also established an elaborate system of signals for transmitting alarms from one end of the island to the other; and McGown's Pass, being midway of the island, was the central link in the chain. Upon alarm at King's Bridge, the

signal would be passed along to McGown's Pass by firing cannon at Fort Knyphausen (Fort Washington) if by day, or by shooting rockets at the Morris Mansion (One Hundred and Sixtieth street) if at night. Then McGown's Pass would pass it along to the 37th Regiment Cantonment near the Dove Tavern, which stood at the northwest corner of Sixty-sixth street and Third avenue. Thence it would be repeated to the Murray House (at Thirty-seventh street and Park avenue), Bunker Hill battery (between Center, Grand, Broome and Elizabeth streets), and finally to Fort George. The signal code was adapted to give alarms of attacks from different points by different numbers of shots.

Gen. Pattison, to meet other demands, had evidently stripped McGown's Pass of artillery, for on January 25, 1780, his aide-de-camp, Capt. S. P. Adye, wrote to Capt. Nesbitt as follows:

"SIR:

I am directed by Major General Pattison to acquaint you for information of Major General Mathew that being yesterday informed that there was no gun at McGown's Pass to repeat the established signals, the General has ordered out a four-pounder for that purpose. Ammunition is also sent with it in case General Mathew should think proper to have it posted in any situation of defence, as well as for making signals."

In the British headquarter order book preserved in the Records Office in London, there is an order under date of June 12, 1781, for troops to encamp as follows: "The Regiment Du Corps upon the left and the Regiment of Prince Charles on the right of M'Gowan's Pass."

For many references to McGown's Pass during the British occupation, we are indebted to Lieut. John Charles Philip Von Krafft, of the Regiment Von Bose, of the mercenary troops. His diary is kept in his native language, and his attempts to render local names phonetically has produced some amusing alphabetical combinations. Hell Gate is rendered "Hell Gött." McGown's name, with rare ingenuity, is spelled differently almost every time he refers to the Pass. He starts off with a highly interesting combination of Hell Gate and McGown's Pass in the reference "Hell

Gown's Pass." Following are translations of certain passages in his diary:

"Aug. 19, 1781. The English Grenadiers and Light Infantry from Long Island encamped at Hell Gowns Pass.

"Sept. 1. The 37th English regiment had encamped on the east side of MacGowns pass where Prince Karl's regiment had been.

"Oct. 2. At 4 P. M. the regiment received order to march immediately and to encamp until further orders at MaceGown's Pass where Prince Charl's regiment had been.

"Nov. 20. I was detailed from the field to watch with 9 men to McGon's Pass.

"Dec. 15. This morning the detachment which had been stationed at McGoun's Bass (!) and had been detailed from the Body and Prinz Carl regiments returned to their regiments.

"May 20, 1782. At noon the whole garrison of the New York and Donop's, Prince Carl's and the (Hessian) Body regiment at MaceGoun's Pass had to pass in review before the new Commanding Gen. in Chief, Gen. Carleton, in front of the new line on the east side.

"Sept. 2. This noon, the order came that all should be ready to march to McGow: Pass, and that the foragers and sharp-shooters were to be sent there next morning at 9 o'clock.

"Sept. 5. All measures for the continuation of the war are again seriously undertaken. Our Brigade Grenadiers, Hessians, Landgrave, Bienau, and Knipphaussen regiment are daily expecting order to march to our camp as laid out (which on account of the dearth of water has been postponed) at McGow's Pass.

"Oct. 25. An order came that Lengecke's Battalion was to go to Paulus Hook before Monday, the 27th, and Blate's Garrison Battalion to McGowns Pass in Barracks with the Yagers."

In the course of time, Lieutenant Von Krafft was transferred to a post lower down on the east side, but he evidently enjoyed visiting McGown's Pass, perhaps on account of the cheering company of his compatriots stationed there, perhaps on account of the cheering influence of the sign of the Black Horse. On July 2, 1783, he writes in his diary: "This afternoon I went walking to Macgown's Pass in great melancholy, which has been following me for a long time now. Our Merciful Father protect me from all evil."

To what Lieutenant Von Krafft's melancholy was due is a matter of conjecture. Perhaps it was attributable to the mosquitoes at Turtle bay to which he makes pathetic allusion under other dates. Perhaps it was in consequence of the hot days of which he complains. Perhaps it was due to the physic which he was taking — and which he recorded as faithfully as he chronicled the operations of the army. But *perhaps* it was due to the coquetry of Miss Cornelia de la Metre, the daughter of a widow residing "past the fifth milestone, King's Bridge road, on New York Island," and the near approach of his departure for Europe. Whatever its cause, the melancholy appears to have been cured almost simultaneously with his secret marriage to Miss de la Metre — a union publicly ratified upon his return to New York the following year. For several years thereafter, Mr. de Krafft, as he then styled himself, supported himself and family by teaching in New York city, and still later became a surveyor in the employ of the United States Treasury Department.

Evacuation by the British.

The signature of the treaty of peace brought with it preparations for the evacuation of the island. A Philadelphia newspaper account, dated September 13, 1783, says: "Every preparation is making for the speedy evacuation of New York, the heavy ordnance from Fort George being already embarked, and shipping is being taken up in this city to assist in carrying off the garrison and stores."

As the Hessians were the first of the British troops to garrison McGown's Pass, September 15, 1776, so they appear to have been the last to leave it, for under date of October 25, 1783, only a month before evacuation, Von Krafft says: "An order came that Lengecke's Battalion was to go to Paulus' Hook before Monday, the 27th, and Blate's Garrison Battalion to McGowns Pass in barracks with the Yagers."

Under date of New York, November 12, 1783, Sir Guy Carleton wrote to Washington: "The preparations for withdrawing His Majesty's troops from this place are so far advanced that, unless some untoward accident should intervene, I hope it may be accomplished some days before the end of the present month. At all events I propose to relinquish the posts at Kingsbridge and

as far as McGown's Pass inclusive on this island on the 21st inst. . . . " The determination to evacuate these posts on the 21st was reiterated by Sir Guy to Washington under date of November 19th, and the memoranda of Major George Beckwith gives us almost the hour at which the Pass was to be abandoned. The first four paragraphs of his memoranda read as follows:

" Kings Bridge as well as the Fort and the Works on the Heights within it, will be abandoned on Fryday morning, 21st inst., between 8 and 9 o'clock.

" The barracks at McGowen's, with that part of the island to the northward, will be abandoned on the same day about 10 o'clock in the morning.

" By sending Commissaries, the different barracks will be given up, with such furniture as may be left and in their present order — the works also in their present state — there are a few pieces of old cannon in them.

" Horn's Hook Redoubt on the East River, will be abandoned at the same time with McGowen's pass, provided it is not to be occupied by Gen. Washington till the final evacuation of New York Island."

On Friday, November 21st, General Washington and Governor Clinton arrived at Day's Tavern, attended by a number of army officers, members of the Senate and Assembly and other persons of distinction. On that day the Continental troops took possession of McGown's Pass, and stationed their advanced pickets at the Dove Tavern.

Day's Tavern was on the Kingsbridge road, on the line of the present One Hundred and Twenty-sixth street, 200 feet west of Eighth avenue. The Dove, as before stated, was at the northwest corner of Sixty-sixth street and Third avenue.

The force stationed at McGown's Pass consisted of a provisional brigade of about 800 men, composed of detachments of New York and Massachusetts troops encamped at West Point and Newburgh, under Brevet Brig.-Gen. Henry Jackson. Four six-pounder cannon captured from the enemy and now displayed by Major Bauman formed part of the equipment of this command.

Here the further approach of the American troops to New York was stayed until the enemy could be withdrawn from neighboring posts and embark. On November 24th, in anticipation of the final act of the great Revolutionary drama which was to occur the next

day, General Jackson issued orders dated "McGown's Pass, 24 Nov., '83," ordering the troops to "cook one day's provisions this evening and be in perfect readiness to march to-morrow morning at 8 o'clock." The orders also gave instructions concerning the procedure of the troops upon taking possession of the city the next day.

It is not difficult to picture the scene on those heights on the night of the 24th — the glowing camp fires cooking rations for the morrow, the bustle of preparation as the men furbished up their arms and service-worn uniforms, and the animated conversation as they canvassed the events of the coming day.

On the morning of the 25th the camp was astir early. The brigade, under arms, awaited eagerly the courier from the city who was to tell of the final departure of the enemy.

Soon, a British officer in scarlet uniform might have been seen riding up the post road from the south. Reining up his horse and saluting the American officer in command, he announced that the rear guard of the British army was then embarking at the lower end of the island. The usual civilities having been exchanged, he wheeled about and disappeared down the road to join his departing comrades. A few short, sharp orders brought the American brigade into marching order, and at the command of "Forward, march," the Continentals issued forth from the works at McGown's Pass and began their triumphal march toward New York city. They proceeded in the following order under the general command of General Knox:

A corps of dragoons, Capt. John Stakes.

Advanced guard of light infantry.

A corps of artillery, Col. Ebenezer Stevens.

A battalion of light infantry.

A battalion of Massachusetts troops.

Rear guard, Maj. John Burnett.

Colonel Stevens, who commanded the artillery, was later Major-General of New York artillery, and an important figure on these heights in the War of 1812-15.

When they arrived at the beginning of the Bowery lane they halted, and there remained until about 1 o'clock, when, the British having left their posts in the Bowery, the Americans continued their march and took possession of the city.

CHAPTER IV.

CENTRAL PARK IN THE WAR OF 1812-1815.

Fortifying the Heights Again.

History frequently walks in her own footprints — which is another way of stating the well-known principle of logic, that like causes produce like effects. The same physical conditions, for instance, which led the British army to occupy the otherwise insignificant hamlet of Yorktown, Va., in 1781 — the striking combination of high-river bluff, deep ravines, and precipitous inland slopes — attracted the Confederate army to it as a coign of military vantage in 1862. Human annals are replete with similar repetitions.

It is not surprising therefore, that when, in the second war with Great Britain, the frontier of actual hostilities approached New York city, the heights in the northern part of Central Park and vicinity should again become the scene of military activity.

The declaration of war was made by the Congress of the United States, June 18, 1812. At first, attention was given to manning and strengthening existing fortifications and building new ones at the Battery and other environs of New York harbor. For two years the defenses of the city were conducted upon the hypothesis that the enemy would assail the city only by ships, and quite regardless of the fact that he might land within eight or ten miles of the city, either on Long Island or Manhattan Island, and attack the city from the east and north, as he did in September and November, 1776.

In 1814, with the British commander-in-chief lying at Bermuda and gathering his forces for a descent somewhere — whether upon New Orleans, Norfolk, Washington, Baltimore, New York, or Newport the Americans did not know — and with the knowledge of the defenselessness of the city on flank and rear, the military and municipal authorities realized the necessity of protecting themselves in new directions.

About the end of May, Gen. Joseph G. Swift, Chief of Engineers and Superintendent of Land Fortifications, with Governor Tompkins, commander of the Third Military District of the United States, and Mayor DeWitt Clinton, examined the northern approaches of New York, and General Swift gave his opinion that the heights skirting the Harlem Plains on the south and west should be fortified. In July, secret intelligence was received of an intended attack on the city by the enemy, intelligence which seemed to be confirmed by the appearance of a fleet off Sandy Hook.

This stimulated a forcible report to the Common Council, July 14th, by its special Committee of Defense, urging the construction of fortifications in Brooklyn and at Hell Gate, and on the same day, the corner stone for Fort Stevens at Hallets Point was laid.

The bombardment of Stonington, Conn., August 10, 1814, disclosed the presence of the British in the Sound with startling certainty, and enforced the necessity for swift preparations to defend the city on the north.

On Thursday morning, August 18th, the Common Council of the city, with 200 men employed by the corporation at Bellevue who volunteered their services, commenced a fort at McGown's Pass under a Federal salute from Captain Messerve's troop of flying artillery. The work was named Fort Clinton obviously in honor of Mayor DeWitt Clinton. The Committee of Defense,* in its formal announcement of this event in the *New York Columbian* of August 19, 1814, says: "This work is the commencement of a chain of forts to be erected on Harlem Heights for the defence of this city, under General Swift, in the construction of which the Committee of Defense calculate upon the aid of their patriotic fellow citizens, as in the erection of those on Long Island."

The chain of fortifications, of which those at McGown's Pass formed a part, was as follows: A redoubt on Benson's Point, near Third avenue and One Hundred and Sixth street; those at McGown's Pass, to be described more in detail hereafter; the stone

* The following served on the Committee of Defense of the Common Council during the years 1812-1815: Aldermen Nicholas Fish, lawyer; John Morss, mason; Peter Mesier, flour merchant; Thomas Carpenter, merchant; Geo. Buckmaster, retired; and Thomas R. Smith, merchant; Assistant Aldermen Samuel Jones, Jr., lawyer; Peter Hawes, lawyer; John Drake, merchant; John Mitchie, starch manufacturer; Joseph W. Brackett, lawyer; Gideon Tucker, dealer in plaster of paris; Jonas Mapes, merchant tailor; and Isaac S. Douglass, merchant.

tower generally called "blockhouse No. 1," in the northwestern part of Central Park, about fourteen yards south of One Hundred and Ninth street and seven yards west of Seventh avenue; a wooden tower between One Hundred and Thirteenth and One Hundred and Fourteenth streets and Ninth and Tenth avenues; a wooden tower on the south side of One Hundred and Twenty-first street about 110 yards east of Tenth avenue; a stone tower on the south side of One Hundred and Twenty-third street about fifty-four yards east of Tenth avenue; and Fort Laight, at Manhattanville, about twenty yards north of One Hundred and Twenty-fourth street and 120 yards east of Eleventh avenue. (See plates 66 and 67.)

The Old Stone Tower.

The old stone structure in the northwestern corner of the park, called a "tower" by Randel and a "blockhouse" by Swift, is about thirty-four feet square at the base. The height — or depth — of the walls varies on account of the unevenness of the great rock on which they are built. The western wall measures nineteen feet from top to ground. The walls have a decided batter, to increase their stability. The flat roof is about five feet below the coping. The blockhouse has, or had, two small apertures in each wall. It did not, as commonly supposed, have an overhanging second story, with machicolations or loopholes in the overhung floor so that a plunging fire could be directed against an enemy in close attack. Existing illustrations depict such a construction on Mill rock in the East river and directly over the barrier gate at McGown's Pass; but the four "blockhouses," of which the Central Park blockhouse was No. 1, were not of the typical blockhouse construction. General Swift's description shows that they were designed to mount on their terraces, *en barbette*, a single heavy traversing gun each — that is, a cannon which could be aimed in any direction. The "terrace" in this work is the sunken roof, constituting the platform of the gun. (See plate 60.)

The portion of the wall rising about breast high above the level of the terrace is the parapet. A gun mounted to fire over a parapet instead of through an embrasure is called "*en barbette*." The principle of these towers was the same as that of the picturesque Martello towers which one sees at Kingston and Quebec, Canada.

The Martello towers, while round instead of square, and more ingeniously constructed than the towers on Harlem Heights, mounted a single heavy piece each, en barbette, on an elevated terrace, just as the latter were designed to do.

The Harlem Heights towers were within supporting distance of each other, and near enough for the interchange of grapeshot. General Swift's report indicates that they had not been mounted with guns when the troops were mustered out in December, 1814.

In 1905, the Women's Auxiliary of the American Scenic and Historic Preservation Society placed upon the Central Park tower a tablet which bears the following inscription:

This Blockhouse
Was Part of a Line of Fortifications
Extending from the Hudson to the
Harlem River. Built for the Defence
Of New York by its Patriotic Citizens
During the War of 1812-1815.
This Tablet is Erected by
The Women's Auxiliary to the American Scenic
And Historic Preservation Society.
A. D. 1905.

The Works at McGown's Pass.

The principal works at McGown's Pass were three in number, occupying commanding elevations at the angles of an almost equilateral triangle measuring about 550 or 600 feet on a side. The largest and highest was on the little plateau just west of the East Drive opposite the present McGown's Pass Tavern, at an elevation of eighty-nine feet above tide-water. This was called Fort Fish, obviously in honor of Nicholas Fish, Chairman of the Committee of Defense. It was an open earthwork, mounting five guns of heavy calibre. The breastworks are now gone, but the flat plateau is easily recognized. (See plates 62, 63, 64, 65 and 66.)

The second work was Fort Clinton, an earthwork occupying the summit of the rock overlooking Harlem Mere, 600 feet east of Fort Fish, at an elevation of nearly fifty feet. It mounted three pieces. The breastwork here is clearly traceable. Fort Clinton, as previously mentioned, was named after Mayor DeWitt Clinton. As nearly as we can judge from contemporary maps, it occupies the site of one of the Revolutionary redoubts.

Five hundred and fifty feet to the northward of Fort Clinton and 600 northeast of Fort Fish, on an advantageous point forty-five feet above the water, was built a work called Nutter's battery, mounting one piece. The battery derived its name from Valentine Nutter, whose house stood a few rods to the northward, on the line of Sixth avenue between One Hundred and Ninth and One Hundred and Tenth streets on the old Nutter farm referred to on page 395. Nutter's Battery occupied the site of a Revolutionary redoubt.

Fort Clinton was connected on the east with the head of the natural barrier presented by Harlem creek by a breastwork and ditch. It was also connected with Nutter's battery by a breastwork of which very prominent vestiges remain. About midway between Fort Clinton and Nutter's battery the Post road crossed the line of this breastwork. Here was erected a barrier gate, surmounted by a blockhouse flanked on each side by a one-gun battery. This site can be recognized by the gap between the end of the breastwork which comes down the hill from Fort Clinton and the prominent rock a rod to the northward.

Nutter's battery was connected with Fort Fish by a breastwork which can be traced for quite a distance from the battery.

Immediately at the foot of these works on the west are the valley and stream before referred to. This side was obstructed by a strong abattis (an entanglement of felled trees), commanded by the guns of Fort Fish. The works at McGown's Pass were erected under the immediate direction of Major Horn. The work was performed chiefly by volunteer citizens. As already mentioned, the work here was initiated by volunteers from Bellevue, and they were followed by almost every conceivable class of men — the Society of Tammany, the students of Columbia College, medical students, the Marine Society, the Society of Tallow Chandlers, butchers, members of the bar, Free Masons, firemen, Sons of Erin, colored citizens, etc. They worked by daylight and they worked by moonlight, in their eagerness to complete the security of the city.

A typical example of the enthusiasm with which these volunteers went about their work is afforded by a party of the Master Butchers' Association who worked at McGown's Pass in the latter

part of September. Bright and early in the morning they started from the city on their six-mile march for Harlem, headed by a brass band. They carried a large banner bearing the following inscription, the last line referring to their recent work on the Brooklyn fortifications:

“ Friends of Our Country
Free Trade and Butchers’ Rights
From Brooklyn’s Fields to Harlem Heights.”

By sun-down, they had thrown up and neatly sodded a breast-work east of Fort Clinton about 100 feet long, 20 feet thick and 4 feet high.

Harlem Heights was then about six miles from the city, and the distance was so great that there were fewer volunteers here than for the Brooklyn defenses. To save them a six-mile tramp daily, boats were run from the city to Harlem, and many sight-seers availed themselves of these excursions to witness the progress of the work.

On August 31, 1814, the *New York Columbian* said:

“ The fortifications at M’Gown’s Pass on the Harlem road have acquired a great degree of strength and perfection and are worth a day’s work to go and see them. They are compact and regular and nearly ready for cannon and artillerists.”

On September 20, 1814, the *Columbian* said:

“ With the fair weather at the commencement of this week, the labor of completing the works for the defence of this city is resumed. * * * The works at Harlem Heights are numerous, compact, and judiciously placed, and form a romantic and picturesque view, as well as impassable barrier to an enemy’s march.”

On September 30th, McGown’s and the adjacent heights were garrisoned by a brigade of 1,600 State militia under Brigadier-General Heermance. There were altogether serving in the Third Military District of New York at that time 15,000 militia and 1,000 Sea Fencibles.

An order from the Adjutant-General’s office, dated November 3, 1814, read as follows:

“ Brigadier-General Curtenius will detail from his Brigade a detachment of 400 exclusive field and company officers to relieve

the guard and fatigue party from General Mapes's Brigade, stationed at McGowan's Pass, Harlaem, on Saturday, the 5th inst. The Brigade Quartermaster will see that the detachment is properly supplied for one week. It will occupy the Cantonment of General Mapes's Detachment."

In November, 1814, Governor Tompkins made a tour of all the city's fortifications. On the 11th he reached Harlem Heights, inspected the works at McGown's Pass, and reviewed the whole brigade commanded by General Heermance.

On December 2d, the three-months' term of enlistment of a large portion of the militia expired, and, as that date approached, and the prospects of peace were bright, preparations were made for mustering out. On November 21st, Heermance's Brigade, with others, was ordered to be mustered and inspected for pay as soon as possible with a view to its discharge on December 2d.

The events of the next few weeks proved the hopes for peace to be well grounded. On December 24, 1814, the treaty of Ghent was signed, and the first months of 1815 saw McGown's Pass deserted.

The Monument at McGown's Pass.

For ninety years after the close of the war, two small pieces of ordnance lay upon the ground at Fort Clinton and became deeply pitted with rust. As population approached the site, and particularly after the creation of Central Park, these pieces became the objects of the pranks of boys, who would roll them down the hill into Harlem Mere. More than once they were rescued from utter loss by the Park Department at the solicitation of the writer of this paper. In 1904 and again in 1905, the American Scenic and Historic Preservation Society urged the Park Commissioners to mount the cannon in some permanent form on the top of Fort Clinton. At length, in 1906, the Hon. Moses Herrman, Commissioner of Parks for the Boroughs of Manhattan and Richmond, listened with sympathy to our appeals, and caused the cannon to be mounted after a design suggested by the writer and executed by Mr. T. E. Videto, architect. To one face of the monument the City History Club affixed a tablet, designed by Mr.

William Wells Bosworth and made by Messrs. J. & R. Lamb, bearing the following inscription:

This Eminence, Commanding
McGown's Pass,
Was Occupied by British Troops Sept. 15, 1776,
and Evacuated Nov. 21, 1783.
Here, Beginning August 18, 1814, the Citizens of New York
Built Fort Clinton to Protect the City
In the Second War with Great Britain.
This Tablet is Erected by the Children of the
City History Club of New York, A. D. 1906.

The monument was dedicated with appropriate ceremonies on November 24, 1906. An account of the proceedings will be found in the Annual Report of the American Scenic and Historic Preservation Society for 1907. (See plate 61.)

CHAPTER V.

CONDITION OF THE PARK AREA BEFORE PARK WAS CREATED.

The Passing of the Old Tavern.

Before we come to the narrative of the creation of Central Park, we must not only follow still further the history of the site at McGown's Pass, where the Mount Saint Vincent Convent and Academy became a famous landmark, but we must also refer to three other conspicuous features of the park ante-dating its creation, namely, the two Croton reservoirs and the arsenal building, and describe the physical condition of the lands when they were taken for park purposes.

In describing the military events at McGown's Pass during the two wars with Great Britain we have dropped the narrative of its civil history, and must go back a few years to pick it up again.

Soon after the Revolution, the tavern at McGown's Pass appears to have passed into the possession, but not ownership, of one Legget, for, on a road map made by Christopher Colles in 1789, the tavern is called "Legget's." Legget's was still a famous refectory in the closing years of the eighteenth century. A view of "Legget's Halfway Tavern" appears in Volume VIII of the "Public Papers of George Clinton," opposite page 292. The Black Horse Tavern stood until 1808.

In 1790, the old Dyckman-McGown stone house was torn down, and a more commodious frame dwelling erected a little to the northward, part being on the old foundation.

The property remained in the possession of the McGown family until December 1, 1845. On that date, the executors and heirs-at-law of Andrew McGown, Sr., deceased, deeded to Thomas B. Odell, in consideration of the sum of \$6,000, 6.958 acres of land lying on the east side of the King's Bridge road between One Hundred and Second street and One Hundred and Seventh street. For those who are interested in the line of the old King's Bridge road at this point, the boundaries of the property as mentioned in the deed

are here given. The line begins at the intersection of the northerly line of One Hundred and Fourth street with the easterly line of King's Bridge road, and runs:

	Degrees.	Minutes.		Feet.
Thence along said line North	28	25	East	153
Thence along said line North	52	5	East	216
Thence along said line North	57	25	East	74
Thence along said line North	77	10	East	133
Thence along said line North	49	30	East	94
Thence South	1	25	East	243
Thence South	8	10	East	84
Thence South	0	0	East	67
Thence South	13	10	West	50
Thence South	46	20	West	21
Thence South	23	40	West	200
Thence South	82	20	West	94
Thence South	76	15	West	20
Thence South	69	40	West	313
Thence South	73	0	West	50
Thence South	77	25	West	52
To the King's Bridge road.				
Thence along said road North	10	50	East	363
Thence along said road North	24	20	East	37
To the place of beginning.				

The heirs-at-law of Andrew McGown, Sr., deceased, who executed this deed were Margaret McGown, his widow; Andrew McGown, Jr. (with Elizabeth, his wife); Samson B. McGown (with Caroline, his wife); and Margaret E., wife of Isaac Adriaance. The executors were Margaret, Andrew and Samson B. McGown.

It may be noted in passing that in this deed, the name is spelled "McGown" invariably.

Odell retained the property only sixteen months, when this identical tract passed into the possession of a charitable and educational institution of so much importance and reputation that for many years the name McGown's Pass was completely superseded and the place became known as Mount Saint Vincent.

Mount Saint Vincent.

This famous institution was the Sisters of Charity of St. Vincent de Paul. The mother society was instituted by Elizabeth Seton in Emmitsburg, Md., in 1809. In 1817 the Sisters were summoned by Bishop Connolly to New York where a new mission was formed. In 1846, this New York branch, then numbering thirty-three, was erected into a separate and independent community, of which Sister Elizabeth Boyle was first mother superior.

On April 1, 1847, Thomas B. Odell deeded to Elizabeth Boyle the tract of nearly seven acres above described for a consideration of \$6,000, Sister Elizabeth assuming a mortgage which Odell had placed upon the property.

During the Revolution, the Island of Manhattan had been denuded of all trees except a few fruit orchards. Part of this denudation was for military purposes and part was in order to secure firewood. Firewood was so scarce, that old ships were broken up to supply fuel. At the time of the occupation of the McGown's Pass property by the Academy and Convent of St. Vincent, a fine growth of sixty-four years had clothed the hills and valleys with verdure. The advancing tide of population of the great city was still five or six miles distant, and the region still possessed its rural charm.

The old-fashioned wooden mansion at McGown's Pass of which the sisterhood took possession contained two stories of four rooms each and attic, and had outside balconies from which the views were unsurpassed. Over the trees one could see the East and Harlem rivers, and Long Island sound, with their clusters of green islands in the sparkling waters and the passing sails of countless vessels plying between New York and Long Island, Connecticut, Rhode Island and Massachusetts. In the eastern foreground nestled the ancient little village of Harlem. To the south was Yorkville; to the west Bloomingdale, and to the northwest Manhattanville.

On May 2, 1847, Bishop Hughes celebrated mass in the southwest parlor of the old house, thus consecrating the spot to a great work. Early in 1847, a north wing was added, and in this the first commencement exercises were held September 8, 1847. In 1848, the south wing was built. There was an old barn on the

premises which was converted into a laundry. In 1850, a large structure containing a study hall, recreation hall and class rooms was built; and a two-story stone house was erected on the northwest as a residence for the chaplain. About this time a free school was opened in a small building, either purchased or erected, in the ravine. The pupils came from the surrounding country and probably numbered about fifty or sixty. Lastly, in 1855, a stately brick edifice, containing a beautiful chapel and large dining rooms, completed the group of academic buildings.

Meanwhile, this center of religious and educational activity was threatened by the movement for the creation of Central Park. The law authorizing the building of Central Park from Fifty-ninth street to One Hundred and Sixth street which was passed in 1853 took in part of the Mt. St. Vincent property. The report of the Commissioners of Estimate and Assessment was confirmed by the Supreme Court on February 5, 1856. On December 20, 1856, the Sisters of Charity bought the estate of Edwin Forrest called Font Hill,* now Mt. St. Vincent-on-the-Hudson, fifteen miles from the City Hall, and in 1858, they held their last commencement exercises at McGown's Pass. This noble sisterhood now number 1,360.

That portion of Central Park lying between One Hundred and Sixth street and One Hundred and Tenth street, containing the fortifications of which we have spoken, was added to the park in 1863.

The Sisters of Charity, however, had not forsaken the spot forever; neither were the martial associations of the locality ended. The outbreak of the Civil War in 1861 soon brought in its melancholy train the need for hospitals and nurses, and the old Mt. St. Vincent buildings were taken by the government for the care of wounded soldiers. Here, the Sisters of Charity continued to devote themselves to the relief of those who found refuge, care and comfort in the wards of their old convent and academy home until the close of the war in 1865.

* From the family name of La Font, former owners.

McGown's Pass Tavern Again.

The Commissioners then utilized some of the buildings for administrative offices. But the ghosts of departed publicans hovered over the spot and the ancient traditions of the tavern site could no longer brook interruption. The Commissioners, therefore, on October 19, 1866, authorized Comptroller Andrew H. Green to lease the Mt. St. Vincent buildings, or such part thereof as might be necessary, to Alexander McC. Stetson for a refreshment house, the Commissioners reserving the right to regulate the kind of refreshments sold.

On December 13th of the same year the Comptroller was authorized to put the brick building formerly used for a convent chapel in order for use as a statuary gallery and museum. Thus, while one portion of the Mt. St. Vincent buildings ministered to the appetites of those who visited these then remote parts, another was converted into a temple of art, concerning whose future as a home of the Muses the Commissioners entertained high expectations. With provisions for meeting such a wide range of physical and intellectual wants, the buildings constituted the home of a veritable "happy family," consisting of the landscape gardeners, the engineers and the police, not to mention Mine Host Stetson and the curator of statuary to fame unknown.

Stetson's tenure ended about March 13, 1872, when the tavern privilege was let to Radford & Ryan, but the name Stetson's Hotel clung to the place for several years afterwards. Columbus Ryan was a superintendent in the park, and, either in partnership with Radford, as Radford & Ryan, or alone, or in partnership with someone else, as Ryan & Co., he was identified with the tavern up to the fire of 1881.

About 5.20 o'clock on the morning of January 2, 1881, fire broke out in the basement of the frame building used as a hotel and extended to the brick building used as the art gallery. Both were destroyed. The fire was due to a defective fireplace. The report of the fire department gives the area of the hotel as 125 x 75, and the area of the art building as 75 x 100. The statuary was rescued and stored in the Arsenal building at the lower end of the park. The hotel, although occupied by Ryan & Co., was still called Stetson's Hotel by some at this period.

Within a week after the fire, the New York Municipal Society filed with the Park Board a formal protest against the erection of another refreshment house, and citizens filed counter petitions in favor of a new restaurant. In June, 1881, the Commissioners ordered the ruins cleared away, the walls leveled, the material covered with mold, and the ground planted with creeping vines. Thereupon the controversy subsided without the manning of the old redoubts or actual hostilities on this already sufficiently historic spot. The site remained unoccupied for two years, and then, in 1883, the present tavern was built and the ancient uses of the spot revived.

Owing to the confusion arising from the duplication of the name of "Mt. St. Vincent," Mother Jerome, of the Sisters of Charity at the new Mt. St. Vincent-on-the-Hudson, requested the Commissioners to abolish that name from the Central Park map, and that was formally done April 16, 1884.

On January 3, 1891, the Commissioners of Central Park, who had continued to call the place "Mt. St. Vincent" informally, in spite of their resolution abolishing the name, formally voted to adopt another designation, and so the historic old name of McGown's Pass has come into use again with almost everybody except the old stage drivers in the park who perversely insist on calling it Mt. St. Vincent to this day.

The Old Croton Reservoir.

In the following the history of the McGown's Pass section of the park, we have been carried in point of time past an important event which occurred within the park limits before the park was created. This event was the first formal ceremony attending the introduction of Croton water into the city of New York. In the year 1835, the citizens of New York voted to issue bonds for the construction of an aqueduct by which a water supply should be brought to the city from the Croton river, forty miles distant. The plan, which was eventually carried out, provided for a capacious aqueduct from the Croton dam to the Harlem river, over which the water was to be carried by a High Bridge of stone. Thence it was to be conducted along Tenth avenue to One Hundred and Seventh street; thence between Ninth and Tenth avenues to Eighty-

eighth street, thence to Eighty-sixth street and Eighth avenue, and thence along the line of Eighty-sixth street to a large receiving reservoir bounded by the lines of Eighty-sixth street, Seventy-ninth street, Sixth avenue and Seventh avenue, as those thoroughfares were laid out on the city map of 1807. From the reservoir the conduit was to run east on the line of Eightieth street to Fifth avenue, and thence down Fifth avenue to a distributing reservoir on the west side of the avenue between Fortieth and Forty-second streets. Thence the pipe line was to run to City Hall Park, with branches for the supply of the city. For the receiving reservoir the city in 1838 selected 37.05 acres of land* within the bounds above mentioned, and built the rectangular reservoir, now known as the Old Reservoir, with a capacity of 180,000,000 gallons. The progress made on the work of building the aqueduct after the vote of 1835 was remarkably rapid, considering the magnitude and novelty of the undertaking, and every effort was made to complete it by the summer of 1842. Unexpected difficulties, however, were experienced in getting rock foundation for the High Bridge, and it was impossible to complete the work at that point as soon as expected, but the receiving reservoir "at Yorkville," as it was called, and substantially all the rest of the system were ready; and in order that the introduction of the water might not be delayed, a temporary system of inverted siphons was devised for carrying the water across the Harlem river. On June 27, 1842, water was admitted into "the upper reservoir at Yorkville" with impressive ceremonies, in the presence of the Mayor, the Common Council, the Governor, the members of the Court for the Correction of Errors (then the highest court of appeals in the State), and a great gathering of people. A feature of the celebration was the arrival of the boat Croton Maid. This boat, large enough to hold four persons, had been launched at the Croton reservoir thirty-eight miles distant and sent through the aqueduct to High Bridge, where it arrived June 23. On the twenty-seventh it was carried across the Harlem and put into the aqueduct again and arrived at Central Park soon after the artillery salute of thirty-eight guns

* Of these 37 acres, $27\frac{1}{2}$ were Common Lands of the city. The other $9\frac{1}{2}$ acres consisted of two blocks of $4\frac{3}{4}$ acres each owned by Hickson W. Field and William Mathews. The city paid \$11,000 for each of these blocks, or \$22,000 for the $9\frac{1}{2}$ acres.

had announced the arrival of the water. The boat was presented to the fire department with an appropriate speech by the President of the Board of Water Commissioners. On July 4th, the water was admitted with further ceremonies into the reservoir at Forty-second street, then described as "at Murray Hill, a short drive from the city." And on October 14th, the great celebration took place in City Hall Park.

On December 17, 1860, the Croton aqueduct board assented to the removal of the wall at the southwest corner of the reservoir, where the Belvidere was subsequently erected, on condition that the Park Commissioners should place some suitable monument to mark the line of the aqueduct property; that no public walk be made on the property; and that no objection would be made at any time to the reoccupation of the corner by the aqueduct commissioners.

New Croton Reservoir or Lake Manahatta.

In less than a decade after the introduction of the Croton water supply, the city realized that it did not have storage capacity enough in its reservoirs to protect it against a serious drouth, and on February 5, 1851, the Common Council directed the Croton Aqueduct Board "to purchase without unnecessary delay, enough suitable ground for a new reservoir of sufficient capacity with those already built to contain a supply for at least sixty days' consumption." The board thereupon carefully examined the island and on February 9, 1852, voted to appropriate for that purpose the rectangular area comprised between Fifth and Seventh avenues and Eighty-sixth and Ninety-sixth streets, as those streets were laid out on the city plan by the Commissioners of 1807. On May 21, 1852, the board recommended to the court the following named gentlemen as Commissioners of Estimate of the value of the ground to be taken: Daniel Dodge, Samuel B. Ruggles, Ezra P. Davis, Jacob S. Baker, Jedediah Miller and Anthony J. Bleecker.

Before work was begun on the reservoir, the Central Park was created, including the reservoir area, and the Park Commissioners proposed an exchange of territory by which the new reservoir, instead of being rectangular, would follow natural contours and,

by avoiding some rock excavation, would save from \$200,000 to \$250,000 in the cost of construction. The Croton Aqueduct Board therefore, on June 6, 1857, consented to the change and the reservoir was built as it now exists. The land for this reservoir, purchased under an act of the Legislature of June 30, 1853, comprises 106.726 acres, and the reservoir, which covers ninety-six acres has a capacity of 1,030,000,000 gallons. On April 14, 1856, the sum of \$729,964.50 was awarded for the site.

This new reservoir, called on a map of 1859, Manahatta Lake,* in the records of the Aqueduct Board the Grand Reservoir, and popularly the New Reservoir, was completed in 1862 and the water was admitted on August 19th with due ceremony. The minutes of the Croton Aqueduct Board of that date read as follows:

"The water was let into the new Grand Reservoir on this day at 3 P. M. The signal was given by Chief Engineer Alfred W. Craven, Esq., when the ten influent gates were raised simultaneously, and the Croton flowed through to the delight of the thousands that were present to witness the great event. His Honor the Mayor then introduced Myndert Van Schaick, who delivered an address, after which Mr. McChesney recited an ode prepared for the occasion, and with an address by Mr. Marsh and music by Mr. H. Dodworth's band the ceremonies ended and the assembled multitude dispersed to pay their respects to the contractors, Messrs. Fairchild, Walker & Company, at their office."

The Arsenal Building.

Another landmark of the park which antedates the park itself is the building near Fifth avenue opposite Sixty-fourth street now used by the Park Department as its headquarters. This building was erected by the State in 1848 as an Arsenal, and is still called by that name. The plot upon which it was built comprised ten acres and belonged to the State. Near by the arsenal, on the same plot, was erected a large powder magazine. Early in 1855, a movement was begun to acquire the property for the city in order that it might become a part of Central Park, and after many negotiations, the price for the land and buildings was fixed

* Mayor Tiemann so named it at the ceremonies attending the induction of the water, saying: "Our new Lake of the Manahatta will far surpass the dimensions of the old Kolch."

at \$275,000. In January, 1856, Governor Myron H. Clark, in his message to the Legislature, recommended that the property be sold to the city at that price, and during the session of the Legislature, the sale was authorized, although not without considerable opposition.

During the Civil War, the building was again put into active use for military purposes. Troops en route to the front were quartered here and drilled on the parade ground in front of the Arsenal in preparation for their grim duties on southern battlefields. For nearly five years, the tramp of uniformed men, the rattle of arms, the shrill bugle call and the sharp commands of officers sounded through the dells of the park. When the war was over, the returning veterans halted here again, en route to their various mustering-out places in different parts of the State.

The original cost of the Arsenal building was \$30,000. It is a picturesque building with castellated Norman towers well covered with ivy. For many years the Central Park Menagerie was housed in the basement, while the upper floors were devoted to the executive offices of the Park Department. At present, the basement is used as a sort of livery stable and the upper floors for offices.

The Wilderness Before the Park.

The physical condition of the Central Park area just prior to its being taken for park purposes was about as repellant as could be imagined. For the most part, it was a succession of stone quarries, interspersed with pestiferous swamps and overgrown with tangles and thickets of briars and vines. The ground was so thinly covered with soil that it was almost impossible to find a square rod in which a crow-bar would not strike rock; so low in places as to be utterly unfit for building purposes; and a menace to health on account of its offensive and unsanitary condition. Poison ivy was so abundant that the surveyors were seriously hampered, one man being laid up a fortnight on account of being poisoned. Large areas of marsh were simply masses of tangled vines, impenetrable except by the aid of the axe. The poor soil which thinly clad the rocks supported a scanty growth of trees. Between the lines of Fifth and Sixth avenues, in the vicinity of Seventy-eighth street, there was a grove of cedars of sufficient size

to be mentioned in a survey in 1856. Between the lines of Sixty-ninth and Seventy-ninth streets west of the Sixth avenue line a fine growth of young locust gave promise for the future. Between Ninety-sixth and One Hundred and Sixth streets there were few trees of any size, most of the fine timber which crowned the hills in that section having been plundered, and even a thrifty apple orchard having shared the same fate in the winter of 1854-5. A large portion of the surface, however, was covered with undergrowth, where, among thickets of thorns and briars, many valuable shrubs and small trees struggled for life. North of One Hundred and Sixth street, and particularly in the neighborhood of Mt. St. Vincent, there were some fine trees and the aspect was really beautiful.

Although in a general way the area was a barren wilderness, the professional botanist was at no loss for "specimens." In 1856, a botanical survey of that portion of the park between Fifty-ninth and One Hundred and Sixth streets was made, and about seventy different species were found, represented by about 150,000 specimens, large and small, mostly small. About twenty-eight species were either injurious or were represented by so few specimens that they were not mentioned. The other forty-two species with the approximate number of specimens found, were as follows:

TREES.

<i>Acer dasycarpum</i> , silver leafed maple.....	9,000
<i>Betula nigra</i> , red birch	1,000
<i>Broussonetia</i> , paper mulberry.....	500
<i>Carpinus americana</i> , water beech.....	5,000
<i>Castanea americana</i> , chestnut.....	500
<i>Catalpa syringæfolia</i> , catalpa.....	50
<i>Celtis occidentalis</i> , sugar berry.....	several
<i>Cornus alba</i> , white varied dog-wood.....	1,500
<i>Cornus florida</i> , American dogwood.....	3,000
<i>Diospyrus virginiana</i> , persimmon.....	500
<i>Fagus ferruginea</i> , beech.....	2,000
<i>Fraxinus americana</i> , white ash.....	100
<i>Gleditschia triacanthus</i> , honey locust.....	100
<i>Juglans nigra</i> , black walnut.....	2,000
<i>Juniperus virginiana</i> , red cedar.....	few

<i>Laurus sassafras</i> , sassafras	20,000
<i>Liquidambar styraciflua</i> , sweet gum.....	6,000
<i>Liriodendron tulipefera</i> , tulip tree.....	500
<i>Platanus occidentalis</i> , buttonwood, sycamore.....	3,000
<i>Populus balsamifera</i> , balsam poplar.....	50
<i>Populus argentea</i> , cotton tree.....	50
<i>Populus tremuloides</i> , American aspen.....	100
<i>Quercus macrocarpa</i> , white oak.....	1,500
<i>Quercus rubra</i> , red oak.....	2,000
<i>Quercus palustris</i> , pin oak.....	several
<i>Robinia pseudacacia</i> , common locust tree.....	3,000
<i>Ulmus americana</i> , American elm.....	6,000

SHRUBS.

<i>Alnus serrulata</i> , common alder.....	12,000
<i>Andromeda paniculata</i> , privet andromeda.....	2,500
<i>Azalea viscosa</i> , white wild honeysuckle.....	600
<i>Clethra alnifolia</i> , sweet pepper-bush.....	500
<i>Corylus americana</i> , wild filbert.....	6,000
<i>Hamamelis virginiana</i> , witch hazel.....	1,500
<i>Laurus benzoin</i> , wild allspice.....	250
<i>Myrica cerifera</i> , bay berry.....	6,000
<i>Prunus virginiana</i> , choke cherry.....	2,000
<i>Viburnum acerifolium</i> , maple-leaved arrow-wood.....	5,000
<i>Viburnum pauciflorum</i> , mountain bush cranberry.....	abundant

VINES.

<i>Celastrus scandens</i> , bitter sweet.....	several
<i>Clematis virginiana</i> , virgin's bower.....	200
<i>Vitis labrusca</i> , fox grape.....	2,000
<i>Vitis quinquefolia</i> , American ivy.....	500

The Squatter Population.

Surprising as it may seem, this forbidding region was the refuge of a population of about 5,000 souls. It was a sort of no-man's-land, occupied by squatters living in the most abject manner. Their miserable little huts were made of boards rudely nailed together and sometimes covered with sheets of tin made by flattening out old tin cans. Some few had better accommodations which, when the ground was first taken for the park, the city rented out for a pittance. On May 14, 1856, the Comptroller

sent to the Common Council a list of buildings on Central Park lands which were being leased at nominal figures, ranging from ten dollars to twenty-five dollars a year, and they included three stone buildings, two brick buildings, eighty-five or ninety frame houses, one rope walk, and about 200 shanties, barns, stables, piggeries and bone factories.

As may be imagined from the prices obtained, even the buildings which were of enough consequence to be rented were not palatial. They were, in fact, mostly ruins.

The Rev. Thomas McClure Peters,* who was rector of St. Michael's Protestant Episcopal Church at the time when the park was taken, in a sketch entitled "Jake's End," thus describes the condition of one of the denizens of that neighborhood:

"His house, or at least his last house during life, was wretched enough to pass among the most doleful of the squatters' huts of that region. It was mostly underground, being entered by a descent of several steps from a door which faced (it would sound too cheerful to say the rising sun), so let it be the eastern storm. There might have been a sheet or two of dirt, with glass on the outside of it, but to the best of my recollection the den was windowless and all the light came through the door, which I certainly never saw closed. The cabin had a mud floor, with a small platform of broken plank on one side. There was an open fire-place with one fire-dog. The fuel was of such bits of wood as could be picked up on the banks of the North river, whence, it may be said, not a few of the pre-Parkites drew their supplies for cooking and warmth. In default of other combustibles, the scanty platform was encroached upon; and as Jake gradually failed, the only remnant of flooring faded away with him. A sadly crippled chair offered a treacherous seat for a single visitor; any more must remain standing unless they chose a suspicious resting place on the edge of Jake's bed."†

The inhabitants of these squalid quarters represented various nationalities — white men, negroes and Indians, Americans, Germans and Irishmen, and all degrees of intermixtures. Some were married and some paid no respect to the marriage covenant. Some believed in religion and some did not. Some were honest,

* Father of the Rev. John P. Peters, D. D., the present rector.

† "Annals of St. Michael's," by Rev. John P. Peters, D. D.

deteriorated gentle folk; more were roughs and toughs, living an abandoned life. For food they depended largely on the refuse of the city which they conveyed daily in small carts, drawn by dogs, from the lower part of the city through Fifth avenue, which was then a dirt road running over hill and down dale. This refuse was divided between the human residents of the park and uncountable numbers of domestic animals, the bones being reserved for the bone boiling establishments within the area. The occupations of some of the inhabitants were illegal nuisances and were carried on under the cover of night. The land was also the "omnium gatherum" for city rubbish, and was diversified by heaps of cinders, brickbats, potsherds and other rubbish. Horses and cows, dogs and cats, pigs and goats, geese and chickens, swarmed everywhere. It is said that there were 100,000 of these animals roaming around. The odors from the filthy hovels, pigstyes, and decaying organic matter, heightened by those emanating from the bone boiling, swill milk and hog feeding establishments, made the air sickening to breathe, while the drainage from the surface into the old water courses that ramified in all directions converted the adjacent swamps into reeking pest holes. The swine added to the general desolation by destroying the roots in the ground until plant growth was exterminated in their haunts and the rocks laid bare.

Dog Life of the Squatters.

The dogs were an especially conspicuous feature of this wilderness. They represented almost every known breed and innumerable unknown breeds. The park seemed to be a shelter for every mongrel cur with too little character to receive recognition in the city. Here these outlaw canines found hospitality in hut and hovel and multiplied like their protectors. They roved and maurauded by day and came home at night, or vice versa, whichever mode they found conduced most readily to the satisfaction of their semi-ferous appetites. The Rev. Mr. Peters, whom we have already quoted and who by personal visits knew the life in this region, described the dogs thus:

"Their life was divided between imperturbable laziness and tremendous excitement. Stretched out at repose under the sunny

side of a shanty, nothing but a brick would stir them, and then feebly. Let, however, a distant bark from two contending dogs break the air, and they rushed, bundles of nerves, from every quarter, furious and swift, like foemen hastening to the scene of action and gathering around the strife like boys hemming in a walking match. The contest over, they returned to their former immovable sloth. Every child was the happy owner of a dog, crippled or deformed as it might be. . . . Making a visit one day to a man poor in dollars and rich in offspring, I counted seven sluggish dogs about his doorstep. 'No wonder you are poor,' I said, 'with all this pack to feed.' 'O, they don't cost me nothin,' drawled the man; 'they hunt for a living.' . . . The hunting was a general mauroauding for that sustenance which they failed to receive from their owners or patrons. As they had made good progress backward towards a wild life, so they had correspondingly approached to a savage taste. Carrion, even down to decomposing pig, was good food and often gotten by unearthing same half-buried animal. The great hunts conducted in packs were directed toward superannuated horses turned out on the Commons to die. The hovering crows made their repeated dashes at the eyes of the still living victims and cleaned out the sockets as their delicate morsel. The ground, furrowed by the pawings of the agonized horse, gave token of the might of struggle with the hungry and pitiless dogs. No complete skeleton ever marked the place where an equine life had gone out, but far and wide over wold and heath were scattered whitened bones from which the flesh had been torn and the sinews gnawed. Such was the dog and such the dog's life before the park was."

Seneca Village and All Angels Church.

. Prior to the building of the first reservoir between Seventy-ninth and Eighty-sixth streets there was, on the site which was taken for it, a community of these squatters known as Seneca Village.

It was populated chiefly by negro families, with whom, however, degraded whites consorted and intermixed. The majority of these villagers, like the other denizens of the adjacent wilds, were lazy, good-for-nothing people, with no regular occupation. They secured their fuel either by destroying the neighboring trees or by gathering drift wood on the shores of the East and North

rivers. Sometimes they caught fish in the rivers to eke out their precarious existence. They propagated their species with as little thought of responsibility as the beasts of the field, and the village abounded in children. In time of health, they led a miserable hand to mouth existence, and in sickness and death their plight was pitiable in the extreme.

It would have been a terrible indictment of the humanity of New York city if such conditions as we have described had been permitted to exist without an effort for their mitigation. Happily we have the record of at least one Christian effort to minister to the physical and spiritual wants of the inhabitants of Seneca Village, and it is to be hoped that there were others.

In 1805 and 1806 a number of gentlemen living in Bloomingdale had organized St. Michael's Protestant Episcopal Church, and on August 17, 1807, the first church of that parish was consecrated on the site of the present St. Michael's on the northwest corner of Ninety-ninth street and Amsterdam avenue.* In 1833, the Rev. Wm. Richmond, rector of St. Michael's, established a Sunday school in the midst of Seneca Village, and his brother, Mr. James C. Richmond (later his successor in the rectorate) was the first teacher. The taking of the land for the reservoir in 1838 crowded the village westward between the lines of Seventh and Eighth avenues and interrupted the Sunday school. In 1846, the work was resumed and a Sunday school was started in the house of a Miss McEvers in Eighty-fifth street near Eighth avenue, by Mr. Minot M. Wells and Miss A. E. Halstead. In 1847, during the rectorship of the Rev. Mr. Richmond, Mr. Thomas McClure Peters was ordained to the diaconate and entered upon his duties with the religious zeal and enthusiasm which later characterized his priesthood.† One of the first objects of his missionary efforts was the benighted community of Seneca Village, and he took charge of the Sunday school. The following year (1848) four sisters, Miss Arabella Ludlow, Mrs. Emma Dashwood, Mrs. Louisa L. Wright, and Mrs. Frances A. Carroll, gave

* The street and avenue were not then in existence. The church stood on the east side of the Bloomingdale Road, which in this latitude ran between the present Broadway and Amsterdam avenue.

†Again we are indebted to his distinguished son, the Rev. John P. Peters, D. D., the present rector of St. Michael's, for the valuable reminiscences contained in his *Annals of St. Michael's*."

to St. Michael's four lots of land on the line of Eighty-fifth street east of Eighth avenue for a church and burial ground. Upon this land, a convenient building for a church and Sunday school was erected at a cost of about \$2,300 and was consecrated in 1849 under the name of All Angel's Church. The remainder of the ground was devoted to the burial of the dead.* In the year of the consecration, 1849, occurred the cholera epidemic, and many victims were buried in this little cemetery. The provision of this free burial ground was a great relief to the poverty stricken inhabitants of Seneca Village, who had previously been obliged either to bury their dead in the Potters Field or to saddle themselves with burdensome debts to meet the high charges of a funeral and burial in a regular cemetery. In 1851, the city prohibited interments south of Eighty-sixth street and the use of the cemetery was discontinued, but the missionary work continued until the land was condemned for the park in 1856. For the land and building of All Angels' Church the city awarded to St. Michael's Church \$4,010 and then offered the building for sale at auction. St. Michael's bought back the building for \$250 and it was removed piece by piece to what is now Eighty-first street and West End avenue, the site of the present All Angels' Church, services meanwhile being carried on near Seventy-ninth street and Eighth avenue. In 1858, All Angels', born amidst the squalor of Seneca Village as a mission, became incorporated as a separate parish.

Soon after the creation of the park in 1856, Seneca Village faded away and the squatter population of the park was scattered to new purlieus outside of the park limits.

The Cross Roads.

To complete the picture of the park area before the park was created, it remains to speak of the cross roads connecting the old Post Road on the east and the Bloomingdale road on the west. Of these there were only three.

In the latitude of Seventy-first street there was a cross road passable for equestrians or light wagons, but it was so rocky that

* From a topographical survey of the Park area made June 17, 1856, by Egbert L. Viele, the site of the church appears to have been on the south side of the line of 85th street, about 250 feet east of Eighth avenue (the present Central Park West).

horses drawing heavy loads had a poor foothold. Eighty-sixth street had been built and graded across the north end of the old reservoir, but as it neared the Bloomingdale road it was so rugged as to be almost as difficult of passage as the Seventy-first street road. The third crossing was afforded by the Bloomingdale Crossroad, known also as Apthorp's Lane and Jauncey's Lane, which we have previously described (page 399.) This was a very good country road and was the only one of the three used by carriages. From these roads, narrow footpaths and cart tracks wound their labyrinthine ways to the hovels of the polyglot population which inhabited the area of the future park.

Such was the repulsive aspect of the region soon to be transformed by a work of modern magic into the model municipal park of the country; and to the narration of this great accomplishment we must now turn our attention.

CHAPTER VI.

THE ESTABLISHMENT OF CENTRAL PARK.

Origin of the Movement.

The movement which resulted in the establishment of Central Park began about the year 1849. The public and private parks of the city at that time were as follows:

	Acres
Battery Park	11
Bowling Green	$\frac{1}{2}$
City Hall Park	$10\frac{1}{2}$
St. John's Park*	4
Abington Square	$1\frac{1}{4}$
Washington Square	$9\frac{1}{2}$
Tompkins Square	$10\frac{1}{2}$
Union Square	$3\frac{1}{2}$
Stuyvesant Square	$3\frac{3}{4}$
Gramercy Park	$11\frac{1}{2}$
Madison Square	$6\frac{3}{4}$
Reservoir Square (Bryant Park)	$4\frac{3}{4}$
Bloomingdale Square*	18
Hamilton Square*	$20\frac{1}{2}$
Manhattan Square	$17\frac{1}{2}$
Observatory Place*	$26\frac{1}{4}$
Harlem Square*	18

Of the foregoing five are now obsolete. St. John's Park, sometimes called Hudson Square, was a private park and was sold to the New York Central Railroad Company for a freight house which was erected in 1868. It was bounded by Laight, Varick, Beach and Hudson streets. Bloomingdale Square was bounded by Fifty-seventh street, Eighth avenue, Fifty-third street and Ninth avenue. Hamilton Square lay between Sixty-eighth street, Third avenue, Sixty-sixth street and Fifth avenue. Observatory Place occupied the blocks between Ninety-fourth street, Fourth avenue, Eighty-ninth street and Fifth avenue. Harlem Square was situated between One Hundred and Twenty-first street,

* Now obsolete.

Sixth avenue, One Hundred and Seventeenth street and Seventh avenue. With the exception of St. John's Park, those above named as obsolete existed only on paper, having been laid out by the Commissioners of 1807 in the unsettled part of the island.

In 1849, the settled portion of the city extended only to about Twenty-third street and the advance of the frontier of city improvements was indicated by the measures recently taken for the completion of Madison Square. If the original plan for a large park in that section had been adhered to, it is probable that the movement for Central Park would have been deferred a long time. On the map of the Commissioners of 1807 was reserved a great open space bounded by Thirty-fourth street, Third avenue, Twenty-third street and Seventh avenue, comprising 238.7 acres and called the Parade. By chapter 175 of the Laws of 1814, the Parade was reduced to the area enclosed between Thirty-first street, Fourth avenue, Twenty-third street and Sixth avenue. In 1829, by chapter 269, the Legislature decreed that "all the residue of the public square or place designated . . . by the name of Parade . . . shall cease to be considered as a Parade or otherwise reserved for public purposes." Small portions, however, continued to be occupied by the House of Refuge and the United States Arsenal. By an act passed April 10, 1837, the Legislature authorized the establishment of a public square in that locality which soon came to be called Madison Square in honor of President Madison who had died in 1836. But a wrangle over the method of assessing the cost of the land for the park delayed the consummation of the plan. On March 17, 1845, Samuel B. Ruggles and other property owners in the vicinity petitioned to Mayor James Harper to hasten the completion of the park and throw it open to the public, but it was not until a few years later that the park was finished. During all this period the city had continued to grow, and contemporaneously with the improvement and completion of Madison Square several propositions for small parks in other places had been made.

It was in the midst of this period of expansion, with the history of the lost Parade still fresh in mind, and with a general awakening as to the future needs of the city, that the first proposition for a great park in the center of the island made its appearance. So

far as the writer has been able to trace this movement, it seems to have originated in a series of articles written by Andrew J. Downing, a prominent landscape architect and editor of the *Horticulturist*. In 1849, while Mr. Downing was in London, he wrote a letter to the *Horticulturist* on the importance of parks in the growing city of New York. The letter attracted a great deal of attention. In 1850 he followed with a series of letters pointing out the lack of open spaces and places for recreation and urged the necessity of a great park. "This," said the late Charles H. Haswell in his "Reminiscences of an Octogenarian," "was the actual beginning of the Central Park, the birth of the idea, and Downing should be forever remembered with gratitude by our people, and his statue should be raised by them in the place which they owe to his foresight and trained intelligence."

Another strong advocate of a park in the central part of the island was Fernando Wood, who had been abroad and who was impressed with the beauty of the foreign parks, particularly those of Brussels; and when he was nominated for mayor in 1850 he made the park question one of the issues of the campaign. But he was defeated for the mayoralty by Ambrose C. Kingsland, who took office in January, 1851. Mayor Kingsland then took up the idea of a park and on May 5, 1851, sent to the Common Council the following message.

Mayor Kingsland's Message.

To the Honorable, the Common Council:

GENTLEMEN.—The rapid augmentation of our population and the great increase in the value of property in the lower part of the city justify me in calling the attention of your Honorable Body to the necessity of making some suitable provision for the wants of our citizens who are thronging into the upper wards, which but a few years since were considered as entirely out of the city. It seems obvious to me that the entire tongue of land south of the line drawn across the Park,* is destined to be devoted entirely and solely, to commercial purposes; and the Park and Battery, which were formerly favorite places of resort for pleasure and recreation for citizens whose residences were below that line, are now

* Meaning City Hall Park.

deserted. The tide of population is rapidly flowing to the northern section of the island, and it is here that provision should be made for the thousands whose dwellings will, ere long, fill up the vacant streets and avenues north of Union Park.

The public places of New York are not in keeping with the character of our city; nor do they in any wise subserve the purpose for which such places should be set apart. Each year will witness a certain increase in the value of real estate, out of the city proper, and I do not know that any period will be more suitable than the present one for the purchase and laying out of a park on a scale which will be worthy of the city.

There are places on the island easily accessible, and possessing all the advantages of wood, lawn and water, which might at a comparatively small expense be converted into a park, which would be at once the pride and ornament of the city. Such a park, well laid out, would become the favorite resort of all classes. There are thousands who pass the day of rest among the idle and dissolute, in porter-houses, or in places more objectionable, who would rejoice in being enabled to breathe the pure air in such a place, while the ride and drive through its avenues, free from the noise, dust and confusion inseparable from all thoroughfares, would hold out strong inducements for the affluent to make it a place of resort.

There is no park on the island deserving the name, and while I cannot believe that any one can be found to advance an objection against the expediency of having such a one in our midst, I think that the expenditure of a sum necessary to procure and lay out a park of sufficient magnitude to answer the purposes above noted would be well and wisely appropriated, and would be returned to us fourfold, in the health, happiness and comfort of those whose interests are specially intrusted to our keeping—the poorer classes.

The establishment of such a park would prove a lasting monument to the wisdom, sagacity and forethought of its founders, and would secure the gratitude of thousands yet unborn, for the blessings of pure air, and the opportunity for innocent, healthful enjoyment.

I commend this subject to your consideration, in the conviction that its importance will insure your careful attention and prompt action.

A. C. KINGSLAND,
Mayor.

Jones' Wood Suggested.

The foregoing message was referred to the Committee on Lands and Places which made a report recommending that a tract of about 160 acres, lying between Seventy-fifth street, East river, Sixty-sixth street and Third avenue, belonging principally to Messrs. Jones and Schermerhorn, be taken for a park. This was known as the Jones' Wood plan, from the fact that about ninety acres of the proposed tract was covered with trees and belonged to John Jones, whose house stood on the line of Sixty-eighth street east of Avenue A. John Flavel Mines, ("Felix Oldboy,") writing in 1886-90, said of Jones' Woods:

"The rocky height known as Dead Man's Rock, that used to mark the beginning of Jones' Wood half a century ago and that still has the same name, is there yet, but has become ignoble as the boundary of Battle Row, all too well known in police annals. . . . What a place of delight Jones' Woods used to be in the olden days! It was the last fortress of the forest primeval that once covered the rocky shores of the East river, and its wildness was almost savage. In the infant days of the colony it was the scene of tradition and fable, having been said to be the favorite resort of the pirates who dared the terrors of Hell Gate and came here to land their treasures and hold their revels. Later, its shores were renowned for its fisheries, and under the shadows of its rocky bluff and overhanging oaks the youth of a former generation cast their lines and waited for bites. The ninety acres which composed the wooded farm was known in olden time as the Louvre."

Jones' Wood Park Bill Enacted.

The Common Council adopted the recommendations of the committee for the Jones' Wood plan, and applied to the Legislature at its extra session in 1851 for a law to authorize the establishment of the park. On July 11, 1851, the Legislature passed "An act relative to the powers and duties of the Mayor, Aldermen and Commonalty of the city of New York, in the matter of taking possession of and laying out certain lands for a public park in the Nineteenth ward of the said city." The territory mentioned in this act lay "between the Third avenue and the East river and Sixty-sixth street and Seventy-fifth street, and also all that cer-

tain other plot of ground situate and lying between Avenue A and the East river and Sixty-fourth street and Sixty-sixth street.”*

Andrew J. Downing's Vision of a Great Park.

But a little park of 160 acres fell far short of the conception of Andrew J. Downing. Thanking Mayor Kingsland for his proposition, he declared† that the only objection to it was that it was too small. “One hundred and sixty acres of park for a city that will soon contain three quarters of a million people!” he exclaimed in amazement. “It is only a child’s playground. Why, London has over six thousand acres, either within its own limits or in the accessible suburbs, open to the enjoyment of its population — and six thousand acres composed, too, either of the grandest and most lovely park scenery, like Kensington and Richmond, or of luxuriant gardens, filled with rare plants, hot houses and hardy shrubs and trees, like the National Garden at Kew.” He also cited by name the parks of Paris, Vienna, Munich and Frankfort. He ridiculed the timid taxpayers and “men nervous in their private pockets of municipal expenditure” who thought 160 acres too large; and admonished them to take a lesson from the narrow minded frugality of the Common Council which gave us a building, in the most conspicuous part of the city and devoted to the highest municipal uses, three sides of which are pure white marble and the fourth coarse brown stone.” He said that but few of those who saw that incongruity knew that it was due to the short sighted parsimony of those who considered it “would be a useless waste of marble on the rear of the City Hall since that side would be only seen by persons living in the suburbs.”

He went on to declare that 500 acres was the smallest area that should be taken.

“Five hundred acres is the smallest area that should be reserved for the future wants of such a city, now, while it may be obtained. Five hundred acres may be selected between Thirty-ninth street and the Harlem river, including a varied surface of land, a good deal of which is yet waste area, so that the whole may be purchased at something like a million dollars. In that area there

* This act became a dead letter because the Supreme Court refused to appoint commissioners on account of material errors in this bill.

† In the *Horticulturist* for August, 1851.

would be space enough to have broad reaches of park and pleasure-grounds, with a real feeling of the breadth and beauty of green fields, the perfume and freshness of nature. In its midst would be located the great distributing reservoirs of the Croton aqueduct, formed into lovely lakes of limpid water, covering many acres, and heightening the charm of the sylvan accessories by the finest natural contrast. In such a park, the citizens would take excursions in carriages or on horseback, could have the substantial delights of country roads and country scenery, and forget for a time the rattle of the pavements and the glare of brick walls. Pedestrians would find quiet and secluded walks when they wished to be solitary, and broad alleys, filled with thousands of happy faces, when they would be gay. The thoughtful denizen of the town would go out there in the morning to hold converse with the whispering trees, and the weary tradesmen in the evening to enjoy an hour of happiness by mingling in the open space with 'all the world.' "

Then he drew a picture of the future park, with its statues and monuments commemorative at once of the great men of the nation, of the history of the age, and the genius of our highest artists; its gardens, trees and drives; and the throngs which would find happiness therein. His argument for the park was far from being an artistic rhapsody. He entered into the philosophy of its social influence, which he declared to be "really the most interesting phase of the whole matter." What he said under this head is worth quoting, for it is as true to-day as it was when he said it sixty years ago.

"It is a fact, not a little remarkable, that, ultra democratic as are the political tendencies of America, its most intelligent social tendencies are almost wholly in a contrary direction. And among the topics discussed by the advocates and opponents of the new park, none seem so poorly understood as the social aspect of the thing. It is indeed both curious and amusing to see the stand taken on the one hand by the million, that the park is made for the 'upper ten,' who ride in fine carriages; and, on the other hand, by the wealthy and refined, that a park in this country will be 'usurped by rowdies and low people.' Shame upon our republican compatriots, who so little understand the elevating influences of the beautiful in nature and in art, when enjoyed in common by thousands and hundreds of thousands of all classes without

distinction! They can never have seen how, all over France and Germany, the whole population of the cities pass their afternoons and evenings together, in the beautiful parks and gardens; how they enjoy together the same music, breathe the same atmosphere of art, enjoy the same scenery, and grow into social freedom by the very influences of social intercourse, space and beauty that surround them. In Germany, especially, they have never seen how the highest and lowest partake alike of the common enjoyment — the prince seated beneath the trees on a rushbottomed chair, before a little wooden table, supping his coffee or his ice, with the same freedom from state and pretension as the simplest subject. Drawing-room conventionalities are too narrow for a mile or two of spacious garden landscape, and one can be happy with ten thousand in the social freedom of a community of genial influences, without the unutterable pang of not having been introduced to the company present.

“These social doubters, who thus intrench themselves in the sole citadel of exclusiveness in republican America, mistake our people and their destiny. If we would but have listened to them, our magnificent river and lake steamers, those real palaces of the million, would have no velvet couches, no splendid mirrors, no luxurious carpets. Such costly and rare appliances of civilization, they would have told us, could only be rightly used by the privileged families of wealth, and would be trampled upon and utterly ruined by the democracy of the country, who travel one hundred miles for half a dollar. And yet these, our floating palaces and our monster hotels, with their purple and fine linen, are they not respected by the majority who use them, as truly as other palaces by their rightful sovereigns? Alas! for the faithlessness of the few who possess, regarding the capacity for culture of the many who are wanting. Even upon the lower platform of liberty and education, that the masses stand on in Europe, we see the elevating influences of a wide popular enjoyment; of galleries of art; public libraries, parks and gardens, which have raised the people in social civilization and social culture to a far higher level than we have yet attained in republican America. And yet, this broad ground of popular refinement must be taken in republican America, for it belongs of right more truly here than elsewhere. It is republican in its very idea and tendency. It takes up popular education where the common school and ballot-box leave it, and raises up the workingman to the same level of enjoyment with the man of leisure and accomplishment. The higher social and artistic ele-

ments of every man's nature lie dormant within him, and every laborer is a possible gentleman, not by the possession of money and fine clothes — but through the refining influence of intellectual and moral culture. Open wide, therefore, the doors of your libraries and picture galleries, all ye true republicans! Build halls where knowledge shall be freely diffused among men, and not shut up within the narrow walls of narrower institutions. Plant spacious parks in your cities, and unloose their gates as wide as the gates of morning to the whole people. As there are no dark places at noonday, so education and culture — the true sunshine of the soul — will banish the plague spots of democracy; and the dread of the ignorant exclusive who has no faith in the refinement of a republic, will stand abashed in the next century, before a whole people whose system of voluntary education embraces (combined with perfect individual freedom), not only common schools of rudimentary knowledge, but common enjoyments of all classes in the higher realms of art, letters, science, social recreations and enjoyments. Were our Legislatures but wise enough to understand to-day the destinies of the New World, the gentility of Sir Philip Sidney, made universal, would be not half so much a miracle fifty years hence in America, as the idea of a whole nation of laboring men reading and writing was in his day, in England."

The Central Park Site Recommended.

The Jones Wood Park bill had hardly passed, however, before the Common Council began to consider whether some other site might not be advantageous, and on August 5, 1851, appointed Aldermen Daniel Dodge, Wm. A. Dooley and Joseph Britton a committee "to examine and report upon the advantages of the ground designated in the act of the Legislature; and also whether there be not a better locality for such a park, with comparison of size, capacity for rural embellishment, general topographical features and probable cost of each; and also whether it is not advisable to include within the limits of such purchase ground for the new reservoir."

On August 7, 1851 — two days after the passage of the foregoing resolution — the Jones' Wood advocates in the Board of Aldermen tried to force action by offering a resolution directing the Corporation Counsel to take measures to secure the appointment of Commissioners of Estimate and Assessment for the lay-

ing out of the Jones' Wood Park, but it was sidetracked by being referred to the special committee above referred to.

On January 2, 1852, the committee made an elaborate report comparing the Jones' Wood site with a tract bounded by Sixtieth and One Hundred and Sixth streets, and Fifth and Eighth avenues. For convenience, the two sites were called Jones Park and Central Park, respectively. This is the first use of the name Central Park.

Jones' Wood and Central Park Sites Compared.

The comparison was made under four heads, namely, extent, convenience of locality, availability and probable cost.

Jones Park, excluding the irregular projection between Sixty-Fourth and Sixty-sixth streets, would contain $153\frac{1}{2}$ acres, while Central Park would contain $759\frac{3}{4}$. This was regarded as greatly in favor of Central Park, in view of the fact that the population of the city "must, before the end of the present half century, number several millions." The reservoirs within Central Park were regarded as an addition to its beauty, more than offsetting the river view at Jones Park. The great length of Central Park would permit a greater extent of drives than Jones Park. Its greater circumference, and its location with building sites on four sides instead of three, would render it more accessible and add more to the value of surrounding property than Jones Park. It was also argued — an argument which would shock public sentiment to-day — that Central Park would be of sufficient size to permit the selling off of portions of its border for public and private buildings. "These sites, being desirable, will command large prices and reduce the expense of the original cost, and furnish from time to time, by sales or by leases, a sufficient sum to pay, if desirable, a portion of the expenses of the keeping and decorating of the park."

As to convenience of locality it was held that Jones Park was at one side of the island, out of the way, and inconvenient of access, while Central Park was all that could be desired in respect to convenience.

Under the head of availability, it was pointed out that if Jones Park were taken, the avenues east of Third avenue would be interrupted and traffic would be obliged to go around by Third avenue.

It was also objected that while there were fine trees in Jones Wood that area did not present any variety of scenery within itself. The great variety of scenery in Central Park was described as one of its greatest recommendations. Another great argument for the Central Park site was contained in these words:

“Central Park will include grounds almost entirely useless for building purposes, owing to the very uneven and rocky surface, and also to its lying so far below the proper grade of the streets as to render the grading very costly; for instance, to extend Sixth avenue from Sixty-fifth street to Seventy-third street, it would be necessary to build an embankment, principally of masonry (with culverts to discharge the water), from twenty to forty feet in height. This would leave the lots on either side utterly valueless for any purpose of ordinary improvement, unless it should be built up in the same way, or filled in to nearly the same level. The expense of grading the streets through these grounds will be more than twice the present value of the land.”

The report described the advantages which the hills, valleys and streams of the Central Park site afforded for beautiful landscape treatment. The trees of Jones' Wood were not regarded as an advantage, as it was the experience of the builders of parks that parks should be furnished by growing or transplanting such trees as were needed in different parts of the grounds.

Under the heading of cost, elaborate tables and arguments were given in favor of the Central Park site, which are summed up in the following paragraphs:

“The difference in the cost and extent of the ground for the two parks is —

For Central Park.....	\$1,407,325 for 659 $\frac{3}{4}$ acres
For Jones' Park.....	700,575 for 153 $\frac{1}{2}$ acres

Difference	\$706,750 for 606 $\frac{1}{4}$ acres
------------------	---------------------------------------

more for Central Park, which includes the present reservoir and the Arsenal, and St. Vincent grounds, which need not be purchased, containing 57 acres, and also about 135 acres, now belonging to the city; which is, in fact, 414 $\frac{1}{2}$ acres more than Jones' Park, for \$706,750, which is about the cost of Jones' Park.

“It is, therefore, to be borne in mind, that in purchasing Jones' Park, we pay for all the land included within the limits of the

park; whereas, in the acquisition of Central Park, we inclose an area of $759\frac{3}{4}$ acres for park purposes, and have only to pay for $566\frac{3}{4}$ acres, including ground for the new reservoir, which the city will purchase in any event. This happens, because 57 acres to be inclosed belong to the State Arsenal, and to Mount St. Vincent Academy and to the present receiving reservoir, which will all be allowed to remain, and will be improved in ornamental connection with the park, and because the city already owns 135 acres, scattered in various parts within the proposed inclosure; 27 acres of which is on ground to be covered by the new reservoir."

Central Park Bill Passed.

The committee recommended that the Jones' Wood bill be repealed and that a new law be enacted for Central Park. The partisans of the two rival plans kept up the fight for their respective sites until 1853. In that year the Jones' Wood advocates chartered a steamboat and took members of the Legislature, members of the Chamber of Commerce, and others, up the East river to examine the site. President Pierce, just elected, was one of the party. From the two bills which the Legislature, with delightful impartiality, passed on July 21, 1853, it is difficult to conclude whether the steamboat trip simplified or complicated the situation.

One bill (chapter 616), entitled "An act to alter the map of the city of New York by laying out thereon a public place and to authorize the taking of the same," provided that:

"All that piece or parcel of land situate, lying and being in the Twelfth, Nineteenth and Twenty-second Wards of the city of New York, bounded southerly by Fifty-ninth street, northerly by One Hundred and Sixth street, easterly by the Fifth avenue and westerly by Eighth avenue is hereby declared to be a public place in like manner as if the same had been laid out by the commissioners appointed in and by the act of the Legislature entitled 'An act relative to improvements touching the laying out of streets and roads in the city of New York, and for other purposes passed April 3, 1807; and the map or plan of said city is hereby altered accordingly."

The other bill passed the same day was entitled "An act relative to the purpose and laying out of certain lands for a public park in the Nineteenth ward of the city of New York and the powers and the duties of the Mayor, Aldermen and Commonalty in relation

thereto." This bill directed the city to go ahead and acquire the Jones' Wood site. It was repealed, however, on April 11, 1854.

Meanwhile, the Corporation Counsel had applied to the Supreme Court for the appointment of Commissioners of Estimate and Assessment to take the land for Central Park, and on November 17, 1853, the court appointed five commissioners, namely, Michael Ulshoeffer, Luther Bradish, William Kent, Warren Brady and Jeremiah Towle.

Attempt to Reduce the Park Vetoed by Mayor Wood.

While the Commissioners were performing their difficult task, efforts were made to reduce the park limits. On March 13, 1854, the majority of the Committee on Lands and Places of the Board of Councilmen recommended a resolution praying the Legislature to reduce the area of the park by cutting off all south of Seventy-second street and also by taking off a strip of 400 feet on each side of the remainder from Seventy-second street to One Hundred and Sixth street.

On March 27, 1854, the minority of the same committee recommended narrowing the park 400 feet on each side from Fifty-ninth street to One Hundred and Sixth street.

A year later, in March 15, 1855, the Board of Aldermen passed in concurrence with the Councilmen a resolution embodying the recommendation to eliminate the area south of Seventy-second street and to reduce the remainder 400 feet on each side. On March 23, 1855, Mayor Wood vetoed the resolution in an emphatic message in which he said:

"Though it proposes only to take from the Central Park a portion of the area agreed upon, still, it will be in effect a blow at the whole.

"Any proposition having for its aim an interference with the work as originally devised, and which will encourage delay, and retard the proceedings of the Commission, already too long protracted, will, in my opinion, jeopardize the success of the most intelligent, philanthropic and patriotic public enterprise which has been undertaken by the people of this city since the introduction of the waters of the Croton river.

"I had supposed that the necessity for defending the Central Park had ceased; that the opposition, before raised, had subsided,

and that time and reflection had enabled all to appreciate its advantages, not only to the present, but to all succeeding generations.

“We will be derelict, if by any narrow or selfish feeling of present saving, we deprive the teeming millions yet to inhabit and toil upon this island, of one place not given up to mammon, where they can, even if but one day in the year, observe and worship nature, untarnished by conflict with art. To admit the necessity of a great park, and to assert that this will be too large, is, in my opinion, an exceedingly limited view of the question, and entirely unworthy of even the present position of this metropolis, to say nothing of a destiny now opening so brilliantly before us.

“Let us not follow our Dutch ancestors in their views of municipal prudence, who considered cow-paths as proper sites for streets and avenues, inasmuch as they saved the necessary expenses of surveys, etc. To have suggested to the original Knickerbockers, the propriety of laying out and regulating wide and evenly-graded streets, commensurate to the wants of the city, as it now is, would have been met by the wise fathers of that day with arguments derived from the same principles and views as are now used with reference to this subject by its opponents.

“Let New York follow up the noble spirit asserted so boldly in the introduction of Croton water. The aforethought, and comprehensive policy embodied in that masterly proposition is now universally respected and admired, as will be, at no distant day, that to open Central Park. Being imbued with these sentiments, I can never give my consent to any measure, which will throw an obstacle in its way, much less to abolish or curtail it.”

Confirmation of the Commissioners' Report — a Reminiscence.

On July 2, 1855, the Commissioners of Estimate and Apportionment completed their report. The next step was to have it confirmed by a Judge of the Supreme Court — a task of no small difficulty, as the opponents of the park had declared that no judge in the city would give the necessary approval. In spite of this evil prediction, the report was confirmed on February 5, 1856, by Judge Harris of Albany, who had been especially appointed by Governor Seymour to hold court in New York. The circumstances of this appointment were related by Cyrus Clark, President of the West End Association, at a dinner given in his honor in the

Ansonia Hotel, in New York, on December 12, 1903. Mr. Clark said:

"It is a story which the general public does not know very well. Daniel E. Sickles, on his return from The Hague, where he was Consul, was made State Senator. He was a strong advocate of Central Park which was opposed by many wealthy citizens who declared that no Judge in the city would give the necessary sanction. He sent to Governor Seymour a petition signed by two thousand New York lawyers asking him to assign an extra Judge to hold court in this city. The Governor was at first opposed, but when the Senator suggested Judge Harris, of Albany, he consented to the measure provided Judge Harris would be willing. He felt sure that the Judge would not comply.

"Then the Senator went to Judge Harris's home and had a talk with Mrs. Harris and her daughters. He held out an alluring picture of a possible round of social pleasures, and easily won them over to plead his cause with the Judge. Senator Sickles then drove over to Schoharie, where Judge Harris was holding court, and put the proposition before him, carefully keeping silent about his main object, the park measure, and telling him how anxious his family was to make the move. He also assured him that he was being talked of for Governor, and possibly United States Senator, and said that he ought to move to New York and strengthen his position among politicians there.

"Well, Judge Harris came after some protest. The Corporation Counsel, Dillon, brought the report before the Judge for confirmation. Thirty or forty lawyers opposed it, and it took several days to complete the hearing. I shall never forget Dillon's closing words, 'Sign this report,' he said, 'and old age and prattling childhood will thank you.' Afterward Judge Harris said that he would not have come to New York had he known Sickles' purpose in getting him there.

"The funny part of it was that though the women of Judge Harris's family received desirable invitations without number, the Judge learned that they all came from the lawyers opposed to the park report and refused every one of them. So Mrs. Harris and the girls did not get their gay social time after all."

In the Comptroller's annual report for 1860, the cost of the land acquired between 59th and 106th streets, exclusive of the reservoir sites, is stated as follows:

Awards, February 5, 1856	\$5,069,693 70
Errors and additions.....	3,749 85
Arsenal property	275,000 00
Expenses and compensation of commissioners..	54,345 10
Incidental expenses	6,653 15

\$5,409,441 80

The award included \$342,695 to the corporation for common lands. Of the total expense, \$1,658,395 was assessed on neighboring property owners and the balance was borne by the city.

Extension of the Park to One Hundred and Tenth Street.

Temporarily postponing the narrative of the events attending the beginning of the physical work of constructing the park, we will pass over a few years to record the extension of the area from One Hundred and Sixth street to One Hundred and Tenth street.

The Commissioners of Central Park had already begun the work of laying out and constructing the park, when it became evident that the area lying between Fifth and Eighth avenues, One Hundred and Sixth street and One Hundred and Tenth streets was highly desirable for the rounding-out of the park. This additional area comprised some of the boldest scenery in the neighborhood and it was thought, both on account of its picturesque topography and the expense which would be involved in reducing it to the regular grade of the city streets and avenues, the city might be persuaded to add it to the park.

The first movement for enlarging the park was made by the late Andrew H. Green, one of the Central Park Commissioners, who, on January 26, 1858, offered a resolution for the appointment of a committee to inquire into the ownership and the expense of acquiring the land between One Hundred and Sixth and One Hundred and Tenth streets, Fifth avenue and Eighth avenue, with power to memorialize the Legislature to include such lands within the park limits. He also suggested the widening of Seventh avenue from One Hundred and Tenth street to the Harlem river, from 100 feet to 150 feet. In September, 1858, these recommendations were communicated to the Common Council and were approved by the Board of Councilmen and the Board of Aldermen

on October 24 and December 21 respectively. Mayor Daniel F. Tiemann, however, vetoed the resolution. A memorial was then addressed to the Legislature of 1859, and on April 2 of that year the Legislature passed a law (chapter 101) providing that

“All that piece or parcel of land situate, lying and being in the Twelfth Ward of the city of New York, bounded southerly by the southerly side of One Hundred and Sixth street, northerly by One Hundred and Tenth street, easterly by the Fifth avenue, and westerly by the Eighth avenue, is hereby declared to be a public place in like manner as if the same had been laid out by the commissioners appointed in and by the act of the Legislature of the State of New York entitled ‘An act relative to improvements touching the laying out of streets and roads in the city of New York and for other purposes,’ passed April 3, 1807.”

On April 15, 1859, the Legislature passed a law (chapter 363) widening Seventh avenue from 100 feet to 150 feet as recommended by Mr. Green.

Under the act for the extension of the park the Supreme Court on July 13, 1859, appointed Hawley D. Clapp, Anthony J. Bleecker and Richard Kelly, Commissioners of Estimate and Assessment. About a year and a half later they made a report, giving their valuation of the additional sixty-five acres at \$1,499,438, and presenting a bill of expenses amounting to \$73,335. The Central Park Commissioners, finding the valuation far in excess of their expectations, on December 26, 1860, by resolution discontinued the proceedings to acquire the property. They also contested the enormous bill of expenses. The latter, after litigation, was cut down to \$30,316.

On February 28, 1862, proceedings for the extension of the park were renewed by the appointment, by the Supreme Court, of Luther Bradish, Samuel B. Ruggles and Michael Ulshoeffler as Commissioners of Estimate and Assessment. On March 31, 1863, their report was presented to the court and on April 21 was confirmed by Judge Ingraham. Their appraisal placed the value of the land at \$1,179,590* and the bill of costs for the second appraisal was only \$18,415. The saving effected by the action of the Park Board in having a second appraisal made and in cutting down the first bill of costs was \$331,740.

* The assessed valuation of this land in 1860 was only \$183,850.

Total Cost of the Park.

The total cost of acquiring the land for Central Park may be summarized as follows:

9½	acres purchased in 1838 for old reservoir site.....	\$22,000 00
27½	acres of common lands for old reservoir site.....	.....
106¾	acres for new reservoir site, award of April 14, 1856, including \$342,695 to city for common lands.....	729,964 50
10	acres in 1856, arsenal building and grounds	275,000 00
624¼	acres between 59th and 106th streets, award of Feb. 5, 1856	5,069,693 70
	Error and additional cost of same.....	3,749 85
	Expenses and compensation of commissioners for same..	54,345 10
	Incidental expenses of same	6,653 15
65	acres between 106th and 110th streets, award of April 21, 1863	1,179,590 00
	Cost of first appraisal of same	30,316 43
	Cost of second appraisal of same	18,415 23
<hr/>		<hr/>
843	acres.	\$7,389,727 96

It is interesting to note the rise in the price of land as improvements progressed in that region. The first nine and one-half acres bought in 1838 for the old reservoir cost about \$2,316 an acre. In 1856, the new reservoir site cost about \$6,838 an acre and the rest of the land south of One Hundred and Sixth street (not counting the Arsenal grounds) cost about \$8,121 an acre. In 1863, the sixty-five acres north of One Hundred and Sixth street cost about \$18,147 an acre.

In addition to the purchase price, nearly \$20,000,000 has been spent upon the park for construction and maintenance. In 1911, the books of the Department of Taxes and Assessments of the city of New York showed that the land of Central Park was valued at \$225,000,000, and the land and improvements at \$250,000,000. The increase in the value of adjacent real estate, due in part to the creation of Central Park, is indicated by the fact that in 1856, the valuation of real estate in the Twelfth, Nineteenth and Twenty-second wards — all of Manhattan Island north of Fortieth street — upon which there were comparatively few improvements, was \$25,671,490. The valuation of the land in the same area in 1911 was \$1,941,787,550, while the valuation of the land and buildings was \$2,888,306,240.

CHAPTER VII.

THE BUILDING OF THE PARK.

Organizing for Work.

On May 12-21, 1856, the Common Council passed and the Mayor signed an ordinance placing the control of Central Park in the hands of a board of commissioners consisting of the Mayor and the Street Commissioner, to be known as the "Commissioners of the Central Park." The Mayor was Fernando Wood and the Street Commissioner was Joseph S. Taylor. Before determining upon any definite course of action, they decided to seek the advice of certain well known citizens, and they invited Washington Irving, George Bancroft, William Cullen Bryant, James E. Cooley, Charles F. Briggs, James Phalen, Charles A. Dana and Stewart Brown to act as a consulting board. Several of these gentlemen met on May 29, 1856, and organized by electing Washington Irving as President of the consulting board.

On April 17, 1857, the Legislature passed an act (chapter 771) providing that the park should be under the exclusive control of a board of eleven members to be known as "The Commissioners of the Central Park," and constituting Robert J. Dillon, James E. Cooley, Charles H. Russell, John F. Butterworth, John A. C. Gray, Waldo Hutchins, Thomas C. Field, Andrew H. Green, Charles W. Elliott, William K. Strong and James Hogg the first board. The act also authorized the city to issue corporate stock for the purpose of providing funds for the building of the park.

On September 15, 1859, the board created a new office, that of Comptroller of the park, and elected Andrew H. Green thereto. Mr. Green resigned the presidency of the board to accept this unique position and for ten years and a half the building of the park was conducted under his direction.*

* For further particulars of Mr. Green's connection with the Park, see his biography in the Ninth Annual Report of the American Scenic and Historic Preservation Society, 1904.

Mr. Viele's Preliminary Survey.

The original Commissioners and Consulting Board, after their organization on May 29, 1856, listened to various suggestions concerning the laying out of the park, and then set a corps of engineers to work to make a topographical survey under the direction of Egbert L. Viele. Although the preliminary surveys were not completed until 1858, it would appear from a map in the First Report of the Commissioners of Central Park dated January 1, 1857, that the Commissioners adopted a hastily prepared plan drawn by Mr. (afterwards Gen.) Viele within a week after their organization. The report of 1857 contains two maps signed by Mr. Viele. One is a sketch map of the topography without contour lines from Fifty-ninth street to One Hundred and Sixth street, entitled "Map of the lands included in the Central Park, from a topographical survey June 17, 1856." The other is a "Plan for the improvement of the Central Park, adopted by the Commissioners June 3, 1856." This plan provided for a winding drive up the east side of the park from Fifth avenue and Fifty-ninth street to McGown's Pass; a drive up the west side of the park from Eighth avenue and Fifty-ninth street to One Hundred and Sixth street; a central drive entering from Fifty-ninth street between Sixth and Seventh avenues and running north to the reservoir at Seventy-ninth street; and five or six cross drives; together with a few paths. The meadow on the western side of the park between Sixty-fifth and Seventy-first streets is designated as a "Cricket Ground;" a space on the east side between Seventy-third and Seventy-eighth streets as "Botanical Gardens," and the uneven ground east of the old reservoir between Seventy-ninth and Eighty-sixth streets, now occupied in part by the Metropolitan Museum, the obelisk, etc., as a "Parade Ground."

The extemporaneous character of this plan is indicated by the fact that with the exception of the general course of the East Drive, the West Drive, part of the Central Drive and the cross roads at Seventy-second and One Hundredth streets, hardly a feature of it has been retained. For the development of the beautiful possibilities of the park, and the ingenious treatment of certain troublesome problems, such as providing communication between the residential districts on the east side and west side of

the park, it was necessary to make a more careful survey of the ground and to bring into requisition the artistic skill and feeling of the landscape architect.

Plan of Olmsted and Vaux Adopted.

The successors of the first Commissioners therefore placed the following advertisement in the newspapers in the early part of 1858:

“Plans for the Central Park: The Board of Commissioners of the Central Park offer the following premiums for the four designs for laying out the Central Park which may be selected:

For the first	\$2,000 00
For the second	1,000 00
For the third	750 00
For the fourth	500 00

“The plans to become the property of the Board. Topographical plans may be consulted and particulars obtained at the office of the Board, room 10, Bank of Commerce Building. A limited number of photographic sketches of the ground may be obtained by applying to the clerk of the Board. All designs must be presented to the Board by the first day of March, 1858. The Board reserves the right to reject any or all plans.

JNO. A. C. GRAY,
CHARLES W. ELLIOTT,
ANDREW H. GREEN,
Committee.”

The limit for the reception of designs was extended to April 1, 1858, by which time thirty-three plans were received. These plans were submitted anonymously, and were publicly exhibited. On April 28, 1858, the Board adopted plan number thirty-three submitted under the pseudonym of “Greensward” which had been designed by Frederick Law Olmsted, then Superintendent of the park, and Calvert Vaux. On May 17, following, Mr. Viele ceased to be Engineer-in-Chief, and Mr. Olmsted became Architect-in-Chief.

Mr. Olmsted was born in Hartford, Conn., in 1822 and died in Waverly, Mass., in 1903. He possessed a natural sense of beauty, heightened by extensive travels abroad; and a cultivated

mind which had already produced literary work of high repute. He united a well-nigh faultless professional taste with the qualities of a social economist and philanthropist.

Mr. Vaux was born in England in 1824 and died in 1895. He was a trained landscape architect and a worthy compeer of Mr. Olmsted. He was naturally diffident and more of a thinker and designer than a talker or writer; and his genius solved some of the most difficult problems presented by the Central Park. The sunken transverse roads, mentioned hereafter, were his idea.

The work of these two men was a model of landscape art and gave both them and Central Park a national reputation; and no Board of Park Commissioners has ventured to make any substantial departure from their plans. As to the relative merits of the two men, there is a difference of opinion, even among members of their own profession. Mr. Olmsted has frequently been given the chief credit. The late Andrew H. Green, for many years President of the Board and Comptroller of the park, was of the opinion that Mr. Vaux, on account of his retiring disposition, did not receive as much credit in public estimation as he deserved. A. J. Bloor, who was intimately associated with both Mr. Olmsted and Mr. Vaux in a professional way for many years during the formative periods of Central Park in Manhattan and Prospect Park in Brooklyn, regarded Mr. Olmsted as the equal of Mr. Vaux in all important points, and in some respects his superior. In a letter in the *New York Tribune* of September 19, 1903, Mr. Bloor says that "as regards the prototypical Central Park, it is simply impossible to disassociate the material results of the mental co-operation of the two men." Mr. Bloor, in a letter to the present writer, gives Mr. Vaux chief credit for the initiatory work on Prospect Park, Brooklyn, but with respect to Central Park he reaffirms, with the confidence of intimate professional association with both Mr. Olmsted and Mr. Vaux, that the practical results of the collaboration of the two men cannot be dissociated.

Inseparably associated with the memories of Olmsted and Vaux is that of Jacob Wrey Mould. Speaking of him in the letter before quoted, Mr. Bloor says:

"The beautiful carvings and other decorations seen on the Terrace at the northern end of the Mall, and of the fine perron

leading therefrom to Miss Hosmer's fountain * and the lake between that and the Ramble, and indeed the like ornamentation of the bridges and most of the other structures throughout the park's limits, were almost without exception, from first inception to final and most delicate detail, the fruit of the exuberant genius of my fellow-assistant architect, Jacob Wrey Mould — the architect of what was once Dr. Bellows' and is now the Rev. Mr. Slicer's church, southeast corner of Fourth avenue and Twentieth street, New York. No reference to the Central Park can be complete without reference to the structures built among its trees and bushes, or isolated on its grassy glades, and no architectural production whether in stone or brick and mortar or in iron or steel, or terra cotta, or wood, or whatever else, whether standing in the public square of a hemmed-in city or among sylvan surroundings, can be fairly judged without due credit being given to design in detail and decoration, as well as to design in outlines and mass."

Mention should be made, also, of Ignatz A. Pilat, the landscape gardener, who died Sept. 17, 1870, and who, during many years' service in the formative days of the park, displayed much taste in the original planting.

The Purpose and Landscape Motives of the Park.

As to the purpose of the park, it should be said that its *first object* is to provide a quiet sylvan retreat for rest and mild recreation for the inhabitants of the surrounding city. It is dedicated to pleasure and not business. It is intended to provide a bit of *rus in urbe*. So far as practicable, it is intended that the sight, sound and feeling of the artificial, noisy, nerve-straining city shall be excluded from the sensibilities of the person who enters its precincts. The inclosure of the park has therefore been made with this *primary principal* in view. The simple boundary walls are low brownstone, only about four feet high — high enough to serve the purposes of a fence, low enough to be unobtrusive as an artificial structure, and of a color which blends with the landscape and is inconspicuous. The real screen of the park is made of embankments, trees and shrubs, arranged with ingenious skill so as to simulate nature, and at the same time practically to exclude the sight of the buildings on the adjacent streets and

* He alludes to the Bethesda fountain.

avenues. If it were not for the soaring architecture of the modern hotels and apartment houses, whose roofs and upper stories appear above the trees, one might drive for miles in the park without being conscious of the teeming city crowding close to its borders.

The motive of the landscape plan, as stated by its authors, has been to give "an aspect of spaciousness and tranquility, with variety and intricacy of arrangement, thereby affording the most agreeable contrast to the confinement, bustle and monotonous street division of the city; that is to say, as far as practicable, to present to the eye a charming rural landscape such as, unless produced by art, is never found within the limits of a large town."

When the park was begun, there were casual observers who thought the selection of the site an unfortunate one because its general ruggedness was regarded as being forbidding, rather than expressive of dignity or grace. But this impression was due to the absence of soil and foliage at that time; and as the lacking elements were supplied, the quality of picturesqueness became agreeably prominent. In fact the rocks were one of the most valuable endowments of the park; for soil can be made and grass and shrubs can be planted; but rocks and those salient forms of earth-surface which are found in nature only where rocks exist, can never be initiated on a large scale with perfect success.

The *second object* of the landscape architects, therefore, was to remedy the defect of monotonous irregularity, while preserving the most salient features of the ruggedness. The plans of Olmsted and Vaux, called the "Greensward" plans, were adopted because more than any others they provided for large unbroken surfaces of turf and water. To illustrate how this idea was worked out, we may mention a case in the southern portion of the park, where an artificial meadow of about thirty acres was built. About ten acres of the area was originally boggy and rocky. The boggy portion was filled in to an average depth of two feet; all protruding rocks were blasted away; some large ledges of rock adjoining were reduced and the intervening depressions filled in a similar manner; and all remaining rock surfaces were covered with two feet of soil. This produced about thirty acres of level or slightly undulating turf, unbroken by a single path. A rocky ridge on the northeastern boundary of the plateau was reduced sixteen feet by

blasting, throwing open from opposite points two of the finest views of the park. Several other tracts of greensward were made by methods only a little less heroic. In order that the edges of these meadows might not be too sharply defined, care was taken to dispose about their borders umbrageous trees without underwood. This blending of the lines and softening of perspectives form one of the niceties of the landscape art as practiced by Olmsted and Vaux.

Another illustration of the landscape transformations effected is afforded by the Mall. This was originally a swamp. Into this bog was dumped the rock blasted from the ridge above mentioned, together with material taken from a low hill about a quarter of a mile to the southward. This substructure was covered with made soil to the depth of four feet, leveled off, planted with grass, embellished with four rows of American elms, and later adorned with rows of statues. From this tract, about eighty rods in length and twelve in breadth, views of an open and tranquil character are obtained for a quarter of a mile in either direction, terminating in a forest obscurity.

For water surfaces, the architects already had the old rectangular Croton reservoir, which they were obliged to retain in its geometrical form. But they secured a change in the plan for the new Croton reservoir by means of which the parallelogram plan was avoided, and gracefully curved outlines secured. They also created several small lakes by damming the ancient water courses mentioned in a previous chapter. Although for obvious reasons, no one is allowed on the reservoirs in either summer or winter, the little lakes conduce to the pleasure of visitors by the allowance of boating and skating in their proper seasons.

The *third object* of the designers of the park was "the development of a series of landscape passages strongly contrasting with those of the pastoral and highwood districts, in complexity of grouping, and the frequent density, obscurity, and wild intricacy of low-growing foliage, especially on broken and rock-strewn surfaces." To carry out this idea, areas which on account of their roughness were not amenable to the pastoral treatment were treated with a bold hand. Shallow and rocky valleys were deepened into ravines; hillocks were thrown together and heightened

by an accumulation of small boulders, covered with earth; the bases of bold ledges were exposed, while tame and uninteresting rocks were broken, or covered up, or by various artifices altogether hidden from view. Vines, creepers, shrubs and trees were planted abundantly, here to soften the ruggedness of some harsh scene, or there to accentuate some tame feature.

One instance may be cited as showing the advantage taken of a naturally incorrigible tract. North of the Mall, between the East and the West drives, advantage was taken of a valley threaded by a small stream to create a lake of about twenty acres. Between the lake on the south, the old reservoir on the north, and the drives on the east and west, is a rugged, hilly area of about thirty-six acres, broken by ledges of rock and bestrewn with boulders. No attempt was made to subdue the asperities of this region, but it was laid out with an irregular net work of secluded walks bordered by shubbery, and called the Ramble. Views of artificial objects in the neighborhood were "planted out," and by careful selections of shrubs with comparatively light and indistinct foliage among and above the gray rocks, an intricate obscurity was given to the perspective as seen from the Mall.

The *fourth object* of the designers was to design and locate the accessory elements of roads, walks, arches and other structures in strict sequence and subordination to the foregoing principles, with an aim to conflict with them as little and to support them as much as possible. Not to violate the primary idea of the park, it was necessary to forbid business traffic within its bounds; but in order that the sections of the city lying east and west of the park for a distance of two and a half miles north and south may have avenues of intercommunication four sunken transverse roads running east and west have been constructed at convenient intervals. These roads are so hidden by shrubbery and embankments that they can hardly be discovered by the visitor to the park.

For the accommodation of pleasure vehicles, a circuit of the park within its bounds is provided by a broad winding drive passing up one side and down the other, with four or five circuitous cross-drives, and with convenient exits to the neighborhood avenues and streets. In many places there are separate roads with loose surface for equestrians exclusively. For pedestrians there are

broad promenades substantially paralleling the East and West Drives, a net work of smaller interior paths, and a broad esplanade called the Mall. To reduce the danger to pedestrians, the principal footpaths have been carried under the driveways when practicable. With the exception of the Mall, there is hardly a straight road or path in the park. The roads and paths have been made winding, not only in order, in some instances, to secure convenient grades by following natural contours, but also in conformity with two principles of landscape art. The first is that a curved line is more beautiful than a straight line. The second is that winding roads and paths first hold the mind in expectancy and then present a succession of vistas, each presenting some new composition of the landscape picture. The suggestion which has been made during the past year to straighten the roads and paths of the park "because it takes so long to go from one place to another," is violative of the first conception of the purpose of the park. The park is not intended for a business thoroughfare or a place in which to hurry. It is a place in which to linger and relax.

Thus in one place or another, and in one way or another, almost every resource of landscape art was brought into play to effect a magical change which can be appreciated only by those older citizens who can remember over a period of more than half a century.

The *fifth* fundamental principle of the park — a corollary of the first — is that no loud and boisterous games or demonstrations should be permitted therein. The meadows at the northern end of the park are devoted to tennis, but baseball and other violent sports are excluded. Although a "parade ground" was suggested in the plan submitted by Mr. Viele in 1856, this feature was discarded in the plan finally adopted, and military parades and mass meetings have not been allowed because they would violate the primary idea of the park as a refuge from noise, distractions, controversies and artificialities. Children's May parties are permitted, and during the summer band concerts are given, but projects for more formal dramatic performances and operatic performances have been consistently frowned down by public opinion.*

* See reference to these intrusions on page 484.

Commissioners in Charge of the Park.

By chapter 771 of the Laws of 1857, Central Park was placed under the exclusive control of a board of eleven members known as the Commissioners of the Central Park.

By chapter 349 of the Laws of 1859, the number of members was fixed at not less than seven nor more than eleven.

During the next eleven years, various additional duties, not strictly related to Central Park — such as the widening of streets and avenues west and north of the park, and laying out the city plan north of One Hundred and Fifty-fifth street and in the Annexed District, were added to the duties of the Commissioners of Central Park, so that it was deemed advisable in chapter 137 of the Laws of 1870 — an act “to recognize the local government of the city of New York,” — to create a Department of Public Parks under the control of five commissioners having general jurisdiction over the parks and public places of the city. The Commissioners under this act, with Peter B. Sweeny at the head, assumed their duties May 3, 1870.

Chapter 300 of the Laws of 1874 reduced the number of Park Commissioners on May 1, 1874, to four.

The Greater New York Charter, chapter 378 of the Laws of 1897, which went into effect January 1, 1898, placed the administration of the parks in the hands of three Commissioners with joint and divided jurisdiction as indicated on page 77 in the body of this report.* The Commissioners have many responsibilities besides caring for the parks.

The personnel of the Park Commission, from 1857 to the present time, with the years in which the Commissioners began and terminated their services, is as follows: The Commissioners of Parks for Manhattan and Richmond boroughs since consolidation in 1898 are indicated with asterisks. The first two named in the following list were Mayor and Street Commissioner respectively. For the names of the Consulting Board in 1856 see page 465 preceding.

* Since the preparation of this paper, the Legislature of 1911 has passed an act dividing the jurisdiction of the Commissioner for the Boroughs of Brooklyn and Queens and creating a separate office for the Borough of Queens. On July 24, 1911, Mayor Gaynor appointed Walter G. Elliott as Commissioner of Parks for the latter Borough.

1856	Fernando Wood	1857
1856	Joseph S. Taylor	1857
1857	Robert J. Dillon	1858
1857	James E. Cooley	1858
1857	Charles H. Russell	1870
1857	John F. Butterworth	1870
1857	John A. C. Gray	1862
1857	Waldo Hutchins	1870
1857	Thomas C. Fields	1873
1857	Andrew H. Green	1873
1857	Charles W. Elliott	1860
1857	William K. Strong	1862
1857	James Hogg	1859
1858	August Belmont	1862
1859	Henry G. Stebbins	1870
1859	Richard M. Blatchford	1870
1860	Moses H. Grinnell	1870
1870	Peter B. Sweeny	1871
1870	Henry Hilton	1871
1870	Robert J. Dillon	1872
1871	Henry G. Stebbins	1877
1871	Frederick E. Church	1873
1872	Frederick Law Olmsted	1872
1872	Richard M. Blatchford	1873
1873	Salem H. Wales	1874
1873	Philip Bissinger	1874
1873	David B. Williamson	1875
1873	Samuel Hall	1873
1874	Thomas E. Stewart	1875
1875	Joseph J. O'Donohue	1877
1875	William R. Martin	1878
1876	William C. Wetmore	1880
1877	James F. Wenman	1881
1878	Smith E. Lane	1883
1878	Samuel Conover	1881
1880	Andrew H. Green	1881
1881	Salem H. Wales	1885
1881	Charles F. McLean	1883
1881	William M. Olliffe	1885
1883	Egbert L. Viele	1885
1883	John D. Crimmins	1888

1885	Matthew M. C. Borden	1891
1885	Henry R. Beekman	1887
1885	Jesse W. Powers	1887
1887	Theodore W. Myers	1888
1887	Waldo Hutchins	1891
1888	J. Hampden Robb	1891
1888	Stevenson Towle	1890
1890	Albert Gallup	1893
1891	Nathan Straus	1894
1891	Paul Dana	1894
1891	Abraham B. Tappen	1895
1893	George C. Clausen	1895
1893	Henry Winthrop Gray	1893
1894	Edward Bell	1895
1895	David H. King	1896
1895	James A. Roosevelt	1896
1895	Augustus D. Julliard	1896
1895	George G. Haven	1896
1896	S. V. R. Cruger	1897
1896	William A. Stiles	1897
1896	Smith Ely	1897
1896	Samuel McMillan	1897
1897	Edward Mitchell	1897
1898	George C. Clausen*	1901
1898	August Moebus	1902
1898	George V. Brower	1902
1902	William R. Willcox*	1904
1902	John E. Eustis	1904
1902	Richard Young	1904
1904	John J. Pallas*	1905
1904	William P. Schmitt	1904
1904	John J. Brady	1905
1904	Michael J. Kennedy	Incumbent
1905	Samuel Parsons, Jr.*	1906
1905	Henry C. Sbrader	1906
1906	Moses Herrman*	1907
1906	George M. Walgrove	1906
1906	Joseph I. Berry	1910
1907	Samuel Parsons, Jr.*	1907
1907	Henry Smith*	1910
1910	Charles B. Stover*	Incumbent
1910	Thomas J. Higgins	Incumbent

Progress of the Work.

As before stated, the crude work of breaking stone and of making the preliminary surveys began in 1856; and in 1857 the removal of incumbrances from the ground began with the demolition of about 300 dwellings, swill-milk and hog-feeding establishments and bone factories. But hostile influences were at work to make the Commissioners unpopular and to prevent their undertaking the work. On June 2, 1857, the commissioners applied to the Common Council for money, but no money was received until September 29, 1857. During all that time the board was doubtful if it could make any progress at all without expensive and protracted litigation.

It was not until June 1, 1858, that a respectable work force was organized, and systematic operations were begun, with the requisite assurances of financial support. Even then it was not smooth sailing, and certain rumors, first set in motion by the disappointments of ex-members of the Commission, notably James Hogg, and certain discharged employees, led the State Senate to pass a resolution on April 14, 1860, appointing a committee to investigate the affairs, condition and progress of Central Park. The committee organized in New York on June 18th, and Mr. Hogg submitted charges. Although public notice of the hearing was given, Mr. Hogg was the only person who appeared to make any complaint, and even he admitted that he did not believe that any Commissioners had acted corruptly or dishonestly. More than fifty witnesses were examined. With the exception of one or two who testified as to the taste exercised in laying out the park, the witnesses were called mainly with reference to the manner of conducting the work. The statements of most of them were colored by their disappointment in not obtaining work or losing it, and were of the most trifling and unimportant character. The few who testified on the subject of taste of the landscape plan of the park differed from the authors of the plan, but the committee said "it would be singular if differences did not exist in such matters," and added: "In this respect, the park is its own justification. It is open to public examination; it has received approbation of the public with an almost unprecedented unanimity, and meets fresh encomiums as it daily develops its attractions. The committee do not hesitate to assert that already, in its infancy, it has promises

of beauties and convenience far surpassing those of any of the parks of the Old World." In conclusion the committee declared the failure to fix any malpractice or want of integrity on the Commissioners to be complete and thorough.

It is not within the province of this paper to follow the details of the development of the park, the many physical obstacles overcome, or the many impediments put in the way of the Commissioners by the withholding of money, etc.; but a glance may be taken at the stages of general progress. In 1859, an average of 3,027 men a day were employed. In that year three and a half miles of drive, seven and one-quarter miles of walks and the Ramble were opened to the public, five bridges were built, and the excavation of the lakes in the lower end of the park nearly completed. By July, 1860, about half the work between Fifty-ninth and One Hundred and Sixth streets was done. By January, 1861, the work below Seventy-ninth street was mainly finished and that on the west side of the reservoir from Seventy-ninth to Eighty-sixth street well advanced. By the beginning of 1862, over seven miles of driveway was in use. The only portion of the drive below One Hundred and Second street not then open was between Eighty-fifth and Ninety-seventh street, which was delayed by the work on the new reservoir. By the beginning of 1863, the area of the park below One Hundred and Second street was practically finished with the exception of the enclosing wall, the gates, the Terrace, and a little over 100 acres of surface. During the year 1863 the area between One Hundred and Sixth and One Hundred and Tenth streets was added to the park (page 462, *ante*). By November 23, 1865, the drives and bridle paths were completed, the last section to be finished being the drive from McGown's Pass to Seventh avenue and One Hundred and Tenth street. Harlem Mere was completed in August, 1866. The Belvedere, at the southwestern corner of the old reservoir, begun in 1867, was finished in 1872. In 1873, the park wall was about three-fourths finished, and was completed a few years later. By 1876, twenty years after the breaking of stone began, the building of the park, in its principal features, was completed. The park, however, has never really been finished. The "Great Hill" on the west side of the park, between One Hundred and Third and One Hundred and

Sixth streets, from which the old buildings were not removed until about ten years ago, is still in a crude condition. The region north of the Metropolitan Museum of Art is also unfinished and some other parts are still swampy and crude. Mrs. Russell Sage's generous gift of \$60,000 in 1908 for a rhododendron plantation on the East Drive, between Ninety-sixth and One Hundredth streets, was used to carry out part of the original plan of the park. Some idea of the extent of the artificial means employed to grade and slope the grounds of the park may be obtained from the fact that up to January 1, 1866, the following quantities of materials, in terms of cubic yards, had been excavated and removed within the park and obtained from without the park respectively:

	Stone filling.	Earth filling.	Muck or Top Soil.
From within	331,779	2,488,982	406,692
From without	11,778	250,550	93,347
	<hr/>	<hr/>	<hr/>
Total	343,557	2,739,532	500,039
	<hr/>	<hr/>	<hr/>

or a total of 3,583,128 cubic yards. In grading and shaping the park from the beginning to the present time, about 5,000,000 cubic yards of stone, earth and top-soil have been moved.* In ornamenting the grounds over a quarter of a million trees and shrubs of all kinds have been planted.

The Park Soil.

At the beginning of this history of the park (page 391 preceding), in speaking of the geology and physical characteristics of the area, we have referred to the poor quality of the natural soil. The subject of the Central Park soil has assumed such importance during the past few years that its original character is a matter of more than usual interest.

In 1859, Charles A. Joy, professor of chemistry in Columbia College, made an analysis of five specimens taken from the following places: No. 1, at Seventieth street, near Fifth avenue; No. 2,

* Up to Dec. 31, 1873, the actual amount was 4,825,000 cubic yards or about 10,000,000 one-horse cart-loads of those days, which, in single file, would have made a procession 30,000 miles long, as computed by F. L. Olmsted.

between Seventy-eighth and Seventy-ninth streets, on the line of Seventh avenue; No. 3, between the lines of Eighty-third and Eighty-fourth streets, Fifth and Sixth avenues; No. 4, between the lines of One Hundred and Second and One Hundred and Third streets, Fifth and Sixth avenues; and No. 5, at One Hundred and Fourth street, between Seventh and Eighth avenues. The samples were each taken from a cubic yard of earth, thoroughly intermixed, which had been obtained at an average depth of fourteen inches from the surface. On account of the frequent deposits of foreign substances upon the surface soil, surface specimens would not have indicated the treatment required for its general improvement. The result of this analysis as reported to Frederick Law Olmsted, by Professor Joy on March 25, 1859, was as follows:

	1	2	3	4	5
Sand and Mica	71.63	81.36	82.67	75.58	79.44
Water and organic matter	2.89	2.93	3.44	3.05	3.51
Soluble silica	4.58	3.51	1.79	5.86	3.56
Peroxide of iron	10.11	6.13	2.48	11.00	10.00
Alumina	6.44	3.80	5.42	3.25	1.25
Phosphoric acid	2.55	0.50	1.94	trace	.08
Potash and traces of soda	0.10	.87	.45	.35	1.25
Magnesia	0.08	trace	1.50	.50	.07
Lime	1.25	.15	trace	.10	.25
Sulphuric acid .....	.10	.50	trace	trace	.31
Chlorine ..	trace	trace	trace	trace	trace
Loss ..	.27	.25	.31	.31	.28
	100.00	100.00	100.00	100.00	100.00

The subsoil was a hard clay, intermixed with stone and gravel. The rocky districts were thinly covered with poor soil, except the irregular depressions which contained clay and boulders occasionally covered with muck or vegetable matter. After the grading of the park the swamp land had undergone such changes in the shaping of the grounds by cutting down or filling in that little of it was in its natural condition when it came to seeding and planting. The natural ground, limited to the more elevated surfaces, was composed of a meager soil requiring liberal additions of fertilizing material, and thorough trenching or sub-soiling. There were a few old garden plots here and there which had already been more or less fertilized, but generally speaking, all the soil of the park required enrichment to enable it to sustain vegetation. When the natural ground was trenched, three methods were used to work in the fertilizing materials.

First, in the deeper trenches in which the coarser, uncomposted manures were used, the manures and earth were deposited in the trench in alternate layers.

Second, the fertilizer was spread on the rear slope of the trench and the earth was cast upon it.

Third, the fertilizer was spread upon the surface of the ground and turned in.

When two different kinds of fertilizers were used, such as night-soil compost and horse-manure compost, the first was worked in by trenching or plowing; and the second was afterwards spread over the surface, and then plowed or spaded in to a depth of six or eight inches.

The foregoing methods were followed on the so-called "natural ground,"—a comparatively small proportion of the whole park area. The fertilizing of the made ground was effected first by the use of from nine to twelve inches of muck without compost. The ground was finished and seeded down without the use of the plow, except where the muck, after spreading, became too much hardened by sun and rain, in which cases it was plowed and harrowed, and the seed applied and raked in. To maintain the fertility, enrichment was supplied from year to year by a top dressing of night-soil, properly composted, together with horse manure gathered from the drives, also composted. Of late years the park has chiefly depended for the fertility of its soil upon such nitrogenous fertilizers as stable manure and sheep manure together with "garden mold" purchased from the nearest obtainable source. Manufactured fertilizers have been used very sparingly.

The soil of the park has suffered not only from exhaustion, but at times by actual abuse, due either to ignorance, poor judgment or something worse. For instance, on April 10, 1905, the department made a contract with Charles L. Doran to deliver 10,000 cubic yards of "fertile garden mold, clean and free from stones, roots, weeds and other extraneous matter." Under this contract, the contractor dumped in Central Park at various places, notably on the west side opposite Ninety-ninth street and near One Hundred and Second street, ordinary earth and clay containing little or no organic matter, excavated from cellars dug in East One Hundred and Eighteenth and East One Hundred and Twenty-first

streets. This soil was poorer than the soil which it covered. Six years have elapsed since that dirt was dumped in the park, and at One Hundred and Second street is barren of grass yet. Through the efforts of Samuel Parsons, many years Landscape Architect of the park, the delivery of this cellar dirt was stopped.

During the past fifteen years the condition of the park with respect to soil, trees, and general maintenance, has noticeably deteriorated. So noticeable had the deterioration become in 1900 that in that year, the American Scenic and Historic Preservation Society secured the services of C. S. Sargent, Director of the Arnold Arboretum of Harvard University; L. H. Bailey, of Cornell University, now Dean of the College of Forestry at that institution, and Hon. William M. Canby of the Park Commission of Wilmington, Del., to make a critical examination of the park.

In 1902, Park Commissioner W. R. Willcox had a similar examination made by N. L. Britton, Director of the New York Botanical Garden; B. E. Fernow of the Department of Forestry, Toronto University; J. A. Pettigrew, Superintendent of Parks of Boston, Mass., and Samuel Parsons, Landscape Architect of the parks of New York.

In 1902 the *New York Evening Post*, on the authority of landscape garden experts, in a series of articles drew public attention to the fact that the park needed resoiling at great expense if it were to be saved from decay.* Other examinations, official and unofficial, have been made from time to time under various auspices. In August, 1910, the Parks and Playgrounds Association of New York city formed a committee consisting of Eugene A. Philbin, President; Charles Barnett, Secretary; Gutzon Borglum, Chairman of committee; George W. Perkins, Francis Lynde Stetson, Jacob H. Schiff, W. J. Gibson, and Francis E. Ward, which devoted seven months to a study of the park. They had sixty samples of soil analyzed, and found the presence of an average of only about $4\frac{1}{2}$ per cent. of humus and about $19\frac{1}{2}$ per cent. of clay. They say:

“The soil of Central Park should contain 33 per cent. clay to overcome the loose character of the soil given by the great percentage of sand, and not less than 12 per cent. of humus. If a

* *New York Evening Post*, May 27, May 28, June 21, July 5 and August 16, 1902.

topsoil of 461½ per cent. clay and 191½ per cent. humus should be added to the present soil and thoroughly plowed in, and so mixed with the old soil, a percentage of 33 per cent. clay and 12 per cent. humus would be obtained and an almost perfect soil secured."

While this examination was in progress, Park Commissioner Stover, under the guidance of Landscape Architect Parsons, applied to the board of estimate and apportionment for an appropriation of \$250,000 a year for five years for resoiling. Since then, a regrettable controversy has arisen as to the necessity for resoiling. The Landscape Architect, Mr. Parsons, supported by Milton Whitney, Soil Physicist and Chief of the Bureau of Soils of the United States Department of Agriculture, and others believes in resoiling; while the Park Commissioner has changed his views on the advice of Gustavus B. Maynadier, a subordinate of Professor Whitney in the Bureau of Soils, who differs from his chief and is diametrically opposed to resoiling in the general sense of the term. Mr. Maynadier thinks that tile draining, plowing, reseeding, and more care in regard to weeds, are practically all that are necessary. Owing in part to this controversy and its ramifications, but also in part to Mr. Parsons' opposition to certain other ideas of Commissioner Stover, Mr. Parsons' long and useful connection with the parks was terminated May 11, 1911.*

In the same month Superintendent of Parks Beatty resigned, and the management of the working force of the park was temporarily transferred, with the consent of the Park Commissioner, to

* Mr. Parsons was born at New Bedford, Mass., Feb. 8, 1844. He was educated at Haverford and Yale Colleges, taking the degree of B. S. at the latter. Planting and landscape architecture have always been his profession. He became Superintendent of Planting in connection with the New York City Parks in May, 1882. From 1884 to 1897 he was Superintendent of Parks; and from 1898 to 1911 he was Landscape Architect of the Parks of Greater New York except during the intervals when he served as Park Commissioner. In 1905-1906 he consented to take the office of Park Commissioner temporarily in place of Mr. Pallas, deceased, and in 1907 similarly became Park Commissioner for a while in place of Mr. Herrman, resigned, but always preferred his profession as a Landscape Architect and resumed it as soon as a successor as Commissioner could be found. In the exercise of his veto power (see page 77 preceding), he has been one of the principal bulwarks of Central Park. On August 10, 1911, the Park Commissioners appointed as Mr. Parsons' successor Mr. Charles Downing Lay, formerly Secretary of the American Society of Landscape Architects.

the Commissioner of Accounts* on account of its generally demoralized condition. The administration of the park is in this unsettled situation at the present writing.

Proposed Mutilations, Intrusions and Perversions.

From the very inception of the idea of Central Park, efforts have been made to reduce its area, intrude upon its structures foreign to its original purpose, or to pervert it from the uses for which it was originally designed. It is conceded that of necessity there must be some buildings in the park for administrative purposes, but where such artificial structures are indispensable, they have, so far as practicable, been located along the sunken roads out of sight, or screened by plantations of shrubs. With the exception of the Arsenal building which was on the ground when the park land was taken, McGown's Pass Tavern, which stands on the site occupied in former times by a tavern, and the Metropolitan Museum of Art, there are no substantial buildings in the park except those used for park purposes.

Brief mention of some of the attempts to mutilate or pervert the park may be made to illustrate, by their failure, how firmly public opinion is set against such efforts:

Soon after the enactment of the Central Park law in 1853, resolutions were offered in the Board of Aldermen and Board of Councilmen (Assistant Aldermen) to memorialize the Legislature to repeal the act altogether.

These failing, the majority of the Committee on Lands and Places of the Board of Councilmen on March 13, 1854, recommended that the park be limited to the area between Seventy-second and One Hundred and Sixth streets, and also narrowed 400 feet on each side.

On March 27, 1854, the minority of the same committee recommended instead that the whole park, from Fifty-ninth street to One Hundred and Sixth street, be narrowed 400 feet on each side.

A year later, the proposal to cut off all south of Seventy-second

* The Commissioner of Accounts is an officer appointed by the Mayor. It is his duty under the charter, "to make an examination of the receipts and disbursements in the offices of the Comptroller and City Chamberlain in connection with those of all departments and officers making returns thereto."

street and to narrow the remainder was adopted by the Aldermen and Councilmen and was vetoed by Mayor Wood March 23, 1855. (See page 459 preceding.)

On March 27, 1854, the minority of the same committee recommended that the park be reduced in width 400 feet on each side, but no action resulted.

Prior to 1872 the following additional propositions had been advanced and discountenanced:

That a street railway be built in the park;

That tents for circuses be set up in the park;

That a steamboat and a full-rigged ship be put in the park;

That the park should be made a burial place for the distinguished dead of the city;

That all religious denominations be invited to build places of worship in the park;

That some great central building, corresponding to the dwelling in private grounds, should be erected;

That the central building should be a grand People's Cathedral, in which all sects might unite in a common litany; and

That this central building should be a continuous exhibition of merchandise for sale in the city.

In 1880 and 1881 it was proposed to erect an exposition building in the park and a law was passed (chapter 208, Laws of 1881) making it unlawful to use the park for the purposes of a public fair or exhibition.

In 1881, after the fire at McGown's Pass, the Municipal Art Society protested against the rebuilding of the tavern (see page 434), but the precedent of the ancient traditions of the spot was too strong, and the present entirely unnecessary building was erected.

In 1886, it was proposed to fill in the ravine at the northwest corner of the park (at Eighth avenue and One Hundred and Tenth street), and this obliteration of a picturesque feature was prevented by the influence of such men as Samuel J. Tilden, John D. Crimmins and others.

On March 17, 1892, a law was enacted (chapter 142) authorizing the construction of a speedway seventy-five feet wide, inside of the western boundary wall from Fifty-ninth street northward.

The law took effect immediately and steps were taken to begin work as soon as practicable. But public indignation was intense. Crowds gathered menacingly at the park and it was feared that if work began trouble would ensue. The situation became so uncomfortable for the fathers of the bill that the political leader of the dominant party sent word to Albany that the bill must be repealed. And it *was* repealed, by chapter 370 of the Laws of 1892, signed April 25th. The law lasted just thirty-nine days.

In the summer of 1901 the Park Commissioner granted a concession to Oscar F. Spate, representing the 'Comfort Chair Co., to instal in the Park chairs which were rented to users for 3 or 5 cents each. The chairs, popularly known as the "Spate chairs," were in charge of the uniformed attendants of the chair company. This innovation aroused such a storm of indignation, resulting in assaults, small riots and taxpayers' suits, that the Commission was obliged to cancel the concession.

About the year 1904 or 1905, the late Hon. Robert B. Roosevelt proposed that the park should be cut up into building lots and sold, but although the suggestion was serious on his part, no one else considered it seriously.

In May, 1905, a petition was addressed to the municipal authorities, asking that the Fifth avenue wall be removed, and that Fifth avenue be widened by taking a ninety-foot strip from the entire length of the park, but the project was killed by the popular opposition which it evoked.

In 1909, a bill was introduced in the Legislature to authorize the Academy of Design to occupy with a new building 30,000 square feet of ground on a part of which the Arsenal now stands. Popular sentiment was against it and it failed to pass.

In February, 1910, the Aborn Opera Companies formally offered to erect in the park an opera house with a seating capacity for 5,000 persons, and to give free opera, for the benefit of the advertisement which it would give them. The newspapers laughed the proposition to scorn and nothing came of it.

In 1910 several projects with a view of "popularizing" the park were advanced.

One project was for the establishment of a swimming bath, a wading pool, a nursery, and a nursery on the North Meadow, but it met with so much opposition that it was not pushed.

Another plan was for the establishment of sand heaps for the children.

Another was for baseball grounds.

Neither of these met with general approval.

A more serious project advanced in March, 1911, was for an extensive playground for noisy sports on the east side of the park, between the reservoir on the south and the cross-road at about One Hundred and Second street on the north. This proposition advanced so far that it was authorized by the Board of Aldermen and \$150,000 was appropriated for it; but nothing has been done to carry out the plan, and it is believed that the Mayor, feeling the popular pulse, advised the Park Commissioner to drop the matter.

On March 15, 1911, announcement was made* that for two months Park Commissioner Stover and a representative of Charles Frohman had been working on plans for an out-door theatre in a city park; that Carrere & Hastings had offered to design and direct the building of a structure for the accommodation of 25,000 persons; and that Maude Adams had offered to inaugurate the enterprise with a series of Shakespearean and other plays and pageants. Many persons jumped at the conclusion that this was another Central Park project, but on March 16th Commissioner Stover announced that what he favored was a theatre in St. Nicholas Park, Colonial Park, Morningside Park or Riverside Park. If in Riverside Park he would have seats for 100,000 persons.†

So far as publicly known, this project has made no progress.

On March 22, 1911, the Citizens' Union filed with the Commissioner of Parks a strong protest against the movement for "popularizing" the park — that is to say, perverting it from its original plan and purposes. This letter may be found in full in the *New York Times* of March 23, 1911.

In 1910-11 there was a great deal of talk about locating a great central fire department station in the park, but the plan has not materialized.

In the early part of 1911 City Magistrate Frederick De Witt Wells addressed the Park Commissioner, complaining of the time lost in following the winding paths of the park. The Commis-

* *New York Times* and other papers.

† *New York Sun*, March 16, 1911.

sioner replied: "I am in hearty accord with your criticism of the characteristic winding paths . . . and I am giving careful thought to the realignment of several paths in Central Park." Fortunately, nothing has thus far been done to violate the principle of art expressed in the curved lines of these paths. (See page 473 preceding.)

Institutions in Central Park.

Fortunately, there are few institutions in Central Park. As we have intimated under the preceding heading, as soon as the park was established, and before the fundamental idea of the park had fairly crystallized in the public mind, there were innumerable propositions for the establishment of institutions in the park. One of the first was a menagerie and museum. The menagerie idea took root, and is now established in some buildings near the Arsenal.

The American Museum of Natural History was housed for a while in the Arsenal, but fortunately was given adequate ground in Manhattan Square on the west side of Eighth avenue, where that great institution is expanding without interfering with the park.

An act of March 25, 1862, authorized the Commissioners to appropriate ground for a building for the New York Historical Society, and a provisional designation was made; but when, in 1866, the Society submitted designs for the buildings, the Society could not reach an agreement with the Commissioners and the plan never materialized. This venerable Society now occupies its own building on the west side of Eighth avenue just south of the American Museum of Natural History.

In 1869, work was begun on a building for a Palaeozoic Museum on the west side of the park near Sixty-third street. The foundations were laid, but in December, 1870, the project was abandoned, and the cellar was filled up and planted over.

On October 4, 1870, the Commissioners selected forty-eight acres of meadow land north of Ninety-seventh street for Zoological Gardens, but the plan was abandoned in November, 1871.

By chapter 290 of the Laws of 1871, the Commissioners were authorized to assign space for the Metropolitan Museum of Art. This noble institution, erected on the Fifth avenue side of the park

between Eightieth and Eighty-fifth streets, was opened to the public March 30, 1880. Although this building is foreign to the landscape plan of the park, the superb work of the museum has reconciled the city to its presence within the park bounds.

In the New York *Evening Post* of June 3, 1911, Mr. A. J. Bloor, whom we have already quoted on page 468 preceding, in discussing the subject of the environment of the New York Public Library building at Fifth avenue and Forty-second street, says:

"I should like, as a member of the architectural staff of the Central Park in its earlier years, to recall to the current generation the fact that it was a subject of not infrequent discussion in that staff whether provision should not be made to reserve the whole eastern line of the park bordering on Fifth avenue for public buildings devoted to municipal functions and to art and science and all of the highest architectural character. This possibility had a certain influence in the selection and assignment of its site to the Metropolitan Museum of Art."

The fact that the architectural staff of the park decided that this scheme should go no further and that the original conception of a rural park should be adhered to has indelibly impressed its stamp upon the character of the park and grown so firmly into an approving public sentiment that it is probable that no more institutions, however excellent intrinsically, will ever be admitted within the park bounds.

APPENDIX H.

THE BUREAU OF AMERICAN REPUBLICS.

By GEORGE FREDERICK KUNZ, Ph. D., Sc. D.

THE BUREAU OF AMERICAN REPUBLICS.

By GEORGE F. KUNZ, Ph. D., Sc. D.

Dedication of Building April 26, 1911.

Among the most important buildings in Washington is that which was dedicated April 26, 1911, to the service of the International Bureau of American Republics. This organization was founded during the First International Conference of the American Republics, held in Washington in the winter of 1889-90. The assembling of the delegates was due to the initiative of James G. Blaine, then Secretary of State, who was the presiding officer of the conference. A small building on Pennsylvania avenue, near the State, War and Navy building, was for several years the home of the bureau, but soon proved inadequate for the purpose. The necessity for the erection of a building especially adapted to the needs of the bureau was keenly felt and considerable effort was made to secure it, with indifferent success. However, shortly after the appointment, in 1907, of Mr. John Barrett as director of the bureau, the sum of \$750,000 was generously donated by Mr. Andrew Carnegie for the erection of a suitable building, and \$200,000 was appropriated by Congress for the purchase of an appropriate site. Some \$50,000 had already been subscribed to further the undertaking by the various Latin-American republics, so that the entire sum available was \$1,000,000.

The site selected is on the confines of Potomac Park, and here stood the old Van Ness mansion, in by-gone days one of the show places of Washington, and once the home of Maria Van Ness, daughter of Davy Burns, a Scotchman who owned a considerable part of the site of the city of Washington when that city was originally planned.

An open competition was held to determine the best design for the new building, and of seventy designs submitted that of Messrs. Albert Kelsey and Paul P. Cr  t of Philadelphia, was chosen. On

May 11, 1908, President Theodore Roosevelt laid the corner stone of the new building, with appropriate ceremonies. (Plate 25.)

While eminently well fitted for the practical uses to which it is put — an office for general work, a home of the International Union of American Republics, and a library in memory of Columbus — the building is designed to symbolize the union of North and South America, of Anglo-Saxon and Latin-America, in the pursuance of common aims. At the front of each of the two pylons flanking the three lofty portals giving access to the vestibule, is a colossal group. One of these, by Gutzon Borglum, typifies North America, while the other, by Isidore Konti, symbolizes South America. These groups, impressive by their mass, are designed to depict in a broad way the racial types in the northern and southern divisions of the American continent. Toward the top of the pylons are two bas-reliefs representing respectively, Washington taking farewell of his generals, and San Martin surrendering the primacy of South American affairs to Bolivar, these themes having been proposed by Senator Root as illustrating two of the greatest acts of self-abnegation in the world's history. Above these groups and reliefs is sculptured on one pylon an American eagle, and on the other a condor. The general details of the architecture have been utilized to present Spanish and Portuguese decorative forms; sometimes these are combined with details recalling the primitive art of the Aztecs.

Within the portals, which are provided with handsome bronze grills, is a spacious vestibule adorned with four bronze plaques by Isidore Konti, bearing graceful allegorical figures. Traversing this vestibule, we reach the patio, or courtyard, which recalls the finest types of this characteristic Spanish feature. The device of a sliding glass roof renders it possible to maintain an equable temperature here, so that even during the occasional rigors of a Washington winter the trees and plants of a warmer clime can be cultivated. The tiled pavement of the patio shows designs suggested by decorations found on ancient fragments from Mexico, Guatemala and Peru. In the center of the patio rises a fountain whose basins are supported by three figures closely resembling the types depicted in Aztec, Zapatecan and Mayan sculptures, and characterizing three stages of the aboriginal civilization. The

mystic feathered serpent of Uxmal, a favorite symbol with the ancient inhabitants of Central America, is utilized in the gargoyles of the fountain, and sculptured hieroglyphs express the date of its construction, according to the complex Aztec cycle. This beautiful and symbolic fountain was designed by the gifted sculptress, Mrs. Harry Payne Whitney, nee Gertrude Vanderbilt. At night, by ingenious electrical contrivance, the streams which issue from it are lighted up by a constantly shifting and changing play of color. (Plate 27.)

On the ground floor of the building, along one side, is a row of rooms for the officers of the bureau and their assistants, while on the opposite side space is provided for housing part of the books of the Columbus library. Two large rooms, one a committee room and the other a room for the Secretary, are at either end of the vestibule. Beyond the patio is a foyer of equal dimensions with the vestibule, and opening out of this is the very imposing and dignified assembly hall, whose windows look out upon a handsome terrace. (Plate 26.) The Board room, at one end of this hall, contains artistic bronze friezes, the work of the well-known sculptress, Mrs. Sally James Farnham, which offer very effective representations of some of the most striking episodes in the history of the New World. On the other side of the assembly hall are large committee rooms.

Two wide marble stairways, with openings affording charming views of the patio, lead to the second floor, which is principally devoted to library uses, and to the editors, translators, etc., engaged in preparing the valuable bulletins of the bureau. The reading room is situated just above the assembly hall. On this floor is the Hall of Heroes, adorned with white marble busts representing the founders and heroes of the American Republics; over each bust hangs the flag of the respective country. The effect produced by the grouping together of those to whose valiant efforts the republics owe their existence and their greatness, is well calculated to strengthen the impression of the unity the building is intended both to typify and further.

The simple but very impressive ceremonies of the dedication were held, as we have stated, on April 26, 1911. At 3.15 p. m. the formal dedication took place, the invited guests to the number of

about 700 being congregated in the large assembly room. The company was composed of the chief officers of the government, the Diplomatic Corps, the Supreme Court, many members of the Senate and House of Representatives and a number of officers of the army and navy, as well as other distinguished citizens.

The proceedings opened with an invocation delivered by His Eminence Cardinal Gibbons.

Then Hon. Philander C. Knox, Secretary of State, was introduced and in his remarks drew special attention to the rapid growth among the American republics of the sentiment of solidarity, which in the past has usually been so slowly and painfully evolved.

On the conclusion of his address the Secretary of State introduced Mr. John Barrett, the able Director of the bureau, who briefly related the planning and execution of the building, made possible by Mr. Carnegie's munificent gift. Acknowledging to how great an extent the success of the undertaking was due to the tireless efforts of Senator Root, the speaker said: "This building is in a sense his child and I have acted as nurse." He then proceeded to express the thanks of the bureau to all those who had been engaged in the erection and embellishment of the structure. The truly international character of the bureau was also emphasized, this having been assured by placing the whole undertaking under the immediate control of the diplomatic representatives of the republics in Washington, the expenses of the bureau being covered by contributions from our own and the other republics, apportioned according to population. The surprisingly rapid development of the bureau's activities in the dissemination of valuable information was also noted.

In a few words, Mr. Kelsey, representing the firm of architects charged with the design of the building, noted the successful efforts of the artists and designers to give prominence in the structure to the artistic tendencies of Latin-America.

Senator Root, who was now introduced, said that while the building was most excellently adapted for the practical purposes it was designed to subserve, it was most important "as a symbol, the ever-present reminder, the perpetual assertion of unity of common interest and purpose and hope among the republics." It

was "a confession of faith, a covenant of fraternal duty, a declaration of allegiance to an ideal."

Senator Root's eloquent words found a noble echo in those spoken by the Mexican Ambassador, Senor F. L. de la Barra, who followed him, and who proclaimed that the true aim of Pan-Americanism was to further cordial relations among the republics and to discourage any infringement of their individual rights or liberties. This spirit it was that raised this magnificent palace, "white as the flag of peace, beautiful and filled with light like the minds of those who conceived the idea thus made a reality." Anglo-Saxons and Latin-Americans would be brought closer together, and a better mutual understanding would result. Alluding to the great philanthropist to whose munificence the realization of the project was principally due, the speaker said: "The powerful personality devoted to doing good has left its seal upon the ground of international peace-making, as shown in Cartago, Costa Rica, and in The Hague, and future generations will acknowledge the stamp of a firmly directed and nobly inspired will." The hope was justified that all the American republics would merge their differences in a common ideal of peace, justice, and progress, in the same manner in which the artists had "so beautifully succeeded in harmonizing in this building the serenity and grandeur of the American people with the grace and elegance of the Latin-American soul." The speaker concluded by presenting to Mr. Carnegie a beautiful gold medal, upon which he was characterized as a "Benefactor of Humanity." (See plate 28.)

Mr. Carnegie, who might well be termed the central figure of the ceremonies, in accepting the medal, gave earnest expression to his views regarding the peaceful settlement of all international disputes. If the good cause did not progress more rapidly, this was due, in the speaker's opinion, to the fact that the rulers and statesmen of the various countries were too rarely brought into direct contact with one another, and he believed that one of the chief missions of this palace should be to serve as a meeting ground for the diplomats and representatives of all the republics. "Nor will its mission be fulfilled," he added, "until every republic, and, I fondly hope, Canada also included, shall have agreed to lay aside the sword."

In a few well-chosen words President Taft noted the significance of the occasion, and recognized how fitting it was "that this building should have been made possible by that man who is the most conspicuous man out of official life in the bringing about of universal peace." The chief aim of the foreign policy of the United States was to preserve peace among the American republics, and the organization of the Bureau of American Republics would be a powerful aid to the success of this policy.

The proceedings were brought to a close with a benediction by the Right Reverend Alfred Hardy, Bishop of Washington.

A very interesting symbolic feature of the dedication ceremonies was the planting of a *Ficus pandurata* tree in the patio by President Taft and Mr. Carnegie.

In the evening from 9.30 to 11 o'clock a reception in honor of Mr. and Mrs. Carnegie was given by the Governing Board and the Director.

APPENDIX I.

AMERICAN CITY PARKS.

By GEORGE FREDERICK KUNZ, Ph. D., Sc. D.



AMERICAN CITY PARKS.

By GEORGE FREDERICK KUNZ, Ph. D., Sc. D.

General Observations on the Development of City Parks.

It is the purpose of the writer in the following paper to present some notes on the progress of park development in American cities.

The successful prosecution of the task of establishing harmonious park systems and rendering the parks objects of beauty calculated to charm the eyes of those who visit them, is largely due to the work of a group of landscape artists, many of whom, for instance George E. Kessler, Frederick Law Olmsted, John Nolen and others, have worked in this direction in a large number of cities throughout the land.* A notable contribution to the literature of city planning is a report made by Daniel H. Burnham, John M. Carrere and Arnold W. Brunner on the group plan of the public buildings of Cleveland, Ohio, and published in 1907 by the Britton Printing Company.

A city planning exhibition, the first of its kind held in America, opened on May 15, 1911, in the City Hall in Philadelphia, where the Third National Conference on City Planning met on May 15, 16 and 17. This exhibition, which follows the lines of those recently held in Berlin, Dusseldorf and London, is designed to present to the American public, in a telling way, the latest and best results of the movement both here and abroad, and will remain open to the public, without admission charge, on both week days and Sundays until June 15. The subject is illustrated by models, perspectives, photographs, plans, maps, etc., some showing results already secured in European cities, while others present plans designed by experts for the improvement and embellishment of some sixty of our cities. Explanatory lectures by some

* See "The Parks and Recreation Facilities in the United States," by John Nolen, published by the American Academy of Polit. and Soc. Science, Philadelphia; and also, "American Park Systems," Report of the Philadelphia Allied Organizations.

of the leading experts in the United States add much to the permanent effect of this exhibition, which promises to mark an era in the history of city planning in America.

There is a general recognition of the fact that the irregularity of village streets, where this is of a picturesque character, should be preserved. A too great regularity, amounting to rigidity, in the alignment of the houses and in the direction and limits of village streets is calculated to destroy much of the peculiar charm of an old village. Naturally, as a community grows, the necessities of traffic must be more and more considered, and in a city this becomes the principal consideration, although even here it should not be made the exclusive one.

A committee is about to be formed in Belgium to propagate the idea of garden cities in that country, especially in the environs of Brussels. The leading object of this propaganda is to emphasize the fact that the needs of the great modern city can be best provided for by increasing the building area, rather than by the erection of high buildings upon a comparatively limited area.

There is no doubt that the splendid landscape architecture shown at the World's Columbian Exposition was a potent factor in the movement for the preservation and development of scenic beauty. When a community takes upon itself the preservation of the natural beauties that are within a district and develops them to their fullest extent, and also preserves and erects civic buildings and church structures that are at once artistic and dignified, connecting these by a system of parkways, it is doing much to increase a love of home and to add to the value of the property in the vicinity.

The activities of a large number of our eminent sculptors have been engaged upon monuments to soldiers. Statues to heroes of the past are everywhere seen, and these have often been suggested by a local tradition connected with a bit of beautiful scenery, or by the erection of a tablet leading as a natural result to the setting up of a monument. It is this placing of artistic memorials of certain periods in a beautiful natural setting, and one historically connected with the events or persons immortalized by the monuments, that furnishes us with the beauty spots for which Europe is so famous.

The rapid progress made by this kind of work is revealed by the existence of park systems which in another generation it would have been impossible to bring about. In the formation of the newer cities one may look for more such improvements than are possible in the older cities of the country, like New York, from which every scenic landmark below Fifty-ninth street has been eradicated because the surveyor who outlined the city laid it off in squares; indeed, if Broadway had not been laid out diagonally there would have been no cross section streets, and hence even less opportunity for the embellishment of this city than now exists.

The introduction of the statues of notable men in our parks and other scenic localities has done much to add to their beauty and historic interest. There seems to be a greater tendency than ever before to honor those who have gone before, and the better sculptors are more than busy with orders for many years to come.

While not directly concerning historic or scenic preservation, the movement to enhance the beauties of a city by the erection of fine and monumental public buildings and by the laying-out of broad avenues with imposing vistas must necessarily interest all those who have a love for beautiful things or places. In most cases, however, the economic requirements in our older cities render it extremely difficult to so modify the form they have taken as to make it conform to high artistic standards. Above all, it is difficult to satisfy at the same time the requirements of the population as to light and air, and to avoid the crowding together of dwellings that is almost necessitated by the high value of land within the city limits. These considerations make it interesting to note the progress recently made in the founding of entirely new civic communities, in which a rational plan can be followed from the outset, as in the so-called "garden cities," some score of which are now in process of realization in England, while several have been started in other countries.

As we know only too well, the majority of the new cities that have been laid out in our country have been established to favor speculative investment, and hence have generally failed to show any notable improvement over the willful system of growth that has built up the older cities. In view of this fact, those who have influenced the development of England's garden cities such as

Hampstead, Letchworth, etc., have sought to eliminate the speculative element as far as possible. To this end large tracts of land have been acquired by a corporation called the Copartnership Tenants Society, Ltd. This society lays out a city upon its land according to a certain definite plan, determining the sites to be occupied by the various public buildings, and also the parks and public spaces. Streets are opened; sewers, as well as water and gas mains are laid, etc. When the ground plan of the city is thus practically complete, the whole property is rented for a long term to a Tenants Society, Ltd., which undertakes the construction of all the buildings, public and private. Membership in this latter society is secured by the purchase of shares to the value of ten pounds, half of which sum is payable immediately and the other half in several installments. The society erects dwellings for its members, who are privileged to choose one out of a number of designs, and pay a rental equivalent to that commanded by a similar house in a town of like size. These rentals are applied to the payment of the various interest charges assumed by the society and to the maintenance of the city; any balance left over is credited to the members in the proportion of their rentals.

The great drawback of this system in our eyes is the fact that individual ownership of house and land is impossible. In England this is not so much felt, since the people are more accustomed to the idea of living as permanent tenants; moreover, if some such plan were not followed, the homogeneousness of the settlement would soon be destroyed, as it would be difficult to restrict the action of owners in the same measure as that of tenants can be restricted.

The elaboration of a well co-ordinated plan for a park system is of high value even when the plan cannot be carried out immediately, or even for a long period of time. The most important advantage of a systematic plan is that the successive improvements will be made in conformity with it, and will thus steadily tend toward its ultimate realization, while, in the absence of such an ideal plan, parks, parkways, and boulevards will be laid out more or less at random, and can never be combined into a harmonious whole. Naturally, every such park system must be made to accord with the special and actual needs of each given

city, and to the conditions imposed by the city's geographical position and by the form it has taken in the process of natural growth.

In the following pages will be given some of the more striking examples of the successful realization of a rational park system, and a few notices illustrating the success of more modest efforts in some of the smaller communities. The movement is now so widespread that every year brings forth new plans, or the extension of improvements already executed. The general progress in this direction was probably largely due to the initiative of Boston, while it is to the grand object lessons of the Chicago Exposition of 1895 that we must attribute the development of interest in city planning, in the establishment of noble and dignified civic centres. Each of these tendencies acts and reacts upon the other, as they have a common inspiration in the ardent desire to make the city itself as well as its surroundings conform to an ideal of beauty.

Harvard University has a large collection of books and other publications on the subject of landscape architecture, and this collection, with that in the Boston Public Library, contributes the best aggregation of such material anywhere to be found. It is only surpassed in the special line of reports of the various park commissions, by the very complete collection of these official documents in the library of Mr. G. A. Parker, of Hartford, Conn., and in the library of Messrs. Olmsted Brothers. This firm has created many park systems, large and small, the beauty of which is due to the taste and skill of Frederick Law Olmsted and his associates. Some idea of their extensive activities may be gained from the statement that this firm has been connected with nearly 350 park improvements in seventy-three cities.

The following notes on American city parks are arranged in the alphabetical order, first of the states, and second of the minor municipal divisions.

California — Los Angeles.

Los Angeles, California, has a most efficient Municipal Art Commission, composed of three men and two women, and which has done excellent work in arousing public interest in civic im-

provement. A number of plans to this end, prepared by Charles Mulford Robinson, have received the approval both of the Commission and of the City Council; as yet, however, no appropriation has been secured to carry on the work.

California — San Francisco.

The founders of the Pueblo of San Francisco (its original name) fully realized the importance of providing a park area for the city, and four square leagues of land in the peninsula were reserved for this purpose. However, many years elapsed before the plan of laying out a large public park was agitated. In 1864 interest was aroused in the matter and the site eventually chosen was on land lying between Stanyan street on the east and the Pacific ocean on the west, for, apart from its other advantages, it appeared that the land held in this region by various owners under titles of rather doubtful validity could be most easily acquired by the city. Negotiations were soon opened and, in 1868, the city, by engaging to give an absolute title for the remainder of the holdings, secured 1,013 acres for a public park at a cost of \$800,000. In this way was constituted Golden Gate Park, with its wonderful views of land and sea. Very attractive features of the park are the beautiful Huntington Falls, a picturesque chain of lakes, and Spreckels Temple of Music. Since 1870 the city has expended \$6,000,000 on this park.

The Great Highway, or Ocean Boulevard, comprises a strip of land about three miles long on the Pacific; nearly in the middle are the Seal Rocks granted by act of Congress, February 23, 1887, to the city and county of San Francisco. On April 4 of the same year the Board of Supervisors entrusted the Park Commissioners with the care of this re-creation. The Great Highway is to be made of uniform width by the construction of concrete piers, over which will extend an Italian balustrade of beautiful design.

To connect Golden Gate Park with the picturesque national reservation known as the Presidio, a broad highway has been laid out, about twenty-five acres of land having been secured for this purpose at a cost of \$300,000; the length of the boulevard is about one mile, the main driveway being fifty feet wide, with twenty-

five feet of grassy slope and pathway on either side. Smaller parks are the city cemetery of 150 acres, known as Lincoln Park; Buena Vista Park, covering thirty-six acres; Mission Park with an area of fourteen acres, etc.*

California — General.

Much has been accomplished by the Landmarks Club, organized in 1895, which devotes its attention to the marking and preservation of the old missions and other buildings and sites in southern California associated with the earlier history of this region. The San Antonio de Padua Mission, with its beautiful adobe arch, an exceedingly fine and characteristic specimen of this type of structure, has been placed under the care of the Landmarks Club. The mission was founded about 1770.

District of Columbia.

Washington, acknowledged to be our best planned city, has already a large park area, and this is to be extended and completed by the addition of several new parks and numerous parkways. Potomac Park, in connection with the spacious Mall extending from the Capitol to the rear of the White House, and constituting one of the beauties of Washington, represents almost entirely land reclaimed from the Potomac flats, which were in past years a menace to the public health. Other extensive park reservations are Rock Creek Park and the Zoological Gardens, in the northern part of the city, the Arlington Reservation on the Potomac, opposite Potomac Park, and the beautiful grounds about the Soldiers' Home. Numerous small squares at the intersection of streets and avenues, embellished with statues of distinguished Americans, serve to round out the park system. By the projected reclamation of the malarial Anacosta flats, by damming the river below the flats, a very considerable area for park purposes will be secured in the eastern part of the city. It is planned that the park to be established here shall extend to the Great Falls of the Potomac. When all the proposed improvements are completed, the total area of Washington's parks will be 8,000 acres in extent,

* Fortieth annual report of the Board of Park Commissioners of San Francisco, for the year ending June 30, 1910.

and they will be linked together by parkways and boulevards sixty-five miles in length.

In 1901, largely through the efforts of Senator McMillan, a commission was appointed to study the question of park extension and the best means of carrying out and perfecting the original plan of the city in accord with the needs and requirements of to-day. This commission was composed of Charles F. McKim, the celebrated architect; D. H. Burnham, an authority on city planning; our great sculptor, Augustus St. Gaudens, and the well-known landscape artist, F. L. Olmsted. The report of the commission, rendered June 15, 1902, has been made the basis of the various plans for the embellishment of Washington elaborated since that time. The chief aim was to properly co-ordinate the details of Washington's development so as to make them conform to the beautiful original plan of the city.*

One of the most striking features proposed is the creation of two magnificent vistas, one stretching from the Capitol to the proposed Lincoln Memorial, and the other from the White House to the monument erected in honor of the makers of the constitution. The lofty Washington monument and the Monument Gardens are situated at the intersection of these two vistas. We earnestly hope that the site chosen for the Lincoln Memorial by the commission will be that eventually selected; certainly no more appropriate site for a Lincoln Memorial can be conceived than on the banks of the Potomac, a river occupying a place as a boundary line in the Civil War, recalling that taken by the Rhine in the struggles of the Teutons and the Gauls. (Plates 29 and 30.)

Illinois — Chicago.

In Chicago, as early as 1869, a beginning was made in the establishment of a chain of parks along the shores of Lake Michigan, and by 1880 the area of these parks amounted to 2,000 acres. However, the rapidly increasing population of this the second city of the New World soon found this area entirely inadequate, and in 1903 a special commission was appointed and was authorized to expend \$6,500,000 for a new and greatly enlarged park

* See "The Development of Washington," address by Glenn Brown, Washington, D. C.

system. The plan carried out by the commission provides for the laying out of a number of parks ranging in area from five to 300 acres; besides this, considerable additions were made to several of the older parks, more especially to Grant Park and Lincoln Park. The various recreation centres are connected by forty-nine miles of boulevard. The total park area of the city, 3,169 acres divided among eighty-four parks, is not large for a city of Chicago's size, and a very comprehensive extension of the system is contemplated.

A much more ambitious plan that has been proposed provides for a park of 7,000 acres in the north, in a picturesque region along the Chicago river overlooking Lake Michigan, and also for another large park covering 8,800 acres along the valley of the Desplaines river. Various extensions and boulevards are to connect this latter reservation with a preserve about Lake Calumet and with a large and beautifully-wooded park in the Palos division, in the southern part of the region; this will provide a continuous driveway of twenty-five miles along the picturesque valley of the Desplaines river. The whole scheme embraces eighty-four new parks, distributed over a wide area, and covering 37,000 acres, and it is estimated that the cost would be about \$25,000,000. Large as this sum may seem, a city like Chicago can make no better investment in view of the requirements of the enormous population that will eventually be settled within its limits; and the rapid appreciation of real estate, even in the outlying parts of a great city, makes it imperative to secure the land needed for park purposes at the earliest possible date.

Many interesting and valuable details of the development and uses of Chicago's park system are given in recent reports of the South Park commissioners. As a result of careful comparison with European parks, the commissioners state that in the south parks of Chicago a larger portion of the park area is available for public uses than in any other of the parks they have examined. Above all is this true regarding the spaces devoted to recreation, this feature having been the object of special care. In eleven of the parks outdoor gymnasiums are maintained, there being three separate and distinct gymnasiums and playgrounds in each of the parks. One of these recreation centres is exclusively devoted to

the use of boys and girls under ten years of age, another to that of boys over ten years of age, and the third to that of girls more than ten years old. For six months, the period during which the outdoor gymnasiums are open, the total attendance for the year ending February 28, 1910, was 1,943,228. In each of these playgrounds are two trained instructors, one man and one woman, to supervise the children while at play. Organized games are carried on under proper rules, and tournaments and leagues are encouraged, but ample provision is made for informal play. Besides the playground facilities, the south parks are provided with swimming pools, club houses, assembly halls, and reading rooms, all of which are used by many thousands of the citizens in the course of the year.

The chief aim of the organizers of Chicago's playgrounds has been to favor general exercise as much as possible, specialization not being unduly encouraged. The playgrounds are kept open until 10 p. m. so as to meet the needs of boys and girls employed during the day, and a large number avail themselves of the opportunities for exercise in the fresh air thus afforded them. From October to April of each year twenty indoor gymnasiums are open, ten for men and boys and ten for women and girls, and these buildings are used as play rooms, during May and June, on days when the weather is too inclement for outdoor exercise. Here is given instruction in marching, calisthenics, apparatus work, games and dancing, and in the case of the older boys and girls, this instruction is specialized in accord with the needs and aptitudes of the two sexes. An interesting use has been recently made of one of the assembly rooms. After consulting with a number of leading citizens, including Protestant and Catholic clergymen, the directors decided to institute a series of "Pleasant Sunday Afternoons" in the building, the entertainment consisting of a concert given by amateur musicians, followed by addresses on timely topics by good speakers. The great benefit to the health and morals of a community that results from systematic work of this kind so successfully carried on in Chicago must be apparent to all, and should induce other communities to develop and enlarge the existing facilities in this direction.

The area of the south parks is given as follows:

Jackson Park	542.89	acres
Washington Park	371.00	"
Marquette Park	322.68	"
Grant Park	205.14	"
Midway Plaisance	80.00	"
McKinley Park	74.88	"
Sherman Park	60.60	"
Ogden Park	60.54	"
Palmer Park	40.48	"
Calumet Park	66.19	"
Hamilton Park	29.95	"
Bessemer Park	22.88	"
Gage Park	20.00	"
Mark White Square	10.00	"
Armour Square	10.00	"
Cornell Square	10.00	"
Davis Square	10.00	"
No. 4 Square	10.00	"
Russell Square	11.47	"
Hardin Square	7.41	"
No. 15 Park	19.16	"
No. 16 Park	18.52	"
No. 17 Park	20.00	"
No. 18 Park	20.19	"
		<hr/>
Total	2,043.98	acres
		<hr/>

The cost of park land up to February 28, 1910, was \$6,070,-311.52, and the sum of \$12,179,272.11 had been expended up to that date for improvements, making a total expense of \$18,249,-583.63 for the entire park system, including boulevards and squares. The total maintenance charge for the year ending February 28, 1910, was \$1,036,920.77.

Illinois — General.

The Illinois Park Commission is reported to be engaged in investigating several propositions for extensive State reservations. Those most likely to secure favorable action concern the reservation of Starved Rock and Monk's Mound, the former tract containing much that is valuable for the geologist and the botanist

while Monk's Mound recommends itself by its historic and archaeological interest. Should but one of these tracts be selected, the choice will probably fall on Starved Rock, because of its accessibility and general fitness for the purposes of a State reservation.

Indiana — Indianapolis.

To facilitate the evolution of the park system of Indianapolis, a law was passed March 5, 1909, providing that the city should be divided into park districts, within whose boundaries assessments were to be levied for the parks in the respective districts. This policy had already been followed in Kansas City and elsewhere. The total amount of these assessments may not exceed \$1,250,000 in a period of ten years, and \$200,000 is the limit set for a single year. An important improvement recently undertaken is the construction of a roadway embankment along the north and west bank of Fall Creek, from Northwestern avenue to Twenty-third street. (Plate 31.) The value of this improvement is apparent to those who can compare former with present conditions along its course. Toward the close of 1909, a public-spirited citizen of Indianapolis, Mr. William Watson Woollen, gave to the city his equity in a tract of forty-four acres, known as Buzzard's Roost, on the south side of Fall Creek, some five miles northeast of the city. This is a fine tract of forest land, and when proper approaches have been realized, it will form an important element of the park system. Indianapolis has had the advantage of Mr. George E. Kessler's counsel in the development of its park area.*

Louisiana — New Orleans.

In New Orleans there is a Central Commission of Parks and Avenues, whose activities have been directed toward the construction of a parkway between Audubon Park and City Park, the two main recreation centers of the city, as well as toward the perfecting and executing of a comprehensive plan for a system of boulevards traversing the city in various directions. As the financial resources of New Orleans are limited, improvements of this kind will require considerable time for their successful accomplishment. Indeed, the expense of maintaining several of the best avenues now

* Fifteenth annual report of the Board of Park Commissioners, Indianapolis, 1909.

existing has been covered by subscriptions from public-spirited citizens. However, there is now every prospect that in the unoccupied northern part of the city a number of parks, playgrounds, etc., will be laid out.

Maryland — Baltimore.

Baltimore already has 1,447 acres of park lands, the beauties of Druid Hill Park having long been familiar to all those who have visited the Monumental City. Many small recreation spaces are to be added and wide parkways having a total length of fifty-six miles are projected. Besides this, very considerable reservations are proposed, embracing a large land and water area, and thus affording a wide diversity of landscape effects. The largest of these reservations covers 2,400 acres of land and 2,620 acres of water, and the total would exceed 8,000 acres of land and water area. The cost of acquiring and laying out these extensive tracts is estimated at \$3,500,000. In this way the natural beauties of Jones' Falls creek, Bay river, the Patapsco river, Gwynn's Falls, etc., will be utilized and large and attractive pleasure-grounds within easy reach of all parts of the city will be provided.

Massachusetts — Boston.

Although Boston long neglected to utilize her opportunities for park improvements, an important chain of park reservations now exists along the banks of the Charles, Mystic and Neponset rivers. This is more immediately due to the efforts of Charles Eliot, but much of the inspiration that led to success must be attributed to the enthusiastic initiative of Sylvester Baxter. A most fitting memorial in his honor is the Stone Bridge in Blue Hills reservation. These new parks are so well planned and disposed that Boston may now be said to have a most adequate and satisfactory park system; indeed, in this latter respect this city was the first to attain thoroughly satisfactory results.

The amount of land devoted to park purposes within a radius of eleven miles from Boston State House is about 15,000 acres. This is for the territory of "Greater Boston," with a population of 1,200,000. The total cost of Boston's extensive park system is said to be more than \$14,000,000, which includes \$3,000,000 appropriated for this purpose by the Massachusetts Legislature,

the remainder having been raised by the municipalities and expended by the Metropolitan Park Commission.

Boston's largest park, the Blue Hills Reservation, which comprises 4,906 acres, is distant eleven miles from the centre of the city. Among the more recent additions may be noted the extension of the Charles River Reservation, so that it will extend along the southern bank of the river up to Charlestown playground, and the connection of the northern and southern portions of the park system by the acquisition of a strip of land through Cambridge and Somerville up to Harvard bridge. As many buildings already erected on the land comprised in this latter improvement must be purchased and removed, the outlay will be considerably greater than in the case of unimproved park lands. (See Plate 32.)

The fifteen municipal playgrounds of Boston are not especially assigned to the schools of the city, but are open to all the city children, and they are so well distributed that no child need go more than a half-mile to reach a well-appointed playground. They are all under the control of the Department of Parks.*

The metropolitan park system of Boston and the surrounding communities covers an area divided as follows among the various parks and reservations:

Blue Hills	4,906.43	acres
Middlesex Falls	1,898.09	"
Stony Brook	463.72	"
Beaver Brook	58.33	"
Hart's Hill	22.97	"
Hancock's Gorge	23.06	"
Charles River	673.76	"
Mystic River	291.57	"
Neponset River	921.95	"
King's Beach and Lynn Shore	22.89	"
Revere Beach	67.40	"
Winthrop Shore	16.83	"
Quincy Shore	38.02	"
Nantasket Beach	25.59	"

Total 9,430.61 acres

* John Woodbury, Secretary, Metropolitan Park Commission, 14 Beaver street, Boston, Mass.

Adding to this the area of thirty-one miles of parkways, 864.16 acres, we have a grand total of 10,294.77 acres embraced within the Boston park system.

The Metropolitan Park System of Boston received an important addition by the transfer to the care and control of the board, on July 1, 1910, of the Charles river basin, pursuant to chapter 524 of the acts of 1909. The very extensive work on the basin, which was practically completed when transferred to the Board, had cost \$3,992,552.71. The water area amounts to 800 acres and there is a newly created land area of thirty-five acres, the whole improvement having a shore front of eighteen miles. The effective development of the basin for aquatic sports and recreations has been delayed temporarily, owing to certain legal complications due to some subsisting private rights, but eventually this will constitute one of the most attractive recreation areas around Boston.*

Massachusetts — General.

While in our larger cities most of the buildings erected in colonial times have disappeared to make way for modern structures, many such buildings still exist, especially in the smaller cities, and in towns and villages. Massachusetts is especially rich in these mementoes of the past, many of which, because of historic associations, are well worthy of being regarded as national monuments. A few of the more prominent may be mentioned here.

In Cambridge we have the Austin House erected in 1657, and the Lee House built in 1660; to these must be added two buildings dear to all lovers of American literature, the Craigue or Longfellow House (1759), with a small park that borders on the Charles River Reservation, and the James Russell Lowell House (1760), on the boundary of Lowell Memorial Park.

In Dorchester, Mass., may be seen the Blake House of 1640, now a museum, and two older buildings, the Pierce House (1635) and the Bernard Capen House (1632).

At Hingham, Mass., we have "The Old Ship," erected in 1681 and said to be the oldest church in America, but this claim is probably subject to qualification.

* Report of Metropolitan Park Commission, 1910, Boston, 1911, pp. 7-10; 21, 22, etc.

The Vose House, "The Birthplace of American Liberty," is situated in Malden, Mass.

Marblehead, Mass., has in the Lee Mansion, built in 1768, what is regarded by many architects as a typical building of its kind, and it has been frequently copied. Its staircase is much admired, and the house retains the original glass and wall paper. The Historical Society now occupies it.

In Marshfield is the Gov. Winslow House (1650), around which so many historic memories cluster, and, of a later date, 1774, the Daniel Webster residence, which evokes the memory of one of our greatest statesmen and orators.

In Medford, Mass., is a brick building, dating from 1634 and known as the Craddock House. This was long believed to be the oldest brick building in America. Here is also the Isaac Royall House, now open to visitors, and considered one of the most striking specimens of colonial architecture.

Most of the buildings we have named are privately owned, but in some instances the municipality has acquired ownership. However, when this is not the case, the owners are usually appreciative of the historic value of their property, and while keeping the houses in good repair carefully avoid making any changes or alterations.

In many of the small Massachusetts towns very excellent results have been attained in laying out parks. In North Bridgton, a roadside public garden has been laid out at the expense of two public-spirited citizens, Curtis A. Perry and Charles Fox. Some of the attractive effects secured here were suggested by features of Japanese gardening, as is shown in the successful and artistic blending of the foliage and flowers of different plants, and in the grouping and arrangement of stones of various types.

Minnesota — St. Paul and Minneapolis.

A chain of parks and connecting boulevards on both sides of the Mississippi has been planned and to a great extent completed by the municipalities of St. Paul and Minneapolis. The Park Commissions of these two municipalities have worked harmoniously together, and full advantage has been taken of the possibilities for varied natural effects afforded by the winding river and by various

small lakes. There are well wooded reservations and park lands covering some 6,000 acres. Of the older recreation spaces Como Park has long been famous for its lily pond and for its Japanese garden, and the tranquil beauty of the lake scenery in Loring Park and about Lake Harriet charms the eye of every visitor. A herd of elk quartered in one of the reservations serves to revive the memory of by-gone times, before the advance of civilization had almost banished the primitive denizens of wood and field. The striking beauties of Minnehaha Falls, the bold outline of Fort Snelling, with its round tower built in 1820, and the splendid St. Anthony's Falls, combine to enhance the charm of this park system, destined to be one of the most satisfactory so far realized in our country.

(See also reference to Minnehaha Falls in the body of this report, page 165.)

Missouri — Kansas City.

The first efforts to provide a park system for Kansas City date from 1892, in which year Mayor Benjamin Holmes appointed a Board of Park and Boulevard Commissioners, the President of the Commission being Mr. August R. Meyer. In 1895, the title of the commission was changed to Board of Park Commissioners. To insure a proper distribution of the parks, the city was at first divided into three districts, and later into five districts.

At the outset the Commission had to solve a difficult problem, as the debt limit of the city had been reached, and it was not considered expedient or even practicable to add heavy charges to the tax levy. In view of this, the Commissioners decided to acquire the property needed for park purposes by the institution of condemnation proceedings, and to assess the cost of the property upon the contiguous land, which would more directly benefit by the improvement. This policy appears to have been carried out wisely and moderately, and with the very best results. In order to render the assessment less onerous, provision was made that it could be paid in installments extending over a period of twenty years, the owners of the land having, however, the privilege of paying the whole sum within sixty days after the value of the park property had been determined by a jury, should he wish to do so in order to relieve his land of the lien.

The entire expense incurred in laying out boulevards running to, or connecting, the various parks was immediately assessed upon the abutting land. Experience has shown that in Kansas City the land along the boulevards rapidly augmented in value, so that the assessment charge was made good many times over; but in the case of the land surrounding the parks the increase of value has been comparatively slow so far. (See Plates 33 and 34.)

The park system of Kansas City is regarded as more perfect than that of any other western city. It is due to the plans of the landscape artist, George E. Kessler, and embraces a number of larger and smaller parks skillfully combined, and connected by many miles of fine boulevards. The entrances to the different parks are highly artistic, and numerous beautiful bridges serve to embellish them. Within their limits are many spacious play grounds and pretty gardens. The Paseo, a broad avenue that traverses a portion of this park region, runs through what was once a slum district, and represents the transformation of a most unattractive part of the city into a splendid boulevard. The example given by William R. Nelson's home with its expensive grounds is said to have contributed much to awaken public interest in the improvements and embellishments that have been realized in Kansas City.*

Roanoke Park, one of the most attractive recreation centres of Kansas City's park system, was donated to the city by a number of citizens, who were moved to this action by the Park Commissioners' successful work in Penn Valley Park, and this proves that much can be expected from the independent action of citizens, when they are once made to see the advantages of fine parks and drives. There is rarely a lack of interest in this matter, but public spirit, in this as in many other directions, needs to be aroused and shown the proper way of manifesting itself.

Up to the year 1909, Kansas City had expended for its parks and boulevards nearly \$10,000,000; but, entirely apart from the advantages resulting to all the citizens from the parks and drives, the increased value of the land along the boulevards is estimated to exceed the total cost of the improvements. Another excellent result has been that the congestion of population in certain limited

* See annual reports of Kansas City Park Commissioners for 1906-1910.

areas has been checked, as the new parks and boulevards have encouraged building operations over a wide area, so that the population of Kansas City can be said to be better distributed than that of any other American city of the same size.

The acreage of the park system of Kansas City is distributed as follows:

Swope Park	1,354.00	acres
North Terrace Park	235.97	"
Penn Valley Park	134.30	"
Gillham Road	119.45	"
The Paseo	54.24	"
Roanoke Park	29.00	"
West Terrace Park	28.62	"
Spring Valley Park	27.30	"
Budd Park	25.95	"
The Parade	20.99	"
Minor Parks and boulevards	25.41	"
		<hr/>
Total	2,055.23	acres
		<hr/> <hr/>

The total length of boulevards and parkways is 23.82 miles.

No better object lesson illustrating the splendid results of the intelligent utilization of natural conditions can be found than is offered by Kersey Coates Terrace, where a bold and rugged, but unlovely natural aspect, rendered still more unpicturesque by ugly buildings, has been transformed into an object of striking beauty. This is well shown by three views, one representing the appearance of the terrace before any improvements were undertaken, the second showing its improved state, when a certain amount of work had been done, and the last giving its present appearance.*

Missouri — St Joseph.

The Park Commissioners of St. Joseph, Mo., report that there are already twelve parks in that city, all the land having been donated to the municipality. Some \$300,000 has been expended in laying out parks, and in each case the work has required about one year for its completion. Some of these parks have been only recently completed while others date back forty years.

* Figures in annual report of 1907, page 13.

Missouri — St. Louis.

The parks of St. Louis now cover 2,183 acres, and it is proposed to greatly extend the Kings Highway and to widen it, making it a connection between Carondelet, Forest and O'Fallon parks. The total length of the driveway, including park spaces and connecting boulevards, will be about twenty-five miles, and it will range in width from 100 to 300 feet. The sum of \$2,000,000 would have to be expended to realize this improvement.

In many other cities notable progress has been made in city planning, but St. Louis is notable on account of the splendid civic centre which is to be provided by opening a parkway between Thirteenth and Fourteenth streets, extending from Olive street to Clark avenue. At one end of the parkway or plaza stands the City Hall; and other public buildings, such as the Public Library, the Four Courts Building, etc., are to occupy sites facing upon it. This improvement when completed, will provide a civic centre of which St. Louis may justly be proud.

In the annual report of the Park Department for the year ending April 11, 1910, the areas of the chief parks of St. Louis are given as follows:

Forest Park	1380 acres
Carondelet Park	180 "
Tower Grove Park	267 "
O'Fallon Park	158 "
Fairground	129 "
Lafayette Park	30 "

There are also many small local parks and playgrounds — the latter a special feature of St. Louis' park system — and many public and private parkways. Mr. George E. Kessler reports that in Fairground, St. Louis has one of the best of the great playgrounds in the country.

Montana — Great Falls.

As an illustration of the good work done in many of our north-western cities, we may cite the results attained in Great Falls, Montana. Here some 600 acres of land have been secured for park purposes, and about 200 acres for parkways, one-half having been acquired by purchase, while the other half represents a gift from the Great Falls Townsite Company. The park land already

from the Great Falls Townsite Company. The park land already improved covers about seventy-five acres, and work is in satisfactory progress over the rest of the area, under the supervision of Mr. Terrell B. Hoyt, a landscape architect of Minneapolis. The sum now annually available for this purpose is \$16,000, the product of a two mill tax on the assessed valuation of real estate within the city limits, and it is confidently expected that the increase of values will double this sum within three years. The park system is under the control of a Park Board composed of the Mayor of the city and six members appointed by the Governor of the State.

Nebraska — Omaha.

The distribution and connection of Omaha's parks differ somewhat from the usual rule, as the parks themselves and their connecting boulevards, fifteen miles in length and from 150 to 200 feet wide, intersect the city instead of surrounding it. This serves to relieve the monotony of the rigidly rectangular plan upon which the streets have been laid out, and in Omaha's case there is reason to believe that the best results have been secured by a departure from the general rule. Central Park, New York, affords an illustration of the same principle. However, Omaha will eventually have a number of outlying parks also.

New Jersey — Essex County.

What may almost be looked upon as an extension of the park system of New York city, is the complex series of parks recently established in Essex county, New Jersey, by the citizens of Newark and of the Oranges, a large part of whom have their business interests in New York. The work has nearly all been done since 1894, at which date there were only twenty-six acres of park land in Essex county. Since then \$5,000,000 has been raised for the acquisition of park lands and the laying out of parks, and the area now devoted to this purpose is about 3,500 acres. Eventually there will be connecting boulevards of which some three miles have been already constructed. The eminently successful results here attained demonstrate the advantages of concerted action on the part of cities within a short distance of one another, as the development of trolley lines renders it in most cases an easy matter to so locate a large park that it may be almost equally accessible for the citizens of a number of small cities.

New Jersey — Montclair.

Montclair, New Jersey, is eminently fortunate in its beautiful location, affording a wide and extensive view over New York city and the surrounding territory. Thus, much has already been done by nature, but this should only serve to stimulate the efforts of those who realize the aesthetic and even the practical value of beautiful surroundings. This spirit has evidently been awakened in Montclair, for the Municipal Art Commission has secured a report from Mr. John Nolen and is about to realize the suggestions contained therein. This will undoubtedly increase the attractiveness of this beautiful suburban town.

New York — Buffalo.

The municipality of Buffalo has not failed to make a good use of the natural advantages of their city, and Delaware, Humboldt, Columbian, Casanovia and South Parks, as well as the beautifully situated park known as "The Front," together with a number of squares and small circular parks at street crossings, combine to make Buffalo one of our most attractive cities. The total park area is 1,049 acres. Several broad, handsome parkways, such as Scajaquada Parkway, Lincoln Parkway, Hamilton Parkway, etc., serve to link the various parks together and add greatly to the beauty of Buffalo.

New York — Jamestown.

In Jamestown, N. Y., an excellent beginning has been made in the establishment of a park system. Allen Park, with its picturesque glen, is a very attractive recreation ground covering thirty acres, and Jones Memorial Park, comprising fifty-six acres, is also a favorite resort for the citizens. Smaller parks are Barnes Park and Dow Park, the latter named after our fellow Trustee, Hon. Charles M. Dow, to whose earnest efforts Jamestown is largely indebted for its park system. The land included in these reservations has been generously donated to the city by public spirited citizens, and the results so far accomplished in Jamestown are especially noteworthy in view of the very small sum of money expended for this purpose. (See Plate 35.)

New York — New York City.

For the general system of administering the parks of New York city, see page 76 preceding. For the history of Central Park see page 379.

The area of the principal parks in the five boroughs constituting Greater New York is given as follows in the annual report of the Department of Parks for 1908:

Borough of Manhattan.

	Acres.
Central Park	843.02
Riverside Park	140.04
Extension of Riverside Park to Hudson River.....	48.21
High Bridge Park	73.25
Fort Washington Park	40.81
Morningside Park	31.24
St. Nicholas Park	26.60
Battery Park	21.20
Mount Morris Park	20.17
Manhattan Square	17.58
Thomas Jefferson Park	15.53
Colonial Park	12.79
Tompkins Square	10.51
City Hall Park	8.24
Washington Square	8.11
Madison Square	6.84
Union Square	3.48

Borough of Brooklyn.

Prospect Park	526.00
Dyker Beach Park	140.00
Concourse and Seaside Park, at Coney Island.....	70.00
Institute Park	69.00
Highland Park and addition	60.00
Greenpoint Park	43.00
Parade Ground	40.00
Canarsie Beach Park	30.50
Sunset Park and addition	24.50
Bensonhurst Park	13.00

Borough of The Bronx.

Pelham Bay Park	1,756.00
Van Cortlandt Park	1,132.35
Bronx Park	719.12
Crotona Park	154.60
Claremont Park	38.00
Macomb's Dam Park	27.00
Franz Sigel Park	17.47
St. James Park	11.83

Borough of Queens.

Forest Park	526.00
Kissena Park	65.00
King's Park	11.50

Borough of Richmond.

Silver Lake Park	57.90
------------------------	-------

The total park area of the five boroughs, and the valuation of the park lands are given as follows:

	Aces.	Valuation.
Borough of Manhattan	1,453.01	\$405,862,600
Borough of Brooklyn	1,152.65	51,051,848
Borough of The Bronx	3,931.64	30,350,155
Borough of Queens	622.30	2,494,800
Borough of Richmond	63.56	229,625
Total	7,223.16	\$489,989,028

To this may be added more than fifty-two miles of parkways in the five boroughs, the area of which is valued at \$11,600,160, making a grand total of \$501,589,188. Almost half of this sum (\$236,500,000) represents the estimated worth of the 843 acres of Central Park.

It has long been realized that the surface tracks of the New York Central Railroad which run along the east bank of the Hudson from the northern part of Manhattan Island down to within a mile of its lower end, while constituting a menace to life and limb, and a great detriment to the beauty of Riverside Park, are yet entirely inadequate to handle satisfactorily any consider-

able commercial traffic. The proposition urged by Dock Commissioner Tomkins and Park Commissioner Stover provides for the building of a riprap wall about 200 feet beyond the present shore line, from Eighty-first street to One Hundred and Twenty-ninth street, and the filling up of the intervening space. This would give room for a number of auxiliary freight tracks, a driveway, etc.; a wide platform for the unloading of freight would run along the new river front. Over the whole area an immense steel and concrete roof would be erected, with openings for light and air at suitable places, and on the top of this roof would be laid a layer of soil deep enough to afford sustenance for grass, shrubbery, etc.

This would, of course, constitute a valuable addition to the somewhat restricted area of Riverside Park, as one side of the roof would rest upon the soil of the park, which would thus continue uninterruptedly across this enormous "roof garden." However, this apparent gain would be secured by sacrificing this part of our water front, definitely and irretrievably, to commercial uses. The city already has two or three hundred miles of dockage, and it certainly seems that the river front from Seventy-second street to One Hundred and Thirty-fifth street might be reserved for public use, or at least be made directly accessible to the public. Already this is only practicable to a limited extent between Seventy-second street and Eight-sixth street, but any scheme for permanently withdrawing the stretch from Eighty-sixth street up from public use should be resisted. Possibly some compromise will be suggested that will reconcile the divergent views.

Nowhere in the United States is the need of suitable playgrounds for children more keenly felt than in New York city, with its dense and unevenly distributed population. Our parks do not and cannot satisfy our requirements in this respect, and the small spaces available around our public schools are entirely inadequate to meet the demands of the community. We should therefore feel entirely in sympathy with the efforts of Commissioner Stover to induce the owners of unimproved property to consent to the use of their land for this purpose. These temporary playgrounds could not, of course, be properly arranged and improved, and their existence should not be made an excuse for de-

laying the establishment of well-appointed and permanent playgrounds; but as half a loaf is better than no bread, the scheme is well worthy of a trial. It is certainly essential that the children should be kept off the streets of our busy city as much as possible, for they are always liable to be run down by street cars, automobiles or trucks, and must inevitably interfere with the movements of pedestrians; and yet exercise in the fresh air is more necessary for children, especially for those living in tenements, than for grown persons.

There is an essential distinction between parks and playgrounds. This distinction should be clearly defined. To permit five thousand girls to dance on a lawn with an audience of a hundred thousand looking on, is sure to damage that lawn so that it will take years to recover from the effects. Frequently, when musicals and dances are given on lawns these are irreparably damaged. As a writer recently remarked, to permit unrestrained hordes to go over the parks will irreparably damage them. The fact that the Hudson-Fulton celebration pier was placed at One Hundred and Tenth street, notwithstanding the protestation of several members of the Society that this point was an undesirable one, and did not afford proper accommodation for a great crowd, led to the total destruction of hundreds of shrubs and bushes.

In addition to the aesthetic and hygienic effects of parks, the benefit they bring to those who hold property in the vicinity is incalculable. It has frequently happened that enterprising real estate people in a village have placed a park in a locality otherwise undesirable, with the result that the value of the property in the vicinity increased from 200 to 500 per cent.

The welfare of the children of our cities is more and more considered by our park commissions. As, however, the beauty of our parks can only be preserved by rather strictly limiting the use of most of the open spaces, the needs of the children have been met by the establishment of a number of widely-distributed playgrounds. The progress made in this matter is shown by statistics published in the year book of the Playground Association of America, according to which 336 out of the 950 towns and cities having a population of over 5,000, maintain playgrounds of this kind. For this purpose it is estimated that the sum of \$500,000

was expended in 1909. Sometimes these playgrounds are directly supervised by the school authorities, and in other cases by a special municipal commission. It is generally acknowledged that the United States lead the other nations of the world in this particular, a fact which was emphasized in the exhibit made by Chicago at Berlin in 1910.

It is very much to be desired that the movement in favor of establishing playgrounds for children should be as widespread as possible, and this end could probably be attained most expeditiously by concerted action on the part of the numerous granges. Tracts of unimproved city land, held for the unearned increment, might well be devoted to this use by municipal enactment. These tracts could be used either for playgrounds or for trial gardens, and would serve to improve the health of the rising generation, and to disseminate practical and experimental instruction in market-gardening. There is considerable room for improvement in the methods generally followed in this branch of agriculture, and very good results would probably be achieved by the practical knowledge acquired in such trial gardens.

The love of flowers is certainly a most praiseworthy trait, but its manifestations are sometimes exceedingly unfortunate. In the spring the fields and roads are dowered by Nature with a wealth of fresh flowers, blossoms and leaves, and nowhere is this spring adornment more grateful to the eye than in the environs of large cities. Unhappily, the thousands who are able to get away from the noise and turmoil of the city are only too likely to show their appreciation of these beauties by stripping flowers and blossoms from the fields and trees. Public opinion should be educated to realize the injustice and narrow selfishness of such conduct, for the open country in its natural beauty should really be looked upon as a great public park, and the wholesale plucking of its flowers and blossoms should be thought as reprehensible as in the case of park lands especially planted and cultivated.

The Colonial Dames, as guardians of Van Cortlandt mansion in Van Cortlandt Park, New York, are now agitating for the removal of two wooden structures at the rear of the house and their replacement by a small stone addition in which a heating plant can be housed, and we earnestly trust that they will be successful

in their efforts. This historic building is protected by its isolated position in a large park from outside peril and should stand for centuries if no fire originates in the structure itself. Since the introduction of electricity, more than ever before, the necessity of having light and heat generators housed in a separate and independent building is manifest. A sad instance of the consequences of neglecting this precaution was offered by the recent disastrous fire in the State Capitol, where the loss amounted to several millions and valuable records which can never be replaced were destroyed. The writer is happy to state that in the restoration of the Philipse Manor House at Yonkers, his suggestions to this effect were heeded.

The members of the Long Island Historical Society, in co-operation with some other citizens of Brooklyn, are making efforts to have the city purchase the historic home of Lady Moody, at Gravesend, and preserve this interesting building as a public landmark; the grounds about the house could be utilized as a small park. This old house was built about 1643, its mistress having emigrated from England because of religious persecution, with her son, Sir Henry Moody, in 1640. The structure was designed to serve in case of need as a stronghold wherein the inmates would be able to defend themselves against the attacks of Indians, the walls of the first story being two feet thick, the material consisting of cobble-stones taken from the surrounding fields and cemented into a compact mass. About the great fireplaces in the main rooms may still be seen the old brass and iron tongs, pokers, etc., which were used more than two hundred years ago, and many other relics of the seventeenth century are preserved here.

Among our civic organizations working for the preservation of historic sites and for the stimulation of interest in all that tends to beautify New York city, an important place is taken by the City History Club. The 1,200 members now in its study clubs and classes are divided into forty-nine distinct groups, each in charge of a competent leader, the principal aim being "the development of a better and more intelligent citizenship by means of the study of city history and government." The necessary funds are derived from the dues of 350 supporting members, and from contributions made by a number of individual supporters,

and by certain educational societies and institutions. The various groups meet separately each week in public schools, library buildings, etc., or in private residences in New York, Brooklyn and The Bronx, and these meetings serve to further the studies of the assembled students. On certain occasions a number of groups meet together so as to keep in touch with one another. Each winter the club conducts a series of lectures on local history and government and excursions to points of historic interest give a living reality to the subjects studied. Evacuation Day exercises are held at Fort Clinton in Central Park, a spot marked by a club tablet; the cost of placing this was met by contributions given by the children. On Washington's Birthday all the groups assemble for an annual entertainment, and at the annual exhibition held in April in the home of the club, the concrete work accomplished by the students is displayed and honors are awarded. A notable event in the club year is the outing and field day, occurring on Memorial Day, and celebrated in some appropriate open space in the city. The civic pride aroused by the activities of the club leads to effective co-operation for the preservation of everything that links the present with the past, but also awakens interest in the various movements for beautifying the city by guarding its natural advantages and by embellishing and extending its recreation areas. Among the publications inspired by the club may be noted a very useful "Historical Guide to the City of New York," compiled by the Superintendent, Dr. Frank Bergen Kelly. In this 916 historic spots are listed, as well as 107 tablets, ninety-two monuments, statues, etc., and seventy-six other historic objects.

New York — Rochester.

To arouse public interest in the matter of beautifying our cities has always been one of the chief aims of our Society, and it is therefore with great pleasure that we note the practical form this interest has assumed in the city of Rochester, which enjoys many natural advantages and thus offers a most excellent field of effort. A very interesting publication embodying many valuable suggestions for the improvement of the city has just been issued in an attractive form.* This contains the report of the Rochester

* "A City Plan for Rochester," New York, 1910, 39 pp., 23 illust., and 5 maps and plans.

Civic Improvement Committee, presented by Arnold W. Brunner, Frederick Law Olmsted and Bion J. Arnold. The subject is here treated in a very convincing way, and the suggestions for special improvements are often made more telling by views showing how similar conditions have been utilized in various foreign cities.

The proper treatment of the Erie canal bed, soon to be abandoned in favor of the new barge canal, is a very important problem, as the old canal traverses the heart of the city. The proposition to cover it over and thus make a new main thoroughfare seems a most happy solution. That part of Main street crossing the Genesee river is also much in need of some improvement that will allow a view of the river while avoiding any interference with the business activities of this thoroughfare, and the design of hiding the unsightly structures on the river south of Main street by the erection of a well-proportioned public building on the old canal aqueduct would, if properly carried out, add much to the attractiveness of the city. The writer has already called attention to the necessity for some change of this description. Many other changes of greater and less importance are made, and if the somewhat ambitious plans can be successfully executed, Rochester will take a prominent place in the rank of our most beautiful cities.

Rochester has twenty parks which are of sufficient size to be used for park purposes, and ten very much smaller ones at intersections of streets, etc.

Areas and costs are as follows:

	Gift, acres.	Purchase, acres.	Total acres.	Cost.
Genesee Valley Park	101.00	435.08	536.08	\$139,464 00
Durand-Eastman Park	484.00	.....	484.00	.....
Seneca Park	15.50	195.56	211.06	121,012 77
Maplewood Park	4.87	140.50	144.27	96,183 03
Highland Park	19.63	55.06	74.69	66,988 00
Cobb's Hill Park	15.50	.....	15.50	.....
Webster Park .....	.....	10.00	10.00	13,827 00
Carter Park .....	.....	6.84	6.84	11,000 00
Jones Park	6.72	.....	6.72	.....
Lake View Park	5.18	.....	5.18	.....
Brown's Park	4.50	.....	4.50	.....
Armory Park .....	.....	3.00	3.00	27,270 00
Pike's Park .....	.....	2.77	2.77	1,500 00
Franklin Park	1.61	.....	1.61	.....
Washington Park	1.08	.....	1.08	.....
Anderson Park .....	.....	.94	.94	21,035 73
Wadsworth Park .....	.85	.....	.85	.....

	Gift, acres.	Purchase, acres.	Total acres.	Cost.
Madison Park .....	.84	.....	.84	.....
Plymouth Park .....	.75	.....	.75	.....
Sumner Park .....	.58	.....	.58	.....
Evergreen Park .....	.39	.....	.39	.....
Burke Terrace .....	.10	.....	.10	.....
Douglas Terrace .....	.06	.....	.06	.....
Convention Hall Park .....	.....	.03	.03	\$10,000 00
Washington Playground .....	.....	.75	.75	9,800 00
			<hr/> 1,512.59	<hr/> \$518,080 83

In the early days of park making, in Rochester, the cost of permanent improvements and general maintenance was not so separated that it would be possible to give more than approximate amounts for each. Eight of the small inside parks were improved many years before the Rochester Park system was organized, and no record exists as to cost of their improvement.

The most important of the proposed improvements in Rochester is the plan for a civic centre. This involves the erection of a new City Hall on the crest of a gentle rising grade near the junction of Main street with Caledonia avenue and the old canal bed. Here it is proposed to have a large public square into which Main street will run; on the opposite side of the square the City Hall will stand, an imposing structure, surmounted by a lofty tower. Three archways in the building will give unimpeded passage to the traffic of Main street, which continues in a westerly direction on the other side. The new City Hall is to be so planned that it can be progressively accommodated to the needs of the growing city by successive additions.*

The piers of the old canal aqueduct would serve as foundation for a simple but handsome building, which, aside from its usefulness, would prove an effective screen, cutting off the view of the unsightly rears of factories, etc., on the banks of the Genesee. The arched openings of the Ponte Vecchio that traverses the Arno in Florence, are cited as suggesting what might be done to render the buildings erected over the Genesee river attractive to the eye instead of unsightly as they are at present. (See Plates 36 and 37.)

* See illustration in "A City Plan for Rochester," p. 10; also frontispiece giving view from Main street.

Ohio — Cincinnati.

Cincinnati is well known for the beauty of its surroundings, and good advantage has been taken of this circumstance by the Park Commissioners of the city. The park system originated in 1859, and has been perfected under the direction of George E. Kessler, extensive parkways having been constructed to afford easy access to the recreation spaces. At the present date there are thirty-three parks and play grounds, embracing 569.54 acres of ground. An elaborate memorial to President Lincoln, designed by George Gray Barnard, and to cost \$100,000, is to be erected in one of the parks from a fund donated by Mrs. Frederick H. Ahms and will undoubtedly constitute a great establishment.

Ohio — Cleveland.

One of the most ambitious plans for a civic centre must be credited to Cleveland. A few years ago the erection of a number of public buildings, including a City Hall, a union station, a new public library, etc., was under consideration. Many separate sites in different parts of the city were proposed, but it was finally determined that the municipality should acquire by purchase a single large site in a central location, extending back a considerable distance from the river front. On this tract, after the removal of the structures already built upon it, an extensive Mall has been laid out and the various public buildings projected have been grouped about it. The total cost of the Mall was a little less than \$3,500,000 estimated to represent less than twenty-five per cent. of the cost of the public buildings fronting upon it, and there is little doubt that the increase in the assessable value of the property over a considerable area around this improvement, will greatly exceed the amount expended for it. When completed Cleveland's civic centre will challenge comparison with those of the leading cities of the world, and her example will certainly be followed by many other American cities.

The park system of Cleveland has been so intelligently planned that the most has been made of the comparatively small area, 1,524 acres, devoted to this use. Several miles of broad parkways have been constructed, varying in width from 300 to 1,200 feet, and when all the projected parkways and boulevards shall have been

completed, the parks will be connected with one another by very attractive driveways.

Pennsylvania — Philadelphia.

While notable progress has been made in regard to city planning in Philadelphia, the Twenty-second Annual Report of the City Parks Association, dated 1910, states that, as yet, no comprehensive plan commission has been appointed. However, excellent tentative plans for Fairmount Parkway, as well as for a playground system, have been made; but until Philadelphia has a body of experts clothed with the authority granted to the commissions for improvement in Washington, Chicago, Boston, etc., little really effective work can be done. The citizens of Philadelphia fully realize that any plans now decided upon should not merely have reference to present needs, but above all to those of the future city, which will spread out many miles beyond the present limits. Therefore the plan must be adapted to the requirements of a city covering a radius of from twenty-five to thirty miles from the City Hall in every direction.

As at present designed, the Fairmount Parkway is so laid out that the axis of the driveway shall lie in a straight line extending from the tower of the City Hall to the dome of the projected Art Museum on the site of the present Fairmount Reservoir. The driveway proper is to have a width of eighty feet along its whole course from the City Hall Plaza to a plaza 400 feet by 600 feet, at the base of the reservoir. From the City Hall to Logan Square, sidewalks thirty feet wide are to be placed on either side of the driveway, while on the long stretch from Logan Square to its termination it will be flanked on either side by a planting space of forty-two feet, a service drive of twenty-eight feet, and a sidewalk of fifteen feet wide. Thus this portion of the parkway will have a total width of 250 feet, making it one of the most impressive avenues of its kind anywhere to be found. The sum of \$1,000,000 has already been placed at the command of the municipal authorities for the purchase of properties along the line of this improvement, and a number of these properties have already been acquired; others will be added as soon as additional funds become available.

Philadelphia has also earnestly taken up the task of supplying the children of the city with playgrounds, and on the recommendation of a special committee of citizens, the Mayor has appointed five prominent citizens to act in concert with him and with the Director of the Department of Public Health and Charities, and the Chief of the Bureau of City Property, in the preparation and execution of plans for playgrounds and recreation centres. The members of this committee serve without compensation and hold office, subject to the Mayor's pleasure, until the Legislature shall have constituted a special body charged with the accomplishment of this work. Several playgrounds have already been acquired, either by gift or purchase.

In Philadelphia the acreage of the various parks is given as follows:

Fairmount Park	3,448.39	acres
Pennypack Park	532.00	"
League Island Park	300.00	"
Cobb's Creek Park	288.00	"
Hunting Park	86.38	"
Busholme Park	48.14	"
Juniata Park	30.07	"
Bartram's Garden	27.08	"
Susan Gorgas Park	21.20	"
The Plaza	22.00	"
Sixty-eight smaller parks, squares, etc.	226.58	"
Total	5,029.84	acres

Rhode Island — Providence.

The park system of Providence, R. I., is like that of Boston, the work of a Metropolitan Park Commission, which acts not only for the main city, but also for those nearby towns or small cities which are in close relation to it, and may probably be consolidated with it at some future time. The Providence commission was constituted in 1904, and its plans are formed so as to take the best advantage of the inlets, rivers and lakes within the metropolitan district. The area actually improved or to be improved for parks is about 2,400 acres, and Providence can already boast of

an exceptionally fine boulevard known as Blackstone Boulevard. This has a width of 200 feet and is nearly two miles long. When the whole plan of the commission shall have been executed a continuous chain of boulevards and parkways, several of them following the line of water courses, will connect the parks.

South Carolina — Charleston.

The Old Powder Mill, dating from 1770, in Charleston, South Carolina, is now owned by the Colonial Dames. Here is also the Pringle House, 1765, regarded by many as the finest specimen of colonial architecture. Eighteen miles from the city are the Magnolia Gardens, where in the early spring there may be seen the largest and most beautiful azalea garden anywhere to be found. A memento of pre-Revolutionary times is the British coat-of-arms on the Goose Creek Church, near Charleston. This relic of monarchy must have been overlooked by the zealous patriots of South Carolina during the Revolution.

Tennessee — Memphis.

The Park Board of Memphis, Tennessee, was organized in September, 1900, and toward the close of 1901, a loan of \$250,000 was raised for park extension by mortgaging the territory of Riverside, Overton, Forrest and Astor parks which had been acquired on very liberal terms. The Legislature of 1908-9 authorized the issue of \$500,000 of four and one-quarter per cent. bonds for this work. Overton Park has two hundred acres of a splendid virgin growth of hardwood trees, and within its confines is a small patch on which cotton is cultivated; this is a great object of interest for northern visitors. Another most picturesque tract is Riverside Park, on the bluffs overlooking the Mississippi river, affording splendid views of that majestic stream. (Plate 38.) The report of the landscape architect, Mr. George E. Kessler, notes the success of the Park Commission of Memphis in extending and consolidating the park system of the city, and urges the establishment of adequate playgrounds. This might be accomplished either by increasing the area of school grounds, or by securing the use of other properties for this purpose.

As a result of the very judicious use of the resources at their disposal, the Park Commissioners now control 1,200 acres of parks and twenty-four miles of parkways and drives, and they feel able to assert that no city can show such a park system for so little money. Figures are given demonstrating the rapid appreciation of land values about the parks and along the parkways. For example, the abutting property on Overton Park was valued at \$79,250 in 1901, while ten years later its valuation had increased to \$735,000, and the land along the parkway from Trazevant avenue to Riverside Park appreciated from \$279,000 in 1903 to \$837,000 in 1910. These figures must appeal to those who claim that money expended for parks is rendered unproductive.*

Virginia — Jamestown.

The many historic associations of Jamestown, Virginia, have not been forgotten, as is testified to by the very notable restoration, or rather recreation, of the Jamestown Church, originally built in 1640. After the excavations conducted by the Society of Virginia Antiquities had laid bare the foundations of this edifice, the Colonial Dames conceived the project of rebuilding the church as nearly as possible in its original form. To this end they caused brick to be made of the same type as that used in the seventeenth century, and the English parish churches of this period were carefully studied by an architect sent to England expressly for this purpose. The church as it now stands is an almost exact reproduction of that erected by the early settlers. This historic land was given by Mrs. E. E. Barney.

Wisconsin — Milwaukee.

The beautiful Juneau Park, in Milwaukee, Wis., occupies a commanding position on a bluff overlooking Lake Michigan. Within the park are statues of Solomon Juneau, its founder, and of Lief Ericksen. A very comprehensive scheme of improvements by which the appearance of many parts of the city will be transformed, is now in process of execution, mainly according to the plans of John Nolen, a landscape architect who has done good work in this direction in many western cities.

* See report of the Board of Park Commissioners of Memphis, Tenn., July 1, 1909, to November 1, 1910.

Tables of Cost and Value of Parks in the United States.

The following is a list and value of the lands, buildings and equipments of parks, gardens and playgrounds of cities of the United States having a population of over 30,000 in the year 1908:

	Value of lands, buildings and equipments.		Value of lands, buildings and equipments.
New York	\$442,361,767	Camden	\$255,000
Chicago	39,261,035	Wilmington	575,000
Philadelphia	33,596,644	Des Moines, Iowa ...	778,391
St. Louis	11,987,120	Lynn, Mass.	384,250
Boston	60,374,600	New Bedford, Mass. ..	293,300
Baltimore	10,859,048	Kansas City, Kan. ...	438,825
Pittsburg	19,223,200	Springfield, Mass. ...	972,957
Cleveland	22,992,889	Troy, N. Y.	325,200
Buffalo	6,868,610	Oakland, Cal.	1,940,500
San Francisco	14,080,000	Lawrence, Mass.	532,398
Detroit	10,232,100	Summerville, Mass. ..	827,481
Cincinnati	3,916,000	Duluth, Minn.	691,867
Milwaukee	3,765,000	Savannah	5,071,000
New Orleans	5,065,000	Norfolk, Va.	426,830
Washington	3,146,099	Yonkers	277,920
Newark	10,897,279	Schenectady	610,200
Minneapolis	4,396,013	Hoboken	574,600
Jersey City	594,000	Peoria, Ill.	614,404
Indianapolis	1,370,584	Utica	122,400
Louisville, Ky.	1,875,000	Manchester, N. H. ...	707,000
St. Paul	2,485,000	Evansville, Ind.	165,049
Providence	2,490,216	San Antonio	1,889,140
Rochester	1,809,878	Elizabeth, N. J.	168,300
Kansas City, Mo.	7,138,801	Waterbury, Conn. ...	832,200
Toledo	1,544,950	Salt Lake City	476,249
Denver	4,170,000	Wilkes-Barre	1,952,938
Columbus	352,744	Erie, Pa.	181,000
Los Angeles	5,707,020	Houston, Tex.	87,749
Worcester	1,200,390	Tacoma	679,750
Seattle	2,532,664	Harrisburg	226,000
Memphis	4,095,900	Portland, Me.	496,490
Omaha	2,200,000	Charleston, S. C.	400,500
New Haven	524,345	Youngstown, O.	1,028,300
Scranton	123,000	Dallas, Tex.	688,350
Syracuse	1,602,651	Terre Haute, Ind. ...	93,450
St. Joseph, Mo.	250,000	Akron, O.	211,000
Portland, Ore.	1,924,300	Fort Wayne, Ind. ...	85,500
Paterson, N. J.	305,000	Holyoke, Mass.	204,505
Atlanta	440,706	Brockton, Mass.	44,700
Richmond	950,830	Covington, Ky.	2,000
Dayton, O.	428,657	Lincoln, Neb.	110,000
Fall River, Mass. ...	893,250	Saginaw, Mich.	218,573
Nashville, Tenn.	300,000	Altoona, Pa.	13,500
Grand Rapids	436,400	Spokane, Wash.	277,063
Hartford	2,012,455	Lancaster, Pa.	75,000
Cambridge	4,297,481	Birmingham, La.	910,504
Albany	1,990,700	Bayonne, N. J.	143,150
Reading, Pa.	517,000	South Bend, Ind.	141,750
Lowell	517,475	Butte, Mont. ....	.....
Trenton	340,909	McKeesport, Pa.	47,000
Bridgeport	755,000	Pawtucket, R. I.	118,328

	Value of lands, buildings and equipments.		Value of lands, buildings and equipments.
Sioux City, Iowa	\$80,000	Joplin, Mo.	\$28,500
Johnstown, Pa.	397,000	Newton, Mass.	258,500
Dubuque, Iowa	115,500	Salem, Mass.	116,300
Binghamton, N. Y. . . .	18,500	Haverhill, Mass. . . .	236,225
Mobile, La.	601,500	Rockford, Ill.	40,000
Augusta, Ga.	97,000	Knoxville, Tenn. . . .	22,600
East St. Louis, Ill. . . .	70,000	Galveston, Tex.	194,000
Passaic, N. J.	54,400	Elmira, N. Y.	111,000
Topeka, Kan.	65,000	New Britain, Conn. . .	400,650
Allentown, Pa.	140,000	Oklahoma City, Okla. .	163,000
Atlantic City, N. J. . . .	396,950	Kalamazoo, Mich. . . .	210,500
Springfield, O.	77,700	Woonsocket, R. I. . . .	31,088
Montgomery, La.	40,000	Chattanooga, Tenn. . .	140,399
Davenport, Iowa	500,000	Racine, Wis.	172,000
Little Rock, Ark.	200,200	Fitchburg, Mass.	181,808
Wheeling, W. Va.	29,500	Auburn, N. Y.	11,000
Springfield, Ill.	457,500	Joliet, Ill.	53,300
York, Pa.	106,500	Macon, Ga.	177,000
Malden, Mass.	211,900	West Hoboken, N. J. . .	40,100
Wichita, Kan.	610,000	Everett, Mass.	69,100
Bay City, Mich.	251,157	Oshkosh, Wis.	155,000
South Omaha, Neb. . . .	79,000	Sacramento, Cal. . . .	302,500
Quincy, Ill.	280,000	Pueblo, Colo.	625,300
Newcastle, Pa.	5,000	Newport, Ky.	100,000
Superior, Wis.	59,000	Taunton, Mass.	71,750
Canton, O.	108,500	La Crosse, Wis.	61,191
Jacksonville, Fla. . . .	677,042	Fort Worth, Tex. . . .	100,000
Chester, Pa.	86,000		
Chelsea, Mass.	193,300		
		Grand total	\$799,668,231

The following table shows the payments in 1908 for general expenses and special service expenses, in connection with the parks, gardens and playgrounds in cities of the United States having a population of 30,000 and over:

	<i>Buildings and Grounds.</i> Salaries and wages.	All other expenses.
New York	\$1,460,117	\$710,821
Chicago	779,800	865,672
Philadelphia	210,122	138,190
St. Louis	115,092	98,052
Boston	265,248	392,994
Baltimore	107,347	71,200
Pittsburg	163,450	72,534
Cleveland	99,046	21,156
Buffalo	100,106	49,548
San Francisco	224,631	93,795
Detroit	135,109	61,542
Cincinnati	36,909	20,684
Milwaukee	41,267	36,900
New Orleans, La.	28,943	16,148
Washington	94,598	31,566
Newark	60,657	21,633
Minneapolis	56,056	36,884
Jersey City	8,305	3,326
Indianapolis	48,000	55,084

	<i>Buildings and Grounds.</i>	
	Salaries and wages.	All other expenses.
Louisville, Ky.	\$19,418	\$25,488
St. Paul	76,873	18,737
Providence	33,459	25,250
Rochester	69,525	28,616
Kansas City, Mo.	40,407	62,694
Toledo, O.	19,278	10,485
Denver	74,972	39,705
Columbus, O.	6,684	5,102
Los Angeles, Cal.	103,074	19,352
Worcester	18,196	13,890
Seattle	29,067	16,045
Memphis	34,791	19,780
Omaha	24,691	17,413
New Haven	18,689	7,290
Scranton	4,258	2,217
Syracuse	23,579	9,210
St. Joseph, Mo.	4,708	4,531
Portland, Ore.	21,219	10,024
Paterson, N. J.	11,908	3,160
Atlanta, Ga.	15,601	2,423
Richmond, Va.	23,304	2,792
Dayton, O.	5,436	1,508
Fall River, Mass.	9,622	2,562
Nashville, Tenn.	7,934	9,485
Grand Rapids, Mich.	16,676	9,965
Hartford, Conn.	37,271	7,042
Cambridge, Mass.	6,868	30,677
Albany	45,684	18,975
Reading, Pa.	8,478	3,578
Lowell, Mass.	8,612	4,112
Trenton, N. J.	6,680	4,807
Bridgeport, Conn.	16,569	6,842
Camden, N. J.	4,289	2,417
Wilmington, Del.	8,673	7,224
Des Moines, Ia.	18,505	10,245
Lynn, Mass.	5,995	19,347
New Bedford, Mass.	11,863	6,509
Kansas City, Kan.	2,036	2,176
Springfield, Mass.	15,723	7,886
Troy, N. Y.	6,219	3,917
Oakland, Cal.	38,046	12,298
Lawrence, Mass.	5,504	1,045
Summerville, Mass.	7,383	17,251
Duluth, Minn.	9,186	2,540
Savannah, Ga.	5,025	2,593
Norfolk, Va.	10,327	2,180
Yonkers, N. Y.	6,007	4,180
Schenectady, N. Y.	1,037	451
Hoboken, N. J.	5,520	4,410
Peoria, Ill.	31,437	6,483
Utica, N. Y.	233	4,423
Manchester, N. H.	6,360	1,713
Evansville, Ind.	3,435	2,051
San Antonio, Tex.	8,700	3,339
Elizabeth, N. J.	3,213	3,436
Waterbury, Conn.	5,926	2,475
Salt Lake City, Utah	12,768	3,396
Wilkes-Barre, Pa.	2,752	2,197
Erie, Pa.	4,600	621
Houston, Tex.	544	4,896

	<i>Buildings and Grounds.</i>	
	<i>Salaries and wages.</i>	<i>All other expenses.</i>
Tacoma, Wash.	\$15,283	\$9,710
Harrisburg, Pa.	9,039	12,954
Portland, Me.	4,526	3,016
Charleston, S. C.	5,664	10,086
Youngstown, O.	3,380	799
Dallas, Tex.	8,329	6,076
Terre Haute, Ind.	1,927	621
Akron, O.	3,006	513
Fort Wayne, Ind.	7,583	2,601
Holyoke, Mass.	6,130	2,811
Brockton, Mass.	83	160
Covington, Ky.	472	2,821
Lincoln, Neb.	3,045	1,983
Saginaw, Mich.	725	6,929
Altoona, Pa. ....	.....	.....
Spokane, Wash.	12,767	6,313
Lancaster, Pa.	614	46
Birmingham, Ala.	6,784	3,078
Bayonne, N. J.	1,579	917
South Bend, Ind.	8,848	1,846
Butte, Mont. ....	.....	.....
McKeesport, Pa. ....	.....	.....
Pawtucket, R. I.	2,777	1,153
Sioux City, Iowa	1,790	1,261
Johnstown, Pa.	1,152	283
Dubuque, Iowa	1,160	179
Binghamton, N. Y.	4,395	1,767
Mobile, Ala.	2,117	1,363
Augusta, Ga.	5,631	1,763
East St. Louis, Ill.	533	636
Passaic, N. J.	1,674	475
Topeka, Kan.	8,685	2,589
Allentown, Pa.	1,307	385
Atlantic City, N. J.	467	.....
Springfield, O.	5,403	2,020
Montgomery, Ala.	2,687	1,403
Davenport, Iowa	10,826	6,487
Little Rock, Ark.	1,986	1,170
Wheeling, W. Va. ....	.....	.....
Springfield, Ill.	15,619	5,154
York, Pa.	540	2,646
Malden, Mass.	3,293	11,781
Wichita, Kan.	3,354	1,600
Bay City, Mich.	2,039	625
South Omaha, Neb.	513	232
Quincy, Ill.	8,799	6,237
Newcastle, Pa.	343	136
Superior, Wis.	6,513	2,313
Canton, O.	1,671	470
Jacksonville, Fla.	13,390	2,474
Chester, Pa.	2,637	651
Chelsea, Mass.	772	7,080
Joplin, Mo.	1,313	591
Newton, Mass.	6,688	16,910
Salem, Mass.	3,923	2,723
Haverhill, Mass.	4,340	2,172
Rockford, Ill.	1,400	984
Knoxville, Tenn.	349	173
Galveston, Tex.	1,378	285
Elmira, N. Y.	3,619	1,818

	<i>Buildings and Grounds.</i>	
	<i>Salaries and wages.</i>	<i>All other expenses.</i>
New Britain, Conn.	\$1,855	\$2,137
Oklahoma City, Okla.	5,577	2,713
Kalamazoo, Mich.	1,263	481
Woonsocket, R. I. ....	.....	20
Chattanooga, Tenn.	2,576	3,579
Racine, Wis.	4,221	1,422
Fitchburg, Mass.	459	2,607
Auburn, N. Y.	569	163
Joliet, Ill.	6,235	4,062
Macon, Ga.	1,662	2,243
West Hoboken, N. J.	486	1,298
Everett, Mass.	3,214	7,992
Oshkosh, Wis.	2,703	612
Sacramento, Cal.	10,748	2,512
Pueblo, Colo.	17,010	7,241
Newport, Ky.	199	90
Taunton, Mass.	2,311	916
La Crosse, Wis.	2,313	397
Fort Worth, Tex.	1,183	1,943
Grand total	<u>\$5,418,071</u>	<u>\$3,588,887</u>

The following table shows the payments made on account of park police in connection with the parks in cities of the United States having a population of over 30,000, in 1908:

	<i>Park Police.</i>	
	<i>Salaries and wages.</i>	<i>All other expenses.</i>
New York	\$.....	\$.....
Chicago	270,437	8,344
Philadelphia	126,268	7,370
St. Louis	13,680	.....
Boston .....	.....	.....
Baltimore	20,184	1,790
Pittsburg	33,007	.....
Cleveland	45,437	.....
Buffalo .....	.....	.....
San Francisco .....	.....	.....
Detroit	4,917	.....
Cincinnati	13,424	.....
Milwaukee	7,477	681
New Orleans, La.	2,374	.....
Washington .....	.....	.....
Newark	16,675	.....
Minneapolis	13,029	.....
Jersey City .....	.....	.....
Indianapolis	1,820	80
Louisville, Ky.	15,812	.....
St. Paul, Minn.	9,314	.....
Providence .....	.....	.....
Rochester .....	.....	.....
Kansas City, Mo.	16,264	.....
Toledo .....	.....	.....
Denver	6,080	540
Columbus, O. ....	.....	.....
Los Angeles, Cal.	7,840	.....

Park Police.

	Salaries and wages.	All other expenses.
Worcester, Mass. ....	.....	.....
Memphis, Tenn.	\$3, 350	.....
Omaha, Neb.	900	.....
New Haven ....	.....	.....
Scranton, Pa. ....	.....	.....
Syracuse, N. Y. ....	.....	.....
St. Joseph, Mo.	1, 600	.....
Portland, Ore.	2, 700	.....
Paterson, N. J. ....	.....	.....
Atlanta, Ga.	2, 700	.....
Richmond, Va. ....	.....	.....
Dayton, O. ....	.....	.....
Fall River, Mass.	3, 080	\$5
Nashville, Tenn.	3, 280	.....
Grand Rapids, Mich.	75	.....
Hartford, Conn. ....	.....	.....
Cambridge, Mass. ....	.....	.....
Albany ....	.....	.....
Reading, Pa.	960	76
Lowell, Mass. ....	.....	.....
Trenton, N. J.	2, 543	160
Bridgeport, Conn. ....	.....	.....
Camden, N. J. ....	.....	.....
Wilmington, Del.	6, 012	393
Des Moines, Iowa	582	.....
Lynn, Mass. ....	.....	.....
New Bedford, Mass.	3, 580	.....
Kansas City, Kan. ....	.....	.....
Springfield, Mass.	2, 500	.....
Troy, N. Y.	2, 700	.....
Oakland, Cal. ....	.....	.....
Lawrence, Mass. ....	.....	.....
Norfolk, Va.	1, 500	.....
Hoboken, N. J.	2, 880	.....
Peoria, Ill.	3, 641	213
San Antonio, Tex.	1, 555	.....
Waterbury, Conn.	35	.....
Wilkes-Barre, Pa.	600	.....
Charleston, S. C.	1, 333	.....
Youngstown, O.	1, 674	.....
Dallas, Tex.	3, 183	.....
Terre Haute, Ind.	500	.....
Bayonne, N. J.	324	107
South Bend, Ind.	180	.....
Sioux City, Iowa	1, 255	.....
Mobile, Ala.	840	.....
Springfield, O.	360	.....
Davenport, Iowa.	1, 014	.....
Springfield, Ill.	4, 463	49
Quincy, Ill.	600	.....
Jacksonville, Fla.	1, 980	.....
Chester, Pa.	666	46
New Britain, Conn.	30	.....
Racine, Wis.	480	.....
Everett, Mass.	250	.....
Pueblo, Colo.	720	.....
Newport, Ky.	210	.....
Grand total	\$690, 874	\$19, 854

The following table shows the payments on account of zoological collections in connection with the parks, gardens and playgrounds in cities of the United States having a population of over 30,000, in 1908:

	<i>Zoological Collections.</i>	
	Salaries and wages.	All other expenses.
New York	\$121, 075	\$54, 865
Chicago	12, 571	11, 574
Philadelphia .....	.....	30, 000
St. Louis	2, 340	746
Baltimore	2, 396	2, 834
Pittsburg	14, 811	15, 859
Cleveland	2, 628	3, 585
Buffalo	3, 697	7, 058
San Francisco	4, 813	9, 711
Detroit	8, 837	7, 701
Milwaukee	4, 107	5, 100
New Orleans .....	.....	1, 944
Washington	60, 552	37, 753
Minneapolis	401	1, 078
Jersey City .....	.....	.....
Indianapolis	910	720
Providence	732	552
Rochester .....	.....	1, 737
Kansas City, Mo. ....	.....	12
Toledo, O.	600	1, 933
Denver, Col.	2, 566	4, 179
Los Angeles	1, 016	2, 437
Worcester .....	.....	144
Seattle	900	1, 170
Memphis	2, 745	6, 975
Omaha .....	.....	968
New Haven .....	.....	.....
Scranton	974	200
St. Joseph, Mo. ....	.....	313
Portland, Ore.	1, 200	2, 200
Atlanta, Ga.	840	2, 650
Grand Rapids, Mich. ....	.....	1, 441
Trenton, N. J. ....	.....	661
Wilmington, Del.	210	424
Des Moines, Iowa .....	.....	300
Norfolk, Va. ....	.....	1, 985
San Antonio, Tex. ....	.....	1, 237
Waterbury, Conn. ....	.....	.....
Wilkes-Barre, Pa. ....	.....	.....
Tacoma, Wash.	780	1, 361
Charleston, S. C. ....	.....	193
Lincoln, Neb. ....	.....	121
Spokane, Wash.	1, 023	1, 268
South Bend, Ind. ....	.....	449
Pawtucket, R. I. ....	.....	56
Binghamton, N. Y. ....	.....	436
Davenport, Iowa .....	.....	1, 339
Canton, O. ....	.....	147
Elmira, N. Y. ....	.....	68
Oklahoma City, Okla.	1, 080	1, 236
Chattanooga, Tenn.	930	1, 473

Grand total	\$254, 734	\$230, 193
-------------------	------------	------------

The following table shows the payments for music in the parks, gardens and playgrounds in cities of the United States having a population of over 30,000, in 1908:

	<i>Music in Parks.</i>	
	Salaries and wages.	All other expenses.
New York	\$.....	\$56,664
Chicago	24,175
Philadelphia	29,300
St. Louis	14,986
Boston	4,694	283
Baltimore	9,766
Cleveland	5,715
Buffalo	4,522
San Francisco	7,280
Detroit	5,544	508
Cincinnati	4,908
Milwaukee	3,462
New Orleans, La.	2,260
Newark	3,873
Minneapolis	429	10,117
Jersey City	3,793
Indianapolis	1,020
St. Paul	9,126
Providence	2,500
Rochester	5,865
Kansas City, Mo.	6,491
Denver	15,185
Seattle	500
Memphis	5,000
Syracuse	1,444
St. Joseph, Mo.	248
Portland, Ore.	4,369
Atlanta, Ga.	1,200
Nashville, Tenn.	569
Grand Rapids, Mich.	1,137
Hartford, Conn.	1,237
Lowell, Mass.	710
Trenton, N. J.	1,720
Des Moines, Iowa	900
Troy, N. Y.	553
Yonkers, N. Y.	818
Schenectady, N. Y.	500
Peoria, Ill.	1,340
San Antonio	400
Houston, Tex.	1,007
Harrisburg, Pa.	2,017
Charleston, S. C.	70
Youngstown, O.	800
Dallas, Tex.	1,796
Terre Haute, Ind.	608
Holyoke, Mass.	516
Bayonne, N. J.	225
Pawtucket, R. I.	249
Davenport, Iowa	653
Little Rock, Ark.	174
York, Pa.	250
Superior, Wis.	450
Elmira, N. Y.	498

	<i>Music in Parks.</i>	
	Salaries and wages.	All other expenses.
Oshkosh, Wis.	\$.....	\$75
Pueblo, Colo. ....	.....	220
Grand total	\$10,667	\$254,057

The following table shows the payments for baths, bathing beaches, etc., in the parks, playgrounds and gardens in cities of the United States having a population of over 30,000, in 1908:

	<i>Baths, Bathing Beaches, etc.</i>	
	Salaries and wages.	All other expenses.
New York	\$233,414	\$62,237
Chicago	71,963	36,988
Philadelphia	12,000	7,207
St. Louis	3,785	2,517
Boston	114,413	63,515
Baltimore	23,446	15,099
Pittsburg	1,631	2,282
Cleveland	26,360	16,594
Buffalo	4,940	4,308
Detroit	10,381	6,197
Cincinnati	3,830	2,705
Milwaukee	13,857	8,941
Washington	2,386	1,245
Newark	10,576	7,222
Minneapolis	6,601	2,426
Jersey City	4,393	2,774
Louisville, Ky.	838	652
St. Paul	7,070	11,996
Providence	360	285
Rochester	5,505	5,075
Kansas City	1,169	.....
Denver	3,059	4,231
Columbus	188	24
Worcester	498	551
New Haven	2,473	1,067
Syracuse	2,243	2,116
Portland, Ore. ....	.....	293
Richmond, Va. ....	.....	600
Nashville	420	464
Hartford, Conn.	962	1,349
Cambridge, Mass.	1,321	2,141
Albany	11,372	7,137
Trenton	92	88
Camden, N. J.	887	517
Lynn, Mass. ....	.....	640
New Bedford, Mass.	580	860
Springfield, Mass.	679	182
Troy, N. Y.	1,200	1,182
Lawrence, Mass.	1,324	738
Somerville, Mass.	167	968
Yonkers, N. Y.	2,000	3,255
Hoboken, N. J.	560	852
Peoria, Ill.	202	.....
Utica, N. Y.	422	120

	<i>Baths, Bathing Beaches, etc.</i>	
	Salaries and wages.	All other expenses.
Manchester, N. H.	\$133	\$275
Waterbury, Conn.	147	.....
Wilkes-Barre, Pa.	523	613
Portland, Me.	1,708	1,097
Holyoke, Mass.	843	574
Butte, Mont. ....	.....	307
Binghamton, N. Y.	388	54
Atlantic City, N. J.	16,673	161
Malden, Mass. ....	.....	378
Chelsea, Mass. ....	.....	282
Newton, Mass. ....	.....	1,161
Everett, Mass. ....	.....	243
Taunton, Mass.	146	600
La Crosse, Wis.	646	303
Grand total	<u>\$610,774</u>	<u>\$295,688</u>

The following table shows the payments made for the general supervision of the parks, gardens and playgrounds in cities of the United States having a population of over 30,000, in 1908:

	<i>General Supervision.</i>	
	Salaries and wages.	All other expenses.
New York	\$143,208	\$11,374
Chicago	84,856	41,064
Philadelphia	49,600	3,499
St. Louis	12,163	2,773
Boston	13,396	2,734
Baltimore	15,881	2,509
Pittsburg	8,242	1,643
Cleveland	8,075	2,027
Buffalo	14,550	846
San Francisco	11,957	2,271
Detroit	15,210	1,693
Cincinnati	4,919	340
Milwaukee	4,560	2,920
New Orleans	4,219	102
Newark	10,771	4,466
Minneapolis	9,500	5,024
Indianapolis	5,400	1,311
Louisville	3,166	4,189
St. Paul	4,000	284
Providence	2,798	165
Rochester	13,777	2,795
Kansas City	28,736	4,804
Toledo	8,894	289
Denver	9,353	1,453
Columbus, O.	2,820	.....
Los Angeles	3,900	630
Worcester	2,966	1,073
Seattle	6,257	5,749
Memphis	8,213	1,830
Omaha	3,133	330
New Haven	2,500	378
Scranton	1,500	.....

General Supervision.

	Salaries and wages.	All other expenses.
Syracuse	\$3,200	\$236
St. Joseph, Mo.	1,000	.....
Portland, Ore.	2,500	.....
Paterson, N. J.	3,800	44
Atlanta, Ga.	600	.....
Richmond, Va.	1,200	.....
Dayton, O.	1,050	677
Fall River, Mass.	1,648	250
Nashville, Tenn.	900	100
Grand Rapids, Mich.	1,800	498
Hartford, Conn.	5,888	826
Cambridge, Mass.	2,305	481
Albany	2,396	148
Reading, Pa.	1,040	200
Lowell, Mass.	1,317	.....
Trenton, N. J.	2,200	132
Bridgeport, Conn.	1,713	300
Camden, N. J.	1,089	35
Wilmington, Del.	1,580	358
Des Moines, Iowa	1,200	.....
Lynn, Mass.	300	337
New Bedford, Mass.	1,800	419
Kansas City, Kan.	5,309	338
Springfield, Mass.	2,050	688
Troy, N. Y.	900	145
Oakland, Cal.	1,500	.....
Lawrence, Mass.	1,200	250
Savannah, Ga.	960	.....
Norfolk, Va.	1,500	.....
Yonkers, N. Y.	1,800	10
Hoboken, N. J.	4,163	.....
Peoria, Ill.	2,726	681
Utica, N. Y.	300	329
San Antonio	1,500	.....
Waterbury, Conn.	1,575	57
Salt Lake City	1,586	54
Wilkes-Barre, Pa.	2,100	429
Erie, Pa.	1,260	4
Houston, Tex.	770	.....
Tacoma	3,400	441
Harrisburg	3,520	.....
Portland, Me.	800	35
Charleston, S. C.	578	549
Youngstown, O.	1,901	.....
Dallas, Tex.	2,280	251
Terre Haute, Ind.	840	8
Fort Wayne, Ind.	840	23
Holyoke, Mass.	965	552
Brockton, Mass. ....	.....	.....
Covington, Ky.	200	6
Saginaw, Mich.	48	.....
Spokane, Wash.	3,664	795
Bayonne, N. J.	725	240
South Bend, Ind.	2,361	24
Pawtucket, R. I.	150	.....
Sioux City	720	.....
Augusta, Ga.	900	.....
Passaic, N. J.	1,380	7
Topeka, Kan.	1,000	.....

	<i>General Supervision.</i>	
	Salaries and wages.	All other expenses.
Springfield, O.	\$1,050	\$6
Davenport, Iowa	1,325	433
Little Rock, Ark.	720	.....
Springfield, Ill.	6,270	876
Canton, O.	720	6
Jacksonville, Fla.	1,500	.....
Joplin, Mo.	66	.....
Haverhill, Mass.	1,200	18
Elmira, N. Y.	300	3
Oklahoma City, Okla.	1,250	.....
Kalamazoo, Mich.	720	.....
Racine, Wis.	300	14
Pueblo, Colo.	300	9
Grand total	<u>\$631,938</u>	<u>\$122,887</u>

The following table shows the receipts from departmental service in the parks, gardens and playgrounds in cities of the United States having a population of over 30,000, in 1908:

	Receipts from departmental service.		Receipts from departmental service.
New York	\$74,299	St. Joseph, Mo.	\$550
Chicago	242,767	Portland, Ore.	425
Philadelphia	2,697	Atlanta, Ga.	10,088
St. Louis	894	Richmond, Va.	175
Boston	8,734	Fall River, Mass.	37
Baltimore	14,884	Nashville, Tenn.	877
Pittsburg	2,793	Grand Rapids, Mich.	1,127
Cleveland	23,073	Hartford, Conn.	2,235
Buffalo	2,433	Cambridge, Mass.	3,710
San Francisco	48,109	Albany, N. Y.	525
Detroit	20,759	Reading, Pa.	87
Cincinnati	9,508	Lowell, Mass.	1,136
Milwaukee	6,549	Trenton, N. J.	1,096
New Orleans	12,442	Bridgeport, Conn.	354
Washington	2,182	Wilmington, Del.	2,214
Newark	10,446	Des Moines, Iowa	4,662
Minneapolis	20,403	Lynn, Mass.	660
Jersey City	138	New Bedford, Mass.	322
Indianapolis	6,113	Kansas City, Kan.	70
Louisville, Ky.	3,237	Springfield, Mass.	3,996
St. Paul	19,592	Troy, N. Y.	260
Providence	7,110	Oakland, Cal.	1,835
Rochester	5,997	Lawrence, Mass.	69
Kansas City, Mo.	13,386	Somerville, Mass.	760
Toledo, O.	2,298	Duluth, Minn.	108
Denver, Col.	7,259	Norfolk, Va.	24
Columbus, O.	10	Yonkers, N. Y.	905
Los Angeles, Cal.	2,188	Peoria, Ill.	1,027
Worcester, Mass.	1,947	Manchester, N. H.	66
Seattle, Wash.	8,845	Evansville, Ind.	73
Memphis, Tenn.	1,145	San Antonio, Tex.	229
Omaha, Neb.	2,615	Waterbury, Conn.	610
New Haven, Conn.	1,588	Salt Lake City, Utah.	849
Syracuse, N. Y.	494	Erie, Pa.	227

Receipts from departmental service.		Receipts from departmental service.	
Houston, Tex.	\$437	Canton, O.	\$69
Harrisburg, Pa.	463	Chester, Pa.	15
Portland, Me.	420	Chelsea, Mass.	20
Charleston, S. C.	2,208	Joplin, Mo.	10
Dallas, Tex.	2,923	Newton, Mass.	69
Terre Haute, Ind.	711	Salem, Mass.	1,153
Akron, O.	15	Haverhill, Mass.	1,075
Holyoke, Mass.	775	Elmira, N. Y.	680
Brockton, Mass.	800	New Britain, Conn.	40
Saginaw, Mich.	80	Oklahoma City, Okla. ...	38
Spokane, Wash.	245	Kalamazoo, Mich.	15
Birmingham, Ala.	620	Woonsocket, R. I.	8
Pawtucket, R. I.	618	Chattanooga, Tenn.	2,787
Binghamton, N. Y.	1,126	Racine, Wis.	300
Mobile, Ala.	10	Fitchburg, Mass.	206
Augusta, Ga.	29	Macon, Ga.	1,731
Passaic, N. J.	164	Everett, Mass.	13
Topeka, Kan.	153	Sacramento, Cal.	104
Springfield, O.	557	Pueblo, Colo.	1,109
Davenport, Iowa	350	Taunton, Mass.	14
Springfield, Ill.	1,276	La Crosse, Wis.	466
Malden, Mass.	163	Fort Worth, Tex.	12
Wichita, Kans.	179		
Bay City, Mich.	2,308	Grand total	<u>\$654,722</u>
Quincy, Ill.	59		

The following table shows the funded debt and special assessment loans of the parks, gardens and playgrounds in cities of the United States having a population of over 30,000, in 1908:

Debts.		Debts.	
New York	\$63,374,790	Seattle, Wash.	\$500,000
Chicago	11,910,909	Memphis, Tenn.	250,000
Philadelphia	1,291,427	Omaha, Neb.	450,000
St. Louis	1,170,000	New Haven, Conn. ...	200,000
Boston	16,947,911	Scranton, Pa.	20,000
Baltimore	2,450,000	Syracuse, N. Y.	16,250
Pittsburg	1,503,700	Portland, Ore.	550,000
Cleveland	4,254,000	Paterson, N. J.	165,000
Buffalo	2,008,196	Atlanta, Ga.	60,000
San Francisco	1,224,000	Dayton, O.	131,000
Detroit	931,000	Fall River, Mass.	182,000
Cincinnati	1,604,300	Hartford, Conn.	300,000
Milwaukee	839,500	Cambridge, Mass. ...	1,607,000
Newark, N. J.	3,674,000	Albany, N. Y.	1,295,200
Minneapolis	1,571,612	Lowell, Mass.	13,170
Jersey City	302,000	Trenton, N. J.	213,850
Indianapolis	559,500	Camden, N. J.	217,000
Louisville, Ky.	578,000	Wilmington, Del.	210,000
St. Paul, Minn.	657,900	Lynn, Mass.	128,250
Providence, R. I.	1,569,000	New Bedford, Mass. ...	200,000
Rochester, N. Y.	360,000	Springfield, Mass. ...	125,000
Kansas City, Mo. ...	978,642	Troy, N. Y.	308,000
Toledo, O.	1,095,000	Oakland, Cal.	942,000
Denver, Colo. ....	.....	Somerville, Mass. ...	21,000
Columbus, O.	19,500	Duluth, Minn.	312,000
Los Angeles, Cal.	7,500	Norfolk, Va.	135,000
Worcester, Mass.	314,800	Yonkers, N. Y.	329,000

	Debts.		Debts.
Schenectady, N. Y. . .	\$6,000	Wichita, Kan.	\$5,000
Hoboken, N. J.	22,850	Bay City, Mich.	200,000
Peoria, Ill.	172,254	South Omaha, Neb. . .	40,000
Utica, N. Y.	3,000	Canton, O.	15,800
Erie, Pa.	16,000	Jacksonville, Fla. . . .	45,000
Youngstown, O.	75,025	Chelsea, Mass.	100,000
Akron, O.	14,778	Newton, Mass.	551,000
Holyoke, Mass.	27,000	Salem, Mass.	18,000
Brockton, Mass.	16,000	Elmira, N. Y.	16,000
Saginaw, Mich.	55,000	New Britain, Conn. . .	75,000
Altoona, Pa.	100,000	Kalamazoo, Mich. . . .	1,000
Birmingham, Ala. . . .	9,324	Chattanooga, Tenn. . .	150,000
Bayonne, N. J.	82,500	Fitchburg, Mass.	4,200
Passaic, N. J.	47,474	Joliet, Ill.	14,000
Allentown, Pa.	25,000	Everett, Mass.	500
Atlantic City, N. J. . . .	100,000	Oshkosh, Wis.	10,000
Springfield, O.	37,000	Pueblo, Colo.	378,500
Montgomery, Ala.	30,000		
Springfield, Ill.	110,310	Grand total	\$132,826,822
Malden, Mass.	175,000		

The following table shows the payments for expenses of playgrounds in cities of the United States having a population of over 30,000, in 1908:

	Playgrounds.	
	Salaries and wages.	All other expenses.
New York	\$69,755	\$15,924
Chicago	114,430	48,229
Philadelphia		
St. Louis	9,571	3,979
Boston	42,716	12,231
Baltimore	2,376	7,496
Pittsburg	27,363	10,930
Cleveland	6,726	2,215
Buffalo	9,418	2,186
San Francisco	10,094	12,770
Detroit	516	6,026
Milwaukee	1,284	116
Washington	3,727	1,133
Newark	10,578	4,925
Minneapolis	1,513	488
Jersey City	1,307	561
Indianapolis	1,040	300
Louisville	854	899
St. Paul	4,347	1,095
Providence	4,039	1,933
Rochester	9,781	5,992
Denver	3,824	654
Los Angeles	12,941	3,104
Worcester	6	120
Omaha		498
New Haven	421	175
Dayton, O.	1,516	862
Grand Rapids, Mich.	385	203
Hartford, Conn.	1,054	39
Cambridge, Mass.	4,666	2,271
Trenton, N. J.	572	542
Camden, N. J.		178

	<i>Playgrounds.</i>	
	Salaries and wages.	All other expenses.
Wilmington, Del.	\$98	\$182
Lynn, Mass.	2, 211	1, 126
New Bedford, Mass.	297	528
Springfield, Mass. ....	.....	33
Somerville, Mass.	1, 215	905
Peoria, Ill. ....	.....	282
Utica, N. Y.	480	230
Manchester, N. H.	58	219
Waterbury, Conn.	171	.....
Wilkes-Barre, Pa.	575	694
Portland, Me.	417	405
Brockton, Mass.	185	485
Covington, Ky. ....	.....	250
Bayonne, N. J.	250	.....
McKeesport, Pa. ....	.....	354
Pawtucket ....	.....	546
Malden, Mass.	2, 237	393
Chelsea, Mass.	367	127
Salem, Mass.	1, 176	312
Elmira, N. Y. ....	.....	25
Everett, Mass.	495	104
Grand total	<u>\$367, 052</u>	<u>\$155, 234</u>

The estimated value of the lands, buildings, and equipments, etc., in the parks, gardens, playgrounds, etc., of 158 cities of the United States for the year 1908 amounted to \$799,668,231,* of which sum the four cities of New York, Boston, Chicago and Philadelphia formed two-thirds, New York alone leading by over \$357,000,000 above the valuation of all the other cities.

New York	\$442,361,767
Boston	60,374,600
Chicago	39,261,035
Philadelphia	33,596,644
	<u>\$575,594,046</u>

The total payments were as follows:

Value of lands, buildings, and equipments.....	\$799,668,231
General expenses and special service expenses..	12,650,910
Departmental services	654,722
Funded debt and special assessment loans.....	132,826,822
Grand total	<u>\$945,800,685</u>

* See special reports of the Bureau of Census, statistics of cities having a population of 30,000 or over, 1908.

APPENDIX J.

FOREIGN REGULATIONS

FOR THE

CONSERVATION OF SCENIC AND HISTORIC PLACES
AND OBJECTS.

By GEORGE FREDERICK KUNZ, Ph. D., Sc. D.

FOREIGN REGULATIONS FOR THE CONSERVATION OF SCENIC AND HISTORIC PLACES AND OBJECTS.

By GEORGE FREDERICK KUNZ, Ph. D., Sc. D.

Extent of the Movement.

The truly international character of the movement for the preservation of natural and historic monuments can best be shown by some brief notes of the progress made in other countries, embracing some of the more important legislative enactments for the care of such monuments and sites. Although it is only during the past few years that interest has been extensively aroused in this direction, much has already been done, and we are confident that the work will be more and more effectively carried on in the future. Only by experience can we learn the practical value of rules and regulations, and these can easily be modified from time to time. The essential point is that public interest has been focused on the question, and that the desirability, or we should rather say, the necessity of protecting the memorials of the past and the natural beauties of a land has been impressed upon a large part of the population.

The establishment of national reservations equalling or even approaching in size those of the United States, is practically impossible in countries of comparatively small area and densely populated, as are all the European countries with the exception of Russia and the Scandinavian peninsula. As the territory of the German Empire, for instance, is only one-seventeenth that of the United States, and the density of its population is ten times greater, a reservation of 50,000 acres, or about seventy-five square miles, might be considered the equivalent of our Yellowstone Park with its 8,000,000 acres. Indeed, it would scarcely be either practicable or desirable for England, France or Germany to provide for the establishment of a reservation of even 50,000 acres, and withdraw so much land from its normal use. An exception

may be made in the case of forest lands, which the state often effectually protects from misuse, and which are in some cases the direct property of the state.

Within the past few years a number of periodical publications and reports have been issued in our own and other countries, recording the progress of the movement for scenic protection, for the care of historic buildings and also for the establishment of reservations devoted to the protection of primitive forms of plant and animal life. Among these publications a prominent place must be accorded to the "Beiträge zur Naturdenkmalpflege," edited by our Corresponding Member, Dr. H. Conwentz, a tireless worker in this field. A very useful periodical publication is the quarterly "Bulletin" of the "Société Nationale pour la Protection des Sites et des Monuments en Belgique." Much valuable information, supplementing that secured from special reports and personal communications, has been derived from the publications we have noted, and from some others of a like character. The writer wishes to make special acknowledgment of his indebtedness to Mr. A. Hamilton, Director of the Dominion Museum, Wellington, New Zealand, for a series of reports on scenery preservation in those islands, and for other important information on this subject.

The following notes are given in the alphabetical order of the names of the countries:

Argentine Republic.

Some extensive areas in the Argentine Republic have been, or are about to be, established as national parks. The most notable, the National Park of the Iguazu is in a tract between Brazil and Paraguay, known as the Territory of Missions, because it formerly belonged to the Jesuits. Here are the wonderful falls of the Iguazu river, said to surpass Niagara in grandeur. The subtropical vegetation adds greatly to the charm of this splendid natural feature. In April, 1902, the Argentine government commissioned Senor Carlos Thays, Director of Public Parks and of the Botanic Gardens of Buenos Ayres, to explore this region, to fix upon sites for hotels, casinos, baths, etc., and to indicate where roads should be built to give access to the different parts of the

territory. The project formulated on his return by Senor Thays, and approved by the government in July, 1902, contemplates the reservation of 25,000 hectares (more than 60,000 acres) for park purposes. Only such modifications of the territory as are strictly necessary to render it accessible and habitable are to be allowed, the intention being to leave it as far as possible in its primitive state.

Another Argentine natural park, covering over 100,000 acres and embracing within its limits Lake Nahuel-Huapi, is situated near the Patagonian Andes, in the southern part of the Argentine Republic. This park is in part the gift of Dr. Francisco P. Moreno, at one time Director of the Museum of La Plata. Recently the lake has been stocked with 1,000,000 eggs of white fish and 150,000 eggs of trout and salmon donated by the United States government and this experiment in pisciculture is said to have proved fairly successful.

Australia.

In Australia several large reserves have recently been established. One of these, in Queensland, in the Belleden Ker range, part of the hinterland of Trinity bay, consists of 86,450 acres, and includes within its boundaries the highest North Australian mountains. In New South Wales there is a National Park of 37,051 acres, containing a splendid forest of eucalyptus trees, which is to be left as far as possible in its original state. In West Australia also, considerable tracts of forest land belonging to the government have been reserved.

In Australia the procedure followed in establishing reservations differs in the various States, and some of the principal results attained will here be given.*

While there has been a lack of legislation dealing specifically with the preservation of scenic sites, etc., in New South Wales, the provisions of the Crown Lands Act of that state have sufficed for the setting aside of extensive tracts for public recreation and for the preservation of the indigenous flora. The land so reserved, which is generally unsuitable for cultivation or settlement, is

* See Dept. of Lands, report on Scenery Preservations for the year 1907-8, Wellington, 1908, pp. 3, 4.

cared for by trusts, usually composed of men prominent in the respective localities, who secure the necessary funds from government subsidies and public subscriptions. There are two large reservations in the vicinity of Sydney, namely, the National Park, of 36,000 acres, and Kuringgai Chase, comprising 35,300 acres of land. Within the limits of these reservations no one is allowed to cut or deface trees, shrubs, plants, rocks, fences, or gates. All hunting or fishing is also forbidden, as is also the displaying of advertisements. The special regulations are made by the several trusts. The limestone caves in this state — the three principal ones being the Jenolan, Yarrangobilly and Wombeyan caves — are also carefully protected from injury, and, although much money has already been spent upon them, it is believed that the paid admissions will soon render them valuable assets.*

Queensland has a State Forests and National Parks Act, passed in 1906, under the provisions of which considerable reservations have been established in various parts of this state. As yet these public lands are to a great extent unimproved, and no areas have been acquired by purchase. In South Australia there is a National Park at Belair, and a reservation about the Waterfall Gully near Burnside, to which may be added the western end of Kangaroo Island which is to be reserved for the protection of the flora and fauna of this district.

The State of Victoria has also made provision for protecting the beauties of the land. In 1881, it was decided to permanently reserve a strip of land from one to three chains wide along the principal water courses of the state; this, however, only applied to unappropriated land. In addition to this many reservations, including within their boundaries beautiful lakes, waterfalls, high mountain peaks, etc., have been established. Occasionally small tracts of land have been purchased. In many cases these reservations are controlled jointly by the Board of Lands and Works and by the municipal councils; others again are exclusively under municipal control. Often the management has been given by the Board of Lands and Works to a local committee. The sum of

* Report by Robert McDonald, acting under-secretary Dept. of Lands, Sydney, Victoria.

£5,000 was expended in 1907 for road construction on Mount Buffalo, a most striking scenic feature.*

In Western Australia an act entitled the Permanent Reserve Act, passed in December 1889, provides for the permanent reservation of areas as parks, recreation grounds, etc. In some instances private land has been purchased. The principal reservations are King's Park, in the neighborhood of Perth, comprising about 1,000 acres of land, and, about twenty-five miles east of Perth, the National Park of some 4,000 acres, near the junction of the Eastern and Midland Railways.

In Tasmania, Crown lands containing remarkable scenic features have been withdrawn in many cases from selection, and reservations exist at Lake St. Clair, Hartz Mountains and Interlaken. When practicable, control is placed in the hands of a local board. One of the most attractive reserves is the Queen's Domain, Hobart, covering about 600 acres; this has been improved by tree-planting, etc., at the expense of the municipality of Hobart. The government of the island has in several instances acquired pieces of land on which were limestone caves, in order to insure their preservation.

Austria.

Much has been done in Austria for the protection of various species of forest trees, several private owners having made reservations of forest land for this purpose. Of these we may note here a tract of 353 acres in Moravia-Silesia, reserved by Prince Lichtenstein. Here are found *Juniperus nana* and *Salix herbacea*. In the Böhmerwald, Prince Schwartzsenberg has reserved 284 acres of woodland where appear five specimens of *Picea excelsa* and *Abies pectinata*. A still larger reservation of forest land, comprising 1,136 acres, has been constituted by Mr. Rothschild of Vienna, in the vicinity of Dürnstein.

In Austria due attention has also been paid to making the public familiar with the necessity for conserving natural objects, and the Zoologico-Botanical Society in Vienna has issued colored plates with representations of a number of rare species of plants pro-

* Report by J. M. Reed, I. S. O., Surveyor-General, Sydney, Victoria.

ected by a law of January 29, 1905. Copies of this plate are hung on the walls of railway stations, of public houses, etc. The law forbids the removal of such plants with the roots, as well as the offering for sale or selling of them.

Belgium.

Belgium has not failed to participate in the movement, and in this country a society has been formed bearing the name "Société Nationale pour la Protection des Sites." The purposes for which it was organized were furthered by the late King Leopold, who, on his sixty-fifth birthday, gave to the nation several estates containing much fine woodland and many picturesque spots. It was expressly stipulated in the deed of gift that the forests should not be cut down and that the natural aspects should not be changed in any way.

As an indication of the work accomplished by the Belgian Society a few of the results attained or proposed may be mentioned. The beautiful Cathedral of Antwerp, begun in 1352 and completed in 1518, is acknowledged to be one of the masterpieces of Gothic architecture. Unfortunately some of the nearby buildings are so placed as to seriously interfere with securing a good view of the splendid façade of the structure. In order to attain the best results at small expense, it has been proposed to remove two or three of these buildings and to prohibit the addition of any stories to two or three others.

The scenic beauties of the land are also earnestly defended. A special league has been formed for the protection of the picturesque valley of the Ourthe from threatened disfigurement by the erection of unsightly buildings in connection with mining operations in that region. To this end advantage was taken of a law providing that coal mines may not be worked in inhabited places, and also providing for unexploited zones of territory between zones where coal mining is permitted.

In many of the smaller Belgian cities local societies have been formed which co-operate with the national society and further its aims, as, for instance, at Huy, where such a society has saved from demolition the "Porte des Croisiers," the gateway of an ancient convent, and has induced the Minister of Science and Arts

to place the beautiful cloister of the Frères Mineurs upon the list of national edifices to be protected by the state.

The historic and beautiful Forêt de Soignes, situated on the outskirts of Brussels and which forms the background of the field of Waterloo, is dear to the heart of every citizen of Belgium's capital city. Hence we can appreciate the indignation that has been excited among all lovers of the beautiful in nature by the repeated curtailments this splendid forest tract has of late suffered. Within the past few years two race tracks have been laid out in this region, at Boitsfort and at Groenendael, for each of which fifteen hectares (37 acres) of woodland have been sacrificed. In addition to this a branch railroad has been built through the forest to take passengers to one of the race tracks, and three large clearings have been made to serve as training grounds. To find some means of resisting further encroachments and, if possible, to secure the removal of the race tracks and the replanting of the forest land used for them, are the objects aimed at by a special society, "Les Amis de la Forêt de Soignes," which has been formed in Brussels.*

One of the most interesting historic buildings to be found is the Musée Plantin in Antwerp, which was purchased by the municipality of that city in 1876, and has since that time been open to the public as a museum. In this building, erected in 1576 by Christopher Plantin, one of the world's most noted printers, and occupied for 300 years by his descendants, may be seen a wonderful collection illustrating the early processes used in printing, and also a great number of rare books and engravings.

On the right bank of the Dyle, in the extreme southern part of the land of Brabant, in the midst of a wooded solitude possessing great romantic charm, rise the impressive ruins of the Cistercian Abbey of Villers. Simple and elegant in its architectural form, this structure was a very fine example of the Romanic style. The site has recently been acquired by the state, in order to preserve it from injury; and enough still remains of the church, the cloister, the refectory, etc., to give a perfectly adequate idea of the appearance of the original structure. We may hope that in case restoration

* Bulletin Trimestriel of the Société Nationale pour la Protection des Sites et des Monuments en Belgique, March, 1910, pp. 15-24.

should be attempted, the task will be performed in the right spirit, although there can be little question that for any one gifted with imagination, the ruins in their present state are more satisfactory than any restoration can possibly make them. (See Plate 45.)

Burma.

Many interesting details regarding the Burmese architectural monuments are communicated by Mr. Taw Sien Ko, Superintendent of the Archaeological Survey of Burma, at Mandalay, and most of the following data are derived from information furnished by him. It is to the combined influence of Hindu and Chinese art that the Burmese pagodas and palaces owe their peculiar and characteristic forms of outline and decoration. One of the most striking of these structures is the Shwedagon pagoda (plate 46) at Rangoon, a seaport which ranks third among those of India. Tradition states that this building stands on the site of an ancient temple dedicated to the Sule Nat, one of the potent spiritual beings venerated by the Burmese before the advent of Buddhism, and still feared and propitiated by the Burmese of the present day. This particular spirit is said to have directed the people, in 588 B. C., to a hill in which were concealed eight hairs of the Buddha, and a pagoda — the original of the present one — was erected as a shrine for the preservation of these sacred relics. The number eight finds expression in the octagonal form of this building, a fact probably attributable to Chinese influence, for the octagon, produced by joining eight straight lines facing the four cardinal points and the four intermediate points, becomes in China a symbol of the earth, the circle being the symbol of heaven. The Shwedagon pagoda has been enlarged at successive dates and the present edifice reaches a height of some 300 feet.

A less ancient structure is the Typayon pagoda at Sagaing; this was built by Narapati, King of Ava, in the fifteenth century. Recently the building has been repaired by the government and provision is to be made for properly housing a number of inscriptions on stone, which have been found in the vicinity of the pagoda.

The city of Pagan, the seat of Burmese power from the second century A. D. to the Mongol conquest in 1284, contains some remark-

able specimens of the national architecture, one of them being the Ananda pagoda (plate 47), erected in 1090 A. D. by Kyanzittha. Here South Indian influence is clearly apparent, and architects from the Dekkhan were probably employed in the construction of the building. The interior receives its light mainly from above through openings in the arched roofs of the chambers and corridors. The building is adorned with many stone sculptures illustrating the life of Gautama Buddha, and with scenes from his previous incarnations depicted on terra-cotta tiles. Enshrined within this temple are images of the four Buddhas presiding over the present world-cycle, and a statue of the founder, Kyanzittha, occupies a prominent place.

In 1144 A. D., more than fifty years after the construction of the Ananda temple, King Alaungsitha built the Thatbyinnyu pagoda, the "Temple of Omniscience," modeled after the temples of northern India. In the first two of its five terraced stories are the cells wherein dwell the Buddhist monks; the third story is entirely devoted to an immense collection of images; on the fourth floor an extensive library of Buddhist writings is housed, while from the fifth terrace rises a small pagoda in which are enshrined a number of sacred relics of the Buddhist faith. This combination of monastery and temple is no longer customary in Burma.

Mandalay, the last capital of the Burmese kingdom, contains the Arakan pagoda which was built in 1784 by King Bodawpaya to receive an especially sacred image of the Buddha, long revered by the Burmese people, and secured by the king on his conquest of Arakan. The building is of brick, but follows the style of the wooden structures so usual in Mandalay. The image of Buddha appears to be of very ancient date and offers the conventional type now so familiar to us.

The unfinished edifice known as the Mingung pagoda was erected during Bodawpaya's reign, 1781-1819. (Plate 48.) However, twenty years' labor proved insufficient to complete the building, and on the king's death work on the temple appears to have been abandoned. In 1838 it was seriously injured by an earthquake, the walls having been rent from top to bottom. The pagoda as it

now stands is 162 feet high, but this is only one-third the height of the originally-planned structure. An enormous bell destined to call the faithful to this pagoda was cast in 1790. The supports gave way during the 1838 earthquake, and the bell rested on the ground until 1896, when it was raised and suspended from an iron cross-beam; it has been placed under the special care of the Deputy Commissioner of Sagaing. This bell is the second largest in the world and weighs eighty tons, only one-third the weight of the gigantic Moscow bell, but fourteen times that of the bell of St. Paul's in London; the exterior height is twelve feet and the external diameter of the lip is sixteen feet three inches; the metal varies in thickness from six to twelve inches.

Extensive excavations have been made on the site called Yathemyo, the "City of the Hermit." Here have been found scattered over an area 400 square miles in extent, earthen ramparts, walled enclosures, pagodas, cemeteries and many sculptured stones. Of many cylindrical pagodas, in various states of preservation, the government has undertaken to conserve the most striking example, the Bawbawgyi pagoda, which appears to have been dedicated to the Sivite cult. This edifice consists of five receding terraces crowned by a dome, from the top of which rises a cone-shaped *ti*, the form suggesting a phallic emblem. The structure measures 153 feet from the ground to the top of the *ti*, and is 240 feet in circumference.

Among the wooden structures of Mandalay the monastery built in 1885 for Supayalet, the favorite queen of King Thibaw, and known as "The Queen's Golden Monastery" possesses a peculiar interest as being the last important building erected in Burma before the British occupation. (Plate 49.) This ornamental edifice, with its tall, pyramidal spires and multiple roofs, is adorned with mosaics and resplendent with gilding. In the King's palace, another elaborate wooden building, was set up the Padumasena, or "Lily throne." The former home of Burmese royalty now serves as the headquarters of the Upper Burma Club, and the remains of the throne may still be seen there. It is constructed of wood, artistically carved, and is adorned with numerous semi-circular mirrors; many symbolical figures of men and animals, once set in a number of niches, have now disappeared.

Denmark.

A very exhaustive account of the efforts made and now making in Denmark to preserve interesting and beautiful natural objects or sites, has been written by Profesor Mentz of Viborg,* and a translation appears in the serial publication of papers and addresses relating to the care of natural monuments edited by Dr. H. Conwentz.†

The protection of forest land in private hands dates from an ordinance of September 27, 1805, which is still in force. According to this, the owners of tracts covered with oak and beech trees are bound to protect their woodland not only against the inroads of domestic animals, but also against all other injury. The interest here shown in the preservation of certain species of trees appears to have been quite general, and, although the protection of natural objects and sites of beauty and interest is recent in Denmark, single trees and groups of trees were often guarded in the last century, more especially rare specimens and those having historic associations.

Of these one of the most remarkable is that called the *Konigeegen*, or "King's oak," in a forest near Frederiksbund. At a little over five feet from the ground the circumference is nearly forty-five feet, but only the broken shell of the trunk remains, and this is supported by iron rods. The space within the trunk is large enough to accommodate five horsemen. The age of this tree is difficult to determine, but the popular belief that it is a thousand years old seems not unreasonable. The *Storkeegen* (Stork oak) nearby measures about thirty-five feet around and is said to be nine hundred years old, and still another neighboring oak tree is believed to be six hundred years old. This last tree still puts forth green leaves each spring. (See Plate 50.)

One of the first who stood forth in Denmark as an advocate of the conservation of rare animal species in parks set aside for this purpose was the zoologist, Oluf Winge, in 1886. Some years earlier, in 1880, Baron A. E. Nordenskiöld had proposed the establishment of a National Park in the northern part of Denmark.

* Mentz, A. *Naturfredning saerlig i Danmark*. Udgivet af Udvalget for Naturfredning, Kopenhagen, 1909.

† "Beiträge zur Naturdenkmalpflege," ed. by H. Conwentz, Heft 4, pp. 295-326; Berlin, 1910.

Moved by the writings of Winge, the geologist, V. Pringle, urged upon the Folketing, in 1892, the advisability of making certain forest lands places of refuge for the fauna of the land.

Organized effort for the conservation of natural monuments was first started in Denmark when Dr. H. Conwentz delivered a lecture on this subject in Copenhagen, at which the Minister of Public Instruction was present. As a result of the interest aroused by this lecture, a committee of nine was formed, and in May, 1906, this committee announced its aims as follows: "To work together to the end that within the boundaries of Denmark single plants and animal forms which play a part in the nature or history of the land, as well as entire classes and groups of plants and animals, may be preserved from destruction." It was also the aim of this Commission to preserve scenes of natural beauty or such sites as were closely associated with the history of the country, "so that posterity by means of such examples might gain an idea of the earlier appearance of the land and of its aboriginal flora and fauna." All this, however, was to be done with due regard for the just requirements of material progress.

It must be borne in mind that interest in the conservation of notable natural objects has only lately been aroused in Denmark; moreover, this interest is not yet very widespread, and one of the chief efforts of the founders of this movement is to arouse such interest among the people. Nevertheless, a number of sites and objects have already been protected. Among these we may note the most imposing dune in Denmark, the Raabjærg Mile, or Studeli Mile. This lies southeast of Skagon, a mile or two distant from the station Hulsig. It rises above the plain to a height of from sixty-five to seventy-two feet; its length in the direction from north to south is about five-eighths of a mile, and its width, from west to east, about three-eighths of a mile. In size and contour it varies continually under the influence of the strong west winds, and no vegetation serves to hold its mass together. Dunes of this kind are called *miler* in Denmark. In 1901 the northern part of this dune and the surrounding land, in all about 540 acres, were acquired by the state for 1,940 *kronen*, some \$525. Another acquisition of the state is a tract of about 100 acres in the beautiful valley in Vendsyssel known as Fosdalen; this purchase was made by the Ministry of Agriculture in 1902, so that a particularly

attractive part of this picturesque valley might be preserved in its natural state.

Considerable difficulty was experienced in securing a satisfactory tract of heath for conservation. At last that known as the Borris Hede, a heath in West Jutland, covering 4,633 acres, was purchased by the state in 1903, and is to serve for the conservation of the various forms of animal and vegetable life existing there.

The island of Klægbanken in the Ringkøbinger Fjord was bought by the state in 1897 as a means of conserving various species of birds, among them the rare species of sea swallows, *sterna angelica* and *sterna cantiaca*. The work of conservation is carried out by the Ministry of Agriculture and has been successful to a considerable extent.

Erratic boulders of striking form and dimensions have also been made the objects of special care. One of these is the Damme-Sten (see plate 51), which lies about fifteen miles from Nyborg and measures nearly 150 feet in circumference. Its height is 32 feet and it is estimated to weigh over 1,000 tons. A royal decree of November 8, 1846, provided for the protection of this rock and the surrounding land. As is the case with many other isolated masses of rock, a legend is told of this boulder. A woman of Hou became so enraged at the good service rendered to sailors by the steeple of the church at Svinninge, which they used as a landmark, that she hurled this immense rock at the church; fortunately she missed her aim. Evidently this woman, or witch, had profited by the flotsam and jetsam of wrecked vessels.

A fine example of a rocking stone, situated at Bornholm, attracted, many years ago, the attention of Bishop Münster who induced the Danish chancellory to issue a decree, dated November 24, 1821, placing this stone under the protection of the local authorities. Another rocking stone on the Helledbakkerne is so delicately poised that, in spite of its weighing 35 tons, it can be easily moved by one person; this is now under the care of the Mineralogical Museum of Copenhagen.

The foregoing items selected from the paper of Professor Mentz show that the preservation of treasures with which Nature has endowed us is by no means neglected in Denmark, and proves the world-wide character of this movement, in which all nations are joined together to further the good work.

France.

In view of the artistic culture of the French, it need not surprise us that as early as 1790, on the eve of the Revolution, a decree was issued in France establishing a commission to be intrusted with the care of historic buildings and antiquities. The toils and troubles of the Revolution and the First Empire probably checked the movement, although Napoleon was by no means blind to the value of ancient monuments, as is shown by his liberal encouragement of Egyptian research. It was not, however, until 1837, when the historian, Guizot, was Minister of Public Instruction, that a satisfactory beginning was made in systematizing the care of National Monuments, a list of those more especially worthy of supervision having already been drawn up, in 1834, by Albert Lenoir, Charles Lenormant and Prosper Mérimée. This general control was not, however, very actively exercised, and it was only in 1887 that a law was enacted empowering the government to acquire historic buildings in certain cases, by condemnation or otherwise, and to effectively control all buildings registered as Historic Monuments.*

On April 21, 1906, the French Legislature passed a law called after its proposer the Beauquier Law. It provides for the formation of commissions in each department in which are contained sites or natural monuments of an artistic character. The right of expropriation is also granted on payment of suitable compensation to the owners. The proposer of this law is President of the "Société pour la Protection des Paysages de France."

The first International Congress for Scenic Preservation met in Paris, October 17, 1909, and its sessions lasted until October 20th. The President of the French Republic and several Ministers were members of the honorary committee, and M. Beauquier was chosen President of the Congress. Professor Conwentz delivered an address in French on the results attained by the movement in various countries. Several of the French speakers expressed the desire that sites or objects of geological or zoological interest should be included by the French Society in the scope of its activities.

* See Hamlin, "The Preservation and Restoration of Historic Sites and Buildings in Europe"; 7th Report of Am. Hist. and Pres. Soc., 1902, Appendix A., p. 73.

In France a law was passed, April 20, 1909, prohibiting the placing of notices, official or otherwise, on any building classed as an historic monument, or within the limits of artistic sites classified according to the provisions of the law of April 21, 1906. Permission is also given to the local authorities to extend this prohibition so that it may cover a zone extending beyond such buildings or sites. A fine of from 25 to 1,000 francs is provided for violations of this law, which applies also to the French colony, Algeria.*

German Empire.

In Germany the communal authorities have purchased certain stone-quarries, the working of which was doing serious injury to the beautiful Siebengebirge near Bonn, by opening unsightly gaps in these picturesque hills. All lovers of natural beauty will rejoice in anything done to protect the unique loveliness of the Rhine. Some of the work done by the German societies may seem rather modest when compared with large enterprises for the conservation of remarkable and striking aspects of nature, but this careful attention to small things is perhaps even more important. It not only serves to spread the love of nature over the widest possible area, but it helps to beautify the surroundings of those who may never have an opportunity to visit great natural parks or interesting historic buildings. The many German organizations devoted to Heimatsschutz (home protection), the preservation of all the little beauties of humble homes and small communities, do much to keep alive the fires of true patriotism.

During 1909 eleven new committees were constituted in Germany for the care of natural monuments, so that at present there exist twenty-nine such committees. Pamphlets have been issued by ten of these bodies, some of them being illustrated; in addition to this, various scientific societies have added the care of natural monuments to their more special activities. Moreover, a league for the furtherance of this work has been formed, having its center in Berlin, and a union for the establishment of a National Park has been founded with its seat in Stuttgart.

* Bull. Trimestr. of the Soc. Natur. pour la Protec. des Sites et des Mon. en Belgique, June, 1910, p. 30.

The advisability of introducing matter concerning the movement in school-books is generally acknowledged, and in the preface to a popular work on the flora of the neighborhood of Berlin appears an exhortation to care for the plants, and also a brief mention of the efforts now being made for the care of natural monuments.

In connection with the high-school course in Dresden an illustrated booklet has been issued regarding the preservation of local monuments.*

While there is as yet no special law in Prussia for the protection of natural monuments, a careful study of the criminal and civil codes, as well as of certain special groups of laws, reveals the presence of many paragraphs that have a direct bearing on this question. In this connection we should more especially note the law of July 15, 1907, against the disfigurement of villages and towns and of exceptionally picturesque localities, and a similar law of June 2, 1902.

The first part of the law of 1907 provides for the regulation of the form and material of new buildings for which permits are to be issued. The second part gives to cities and townships the right to enact ordinances refusing permits to build on certain historic streets or squares, when the proposed structure would be prejudicial to the general and characteristic appearance of such streets or squares. Any alteration of notable buildings tending to disfigure them may also be forbidden. Ordinances can also be enacted regulating the height, form and materials of buildings to be erected on any land forming part of a beautiful landscape, or having exceptional historic interest.

The third part of this law gives to the President of the Government Board, with the consent of the District Board, the right to decide that the usual permits to build may be refused, when the proposed building will seriously deface the landscape, if this can be avoided by erecting the building on some other spot, by a modification of the form of the proposed structure, or by the employment of some other building material than that named in the specifications. This affords a somewhat restricted protection since it does not imply an unconditional refusal of the right to build.

* Heimatschutz in Sachsen. Dresdener Volkshochschulkurse. With 74 illustrations, Leipzig, 1909.

In general it must be borne in mind that these laws do not provide for any protection of natural monuments, but simply for the prevention of any disfigurement of the landscape, or of the characteristic features of a city or village.

In the Prussian budget for 1909 an appropriation is made to cover the expenses of a permanent bureau in Berlin for the transaction of matters relating to the care of natural monuments, and large rooms have been placed at the disposal of those concerned in this movement.

Economic considerations must receive due attention before the local authorities come to a decision as to the merits of any protest against any building or improvement threatening to do injury to the beauty or scientific value of a tract of land. As a general rule the creation of any condition that offends an eye capable of appreciating formal beauty is to be forbidden.* In order to foster this appreciation among all classes of people the Minister of Agriculture, Domains and Forests has issued several decrees recommending that the subject shall be treated by high-school instructors in the course of their lectures, and illustrated lectures presenting the matter in an attractive and telling way have been given in several places, both instructors and scholars being invited to attend. Official action has also been taken tending to minimize the injuries that result from the building of roads, bridges and canals.†

Urgent representations have been made to the Prussian government to save the Grunewald Moor, near Berlin, from having its characteristic qualities destroyed by the cutting of a canal through it. The attention of the authorities was called to the fact that only rarely is a bit of primitive nature to be found in the immediate neighborhood of a great city, where it can be visited and enjoyed by the school children of the city, and the proposition that this tract, some 2,500 hectares (6,177¾ acres) in extent, should be acquired by the municipality of Berlin was earnestly recommended.‡

The building of funicular railways to facilitate the ascension of certain mountain peaks has frequently resulted in the disfigure-

* "Beiträge zur Naturdenkmalpflege," ed. by Conwentz, Vol. I, p. 66, Berlin, 1910.

† Idem. pp. 69, 73.

‡ "Beiträge zur Naturdenkmalpflege," Vol. I, pp. 135-142.

ment of the landscape; and this fact has induced the Prussian and Saxon governments to refuse permission for the building of such a railway to the Hexentanzplatz and to the Rosstrappe in the Hartz Mountains. The building of a railway of the ordinary type through the beautiful Schwartzthal in Thuringia was also prohibited by the authorities, and another route had to be chosen. Here governmental action was requisite; but in many cases better results can be secured by interesting the owners of the land in the care of natural monuments within their domains, than can be attained by having the property purchased by the government. This means of protection should only be resorted to in case of necessity.

A remarkable stalactite cave on the Stürzenberg, near Attendorn in Westphalia, was discovered in July, 1907, and was formally opened to the public on September 7, 1907. Lighted throughout by electricity and easy of access, this cave presents many of the most characteristic forms of stalactites and stalagmites, some of the former extremely thin and hollow, showing an early stage of development, while others are fully developed and combine to form the so-called "curtains" and "cascades."* This striking natural curiosity has been placed under the supervision of the authorities who will issue its preservation.

Great Britain.

General interest in the preservation of architectural monuments in England may be attributed in a large measure to the writing of A. Welby Pugin, who from 1828 began an earnest literary campaign in favor of the study and preservation of the many fine examples of Gothic architecture in the British Isles. For him this was the only truly Christian and English style of architecture, while the Renaissance style was unsparingly condemned as the production of those dominated by pagan influences. However one-sided, and, in some respects unhistorical, his view may have been, the results of Pugin's propaganda were most excellent, and his ideas, largely modified and clarified by Rickman and Brandon and developed in his own original way by Ruskin, have served not only to foster a preference for the Gothic style in England, but also

* "Beiträge zur Naturdenkmalpflege," Vol. I, pp. 148-155.

to impress the public mind with the necessity for adequately preserving the architectural beauties of that country.*

In 1885, there was founded in England a society bearing the name National Trust for Places of Historic Interest or Natural Beauty; this was recognized and given official standing by the National Trust Act of 1907. Ordinary subscribers contribute ten shillings or upward annually for the support of the society and its work is conducted by a council, one-half of which is elected by the members, the other half being chosen by various learned societies, etc. The property acquired becomes inalienable by the provisions of the act of incorporation, and the society is empowered to receive donations of land. By its instrumentality many picturesque sites have been saved from disfigurement. Among others may be named the Falls of Foyers, the Pass of Aberglaslyn and the Hill of Tara. A number of historic structures are also cared for, the Edwardian Walls of Berwick-upon-Tweed, the old Dutch mansion of Bristol, and Crosby Hall in London, being especially worthy of mention.

The National Trust secured in 1900 the passage of an ordinance extending the powers of the Commissioner of Works in the matter of preserving historic or beautiful sites or buildings, and also giving to County Councils the right of taking action in this connection. The activities of the society have chiefly concerned the properties owned by it, comprising some twenty sites of exceptional beauty and interest acquired by purchase or gift, as well as nine edifices notable for their archaeological or historic importance. As the regular annual revenues of the National Trust do not exceed four hundred and fifty pounds, it is apparent that with careful administration good results can be attained with a small sum of money; naturally, in many cases special contributions have been received when important purchases were to be made.

One of the most interesting remains of the ancient British civilization is the prehistoric camp or town built about 2,000 years ago on the summit of the Penmaenmawr Mountain, which rises almost perpendicularly from the sea coast to a height of nearly

* Hamlin. "The Preservation and Restoration of Historic Sites and Buildings in Europe," in the Seventh Annual Report of the Am. Scenic and Historic Preservation Soc., Appendix A, pp. 73-75.

1,500 feet. This mountain, situated on the Welsh coast, four and one-half miles distant from Conway and the mouth of the Conway river, is an immense mass of crystalline rock, and from its top the view reaches over a wide extent of land and sea, from Snowdon on the south to the Isle of Man, in the Irish Sea, on the north. On this commanding eminence the ancient inhabitants of the land built, some time between 500 B. C. and 100 A. D., an extensive fortified camp named Braich-y-Dinas, or "Arm of the Mountain." The greatest diameter of the enclosure is about 10,000 feet and the outer wall, constructed of stone laid in dry courses, is eight or nine feet wide, parts of it being until quite recently nine feet high. Within this wall are several others, evidently designed to afford a new line of defense should an enemy storm the main wall. Numerous small stone buildings are scattered over the enclosure and must have served as shelters for those gathered within the camp; a good supply of water was provided by a well inside the wall. However, the very exposed position of the structures indicate that this was merely a "city of refuge" to which the inhabitants of villages on or near the mountain might resort for shelter from the attack of an invader.

This summary description shows the historic value of the old camp on Penmaenmawr Mountain. Most unfortunately, little account was taken of such considerations by the English government, for in 1899 a lease for fifty-two years was granted by the government Department of Woods and Forests to a company which is now quarrying granite rock from the mountain, and the eventual destruction of this most interesting memento of ancient Britain seems to be inevitable. It is much to be regretted that the Royal Commission on Ancient Monuments in Wales and Monmouthshire was organized as recently as August, 1908, for had it existed when the quarrying company applied for and secured a lease, means might have been found to prevent this regrettable occurrence. In order to do all that is now possible, and at least to preserve a complete record of the camp, the Cambrian Society has entrusted Mr. Harold Hughes with the task of preparing plans and securing all the information that is attainable. No inscribed stones or inscriptions of any kind have been found on this site.*

* See an illustration from the *New York Times*, Sunday, Nov. 27, 1910.

A very timely and energetic protest against the erection of enormous advertising placards and signs, so placed as to interfere with the enjoyment of beautiful scenery, appears in a recent issue of the *London Times*. As a large number of these obnoxious signs advertise motor cars or their equipment, and as automobilists should be more especially interested in the protection of the beauties of the landscape and are in direct commercial relations with the builders of motor cars, and the makers of tires, etc., it is suggested that they should combine to bring pressure to bear on the houses engaged in this trade, and effectually discourage such advertising devices.

England already has an advertisement regulation act, passed in 1907, by which power is given to County Councils and other local authorities to promulgate ordinances, under the control of the Home Office, providing penalties for the exposure of disfiguring advertisements in any place visible from a highway or foot path. The act does not apparently limit the application of its provisions to the disfigurement of spots of special beauty, as it refers in general terms to "the natural beauty of the landscape;" but the Home Office seems in fact to have countenanced some such limitation. The terms of the act really cover all landscape beauties, not only such exceptionally lovely or striking scenery as is found in Wales or in the lake country; indeed, the special and peculiar charm of England's scenery consists in the attractive small villages and the quiet rural landscapes of that country.

Our *New York Times* has also devoted some space to a discussion of this subject and notes that in Rochester a huge and ugly bill board set up in one of the streets aroused the protests of some citizens, and was removed by the authorities; not, however, because of its unsightliness, but because it violated the fire laws. The *Times* insists that sensitive eyes have as much right to protection as sensitive ears, and that such glaring monstrosities should be suppressed, just as unnecessary noise is suppressed in many places.

Italy.

The protection of the art treasures and the ancient monuments of the papal states was cared for by the so-called Pacca Edicts passed in 1820. After the constitution of the Italian monarchy,

these provisions were confirmed and extended so as to cover the whole of Italy; and a later revision increases their stringency. In a Royal Commission and in the Ministry of Public Instruction is vested complete and absolute control over all buildings listed as national monuments. While there can be no difference of opinion regarding the advisability of such legislation, this strict official control has sometimes discouraged private initiative, as in the case of the recently proposed excavations at Herculaneum by an American society. In this case permission was refused, and the progress of the work will be considerably delayed in consequence of this refusal. While the Italian government thus claims and exercises sovereign authority as regards all notable buildings and collections within its domains, the priceless collections of the Vatican are under the immediate control of the Roman Curia.

Japan.

Interest has also been aroused in Japan for the movement. In 1906, Professor Miyoshi published an article upon the destruction of remarkable trees and the necessity for their preservation, and in 1907, another article treating of the conservation of natural monuments in general. The writer calls attention to the danger menacing the forest lands of Hokkaido, which are of great interest from a botanical standpoint, and he also advises the initiation of measures to preserve the species of plants and trees peculiar to Japan, even when these are on private property. While admitting that at the present stage of Japan's development the question is not an urgent one, Professor Miyoshi thinks that the time has come for an earnest discussion of it. Professor Ito, of the Botanical Institute in Tokio, reports the fencing in of a rare tree of the species *Chionanthus retusa* and prints an illustration of this tree.

New Zealand.

Active efforts to insure scenic protection and the conservation of the flora and fauna have been made in New Zealand. A notable instance of this was the formation of a committee at Christ Church for the purchase of Kapiti Island in Cook's Strait. This island offers exceptionally fine specimens of evergreen and coniferous trees, and the object in view is to make it a public reservation, where these species of trees will be carefully cultivated and preserved.

In the numerous land acts passed by various legislative assemblies in New Zealand prior to 1892, and providing for reservations of various kinds, no express mention was made of "scenery preservation," but in that year this condition received express mention. All these acts only concerned the crown lands, but in 1903, the Hon. Sir Joseph Ward, Minister in charge of the Tourist Department, brought forward a special scenery preservation act, and was able to secure its passage. This is known as the Scenery Preservation Act of 1903, and provides that the Governor shall from time to time appoint such suitable persons, not exceeding five, as he may think fit to form a commission to execute the provisions of the act. This commission is authorized to inspect lands possessing scenic or historic interest, or on which there are thermal springs, and to report the results of their inspection to the Governor, noting what lands, whether crown, private or native, should in their opinion be reserved as scenic, thermal or historic reserves. In case any of these recommendations meet the approval of the Governor, he is empowered to constitute such land a reserve under the act by proclamation. These lands then become inalienable except by special act of Parliament passed in their behalf, and no person is permitted to cut or remove timber, or in any way interfere with such lands, or damage the scenic features thereof. These lands may be fenced, preserved, and conserved for an inalienable patrimony of the people of New Zealand.

The preliminary work done by this commission was valuable, but in order to secure more definite results the act was amended in 1906, authority being vested in a permanent board of government officials, consisting of the Surveyor-General, the head of the Tourist Department, and the Commissioner of Crown Lands for each land district, who were authorized to make the requisite investigations. By the Scenery Preservation Amendment Act, 1910 (No. 55), the Under-Secretary of the Native Department was added to the commission. The results are submitted to the government for action.

The sum of 100,000 pounds was set aside by the government, to be expended from time to time in carrying out the provisions of the Scenery Preservation Act of 1903, and as a very conservative policy has been followed, the expenditures up to March, 1910,

only amount to 33,344 pounds, leaving 66,656 pounds still available from the original credit.*

The Scenery Preservation Act of 1908 (No. 172), defines and extends some of the provisions of the act of 1903. Section six provides that where the land recommended to be reserved by the board is crown land, the Governor may declare the same to be a reserve by proclamation. Where, however, it is private land, it may be acquired as a "public work" under the Public Works Act of 1908, and the land so taken shall be deemed to be a reservation under this act.

An important provision of the act is contained in section fourteen which reads as follows: "Every person who, being the owner or occupier of any land adjoining any reserve under this act, lights or permits to be lighted upon his land a fire which spreads into and destroys any bush on or seriously damages such reserve, is liable to a fine not exceeding one hundred pounds, and shall in addition be liable to pay for all damage done." The same penalty may be exacted from any one who lights a fire on any of the reserves, or who cuts or removes therefrom any timber or brush, as well as from every person who in any way interferes with or damages the scenic or historic features of a reservation.

The Scenery Preservation Amendment Act, 1910 (No. 55), in the case of reserves established on "native lands" (territory which had been occupied by or reserved for the natives), provides that the Governor shall be empowered to "grant to natives the right to take or kill birds, not for the time being specially protected;" and where ancestral burial grounds already existed, the natives are to be privileged to make new interments. Authority is also given to the Governor to exchange crown land for private land of approximately equal value, the difference to be received or paid by the government being limited to ten per cent.

While those who desire to use the land for agricultural or other practical purposes are inclined to resist the setting aside of large areas as scenic reserves, tourists and visitors urge that all beautiful pieces of scenery should be preserved, and deplore as vandalism the sacrifice of sentimental considerations to the advantage and

* Dept. of Lands, report on Scenery Preservation for the year 1909-10, Wellington, 1910, p. 2.

profit of settlers. It has always been the aim of the New Zealand authorities to reconcile as far as possible these divergent interests and it has never been their policy to unduly or unreasonably restrict the area available for agricultural or pastoral uses.

The large National Parks of New Zealand have not been constituted under the scenery preservation acts we have noted, but by special enactment or proclamation. They are as follows:

	Acres.
Egmont (reserved by "The Egmont National Park Act," 1900)	79,922
Tongariro (reserved by "The Tongariro National Park Act," 1894)	62,280
Hooker Glacier (reserved in New Zealand Gazette, June 26, 1890, p. 741)	38,000
Tasman Park (Mount Cook) (New Zealand Gazette, July 28, 1887, p. 1008)	97,800
Arthur's Pass (New Zealand Gazette, Oct. 24, 1901, p. 2034)	150,000
Otira Gorge (New Zealand Gazette, Oct. 24, 1901, p. 2034)	17,000
Sounds (New Zealand Gazette, Feb. 23, 1905, p. 544)	2,326,200
	<hr/>
	2,771,202
	<hr/>

In New Zealand, the Government owns 2,400 miles of railway and all the principal pleasure resorts and spas in the Colony. Through the Government Tourist and Health Resorts Department it controls some of the grandest scenic routes in the world, conducts hotels and accommodation-houses in certain localities for the convenience of travelers and runs its own steamers and pleasure boats. An idea of the scenery may be had from plates 53, 54, and 55, representing Mitre Peak, Lake Ada and Mount Cook, respectively, which are reproduced from an official publication of the Government Department of Tourist and Health Resorts. From the official reports of the Government's Scenery Preservation Commission we reproduce the pictures of Sandstone Rock at the entrance of the Mokau River (plate 56), the Limestone Rocks at Waru (plate 57) and Te Reinga Falls (plate 58), which are recommended for preservation.

Norway and Sweden.

In Norway, N. Wille, Professor of Botany in the University of Christiania, has published an address delivered before the Geographical Society of that city, on natural monuments and their preservation.* This address led to the formation of a commission for the care of such monuments in Norway. Sweden also is represented in this movement by a small illustrated work from the pen of K. Starback on the care of natural objects.†

The efforts of the Norwegian commission were soon crowned with success, for a law was passed by the Storting on July 25, 1910, providing for the protection of rare plants and animal species and geological or mineralogical forms, whenever and wherever the Sovereign shall deem such protection necessary from a scientific or historic standpoint. The rules and regulations for carrying out this purpose in each particular case are left to the discretion of the King or of his duly appointed representatives. Special privileges for scientific research may be accorded to institutions or individuals. In case the value of private property should be diminished through the operation of the regulations decreed, the owners have the right to demand compensation, the amount of this being determined by mutual agreement, or should this fail, by legal arbitration. Fines are to be imposed upon any one transgressing the regulations, and the possessors of any objects that have been secured in contravention of the rules may be required to give them up or to pay their value.

The following is a translation of the text of this law:

Law for the protection of natural objects, dated July 25, 1910.

No. 1.

The King may decide that certain natural objects or certain sites shall be protected, when this appears to be necessary to guard wild plant and animal species, geological or mineralogical forms, whose preservation will be of scientific or historic interest.

No. 2.

The special rules, regarding what acts shall be forbidden within

* Wille, N. Om Naturens Mindesmærker og deres bevarelse. Norske Geografiske selskabs Aarbog. Kristiania, 1909.

† Starbäck, K. Naturskydd. Skogsvårdsforeningens Folksrifter, No. 18, Stockholm, 1909.

the protected territory, or concerning the protected objects, shall be given by the King in connection with each decree of protection.

The King, or his chosen representative, shall determine the exceptions to be made in the regulations for protection, in the case of special institutions or persons, for the undertaking of investigations or work in the interest of science.

No. 3.

In case a decree of protection only refers to one or several special properties or special objects, and the arrangements for the carrying out of the protection will cause detriment, damage, or injury to the owners, users, or neighbors, these have a claim for compensation from the government, which compensation, if amicable adjustment fails, shall be determined by appraisal. Such appraisal shall be carried out in agreement with the rules in No. 3 of the law concerning enforced cession of land for farm roads etc., of July 27, 1896.

No. 4.

In case a protected property, because of the protection, shall diminish essentially in value, the owner may claim the proceeds from the government, according to amicable adjustment, or this failing, according to legal appraisal. The indications regarding the extent to which the value of the property shall be looked upon as essentially diminished by the protection shall be determined by legal appraisal.

If the property is attached or encumbered, the amount of the compensation, in so far as the consent of all concerned may not have been secured to its payment, shall not be paid before it has been determined, by legal arbitration, who is entitled to receive it.

Should the ceded property be used by another, the owner is bound to make good to him the legal rental, from the amount, for the period of his *usufruct*.

No. 5.

In case the regulations for protection concern only one or several special properties, they shall be duly proclaimed and shall also be made known by placarding according to the special decree of the King, and by publication in one or several of the local papers.

The King, or his chosen representative, shall determine what arrangements shall be taken to mark the protected property, or the object to be protected, as well as for fencing-in or the like.

No 6.

Whoever shall violate the regulations in connection with this law, or shall aid and abet such violation, shall be punished by fine whereby objects which anyone has taken or possesses, or their value, shall be yielded up by the culprit.

Switzerland.

The Third Annual Report of the Swiss Commission, for the Preservation of Natural Objects has appeared,* and contains a number of decrees concerning the protection of plant forms. In connection with the commission a league has been formed which can be joined by any one on payment of one franc. The principal aim of this league is the establishment of reservations to ensure the adequate protection of natural monuments.

The Swiss "Vereinigung für Heimatschutz" occupies itself with the preservation and improvement of beautiful sites and scenes, as well as with the conservation of old buildings and other monuments. One of the chief aims of this association is to oppose the disfigurement of the landscape by ugly buildings and, as far as possible, it works to prevent the injury resulting from the building of railroads, public roads, etc. The work of the Schweizerische Naturschutzkommission, on the other hand, is directed toward the preservation of all the aspects of primeval nature, and hence to the furtherance of an international movement for the conservation of all forms of animal and plant life.

In the Canton Graubunden, Switzerland, a law for the protection of certain wild plants was adopted by a large majority of the popular vote, on October 31, 1909. Digging out or pulling up such plants as well as offering them for sale or sending them out of the canton, is forbidden, and the different communities are instructed to impose fines ranging from two to one hundred francs for each violation of the law. Half of the fine goes to the denouncer. An exception is made in the case of a single specimen taken for scientific or scholastic purposes.

A National Park of somewhat restricted area has been established recently in Switzerland. The territory so far acquired covers about twenty-five square kilometers, or in the neighborhood

* Drifter Jahresbericht der Schweizerischen Naturschutzkommission für 1908-9. Verhandlungen der Schweizerischen Naturforschenden Gesellschaft. 92d annual collection, Vol. II. Lausanne, 1909.

of 6,400 acres, and embraces the wildly romantic Val Chuoza in the region of the lower Engadine. It was leased January 1, 1910, for a term of twenty-five years by the community of Zernaz to the Naturschutzkommission of Lausanne, at an annual rental of 1,400 francs (\$280). The commission plans to extend this reservation eventually by adding to it the Val Tantermozza and the left bank of the Spöl. A suitable building is to be erected for the watchman whose duty it will be to guard the reservation from the depredations of poachers, and also to note down daily, during the season from June 1 to October 1, anything worthy of remark that he may see touching the fauna and flora of the region. A curious paragraph in the contract with the community of Zernaz provides that the commission shall indemnify the neighbors of the park lands for any damage done by bears inhabiting the reservation. As this tract is on the Italian boundary, the Italian authorities have been approached with the request that they contribute an Italian reservation on the other side of the boundary line. There is good reason to expect that the Swiss commission will also acquire another tract, covering a part of Val Searl, within the limits of the community of Schuls, under conditions similar to those governing the acquisition of Val Chuoza.*

Turkey.

Even the old regime in Turkey was not altogether unmindful of the duty to preserve the relics of the past. In 1848, Sultan Abdul Mejid allotted a large sum of money to cover the expense of repairing the great mosque of Constantinople, the Hagia Sophia, erected by Emperor Justinian in the sixth century, and the scene of Sultan Mohammed's triumphant ride up to the high altar on May 29, 1453, after the fall of Constantinople, when he dedicated this Christian church to the service of Allah. Provision has also been made by the Turkish government, on granting permission to excavate for antiquities, that a portion of the objects found should be deposited in Constantinople, where, however, they were hardly given the care that they deserved. It remains to be seen whether the young Turks will improve upon the methods of their predecessors in this respect.

* Schweizerische Naturschutzkommission, Fourth Annual Report, 1909-10; reprinted from the "Verhandlungen der Schweiz. Naturforschenden Gesellschaft," 93d Annual Meeting, Basel, 1910, Vol. II.



APPENDIX K.

MAIDEN LANE, NEW YORK.

AN ILLUSTRATION OF HOW ERRORS IN HISTORY ARE
CORRECTED AND INSCRIPTIONS VERIFIED.

BY ALBERT ULMANN.

Author of "A Landmark History of New York," Etc.

MAIDEN LANE, NEW YORK.

AN ILLUSTRATION OF HOW ERRORS IN HISTORY ARE CORRECTED
AND INSCRIPTIONS VERIFIED.

By Albert Ulmann, author of "A Landmark History of New York," etc.

A few years ago a Committee on Sites and Inscriptions was selected by the American Scenic and Historic Preservation Society to determine the correctness of inscriptions intended for historical tablets.* This action was brought about by the frequency with which organizations more enthusiastic than exact perpetrated metallic blunders that once committed were exceedingly difficult to eradicate. Sites and dates were often lightly treated and traditions accepted without any attempt at investigation. The result was a confusion of historical data that threatened to become a formidable fund of misinformation. This tendency has been effectively checked and all inscriptions are now subjected to a painstaking and exhaustive examination before they receive the certification of the historical committee.

A recent instance of the thoroughness of the investigation and the methods employed in ascertaining the facts may prove of interest. The inscription submitted was for a tablet intended to be erected in Maiden Lane, New York City, and was expressed in the following phraseology:

MAIDEN LANE.

Called 'T Maagde Paatje in the Days of
New Amsterdam. Being a Rural Path
Beside a Stream Still Marked by the
Curved Line of the Present Street.
Known as Green Lane During the Early
English Period. Laid out as a Street in
1691. Officially called Maiden Lane in
1695. Began to assume the Character of
a Jewelry District about 1840.

* This committee consists of Mr. Reginald Pelham Bolton, Dr. Edward H. Hagan, Mr. Francis Whiting Halsey, Mr. Samuel Verplanck Hoffman, and the writer.

Out of the five important statements contained in this short paragraph practically every one except the last was to a greater or less extent called in question.

In the first place a doubt arose owing to the point made by a local historian of high standing as to the assertion that the name was of Dutch origin. This uncertainty was caused by the fact that in a number of instances the English, when they took possession of New Amsterdam, substituted names of London streets for those originally bestowed by the Dutch authorities. The discovery that maps of London of the corresponding period exhibited a Maiden Lane certainly gave color to the likelihood of the English source of the name. This argument was strengthened furthermore by the unusual combination — Maiden Lane.

It thereupon became necessary to examine the Dutch records. These exist in the form of the Minutes of the Court of the Burgomasters and Schepens, 1653-'74, preserved in the library at the City Hall. A translation by Berthold Fernow is also available which contains, besides the text, an extensive index. No mention appeared in this index of Maiden Lane. In one of Valentine's Manuals, however, an item was found containing an account of the trial, in 1661, of an individual for stealing cabbages from the premises of a citizen who lived in Maiden Lane. Fortunately the name of the citizen was discovered in the index and directly the court proceedings in the text. In the course of the trial the prisoner was asked:

"Did you steal, more than a month ago, a quantity of cabbages at the house of one Peter Jansen, ship carpenter, residing at the entrance of Maiden Lane ('t maagde paatje), when you were caught and overtaken by the watch?"

This, of course, settled all doubt as to the Dutch origin of the romantic designation of the old thoroughfare. It was certainly a happy circumstance, from an historical point of view, that the culprit elected to steal Maiden Lane cabbages.

The next statement, namely, that the Lane was known as Green Lane during the early English period now came up for consideration. No evidence appeared at first to substantiate the identity of Green Lane and Maiden Lane. The allusions found in the usual works of reference failed to make clear that the two names were

in any way related. Attention was thereupon directed to original and authoritative sources. This involved a search of real estate transfers in the books of record in the Register's office, and here, happily, a valuable discovery was made.

It appeared that in 1694 some one sold a piece of property described as "a certaine Lot without the Stockadoes bounded on the northward with a lane leading from the Broadway to the Smiths Fly, usually called the Maiden or Green Lane." Greatly pleased, no doubt, would have been the lawyer of 1694 could he have witnessed the joy with which his description was pounced upon by the eager historian of 1911. Not only was the identity of the two names thus absolutely fixed, but the fact established that they were used concurrently. The use of the two names suggested, and would seem to justify, the supposition that the English tried to supplant the older designation by imposing that of Green Lane, that the two had a sort of battle royal for supremacy, and that Maiden Lane finally won the honor of maintaining the old traditions of the picturesque Dutch locality.

Now, as to the laying out of the street in 1691. The "stockadoes" along the route of the present Wall street prevented the town from extending as rapidly as it would have done otherwise. As a matter of fact the wooden wall compressed the settlement below the absurd line of defence until the pressure of increasing population forced the erection of habitations beyond it. This eventually changed the rural character of the contiguous district, and in 1691 led the authorities to lay out Maiden Lane as a street. Several subsequent references appear in the records containing orders for "ye more regular making of Maiden Lane." These efforts to straighten out the curve that characterizes the thoroughfare and bring it into line with adjacent streets, owing no doubt to the slope of the land along the course of the old stream, never met with success.

While the establishment of the street was thus verified, no authority was discovered for the statement that it was officially named Maiden Lane in 1695 or any other time. In fact, the real estate transaction already referred to and duly recorded in the official minutes indicated recognition of the name on the part of the authorities before that date, and the inference is justified,

from the character of the expression used, that the name had received sanction for a number of years. The statement concerning the official naming of the street was therefore rejected.

The inscription, in view of the conclusion arrived at, was thereupon recast and worded as follows:

MAIDEN LANE.

Called 'T Maagde Paatje in the Days of New Amsterdam. Being a Rural Path Beside a Stream. Still marked by the Curved Line of the Present Street Known during the Early English Period Both as Green Lane and Maiden Lane Laid out as a Street in 1691. Began to Assume the Character of a Jewelry District about 1840.

As such the text was approved by the Committee Sites and Inscriptions (as recorded on page 87 of this Annual Report), and references to the data substantiating the legend which will presently form the essential feature of a bronze tablet have been placed on file.

INDEX.

[591]

INDEX.

- Adams, Abigail, 110.
 Adams, Charles Francis, 109.
 Adams, Edward D., trustee, 10.
 Adams, George Burton, 114.
 Adams, Henry Carter, 114.
 Adams, John, 111.
 Adams, John Quincy, 111.
 Adams, Samuel, 109.
 Adirondacks, confused ownership,
 196, park, 209.
 Agassiz, Louis, 111.
 Ahms, Mrs. Frederick H., 532.
 Ahrents, Stephen D., 98.
 Albany Institute, 19.
 Albany Post Road, 398.
 Alcott, Louisa May, 110.
 Alderman, E. A., 113.
 Alexander, Archibald, 108.
 Alexander, De Alva S., Niagara Falls
 bill, 161.
 Alexander family, 315.
 All Angels Church, New York, origin,
 443-445.
 Allegheny college, 113.
 Alleghany Mountains, 387.
 Allen, Victor M., 129.
 Allerdice, William W., 138.
 American Museum of Natural His-
 tory, 62, 68, 233, 252, 359, 360.
 American Republics, International
 Union of, see International Union.
 American Scenic and Historic Preser-
 vation Society Officers, 9; Trustees,
 10; Committees, 11; charter, 13;
 aims, 16; results, 17; gifts by
 members, 18; financial support, 18;
 demand for Annual Reports, 19;
 commended by individuals and in-
 stitutions, 18-20; finances, 20;
 residuary legatee of William P.
 Letchworth, 45; public meetings,
 61; some accomplishments, 18, 206.
 objects outlined by Dr. Kunz, 240;
 conducts Fourth of July exercises
 at City Hall, 266.
 Ames, Louis A., 263, 264, 286.
 Amherst College, 114.
 Annabel, Mrs. M. P., 44.
 Andre, John, monument, 61.
 Andrews, Charles M., 114.
 Angell, James B., 113.
 Arnold, John D., gift toward secur-
 ing Harriman Park, 116, 376.
 Appalachian Forest Reserve bill
 passed 212, preparations for pur-
 chasing land, 216.
 Appalachian Mountains, 387.
 Apthorp's Lane, see Bloomingdale
 New Cross Road.
 Arboretums, at Letchforth Park and
 elsewhere, 46.
 Argentine Republic, scenic and his-
 toric conservation, 556.
 Arnold, Bion J., city improvement,
 530.
 Arsenal Building in Central Park,
 New York, 437.
 Asbury, Francis, 110.
 Ashley, Clarence D., 112.
 Astor, John Jacob, 110.
 Atkins, T. Astley, quoted, 103.
 Audubon, John James, 111.
 Australia, scenic and historic con-
 servation, 557.
 Austria, scenic and historic conserva-
 tion, 559.
 Ayres, Edward E., 231.
 Bache, Alexander D., 109.
 Bache, Sarah, 110.
 Babcock, Samuel D., incorporator, 13.
 Bacon, Henry S., 50, 56, 59.
 Baer, Philip, 223.
 Bailey, Liberty H., Trustee, 10; on
 Letchworth Park Committee, 11;
 Watkins Glen Committee, 12; repre-
 sents Society at Conservation Con-
 gress, 203, 204; connection with
 Letchworth Park, 238; speaks at
 dedication of Jemison statue, 256;
 examines Central Park, 482.
 Baines-Griffiths, D., 293.
 Baird, Spencer F., 109.
 Baker, George F., gift toward secur-
 ing Harriman Park, 116, 376.
 Baker, William F., 278.
 Ballinger, Richard A., advises unified
 administration of National Parks
 and Monuments, 196, 197.
 Balliet, Thomas M., 112.
 Baltimore parks, 513.
 Bancroft, George, in Hall of Fame,
 108, 112; helps Central Park, 465.
 Bannister, Daniel W., 231.
 Barnard, George G., 532.
 Barnett, Charles, helps protect Cen-
 tral Park, 482.

- Barney, Mrs. E. E., gives historic ground at Jamestown, Va., 536.
 Barney, W. G., 42.
 Barra, F. L. de la, at International Union of American Republics, 497.
 Barrett, John, Director of Bureau of American Republics, 493, 496.
 Barrett, Nathan F., 367.
 Baxter, Sylvester, initiates park extensions, 513.
 Bayne, Howard R., 123, 368.
 Beaman, Charles C., incorporator, 13.
 Bear Mountain prison site, 116; conveyed to Palisades Park Commission, 122, 367; scene at, *plate*, 15.
 Beardsley, W. J., 368.
 Beatty, John H., Superintendent of Central Park, 483.
 Beauchamp, William M., 48.
 Beaumont, William, 109.
 Beauquier, Mons., President of International Congress for Scenic Preservation, 568.
 Beecher, Henry Ward, 111.
 Beecher, Lyman, 108.
 Beckman, Henry R., Park Commissioner, 476.
 Belgium, narrow-minded legislation, 20; scenic and historic conservation, 560; and *plates*, 43, 44, 45.
 Fell, Edward, Park Commissioner, 476.
 Belmont, August, Park Commissioner, 475.
 Bemis, James D., 231.
 Bennett, Miss Carlenia, 254, 259.
 Bennington battlefield, bill to preserve, 129.
 Bentley Manor, 96.
 Benton, Guy P., 113.
 Benton, Thomas H., 109.
 Berry, Joseph I., Park Commissioner, 476.
 Bigelow, Asa, 122.
 Bigelow, John, birthplace, 122; writes Fourth of July letter about City Hall, 266, 272; birthplace, *plate* 16.
 Bigelow, Poultney, 122.
 Bigger, Leander A., complainant in Colorado scenic beauty case, 173.
 Bill boards, see Signs.
 Billings, John S., 114.
 Billopp, Christopher, 96, 124.
 Billopp family, 97.
 Billopp House in Tottenville, 97; bill to preserve, 123.
 Bishop, Caroline, 43, 45, 251, 258.
 Bissinger, Philip, Park Commissioner, 475.
 Bixby, William K., 231.
 Blackmar, Frank W., 114.
 Blaine, James Gillespie, 109; initiates co-operation of American Republics, 493.
 Blair, James, 110.
 Blatchford, Richard M., Park Commissioner, 475.
 Blood, Mary J., 44.
 Bloomingdale New Cross Road, 399, 446.
 Bloomingdale Road, 399, 446.
 Bloor, A. J., concerning Central Park, 468.
 Boiling Springs High School, 19.
 Boland, William A., 58.
 Bolton, Reginald P., Trustee, 10; on Sites and Inscriptions Committee, 11, 587; speaks on Manhattan archaeology, 64; on Greeley Centennial Committee, 65; locates Fort No. 4, 303.
 Boone, Daniel, 109.
 Booth, Edwin, 109.
 Borden, M. C. D., Park Commissioner, 476.
 Borglum, Gutzon, defends Central Park, 482; sculpture, 494.
 Boston, Mass. parks, 513 and *plate* 32.
 Bosworth, Wm. W., 428.
 Bourne, Henry E., 114.
 Bowdoin College, 113.
 Bowditch, Nathaniel, 109.
 Boyle, A. C. Jr., 359.
 Boyle, David, 48.
 Boynton, W. R., 42.
 Buttons, regimental, 64.
 Brackett, Edgar T., 128.
 Bradford, William, 110.
 Bradley, S. W., 25.
 Bradstret, Anne, 110.
 Bradstret, Howard, 263.
 Brady, John J., Park Commissioner, 476.
 Brainerd, David, 108.
 Brant, Joseph, 130.
 Brantley, Theodore, 115.
 Breaux, Joseph A., 115.
 Brewster, William, 110.
 Bridgman, Herbert L., Trustee, 10; on Greeley Centennial Committee, 65; Grand Canyon Committee, 184.
 Bridgman, R. L., poem on Watkins Glen, 136.
 Briggs, Charles F., consultant as to Central Park, 465.
 Britton, N. L., examines Central Park, 482.
 Brooklyn Standard-Union quoted, 18.
 Brooks, Maria Gowen, 110.
 Brooks, Phillips, 108, 112.

- Brower, George V., Park Commissioner, 476.
 Brown, Francis, 113.
 Brown, Glenn, on development of Washington, D. C., 508.
 Brown, John, 169.
 Brown, Marshall S., 112.
 Brown, Stuart, consultant as to Central Park, 465.
 Brown University, 113.
 Brummer, Leon, 113.
 Brunner, Arnold W., on civic improvements, 501, 530.
 Brush, George J., 114.
 Bryan, William J., 114.
 Bryant, Joseph D., 112.
 Bryant, William C., 232.
 Bryant, William Cullen, in Hall of Fame, 108, 112; helps Central Park, 465.
 Bryce, James, negotiates treaty with United States, 150, 159, 160.
 Bryn Mawr College, 114.
 Buckley, James M., 114.
 Buckmaster, George, 73.
 Buehendorf, Joseph, 44.
 Buffalo, N. Y. Parks, 522.
 Buffalo Charity Organization Society, 44.
 Buffalo Children's Aid Society, 44.
 Buffalo Fine Arts Academy, 44.
 Buffalo General Hospital, 44.
 Buffalo Historical Society, 44, 231.
 Buffalo Hospital of Sisters of Charity, 44.
 Buffalo Society of Natural Sciences, 44.
 Bull, William L., incorporator, 13.
 Bureau of American Republics, see International Union of American Republics.
 Burchard, Lewis S., 263.
 Bureau Brothers, 244, 251.
 Burgess, Edward S., 19.
 Burgess, John W., 114.
 Burke, Mary Ann, 44.
 Burma, scenic and historic conservation, 562; and *plates*, 46-49.
 Burnham, Daniel H., city planning, 501, 508.
 Burr, Aaron, water company, 75.
 Burr, George L., 114.
 Burton, Theodore E., Niagara Falls bill, 161, act of 1906 extended, 163.
 Bushnell, Horace, 108.
 Butler, William A., incorporator, 13.
 Bush, George H., 42.
 Bush, Brown, H. K., Trustee, 10; on Stony Point Committee, 12; models Jemison statue, 49, 233, 235, 244, 250; on Grand Canyon Committee, 184; biographical sketch, 245; letter read at dedication of Jemison statue, 254.
 Bush, Robert P., 130.
 Butler, Mary M., on Manor Hall Committee, 12.
 Butterworth, John F., Central Park Commissioner, 465, 475.
 Buttons, regimental, 64.
 Buttz, Henry A., 113.
 Calhoun, John C., 109.
 California Parks, 507.
 Cameron, Ralph H., Grand Canyon railroad bill, 189.
 Calver, W. L., archæological researches, 64, 303.
 Campbell, Alexander, 110.
 Canby, William M., examines Central Park, 482.
 Carbonic gas, artificial extraction, 140.
 Carmody, Thomas, 50.
 Carnegie, Andrew, 114, mentioned by John Bigelow, 274; gives building for International Union of American Republics, 493; presented with gold medal, 497; speaks, 497, 498; medal presented by American Republics *plate*, 28.
 Carnegie, Mrs. Andrew, 498.
 Carnegie Institution, 114.
 Carpenter, Thomas, 73.
 Carrere, John M., 501.
 Cartwright, Peter, 108.
 Cascade Town Co. vs. Empire Water and Power Co., 54, 173.
 Catholic University, 114.
 Cary, Alice, 110.
 Cary, Phebe, 110.
 Cazerie, Gaston de Formanoir de la, 20.
 Cayuga County Historical Society, 48.
 Central Park, New York City, history of 379; for detailed references see under New York City Parks, Central Park.
 Chamberlin, G. Howard, 59.
 Channing, Edward, 114.
 Channing, William Ellery, 111.
 Chaos, literary magazine, 131.
 Charleston, S. C. parks, 535.
 Chase, Salmon Portland, 109.
 Chicago, Ill., parks, 508.
 Chicago University, 48.
 Chichen-Itza, 63.
 Chidwick, John P., 113.
 Childs, George William, 109.
 Choate, Joseph H., 115.
 Choate, Rufus, 109.
 Church, Frederick E., Park Commissioner, 475.
 Church, Frederick Edwin, 109.

- Cincinnati, O., parks, 532.
 City History Club of New York, 87, 427, 428, 528.
 City Parks, 208.
 City planning, 501.
 Clark, Alvan, 109.
 Clark, Cyrus, reminiscence about Central Park, 460.
 Clark, John S., 48.
 Clark, George Rogers, 109.
 Clark, Walter, 115.
 Clausen, George C., Park Commissioner, 476.
 Clay, Henry, 111.
 Cleveland, O., parks, 532; buildings, 501.
 Clement, S. M., 42.
 Clermont, home, 315, 326; steamboat, 325.
 Cleveland, Grover, 16.
 Cleveland, H. W. S., 168.
 Cleveland, Parker, 109.
 Clinton, De Witt, 55, 73, 109.
 Clinton, George W., 55.
 Clute, John A., on Watkins Glen Committee, 12.
 Cochran, Alex S., gift for restoration of Manor Hall, 60.
 Cochran, Mrs. Wm. F., gift for restoration of Philipse Manor Hall, 59, 60.
 Colborne, Arthur W., 266, 278.
 Cole, Mortimer N., 42.
 Colorado Springs, Col., parks, 208.
 Colorado decision re scenic beauty, see Cascade Town Company, etc.
 Columbia University, 20, 50, 64, 84, 114, 276, 357, 358, 384.
 Condit, D. D., 359.
 Conover, Samuel, Park Commissioner, 475.
 Conservation of Natural Resources, 203; National Conservation Congress, 203; report of this Society, 204; appreciation of National Conservation Commission, 204; two-fold appeal of every object, 205; scenery an asset, 206; interrelation of scenery and natural resources, 210; co-operation between forest and water officials, 210.
 Conservation of Scenic and Historic objects; with natural resources, 205; scenery an asset, 206; interrelation with natural resources, 210.
 Converse, Harriet M., 295.
 Conwentz, H., on scenic and historic conservation, 556, 565, 566, 568, 571.
 Cookinham, Henry J., incorporator, 13.
 Connor, John F., 58.
 Contract work, correspondence with Comptroller, 34.
 Cooley, James E., Central Park Commissioner, 465, 475.
 Cooper, James Fenimore, 108, 112.
 Cooper, Peter, 111.
 Copley, John Singleton, 109.
 Corcoran, William W., 109.
 Corlis, George Henry, 109.
 Cornell University, 19, 33, 114, 203, 238.
 Cornplanter, medal, 48; portrait, 232; successor, 251.
 Country life, address by L. H. Bailey, 256.
 Cox, Helena, 308.
 Craig Colony, 41.
 Crane, Alex. B., incorporator, 13.
 Crawford, Thomas, 109.
 Crawford, William H., 113.
 Cret, Paul P., 493.
 Crimmins, John D., Park Commissioner, 475; defends Central Park, 485.
 Crocket, David, 109.
 Croes, Helen R., on Manor Hall Committee, 12.
 Cromwell, George, 263.
 Croton Water, 434; reservoirs in Central Park, 434-437.
 Cruger, S. V., incorporator, 13.
 Cruger, S. V. R., Park Commissioner, 476.
 Crumbie, Frank R., on Tappan Committee, 12.
 Cunningham, Richard, 73.
 Curtis, George William, 108.
 Cushing, Thomas, 109.
 Cushman, Charlotte Saunders, 110.
 Cushman, James S., Treasurer of Mayor's Fourth of July Committee, 263, 264, 286, 287.
 Cutler, Manasseh, 109.
 Dabney, Charles W., 113.
 Dabney, Richard H., 114.
 Dana, Charles A., incorporator, 13; consultant as to Central Park, 465.
 Dana, James D., 384.
 Dana, Paul, Park Commissioner, 476.
 Dana, William B., 367.
 Dare, Eleanor, 110.
 Darling, Susan P., 43.
 Daughters of the American Revolution, 86, 130, 268.
 Davidson, Henry P., 263.
 Davidson, James H., bill to establish Bureau of National Parks, 198.
 Davis, Gherardi, 263.
 Davis George S., 263.
 Davis, John W., 293.

- Day, James R., 113.
 Decatur, Stephen, 109.
 Deering, James A., 402.
 De Kalb, John, 110.
 Delafield, Joseph L., 263, 264, 286;
 author of biography of Chancellor
 Livingston, 63, 313.
 Delavan, D. B., Trustee, 10.
 Dellenbaugh, Frederick S., on Grand
 Canyon Committee, 184; calls on
 President Taft, 185; signs letter
 to him, 186.
 Denmark, scenic and historic conser-
 vation, 565; and *plates*, 50, 51.
 Depew, Chauncey M., incorporator,
 13.
 Delaware, gift of state road by Gen.
 Dupont, 169.
 De Peyster, Frederick J., incorporator,
 13.
 De Ronde, Abram, 367, 368.
 Devoe, Frederick W., incorporator,
 13.
 De Voor's Mill-stream, 393.
 Dewey, D. M., 232.
 Dickey, Charles H., 368.
 Dickinson, Charles, 73.
 Dickinson, Emily, 110.
 Dillon, Robert J., promotes Central
 Park 461; Commissioner, 465, 475.
 Dinosaur, at Fort Lee, N. J., see
 Phytosaur.
 Dix, Dorothea, 110.
 Dix, John A., 126; vetoes Saratoga
 battlefield bill, 129; proposes use
 of convicts in forestry, 211.
 Dix, Morgan, incorporator, 13.
 Dodge, Cleveland H., gift toward se-
 curing Harriman Park, 117, 376.
 Dodge, Wm. E., 294.
 Dogs in Central Park, New York,
 442.
 Dolliver, Jonathan P., 115.
 Douglas, James, suggests Grand Can-
 yon boulevard, 190; mentioned,
 294.
 Douglass, Isaac S., 73.
 Dow, Albert G., 238.
 Dow, Charles M., Trustee, 10; on
 Letchworth Park Committee, 11;
 pallbearer at W. P. Letchworth's
 funeral, 42; proposes arboretum at
 Letchworth Park, 46; at hearing
 on Portage dam, 50; on Conserva-
 tion Committee, 203; Park Commis-
 sioner, 208; presides at dedication
 of Jemison statue, 235; address,
 235; President of Niagara Falls
 Commission, 242; supervises model-
 ing of Jemison statue, 250; de-
 velops Jamestown parks, 522.
 Dowling, Frank L., 263.
 Downing, Andrew J., 449, 452.
 Drake, Joseph Rodman, Park in New
 York, 85; before improvement,
plate, 85; after improvement, *plate*,
 86.
 Draper, Andrew S., 65.
 Draper, John W., 110.
 Drew Theological Seminary, 113.
 Drake, Joseph Rodman, 85.
 Dudley, H. A., 258.
 Dumbleton, James, 44.
 Duniway, Clyde A., 113.
 Du Pont, T. Coleman, gift of state
 road to Delaware, 169.
 Durfee, Henry R., incorporator, 13.
 Dwight, Timothy, 108.
 Dyckman, Jacob, tavern, 405.
 Dyer, Mary, 110.
 Eads, James B., 109.
 Eastman, Mary, 167.
 Edmunds, George F., 115.
 Edwards, Jonathan, 111.
 Edmondson, Thomas W., 113.
 Eliot, Charles W., 20, 115.
 Eliot, John, 110.
 Elliott, Charles W., Central Park,
 Commissioner, 465, 467, 475.
 Elliott, Walter G., Park Commis-
 sioner, 474.
 Ellsworth, Oliver, 109.
 Emerson, Ralph Waldo, 111.
 Ely, Smith, Park Commissioner, 476.
 Empire State Society, S. A. R., 87.
 Empire Water and Power Co., de-
 fendant, 173.
 Ericsson, John, 110.
 Erwin, Frank A., 112.
 Essex County, N. J. parks, 521.
 Eustis, John E., Park Commissioner,
 476.
 Evarts, William M., incorporator, 13.
 Everett, Edward, 109.
 Ewing, Hampton D., on Manor Hall
 Committee, 12.
 Ewing, Mrs. Thomas, Jr., on Manor
 Hall Committee, 12.
 Executive Committee, 11.
 Fairbanks, Charles W., 115.
 Farnham, Mrs. Sally James, 495.
 Farragut, David Glasgow, 111.
 Faunce, W. H. P., 113.
 Felix Old Boy, see John Flavel
 Mines.
 Fenner, C. N., 360.
 Fernow, Berthold, 588.
 Fernow, B. E., examines Central
 Park, 482.
 Field, Cyrus W., 61.
 Field, Thomas C., Central Park
 Commissioner, 465, 475.

- Fifth Avenue Coach Co., advertisement case, 219.
- Finance Committee, 11.
- Finley, John H., Chairman of Fourth of July Committee, 263, 264; letter from Mayor, 265; address, 266, 281; report to Mayor, 285; thanked by Mayor, 286; by Committee, 287.
- Fitch, William E., 263, 266, 272.
- Fling, Fred M., 114.
- Flint, Frank P., Grand Canyon bill, 188.
- Foote, Mary Hallock, 115.
- Ford, Charles, T., 368.
- Foreign Regulations for the conservation of scenic and historic places and objects: Extent of the movement, 55; Argentine Republic, 556; Australia, 557; Austria, 559; Belgium, 560, and *plates*, 43, 45; Burma, 562 and *plates*, 46-49; Denmark, 565, and *plates*, 50, 51; France, 568; German Empire, 569 and *plate*, 52; Great Britain, 572; Italy, 575; Japan, 576; New Zealand, 576 and *plates*, 53-58; Norway and Sweden, 580; Switzerland, 582; Turkey, 583.
- Forests, co-operation between forest and water officials, 210; necessity for reforestation, 211; use of convicts and inebriates, 211; Appalachian Forest Reserve, 212; Fontainebleau, 241; see also National Forests, and Conservation of Natural Resources.
- Forrest, Edwin, 109.
- Forsyth, John, 109.
- Fort Brewerton, 11, 61, 207.
- Fort Clinton, 424 et seq.
- Fort Crailo, 125.
- Fort Fish, 424 et seq.
- Fort, John Franklin, 373.
- Fort Lee Phytosaur, 64, 357, excavating, *plate*, 24.
- Fort Number One, 62, 86, 291, scene at tablet dedication, *plate*, 10, tablet, *plate*, 11.
- Forts around New York, 302 410-428.
- Fort Snelling, 165; picture, *plate*, 19.
- Fort Washington, battle, 414.
- Foster, John W., 115.
- Fourth of July, celebration in New York City in 1910, 61; Mayor's committee, 263; finances, 265; exercises at City Hall, 266; reviewing stands, 278; procession, 279; other features, 284; results of a "safe and sane" celebration, 287; fireworks' company bankrupt, 288.
- Fox, Charles, gives public garden, 516.
- France, scenic and historic conservation, 568.
- Francis, Charles S., vice president, 9; trustee, 10, 239.
- Francis, John M., incorporator, 13.
- Frank, August, incorporator 13.
- Franklin, Benjamin, 67, 111.
- Tremont, John Charles, 109.
- Frisbie, Daniel D., 7.
- Fryer, Robert L., trustee, 10, 239; on Letchworth Park committee, 11; incorporator, 13; pallbearer, at W. P. Letchworth's funeral, 42.
- Fuller, Melville Weston, 115.
- Fuller (Ossoli) Sarah Margaret, 110.
- Fulton, Robert, 107, 111.
- Fulton, Robert, co-operation of R. R. Livingston, 324.
- Gallatin, Albert, 110.
- Gallaudet, Thomas H., 108.
- Gallup, Albert, Park Commissioner, 476.
- Garden cities, 502.
- Garfield, James Abram, 109.
- Gary, Elbert H., gift toward securing Harriman Park, 116, 376.
- Garrison, William Lloyd, 108.
- Gaynor, William J., 83; appoints Fourth of July committee, 263; subscribes to fund, 265; speaks at celebration, 282; appreciation of, 286; commends gift of Harriman Park 373; appoints Park Commissioner for Queens Borough, 474.
- General Theological Seminary, 113.
- Genesee River, see Letchworth Park.
- Genesee River Co., 51, 52, 58.
- Geneva, N. Y., parks, 208.
- Geology of Manhattan Island, 383.
- Geological time-table, 385.
- Germany scenic and historic conservation 569, and *plate*, 52.
- Gerry, Elbridge T., incorporator 13.
- Gibbons, invocation at dedication of building of International Union of American Republics, 496.
- Gibbons vs. Ogden, 326.
- Gibson, W. J., on Central Park Committee, 482.
- Gifts of parks, monuments, etc.; 18, 26, 40, 43, 59, 60, 116, 169, 208, 250, 512, 536, 557, 560.
- Gilder, Joseph B., 263.
- Girard, Stephen, 110.
- Glacier National Park created, 191.
- Glaser, Edward, 374.
- Glen, Alexander L., family, 127.
- Glen Sanders house in Scotia, 127.
- Gloversville Free Library, 20.
- Glynn, Martin H., correspondence concerning insurance, 36.

- Godfrey, Frank N., 138.
 Goethe, Johann W., von, 131.
 Goethe, Otilie von, 131.
 Gold bearing rocks in New York, 391.
 Goodyear, Charles, 109.
 Gould, Helen M., gift toward securing Harriman Park, 117, 376.
 Grabau, A. W., 50, 56.
 Graduate School, 113.
 Graham, Isabella, 110.
 Grand Canyon of the Colorado: Physiography, 68; National Monument, 184; enlargement of park proposed, 184; letter to President Taft, 185; bill to create National Park, 188; railroad franchise bill opposed, 189; view at foot of Bright Angel trail, *plate*, 20; White Cliffs, north of Kanab, *plate*, 21; Kanab Creek, *plate*, 22, map of proposed enlarged park, *plate*, 23.
 Grant, Major-General Frederick D., 115.
 Grant, Ulysses S., 111.
 Gratawick, Wm. H., 42.
 Graubard, Mauritz, 220.
 Gray, Asa, 111.
 Gray, Henry Winthrop, Park Commissioner, 476.
 Gray, John A. C., Central Park Commissioner, 465, 467, 475.
 Great Britain, scenic and historic conservation, 572.
 Great Falls, Mont., parks, 520.
 Greeley, Horace, 108.
 Greeley, Horace, centennial 65; burial place 66; letter from F. W. Seward, 67; portrait, *plate*, 12.
 Green, Andrew H., Founder of Scenic Society, 13, 238, 240, 242; incorporator, 13; aided by J. H. Robb, 16; connection with Central Park, 208, 433, 462, 463, 465, 467, 468, 475; connection with Niagara Falls, 209.
 Green, Andrew H., Memorial Fund, mentioned, 18, 20; statement, 22.
 Greene, Nathaniel, 109.
 Greene, Francis V., incorporator, 13.
 Greene, Mary T., 50.
 Greer, David H., 84.
 Gregory, Henry E., Counsel, 9; Trustee, 10; on Executive Committee, 11; incorporator, 13 represents society in Hetch-Hetchy matter, 202; on Conservation Committee, 204.
 Gresser, Lawrence, 263.
 Grinnell, Moses H., Park Commissioner, 475.
 Guernsey, Miss, 50.
 Guernsey, R. S., Trustee, 10; on Executive Committee, 11.
 Guiterman, Arthur, 266, 272.
 Gulick, Luther H., 263, 264, 286.
 Guthrie, Samuel, 109.
 Hadley, Arthur T., 20, 113.
 Hale, Nathan, 109.
 Hale, Nathan, capture, 413.
 Hale, Sarah Josepha, 110.
 Hall, Benjamin F., 238.
 Hall, E. H., Secretary, 10; on Sites and Inscriptions Committee, 11, 587; Stony Point Committee, 12; pallbearer at W. P. Letchworth's funeral, 42; at hearing on Portage dam, 50; archaeology, 64; calls on President Taft with Grand Canyon Committee, 185; connection with Letchworth Park, 238, speaks at dedication of Jemison statue, 246; on committee on construction of Jemison statue, 250; on Mayor's Fourth of July Committee, 263; speaks at City Hall, 266, 271; locates Fort No. 4, 303; author of Palisades history, 360; History of Central Park, 379; signs letter to Wm. Sohmer, 35; letter to President Taft, 186; annual report, 227.
 Hall of Fame, The, 107; Election of 1910, 108; vote of electors, 108; complete roster of names in Hall of Fame, 111; method of election, 112; New York University Senate, 112; electors, 113.
 Hall, Samuel, Park Commissioner, 475.
 Halsey, Francis W., Trustee 10, 239; on Letchworth Park Committee, 11; Sites and Inscriptions Committee 11, 587; Stony Point Committee, 12; Greeley Centennial Committee, 65.
 Hammer, Lee F., 263, 264, 286.
 Hamilton, Alexander, 111, 276.
 Hamilton, A., gives information about conservation in New Zealand, 556.
 Hamlin, A. D. F., on care of historic and scenic monuments, 568, 573.
 Hancock, John, 109.
 Hardenbrook, Wm. A., 73.
 Hardy, Alfred, benediction at International Bureau of American Republics, 498.
 Harlem Creek, 395.
 Harlem line of 1666, 399; charter, 400; commons and line of 1775, 400; battle, 412.
 Harper, James, 109.
 Harriman, Averill W., 368, 374.
 Harriman, Miss Carol, 368, 374.

- Harriman, Mrs. E. H., gift of park to state, 116, 208; legislation of 1910, 117; bond issue approved by people, 118; official vote, 120; ceremonies of conveyance, 122, 367; mentioned, 295, 368, 371, 372, 373, 374, 375, 377; scene at Bear Mountain, *plate*, 15.
- Harriman Park, see Palisades and Highlands Interstate Park.
- Harriman, Roland, 368.
- Harris, Ira, confirms Central Park condemnation proceedings, 460.
- Harris, William H., incorporator, 13.
- Harrison, Charles C., 113.
- Hart, Albert B., 115.
- Harte, Dennis J., 221.
- Harvard, University, 20, 55, 68, 113, 114.
- Haswell, Charles H., 398, 449.
- Hatch, Edward P., incorporator, 13.
- Haven, George G., incorporator, 13; Park Commissioner, 476.
- Hawaii, volcano park proposed, 191; illustrations, *plates*, 39, 40, 41, 42.
- Hawes, Peter, 73.
- Hawley, Charles A., incorporator, 13.
- Hawthorne, Nathaniel, 111.
- Hazard, Caroline, 113.
- Heck, Barbara, 110.
- Henry, Joseph, 109.
- Henry, Patrick, 109.
- Hering, Daniel W., 113.
- Herkimer, Nicholas, bill to preserve his homestead in Danube, 129.
- Herrman, Moses, Park Commissioner, 427, 476, 483.
- Hetch Hetchy Valley, 202, 209.
- Hewitt, Abram S., 16.
- Hiawatha poem quoted, 168; origin of name Minnehaha, 167.
- Higgins, Thomas J., Park Commissioner, 77, 85, 476.
- Higginson, Francis, 110.
- Higginson, Thomas W., 115.
- Hill, Albert Ross, 113.
- Hilton, Henry, Park Commissioner, 475.
- Hitchcock, Edward, 109.
- Hobart College, 239.
- Hobbs, William H., 383.
- Hobson, John P., 115.
- Hodge, Charles, 108.
- Hodge, John, incorporator, 13.
- Hce, Richard M., 109.
- Hoffman, Samuel V., on Sites and Inscriptions Committee, 587; on Conservation Committee, 204; Trustee, 239.
- Hogg, James, Central Park Commissioner, 465, 475; makes complaints, 477.
- Hogland, William, 73.
- Hollister, Frank M., 42.
- Holley, Alexander Lyman, 109.
- Holmes, Benjamin, appoints Kansas City Park Board, 517.
- Holmes, Oliver Wendell, 108, 112.
- Holt, Hamilton, 263.
- Howland, Henry R., 42, 43.
- Home for the Friendless, 44.
- Hopkins, Franklin W., 368.
- Hopkins, Johns, 109.
- Hopkins, Mark, 108.
- Hopkins, Miles A., 42.
- Hopkins, Johns University, 114.
- Hoppin, Mrs. 368.
- Hopping, Samuel L., 98.
- Horticulturist, magazine, 449, 452.
- Houston, Samuel, 109.
- Howe, Elias, 109.
- Howe, Samuel G., 108.
- Howland, Henry E., incorporator, 13.
- Howland, Henry R., 49, 50.
- Howland, Isabel, 50, 258.
- Howland, William B., Trustee, 10; on Greeley Centennial Committee, 65; Grand Canyon Committee, 184; calls on President Taft, 185; signs letter concerning Grand Canyon, 186.
- Hoxie, R. L., 24.
- Hoyt, Mrs. Charles S., 43, 50.
- Hoyt, Terrell B., landscape architect, 521.
- Hudson, Henry, 110, 296.
- Hudson river, French poem, 132; a civil law stream, 174.
- Hughes, Charles E., connection with Letchworth Park, 239; Harriman Park, 371.
- Hughes, John Joseph, 110.
- Humphreys, Andrew Atkinson, 109.
- Hunt, Charles Warren, 114.
- Hunt, William Morris, 109.
- Hutchins, Waldo, Central Park Commissioner, 465, 475, 476.
- Hutchinson, Anna, 110.
- Hyde, Jesse E., address on Fort Lee saurian, 64, 357.
- Hyde, William De Witt, 113.
- Ides, Teunis, land patent, 402.
- Illinois parks, 511.
- Independence Day, see Fourth of July.
- Indianapolis, Ind., parks, 512, and *plate*, 31.
- Indians; Cornplanter medal, 48; address by A. C. Parker, 62; Sullivan's raid, 130; Indian summer, 132; Hiawatha and Minnehaha, 165; proceedings at dedication of Jemison statue, 229; status of women, 252; on Manhattan Island, 397.

- Ingraham, Mrs. Hattie E., 26.
Insurance of State property, correspondence with Comptroller, 36.
International Union of American Republics, dedication of building in Washington, 491-498; view of building, *plate* 25; interior of main hall, *plate*, 26; courtyard, *plate*, 27, Carnegie medal, *plate* 28.
International Waterways treaty, 149.
Italy, scenic and historic conservation, 575.
Irving, Washington, Spuyten Duyvil legend, 104; in Hall of Fame, 111; quoted concerning Hamilton, 276; helps Central Park, 465.
Ito, Prof., promotes tree protection in Japan, 576.
Jaccaci, August F., 263.
Jackson, Andrew, 108, 109, 112.
Jackson, Helen Hunt, 110.
Jackson, Thomas J., 109.
James, Arthur Curtiss, gift toward securing Harriman Park, 117, 376.
James, Edmund J., 113.
James, Ellen F., gift toward securing Harriman Park, 117, 376.
Jameson, J. Franklin, 114.
Jamestown, N. Y., parks, 208, 522 and *plate*, 35.
Jamestown, Va., 536.
Jansen, Cornelis tavern, 404.
Japan, scenic and historic conservation, 576.
Jauncey's Lane, see Bloomingdale, New Cross Road.
Jay, John, 109.
Jaycox, G. B., 26.
Jaycox, William H., 26.
Jefferson, Thomas, 111.
Jeffersonian, The, 67.
Jemison, Mary, statue unveiled, 49; proceedings at dedication, 229; narrative of life, 231, 246; statue described, 233; spelling of name, 234, how statue was made, 243, Indian ceremony of dedication, 258; scene at dedication of statue, *plate*, 7; statue, *plate*, 8; portrait, *plate*, 9.
Jenkins, Stephen, 296, 309.
Jewish Theological Seminary of America, 113.
Johnson, Andrew, 109.
Johnson, Douglas W., address on Grand Canyon, 68.
Johnson, Hope, 308.
Johnson, Hosmer A., 109.
Johnson, Joseph French, 113.
Johnson, Robert Underwood, 115.
Johnston, Albert Sydney, 109.
Johnston, Henry P., 413.
Johnston, James N., 42, 43, 259.
Johnston, Joseph F., 263.
Johnston, William A., Secretary of Mayor's Fourth of July Committee, 264, 286, 287.
Jones, Ira B., 115.
Jones, John Paul, 111.
Jones Wood, New York, 451-459.
Jordan, David Starr, 113.
Journal of the American Medical Association, 288.
Joy, Charles A., analyzes Central Park soil, 479.
Judson, Adoniram, 108.
Judson, Emily Chubbuck, 110.
Judson, Harry P., 113.
Judson, Sarah Boardman, 110.
Julliard, A. D., Park Commissioner, 476.
Jumel Mansion, see Washington's Headquarters in New York.
Kalm, Peter, quoted as to taverns, 406.
Kane, Elisha Kent, 109.
Kane, Matthew J., 115.
Kansas City, Mo., parks, 512, 517 and *plates*, 33, 34.
Kelley, Frank B., 529.
Kelly, Francis X., 309.
Kelsey, Albert, 493, 496.
Kemp, J. F., 384.
Kennedy, Michael J., Park Commissioner, 77, 476.
Kennedy, Mrs. Thomas, 253, 259.
Kent, James, 111.
Keppel, Frederick, 263.
Kessler, George E., park planning, 501, 512, 518, 520, 532, 535.
Key, Francis Scott, 108.
King, David H., Park Commissioner, 476.
King, Elisha W., 73.
Kingsford, Thomas P., Trustee, 10, 239; on Fort Brewerton Committee, 11; Letchworth Park Committee, 11; Conservation Committee 204.
Kingsland, Ambrose C., in connection with Central Park, 449, 450.
Kirkland, J. H., 113.
Knickerbocker, Chapter D. A. R., 86.
Knox Philander, C., 160, at dedication of building of International Union of American Republics, 496.
Ko, Taw Sien, Superintendent of Burmese Archaeological Survey, 562.
Konti, Isidore, 494.
Kroger, Marie W., 309.
Kunz, George F., signs letter to Daniel D. Frisbie, 7; letter to President Taft, 186; annual report, 227; President of Society, 9; Trustee, 10; on Executive Com-

- mittee, 11; Greeley Centennial Committee, 65; Grand Canyon Committee, 185; calls on President Taft, 185; on Conservation Committee, 204; connection with Letchworth Park, 238; speaks at dedication of Jemison statue, 240; supervises modeling Jemison statue, 250; on Mayor's Fourth of July Committee, 263; Chairman of City Hall celebration committee, 264; presides and speaks at City Hall, 266, 267, 271, 272, 278, 281; thanked, 286; presides at Fort No. 1, 293; Fort Lee phytosaur, 360; at Harriman Park ceremonies, 367; account of dedication of Bureau of American Republics, 491-498; review of American City Parks, 449-551; review of Foreign Regulations for Scenic and Historic Conservation, 553.
- Lake George, battlefield, 208.
- Lake Manahatta, 436.
- Lamb, Charles R., on Mayor's Fourth of July Committee, 263, 264; decorates City Hall, 279; thanked, 286; designs tablet, 309.
- Lamb, Frederick S., Trustee, 10; on Finance Committee, 11; Greeley Centennial Committee, 65.
- Lamb, J. & R., tablets, 86, 87, 309, 428.
- Landscape architecture in Central Park, 469.
- Land values increased by parks, 464.
- Lane, Smith E., Park Commissioner, 475.
- Langen, Michael, 44.
- Lansing, Bradford R., 129.
- Larned, Joseph N., 45.
- Lawrence, Amos, 109.
- Lawrence, Abram R., 368.
- Lawrence, A. H., 73.
- Lawrence, George N., incorporator, 13.
- Lay, Charles D., landscape architect, 483.
- Le Doux, Albert R., 391.
- Legget's Tavern, 429.
- Leib, H. C., 369.
- Ledyard, Lewis C., incorporator, 13.
- Lee, Robert Edward, 111.
- Lee, Thomas H., Trustee, 10; on Stony Point Committee, 12.
- Le Fevre, Egbert, 112.
- Leipziger, Henry M., Vice-President, 9; Trustee, 10, 239; on Letchworth Park Committee, 11; Greeley Centennial Committee, 65.
- Leland Stanford University, 113.
- Lenoir, Albert, promotes care of national monuments in France, 568.
- Lenormant, Charles, promotes care of national monuments in France, 568.
- Leopold, King of Belgium, gives national parks, 560.
- Lesley, J. P., 245.
- Letchworth, Edward H., 42.
- Letchworth, Geoffrey J., 42.
- Letchworth, John, 48.
- Letchworth, Josiah, 42, 43.
- Letchworth, Ogden P., Trustee, 10; on Letchworth Park Committee, 11; executor of W. P. Letchworth's will, 43, 45.
- Letchworth Park, Committee, 11; death of W. P. Letchworth, 40; farm leases, 46; arboretum, 46; Mary Jemison statue unveiled, 49; Portage dam opposed, 49; bearing of Colorado scenic beauty case, 173; mentioned, 207; dedication of Jemison statue, 231; history of gift of park, 236; Illustrations, scene at dedication of Jemison statue, *plate*, 7; Jemison statue, *plate*, 8; portrait of Mary Jemison, *plate*, 9.
- Letchworth, Pierre E., 42.
- Letchworth Village, 41.
- Letchworth, William C., 42.
- Letchworth, Mrs. Wm. C., 44.
- Letchworth, William P., death, 40; will, 42; awarded Cornplanter medal, 48; erects Mary Jemison statue, 49; gift of Letchworth Park, 207; interment of Mary Jemison, 231; erection of her statue, 231, 235; letter presenting statue, 250.
- Leventritt, David, decision in Fifth Avenue Coach Co. case, 219.
- Lewis, Robert E., decision in Colorado scenic beauty case, 54, 173.
- Lewis, Thomas D., on Fort Brewerton Committee, 11.
- Lincoln, Abraham, 111.
- Lincoln, Abraham, memorial in Washington, 507; in Cincinnati, O., 532.
- Lincoln, Charles Z., incorporator, 13.
- Lincoln, Robert Todd, 115.
- Lindsley vs. Natural Carbonic Gas Co. etc., 139.
- Linn, William A., 368.
- Little Mill Creek, 395.
- Livingston, Edward, 109.
- Livingston family, 311-356.
- Livingston, Mrs. Goodhue, 15.
- Livingston, Robert R., Chancellor, 63; biography and descendants, 311-356.

- Livingston, Robert R., 109.
 Locke, Franklin D., 42.
 Logan, Walter S., incorporator, 13;
 mentioned, 238.
 Log Cabin (newspaper), 67.
 London Times, 575.
 Longfellow, Henry Wadsworth, 111;
 "Hiawatha" quoted, 168.
 Loomis, H. H., gift of park, 208.
 Lord, Chester S., 263.
 Los Angeles, Cal., parks, 505.
 Lough, James F., 112.
 Louisiana purchase, 322.
 Lovett, Robert S., 368.
 Low, Seth, 20, 115.
 Lowell, Abbott Lawrence, 113.
 Lowell, James Russell, 111.
 Lyon, Mary, 112.
 Ludwig, Adelbert E., 44.
 MacCracken, Henry M., 20.
 MacCracken, John H., 112.
 Mackay, Mrs. Clarence H., 263.
 MacKellar, W. H. H., 88.
 Macy, V. Everit, gift toward securing
 Harriman Park, 117, 376.
 Madison, Dorothy Payne, 110.
 Madison, James, 112.
 Maiden Lane, New York City, 87, 585.
 Makennie, Francis, 110.
 Malden-on-Hudson, 122; John Bige-
 low's birthplace, *plate*, 16.
 Manhattan Island, geological history,
 383.
 Manhattan Lake, 436.
 Manhattan archæology, 64.
 Mann, Horace, 111.
 Manor Hall, see Philipse Manor Hall.
 Marble, William A., Vice-Chairman
 of Mayor's Fourth of July Com-
 mittee, 263, 264.
 Marquette, Jacques, 110.
 Marshall, John, 111.
 Martin, William M., 129.
 Marx, Samuel, 263, 264, 266, 286.
 Mason, Lowell, 109.
 Massachusetts Agricultural College,
 19, 20.
 Massachusetts parks, 515.
 Mather, Cotton, 108.
 Matthews, George B., 42.
 Maury, Matthew F., 109.
 Maxwell, William H., 65, 263, 264,
 285.
 Maynadier, G. B., advises as to
 Central Park soil, 483.
 McAneny, George, 263.
 McCabe, Patrick, 26.
 McDonald, Robert, Under-Secretary
 of Department of Lands, Australia,
 558.
 McDowell, Ephraim, 109.
 McClintock, John, 108.
 McCormick, Cyrus Hall, 109.
 McCormick, Robert, 109.
 McCormick, Samuel B., 113.
 McCulloch, Edgar A., 115.
 McGowan family, 407, 430.
 McGown's Pass, 407; monument, 427.
 McGrath, Rev. Mr., 84.
 McGuffey, William Holmes, 108.
 McKay, William J., 368, 369.
 McKelvey, Jane, 308.
 McKelway, St. Clair, 115.
 McKim, Charles F., Washington park
 commissioner, 508.
 McLaughlin, Andrew C., 114.
 McLaughlin, George, 368.
 McLean, Charles F., Park Commis-
 sioner, 475.
 McLean, James, gift toward securing
 Harriman Park, 117, 376.
 McLouth, Lawrence A., 113.
 McMaster, John Bach, 115.
 McMillan, James, promotes park ex-
 tension in Washington, 508.
 McMillan, Samuel, Park Commis-
 sioner, 476.
 McPherson, John H. T., 114.
 Martin, William R., Park Commis-
 sioner, 475.
 Meade, George G., 109.
 Memphis, Tenn., Parks, 535, and
 plate, 38.
 Mentz, Prof., on care of natural
 monuments, 565, 567.
 Merimee, Prosper, promotes care of
 national monuments in France,
 568.
 Merriwether, Lewis, 109.
 Messenger, Hiram J., Trustee, 10.
 Metropolitan Museum of Art, 239.
 Metz, Herman A., 264.
 Meyer, August R., Park Commis-
 sioner, 517.
 Miami University, 113.
 Mid-Pacific Magazine, 194.
 Mill Creek, 395.
 Miller, Charles R., incorporator, 13.
 Miller, Cyrus C., 263.
 Milwaukee, Wis., Parks, 536.
 Mines, John Flavel, 411, 451.
 Minneapolis, Minn., Parks, 165, 516
 and *plates*, 17, 18, 19.
 Minneapolis Parks, 165.
 Minnehaha Falls described, 165, 517,
 plates, 17, and 18.
 Mitchell, Edward, Park Commis-
 sioner, 476.
 Mitchell, Maria, 112.
 Mitchell, S. S., 42.
 Mix, Ebenezer, 232.
 Miyoshi, Prof., on Tree Preservation
 in Japan, 576.

- Moebus, August, Park Commissioner, 476.
 Money, Mr., 98.
 Montanye's Rivulet, 394.
 Montclair, N. J., Parks, 522.
 Monuments, Andre, execution, 61; Wm. Pitt, 76; Robert Fulton, 107; Newtown battle, 130.
 Monroe, James, 109.
 Moore, F. A., 115.
 Moot, Adelbert, 50, 56.
 Moreno, Francisco P., gives park to Argentina, 557.
 Morgan, D. E., 115.
 Morgan, J. P., Honorary President, 9; Trustee, 10, 239; gift toward securing Harriman Park, 116; gift toward securing Palisades, 207, 376.
 Morgan, Mrs. J. P., 368.
 Morgan, Lewis H., 232, 234.
 Morris, Ira K., Trustee, 10; gives historical data, 97.
 Morris, Robert, 110.
 Morse, Anson D., 114.
 Morse, Samuel Finley Breese, 111.
 Morss, John, 73.
 Morton, William T. G., 109.
 Motley, John Lothrop, 108, 112.
 Mott, Lucretia, 119.
 Mott, Valentine, 109.
 Mould, Jacob Wrey, work in Central Park, 468, 469.
 Mount Holyoke College, 114.
 Mount Saint Mary's College, 19.
 Mount Saint Vincent Academy, 381, 430, 431, 432.
 Mount, Wallace, 115.
 Mowris, John D., Trustee, 10.
 Muhlenberg, Heinrich M., 110.
 Munsey, Frank A., gift toward securing Harriman Park, 116, 376.
 Murray, Lindley, 108.
 Murtaugh, John F., 130.
 Muschenheim, Wm. E., erects tablet on site of Fort No. 1, 62, 86, 293, 294, 306, 307, 308; scene at dedication, *plate*, 10; tablet, *plate*, 11.
 Myers, Theodore W., Park Commissioner, 476.
 Names of Places: General principles of place, names, 88; Bentley Manor or Tottenville, 96; meaning of Spuyten Duyvil and other names, 99.
 National Arts Club, 62.
 National Conservation Commission, 204.
 National Forests, 200; number of visitors, 201; Appalachian Forest Reserve bill, 212.
 National Museum, 19.
 National Parks and Monuments, new, 191; Hawaiian volcano park proposed, 191; difference between National Parks and National Monuments, 194; Bureau of National Parks proposed, 196; bill for same, 198; visitors to National Parks and Forests, 200.
 National Sculptors Society, 250.
 Nelson, Archdeacon, 84.
 New Brunswick Reformed Theological Seminary, 113.
 Newman, Hugo, 308.
 New Orleans Parks, 512.
 Newtown Battle Monument, bill to preserve, 130.
 New York, captured by British, 410; evacuated, 418.
 New York Academy of Design, 83, 84.
 New York City archives, printing recommended, 223.
 New York City Hall; Centennial of occupation, 72.
 New York City Parks:
 Battery Park, invasion, 82.
 Bryant Park, invasion opposed, 83.
 Central Park, Illustrations — Old Blockhouse, *plate*, 60; Fort Clinton, *plate*, 61; works at McGown's Pass in 1814, *plates*, 62-65; map of park from 104th to 110th street with works of 1814 superimposed, *plate*, 66; landmark map of Manhattan Island from 80th to 140th street, *plate*, 67; modern map of park, *plate*, 68; general principles, 78; A. H. Green's connection, 208; history of, 379; location and area, 383; rock floor, 373; how rocks were formed, 386; subsequent geological events, 386; marks of Ice Age, 389; gold bearing rock, 391; Natural soil, 391; old water courses, 392; Tanner's spring, 395; Indians, and wild animals, 397; Albany Post Road, 398; Bloomingdale Roads, 399; Harlem line, 399; Harlem common lands, 400; Jansen's Half Way House, 403; Dyckman's tavern, 404; Colonial taverns and Governors, 406; McGown and McGown's Pass, 407; occupation by British, 410; Battle of Harlem, 412; Nathan Hale story, 413; fortifying in 1776, 413; Battle of Fort Washington, 414; seven years of British occupation, 415; evacuated by British, 418; forti-

New York City Parks:

- fying in 1814, 421; stone tower, 423; works at McGown's Pass, 424; McGown's Pass monument, 427; passing of the tavern, 429; Mount St. Vincent, 431; old Croton Reservoir, 434; New Reservoir, 436; Arsenal building, 437; the wilderness before the park, 438; trees and shrubs, 439; squatter population and life, 440; Seneca Village and All Angels Church, 443; the cross-roads, 445; establishment of the Park, 447; origin of the movement, 447; Mayor Kingsland's message, 449; Jones Wood Park bill enacted, 451; A. J. Downing's vision of a great park, 452; Central Park site recommended, 455; Central Park bill passed, 458; Jones Wood and Central Park sites compared, 456; attempt to reduce park, vetoed by Mayor Wood, 459; confirmation of Commissioners report, 460; reminiscence by Cyrus Clark, 461; extension of park to 110th street, 462; total cost of park, 464; building the park, 465; organizing for work, 465; Mr. Viele's preliminary survey, 466; plan of Olmsted and Vaux adopted, 467; purpose and landscape motives of park, 469, complete list of Park Commissioners, 474; progress of the work, 477; park soil, 479; proposed mutilations, intrusions and perversions, 484; institutions in the park, 488.
- City Hall Park, 61, 79.
 General system of administration, 76.
 Joseph Rodman Drake Park dedicated, 85, 208; before improvement, *plate*, 13; after improvement, *plate*, 14.
 Morningside Park vandalism, 84.
 Washington's Headquarters, 208.
 New York City, population and condition in 1810, 74.
 New York Columbian quoted, 426.
 New York County Clerk's records in danger, 225.
 New York County Court House, 79.
 New Yorker, newspaper, 67.
 New York Evening Post, 131, 482, 489.
 New York Historical Society, 239.
 New York Journal, 67.
 New York Public Library, 19; dedicated in 1911, 84.
 New York Staats Zeitung, 264.
 New York State Library, fire, 222; mentioned, 232.
 New York State Education Department, 19.
 New York State Museum, 62, 233, 234, 235, 250, 251.
 New York Sun, 487.
 New York Times, 487, 574, 575.
 New York Tribune, 67, 68, 239, 468.
 New York University, 20; Hall of Fame, 108; University Senate, 112.
 New York World, 264.
 New Zealand, scenic and historic conservation, 576, and *plates*, 53-58.
 Niagara Falls, treaty with Great Britain, 149; Alexander bill to divert water falls, 161; Burton Act renewed, 163; park mentioned, 208, 209.
 Nolen, John, landscape architect, 501, 522, 536.
 Norcross, F. H., 115.
 Nordenskiöld, A. E., proposes a national park in Denmark, 565.
 Normal College of the City of New York, 19.
 Norris, Fred, 42.
 Northrup, Cyrus, 114.
 Norton, Charles P., 46.
 Norway, regulations for scenic and historical preservation, 580.
 Nott, Eliphalet, 108.
 Nusbickel, Kate E., 44.
 Nusbickel, L. Grace, 44.
 Nutter, Valentine, name given to Battery, 395, 404, 425.
 Odell, Benjamin B., at Stony Point, 241; at Bear Mountain, 368.
 Odell, Rutledge, I., 368.
 O'Donohue, Joseph J., Park Commissioner, 475.
 Olcott, Eben E., 374.
 Olliffe, William M., Park Commissioner, 475.
 Olmsted Brothers, Park literature, 505.
 Olmsted, Frederick Law, Jr., Park and City planning, 501, 505, 508, 530.
 Olmsted, Frederick Law, Sr., plan of Central Park, 467, 468, 470; Park Commissioner, 475.
 Omaha, Neb., Parks, 521.
 Ormrod, William L., 219.
 Ortlepp, Paul, 131.
 Oregon Caves National Monument created, 191.
 Osborn, Henry Fairfield, 114.
 Orr, Alexander E., incorporator, 13.
 Osborn, Henry F., 62.
 Ottendorfer, Oswald, incorporator, 13.

- Palisades of the Hudson: Fort Lee Phytosaur, 359; history of Palisades, 360; rocks of, 388. See also Palisades Interstate Park.
- Palisades: Interstate Park, gift of Mrs. Harriman and others, 116; legislation in 1910, 117; bond issue approved by people, 118; official vote, 120; initial measures, 207; mentioned, 209; ceremonies at Bear Mountain, 122; 365; scene at same, *plate*, 15.
- Pallas, John J., Park Commissioner, 476, 483.
- Palmer, W. J., gift of Parks, 209.
- Park, Roswell, 42.
- Parker, Arthur C., 62, 233, 235, 244, 250; address at dedication of Jemison statue, 251; participates in Indian ceremonies, 259.
- Parker, Ely S., 251.
- Parker, G. A., park reports, 505.
- Parker, Theodore, 108.
- Parkman, Francis, 108.
- Parks:
- American, general observations, 501; Los Angeles, Cal., 505; San Francisco, Cal., 506; California general, 507; Colorado Springs, Col., 208; District of Columbia, 507, and *plates*, 29, 30; Chicago, Ill., 508; Illinois general, 511; Indianapolis, Ind., 512, and *plate*, 31; New Orleans, La., 512; Baltimore, Md., 513; Boston, Mass., 513, and *plate*, 32; Massachusetts general, 515; St. Paul and Minneapolis, 516, and *plates*, 17, 18, 19; Kansas City, Mo., 517, and *plates*, 33, 34; St. Joseph, Mo., 519; St. Louis, Mo., 520; Great Falls, Mont., 520; Omaha, Neb., 521; Essex Co., N. J., 521; Montclair, N. J., 522; Buffalo, N. Y., 522; Jamestown, N. Y., 208, 522, and *plate*, 35; New York City, 523 (see also New York City Parks); Rochester, N. Y., 529, and *plates*, 36, 37; Geneva, N. Y., 208; Utica, N. Y., 208; Cincinnati, O., 532; Cleveland, O., 532; Philadelphia, Pa., 533; Providence, R. I., 534; Charleston, S. C., 535; Memphis, Tenn., 535, and *plate*, 38; Jamestown, Va., 536; Milwaukee, Wis., 536; Statistics of the U. S., 537; gifts of parks, 18, 40, 59, 60, 116, 169, 208, 250, 512, 516, 536, 557, 560; City Parks, 208; State Parks, 209. See also Stony Point, Watkins Glen, Letchworth Park, Niagara Falls, Palisades Park, Harriman Park, National Parks, City Parks, State Parks, and New York City Parks.
- Parsons, Samuel, Landscape Architect, 10; incorporator, 13; Landscape Architect of New York City Parks, 77; on Mayor's Fourth of July Committee, 263; referred to by John Bigelow, 277; Park Commissioner, 476; connection with Central Park, 482, 483; biographical notice, 483.
- Philipse Manor Hall, Committee, 12; restoration, 59.
- Peabody, Charles A., 368.
- Peabody, George, 111.
- Peabody, George Foster, President of Saratoga Springs Commission, 138.
- Peabody-Harvard Museum, 252.
- Peck, Gordon H., Trustee, 10; on Stony Point Committee, 12.
- Peck, John H., incorporator, 13.
- Peekskill, Tan Yard Spring, 88.
- Peirson, Louis A., 42, 235, 258.
- Pell, Caleb, 73.
- Pell, John, 73.
- Pennewill, James, 115.
- Pennewill, S. S., letter from T. C., Du Pont, 170.
- Pepperill, William, 109.
- Perkins, Charles W., gift of park, 209.
- Perkins, Miss Dorothy, 368, 374.
- Perkins, George W., Vice President of Society, 9; Trustee, 10; gift toward securing Harriman Park, 116, 370; mentioned, 294, 374; President of Palisades Interstate Park Commission, 368; accepts Harriman Park, 375; cheers for, 377; on Central Park Committee, 482; letter from Gov. Hughes, 371; Gov. Fort, 372; Mayor Gaynor, 373, 376.
- Perry, Curtis A., gives public garden, 516.
- Perry, Eugene F., on Tappan Committee, 12.
- Perry, Oliver Hazard, 109.
- Peters, John P., 441, 444.
- Peters, Thomas McClure, 441, 442, 444.
- Pettigrew, J. A., examines Central Park, 482.
- Phalen, James, consultant as to Central Park, 465.
- Philadelphia, Pa., parks, 533.
- Philbin, Eugene A., 263; helps protect Central Park, 482.
- Phillips, N. Taylor, Treasurer, 9; Trustee, 10; on Executive Committee, 11; Finance Committee, 11; Letchworth Park Committee, 11.

- Philipse, Frederick, charter, 102.
 Phillips, Wendell, 108.
 Phipps, Henry, gift toward securing Harriman Park, 116, 376; at dedication, 368.
 Phytosaur at Fort Lee, N. J., 64, 359; excavating, *plate*, 24.
 Pierce, Benjamin, 109.
 Pierce, Henry A., 42.
 Pickering, Edward C., 114.
 Pierce, President, visits Central Park site, 458.
 Pilat, Ignatz A., work in Central Park, 469.
 Pilling, James C., 232.
 Pinckney, Charles C., 109.
 Pinckney, Eliza Lucas, 110.
 Pitt, William, statue, 76.
 Place Names. See Names of Places.
 Poe, Edgar Allan, 108, 112, 236.
 Poetry inspired by scenery, 131; French poem on Hudson River, 132; poem on Watkins Glen, 136.
 Pomona College, 19, 20.
 Portage, N. Y., proposed dam at, 49, 173. See also Letchworth Park.
 Porter, David D., 109.
 Porter, Horace, incorporator, 13; connected with Hall of Fame, 115.
 Porter, Peter A., incorporator, 13.
 Porter, William H., 368.
 Poster nuisance, see Signs.
 Potter, Charles N., 115.
 Powell, Grand Canyon exploration, 184.
 Powers, Hiram, 109.
 Powers, Jesse W., Park Commissioner, 476.
 Pratt, Sereno S., 368.
 Prescott, William Hickling, 108.
 Preservation of Public Records, see Public Records, 222.
 Preston, E. J., 263, 264, 286.
 Pringle, V., urges protection of fauna in Denmark, 566.
 Proctor, Thomas R., Trustee, 10; on Fort Brewerton Committee, 11; Conservation Committee, 204; gift of Parks, 208.
 Prophet, John M., 58.
 Providence, R. I., parks, 534.
 Prussia, scenic and historic conservation, 569.
 Pugin, A. Welby, promotes preservation of architectural monuments in England, 572.
 Public Records, preservation of, 222; N. Y. State Library fire, 222; printing N. Y. City archives. recommended, 223; N. Y. County Clerk's records endangered, 225.
 Putnam, F. W., 252.
 Putnam, Herbert, 114.
 Queen City Society for the Prevention of Cruelty to Children, 44.
 Radley, Dorothy, 308.
 Rainbow Bridge National Monument created, 191.
 Rathbone, James B., on Watkins Glen Committee, 12.
 Raymond, A. V. V., 42.
 Raymond, Henry Rossiter, 109.
 Raymond, M. D., incorporator, 13.
 Raymond, Rossiter W., 114.
 Red Jacket, 232.
 Reed, Byron, 42.
 Reed, Mrs. Newton L., 43.
 Regimental buttons, 64.
 Reid, Whitelaw, 115.
 Reist, H. G., 127.
 Remsen, Ira, 114.
 Rhodes, James F., 115.
 Richardson, Henry H., 109.
 Ridder Herman, Trustee, 10.
 Rice, Mrs. Isaac L., 263.
 Riis, Jacob A., 263.
 Rijks, Universiteit, 19, 20.
 Riparian rights in Colorado and New York, 174.
 Rittenhouse, David, 109.
 Robb, Cornelia Van R., 15.
 Robb, James, 15.
 Robb, J. Hampden, incorporator, 13; obituary, 15; Park Commissioner, 476.
 Robb, Louisa Werninger, 15.
 Robb, Nathaniel Thayer, 15.
 Robbins, W. L., 113.
 Robinson, Charles Mulford, Municipal Art, 506.
 Rochester, N. Y., parks, 529 and *plates*, 36, 37.
 Rochester Post Express quoted, 231.
 Rockefeller, John D., gift toward securing Harriman Park, 116, 375.
 Rockefeller, William, gift toward securing Harriman Park, 116, 376.
 Roe, Charles F., 263, 264, 278, 279, 286, 368.
 Roebing, John A., 110.
 Rogers, Henry Wade, 115.
 Rogers, Sherman S., incorporator, 13.
 Rolfe, Pocahontas, 110.
 Roosevelt, James A., Park Commissioner, 476.
 Roosevelt, Robert B., proposes to abolish Central Park, 486.
 Roosevelt, Theodore, 185, 207; referred to by John Bigelow, 274; lays cornerstone of Bureau of American Republics, 494.
 Root, Elihu, negotiates treaty with Great Britain, 150, 159; mentioned by John Bigelow, 274; International Union of American Republics, 496.

- Rossiter, Van Wyck, on Tappan Committee, 12.
- Rowell, John W., 115.
- Runsey, James, 109.
- Rush, Benjamin, 109.
- Ruskin, John, influence on English architecture, 572.
- Russell, Charles H., Central Park Commissioner, 465, 475.
- Ryan, Abram Joseph, 108.
- Ryan, Rose A., 44.
- Sackett, Henry W., Vice President of Society, 9; Trustee, 10, 239; on Executive Committee, 11; Finance Committee, 11; Letchworth Park Committee, 11; Watkins Glen Committee, 12; correspondence with Comptroller re insurance, 36; on Greeley Centennial Committee, 65; addressed by Mr. Seward, 68; on City Hall Park Committee, 80; on Conservation Committee, 204.
- Saeyes, J. B. A., 105.
- Safe and Sane Fourth of July, see Fourth of July.
- Sage, Mrs. Russell, gift toward securing Harriman Park, 116, 376; to Central Park, 479.
- Saint Clair, Arthur, 110.
- Saint Gaudens, August, city planning, 508.
- Saint Joseph, Mo., parks, 519.
- Saint Joseph's Seminary, Dunwoodie, 113.
- Saint Louis, Mo., parks, 520.
- Saint Michael's Church, New York, origin, 441, 444.
- Saint Paul, Minn., parks, 165, 516.
- Salmon, Lucy Maynard, 114.
- Sanders, John, 128.
- San Francisco, Cal., parks, 506.
- Sanner, Felix J., 130.
- Saratoga Battlefield, bills to preserve, 128, 129.
- Saratoga Springs reservation condemnation proceedings begun, 138; mineral properties and pressure restored, 139; important U. S. Supreme Court decision, 139.
- Sargent, Charles S., Trustee of Society, 10; Director of Arnold Arboretum, 47, 55; examines Central Park, 482.
- Satterlee, Herbert L., 368.
- Saunders, Randall N., 125.
- Saw Kill, The, on Manhattan Island, 393.
- Scenery, an asset, 206; inter-relation with natural resources, 210.
- Scenic Beauty decision in Colorado, see Cascade Town Co., etc.
- Scenic and Historical Conservation in foreign countries, see Foreign Regulations for the conservation of scenic and historic places and objects.
- Schiff, Jacob H., on Central Park Committee, 482.
- Schmitt, William P., Park Commissioner, 476.
- Schecter, Solomon, 113.
- Schuchert, Charles, 361, 384.
- Scientific American quoted, 221.
- Schuyler, Catherine Van Rensselaer, 110.
- Schuyler, Georgina, 126, 127.
- Schuyler, Louisa Lee, 126.
- Schuyler Mansion in Albany, bill to preserve passed, 125.
- Schuyler, Philip, 109.
- Scott, Mrs. C. P. G., on Manor Hall Committee, 12.
- Scott, Winfield, 109.
- Scully, P. J., 223.
- Searle, John Preston, 113.
- Seaver James E., 231, 234.
- Seneca Village on Manhattan Island, 443.
- Seton, Elizabeth A., 110.
- Seward, Frederick W., letter re Horace Greeley, 67.
- Seward, William H., 109.
- Seymour, Horatio, appoints Judge Harris to hold court in New York, 460.
- Shaham, Thomas J., 114.
- Shaw, Albert, 115.
- Shaw, Lemuel, 109.
- Sheridan, Philip Henry, 109.
- Sherman, Roger, 109.
- Sherman, William Tecumseh, 112.
- Shonts, Theodore P., 263.
- Shortt, William A., 123.
- Shrader, Henry C., Park Commissioner, 476.
- Sickles, Daniel, promotes Central Park, 461.
- Signs, regulation of, 219; Fifth Avenue omnibus case, 219; removal from public highways, 219; taxation, 220; in vehicles, &c., 221; menace of roof signs, 221.
- Sigourney, Lydia H., 110.
- Silliman, Benjamin, 109.
- Simmons, Maurice, 263.
- Simpson, Matthew, 108.
- Sims, James Marion, 109.
- Sites and Inscriptions Committee, 11; tablets approved for Manhattan Hollow Way, 86; Fort No. 1, 86; Maiden Lane, 87; St. Paul's Church in Eastchester, 87; New Utrecht milestone, 87; Tan Yard

- Spring in Peekskill, 88; how verified, 585.
- Sitka National Monument created, 191.
- Skeel, Adelaide, 368.
- Skiff, George S., 368.
- Sloane, William M., 114.
- Smith, Gerrit, 109.
- Smith, Henry B., 108.
- Smith, Henry, Park Commissioner, 476.
- Smith, John, 110.
- Smith, Leonard H., 368.
- Smith, Nathan, 109.
- Smith, T. Guilford, 42.
- Smithsonian Institution, 19.
- Smoot, Reed, bill to establish Bureau of National Parks, 198.
- Snow, Charles H., 113.
- Societe Nationale Pour la Protection des Sites et des Monuments in Belgium, 19, 20.
- Sohmer, William, correspondence concerning contract work, 34.
- Sons of the American Revolution, 87.
- Spate, Oscar F., chairs in Central Park, 486.
- Spaulding, E. G., incorporator, 13.
- Spofford, Charles A., Trustee, 11; on Greeley Centennial Committee, 65; City Hall Park Committee, 80.
- Spuyten Duyvil Creek, meaning of name, 99, 297; partial obliteration of creek, 99; history of neighborhood, 296.
- Squatters in Central Park, New York, 440.
- Standish, Miles, 110.
- Stanford, Leland, 109.
- Stanton, Edwin McMasters, 109.
- Starback, K., author, 580.
- Starr, Frederick S., 48.
- State Parks, 209. See also separate titles of State parks.
- State Water Supply Commission, 49.
- Stauffer, D. McN. K., on Manor Hall Committee, 12; Palisades Park Commissioner, 368.
- Steam Navigation, 323; monopoly sioner, 475.
- Stebbins, Henry G., Park Commissioner, 475.
- Steers, Alfred E., 263.
- Stephens, Alexander H., 109.
- Stetson, Francis Lynde, on Central Park Committee, 482.
- Steuben, Frederick W. A., 110.
- Stevens, Edwin A., 368.
- Stevens, John, family, 315, 329.
- Stewart, John A., incorporator, 13.
- Stewart, Thomas E., Park Commissioner, 475.
- Stewart, William R., 42.
- Stickney, Mrs. D. J., 43.
- Stickney, George, 42.
- Stiles, William A., Park Commissioner, 476.
- Stillman, James, gift toward securing Harriman Park, 116, 376.
- Stillwell, Stephen J., court house bill, 79.
- Stitt, Edgar, E. W., 285.
- Stoddard, Francis Hovey, 112.
- Stone, Lucy Blackwell, 110.
- Stony Point Reservation, Committee, 12; maintenance and improvement, 22; right of way, 23; mounting cannon, 23; new steamboat landing, 24; proposed improvements on lighthouse reservation, 24; visitors, 26, 241; gift to museum, 26; financial statement, 27; mentioned, 207; illustrations, cannon, *plate*, 1, dock *plate*, 2.
- Story, Joseph, 111.
- Story, Mrs. William C., 266, 267.
- Stotesbury, E. T., gift toward securing Harriman Park, 116, 376.
- Stover, Charles B., Park Commissioner, 77, 83, 263, 476, 483, 487.
- Stowe, Harriet Beecher, 108, 110, 112.
- Stranahan, J. S. T., incorporator, 13.
- Straus, Nathan, Park Commissioner, 476.
- Strivings, Silas L., 42.
- Strong, Mrs. Van Rensselaer, 125.
- Strong, William K., Central Park Commissioner, 465, 475.
- Stuart, Gilbert Charles, 111.
- Stuyvesant, Peter, 110.
- Sullivan, James E., 263, 264, 284, 286.
- Sullivan monument near Elmira, bill to preserve, 130.
- Sumner, Charles, 109.
- Swain, George F., 114.
- Swayne, Wager, incorporator, 13.
- Sweden, regulations for scenic and historic preservation, 580.
- Sweeny, Peter B., Park Commissioner, 475.
- Switzerland, scenic and historic preservation, 582.
- Swyers, Andrew, 44, 46.
- Syracuse University, 113.
- Tablets, at Tappan, 61; Fort No. 1, 62, 86; Manhattan Hollow Way, 86; Maiden Lane, 87, 585; St. Paul's Church in Eastchester, 87; New Utrecht milestone, 87; Tan Yard Spring in Peekskill, 88.
- Taft, William H., ratifies treaty with Great Britain concerning boundary

- waters, 149, 159, 160; receives Society's Grand Canyon Committee, 185, 190; speaks at International Union of American Republics, 498.
- Talley, Alfred E., 263.
- Tallmadge, F. S., incorporator, 13.
- Taney, Roger B., 109.
- Tanner, Henry S., fast, 395; spring in Central Park, New York, 395.
- Tappan, Frederick D., Incorporator, 13.
- Tappan Monument Committee, 12; report, 61.
- Tappen, Abraham B., Park Commissioner, 476.
- Taverns and Governors, 406.
- Taxation of Signboards, 220.
- Taylor, James M., 13, 114.
- Taylor, Joseph S., Commissioner of Central Park, 465, 475.
- Taylor, Robert F., 115.
- Taylor, Zachary, 109.
- Thayer, Cornelia Van R., 15.
- Thayer, Stephen H., Trustee, 11; on Manor Hall Committee, 12.
- Thays, Carlos, director of Parks in Buenos Aires, 556.
- Thomas, George Henry, 109.
- Thomas, M. Carey, 114.
- Thomas, Ralph W., 126.
- Thompson, Benjamin, 109.
- Thompson, Edward H., address on Yucatan, 63.
- Thompson, Mrs. Frederick, 21.
- Thwing, Charles F., 114.
- Tiemann, Daniel F., vetoes extension of Central Park, 463.
- Tilden, Samuel J., defends Central Park, 485.
- Titus, Michael W., 73.
- Tomkins, Calvin, 83, 263.
- Torrey, William, 73.
- Totten, Ephraim, 98.
- Tottenville, change of name, 96.
- Touro, Judah, 109.
- Towle, Stevenson, Park Commissioner, 476.
- Tracey, Benj., 13, 138.
- Treaty with Great Britain concerning International boundary waters, 149.
- Trees in Central Park, New York, 439.
- Tucker, William J., 115.
- Turkey, preservation of historic monuments, 583.
- Typographical Union No. 6, 65.
- Ulmann, Albert, Trustee, 11; on Sites and Inscriptions Committee, 11; Greeley Centennial Committee, 65; paper on Maiden Lane history, 585, 587.
- University of Chicago, 113, 114.
- University of Cincinnati, 113.
- University of Georgia, 114.
- University of Illinois, 113.
- University of Kansas, 114.
- University of Michigan, 113, 114.
- University of Minnesota, 114.
- University of Missouri, 13.
- University of Montana, 113.
- University of Nebraska, 114.
- University of Pennsylvania, 113.
- University of Pittsburgh, 113.
- Union Theological Seminary, 113.
- University of Virginia, 113, 114.
- University of Wisconsin, 114.
- Utica, N. Y., parks, 208.
- Vail, Alfred, 109.
- Vail, Charles D., Trustee, 11, 239; on Watkins Glen Committee, 12; Conservation Committee, 204; address at dedication of Jemison statue, 254.
- Van Buren, Martin, bill to preserve his estate, 125.
- Vanderbilt, Cornelius, 109, 278, 279.
- Vanderbilt University, 113.
- Vanderbilt, William K., gift toward securing Harriman Park, 116, 376.
- Vandevanter, Willis, 140, 141.
- Van Gelden, Abm., 73.
- Van Hise, Charles R., 114.
- Van Laer, A. J. F., 105.
- Van Pelt, John V., 34, 36.
- Van Rensselaer, Mrs. Schuyler, 263.
- Van Rensselaer, Stephen, 109.
- Van Tine, John H., 263.
- Van Weel, M. A., 105.
- Van Wyck, Pierre, 73.
- Vassar College, 114.
- Vaux, Calvert, plan of Central Park, 467, 468, 470.
- Verbeck, William, 368, 374.
- Verplanck mansion, near Fishkill, 124.
- Versch, Joseph, 263.
- Videto, T. E., 427.
- Viele, Egbert L., preliminary survey of Central Park, 445, 466, 467, 473; Commissioner, 475.
- Visitors to public parks, Stony Point, 26; See also Watkins Glen, Letchworth Park, National Parks and Forests.
- Volcanoes, 191.
- Von Krafft, J. C. P., diary, 416; marriage, 418.
- Walcott, Charles D., 114, 384.
- Waldo, Rhinelander, 263, 278.
- Wales, Salem H., Park Commissioner, 475.

- Walgrove, George M., Park Commissioner, 476.
 Walker, George, 212.
 Walsh, Edward F., 43.
 Ward, Francis E., on Central Park Committee, 482.
 Ward, Joseph, promotes scenic preservation in New Zealand, 577.
 Ware, Eugene F., counsel in Colorado scenic beauty case, 175.
 Warner, George P., 42.
 Warren, John Collins, 109.
 Warren, Mercy Otis, 110.
 Warren, Nathan A., on Manor Hall Committee, 12.
 Washburn, George, 115.
 Washington, D. C., parks, 507, and *plates*, 29, 30.
 Washington, George, fortitude, 61; at battle of Harlem, 86; in Hall of Fame, 111; Headquarters in New York, 208; on Manhattan Island, 410, 418, 419.
 Washington, Martha, 110.
 Washington, Mary, 110.
 Washington, Wm. D. H., 266.
 Water, beneficial use, 54.
 Water-courses, old, in Central Park, New York, 392.
 Waterfalls, notable, 165; see also New Zealand illustrations, Niagara Falls, Portage Falls, etc.
 Water power, see Letchworth Park; also Cascade Town Co.
 Water supply of New York City, 75, 434.
 Watkins Glen pavilion, 29; Committee, 12; grading, 29; Sentry Bridge stairs, 30; stairs at Sylvan Rapids, 30; Glen Cathedral, 31; Rainbow Falls, 31; Pluto Falls and Whirlpool Gorge, 32; railings, 32; miscellaneous improvements, 32; visitors, 33; Cavern Cascade, 34; contract work, 34; insurance, 36; finances, 47; poem, 136; mentioned, 207; illustrations, pavilion, *plate*, 3, stairs and bridge at Rainbow Fall, *plate*, 4; stairs east of Rainbow Fall, *plate*, 5; Cavern Cascade improvement, *plate*, 6.
 Watson, Archibald, 264.
 Wayland, Francis, 108.
 Weatherston, Marion G., 43.
 Webb, H. Walter, incorporator, 13.
 Webb, William H., charter member, 13.
 Webster Daniel, 111.
 Webster, Noah, 108.
 Weed, Thurlow, 67.
 Weidright, Herbert L., 44, 46.
 Welch, Thomas V., incorporator, 13.
 Wells, Frederick D., objects to curving park walks 487.
 Welch, William H., 114.
 Welling, William, 73.
 Wellesley College, 113.
 Wells, Horace, 109.
 Wende, G. H., 129.
 Wendell, Evert J., 264.
 Wenman, James F., Park Commissioner, 475.
 West, John C., 368.
 Western Reserve University, 114.
 West Virginia, University, 19.
 Wetmore, Edmund, 264.
 Wetmore, William C., Park Commissioner, 475.
 Wheaton, Henry, 109.
 Wheeler, William M., 46.
 White, Andrew D., 115.
 White, George A., 368.
 White, Horace, 374.
 White, J. Du Pratt, 368, 370, 374.
 Whitefield, George, 110.
 White Mountains, 216, 217.
 Whiting, Charles S., 115.
 Whitman, Marcus, 109.
 Whitney, Eli, 111.
 Whitney, Mrs. Harry Payne, 495.
 Whitney, Milton, advises as to Central Park soil, 483.
 Whitney, William Dwight, 108.
 Whittier, John Greenleaf, 112.
 Wiley, George M., 211.
 Wiley, Louis, 264, 286.
 Wilsey, Frank D., 293, 296, 306.
 Willard Emma, 112.
 Willard, Francis E., 108, 110, 112.
 Wilcox, William R., Park Commissioner, 476, 482.
 Wille, N., author, 580.
 William of Orange, 19, 20.
 Williams, Mornay, incorporator, 13.
 Williams, Roger, 108, 110, 112.
 Williamson, David B., Park Commissioner, 475.
 Wilson, Charles R., 42.
 Wilson, Fred, 44.
 Wingate, George A., 264, 279, 286.
 Wingate, George W., 264, 285.
 Winge, Oluf, proposes conservation of animals in Denmark, 565.
 Winters, John C., 58.
 Winthrop, Mrs. Egerton L., 264, 285.
 Winthrop, John, 110.
 Winthrop, Margaret Lyndall, 110.
 Witherbee, Frank S., Trustee, 11.
 Witherspoon, John, 110.
 Women's Auxiliary of the American Scenic and Historic Preservation Society, 424.

- Women in the American Revolution, 268.
- Wood, Fernando, advocates Central Park, 449; first Commissioner of Central Park, 465, 475.
- Woodbury, John, secretary Metropolitan Park Commission of Boston, 514.
- Woodward, Charles M., on Watkins Glen Committee, 12.
- Woodward, Robert S., 114.
- Woollen, William W., gives park, 512.
- Wooley, Mary E., 114.
- Woolson, Constance Fenimore, 110.
- Woolsey, Theodore D., 108.
- Worden, Perry, 131.
- Working Boys' Home of the Sacred Heart, 44.
- Wright, Asher, 232.
- Wright, Mrs. Asher, 232.
- Wright, Ebenezer K., incorporator, 13.
- Wright, Elizur, 109.
- Yale University, 20, 113, 114.
- Yonkers Manor Hall, see Philipse Manor Hall.
- Yosemite National Park, 209; see also Hetch Hetchy.
- Young, Frank, 309.
- Young, Richard, 476.
- Yucatan ruins, 63 and *plate*, 59.
- Zane, Betty, 268.



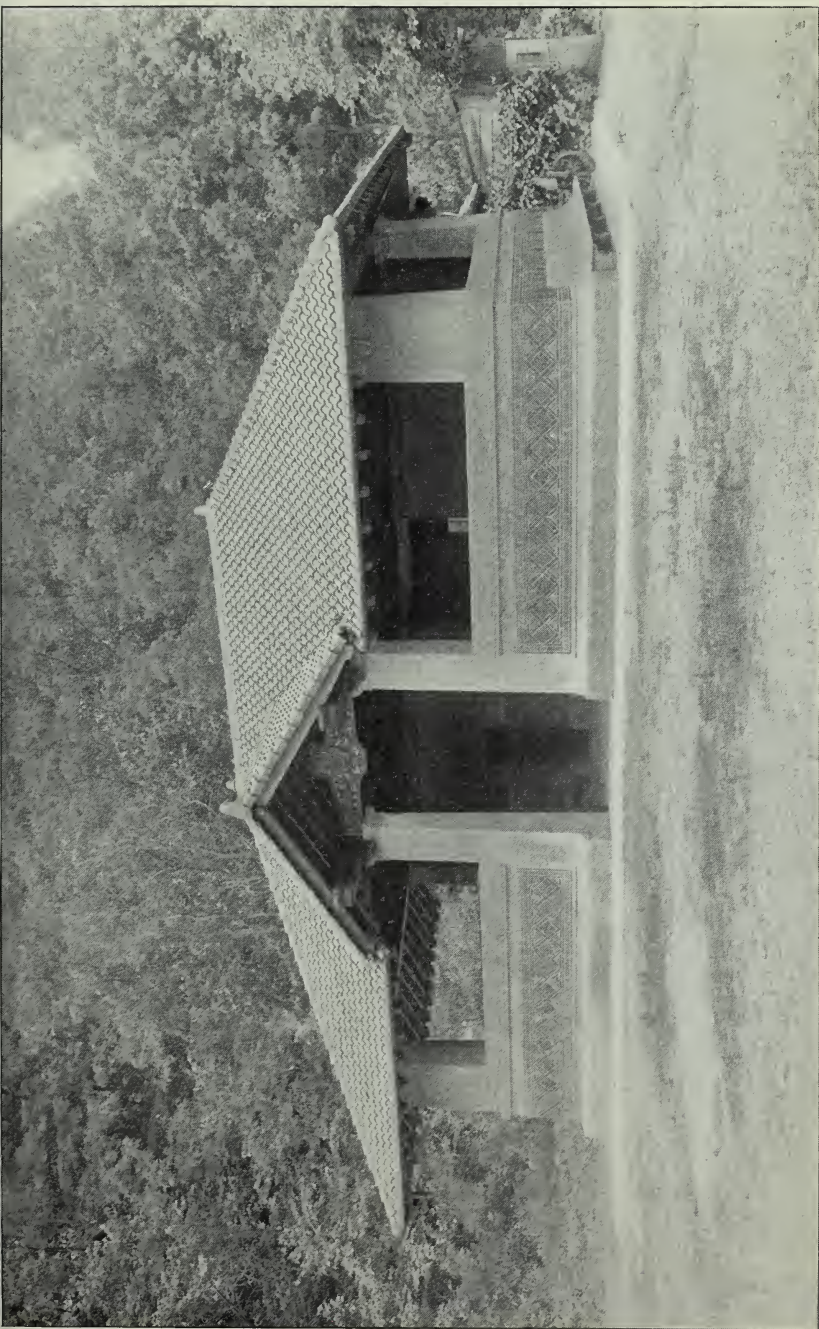
STONY POINT, N. Y., BATTLEFIELD RESERVATION.

Specimen of Cannon Mounts on Revolutionary sites. The carriages are of cast iron, after a Revolutionary model. The guns themselves, donated by the Government, are brass 12-pounders, model of 1857. See page 23.



STONY POINT BATTLEFIELD RESERVATION.

New concrete dock, built in 1910-11, for large and small vessels. See page 24.



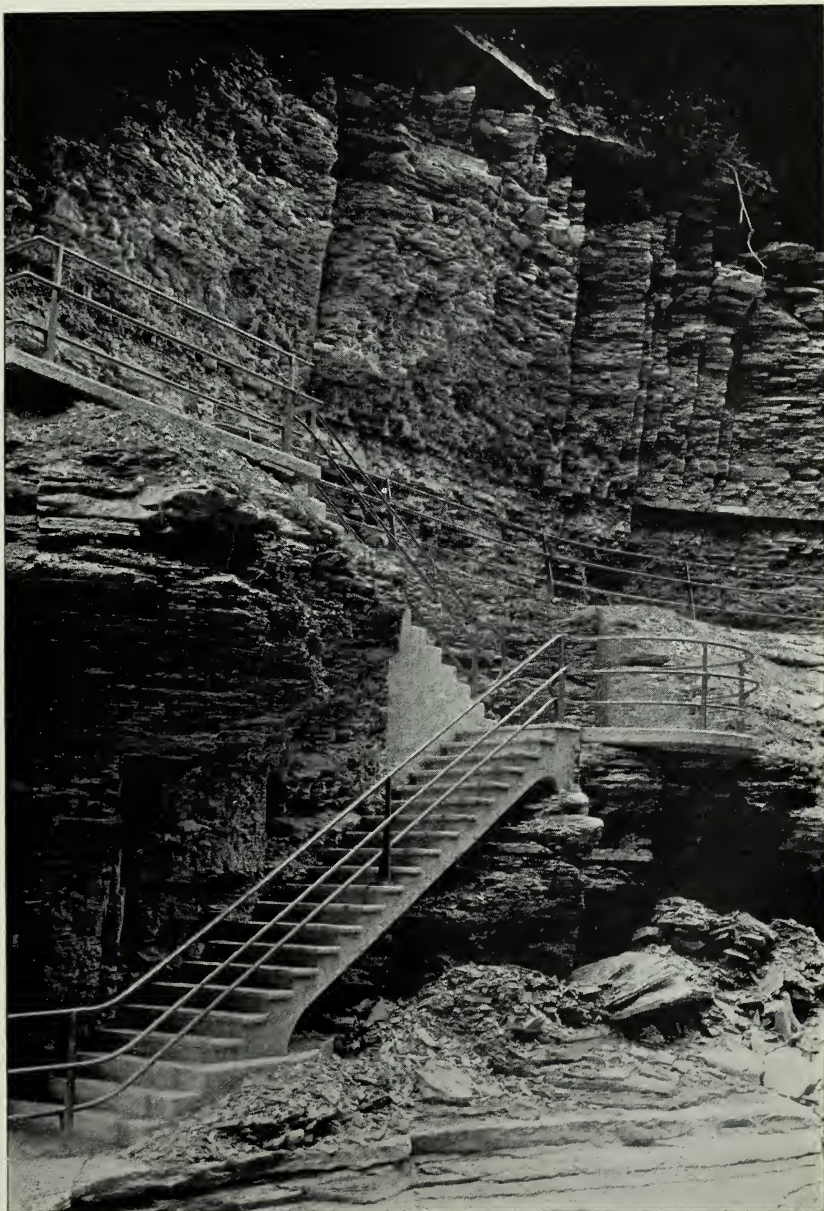
WATKINS GLEN, N. Y., STATE RESERVATION.

Pavilion at Main Entrance. See page 29.



WATKINS GLEN, N. Y., STATE RESERVATION.
New Concrete Stairs and Bridge at Rainbow Falls. See page 31.





WATKINS GLEN, N. Y., STATE RESERVATION.
New Stairs and Path East of Rainbow Falls. See page 31.





WATKINS GLEN, N. Y., STATE RESERVATION.

IMPROVEMENT AT CAVERN CASCADE.

In place of the old, unsightly wooden staircase the path has been carried around behind the waterfall, ascends a few concrete steps, and then enters a vertical tunnel in the natural rock. In this tunnel is concealed a broad flight of winding steps leading to the lookout and path above. See page 34.





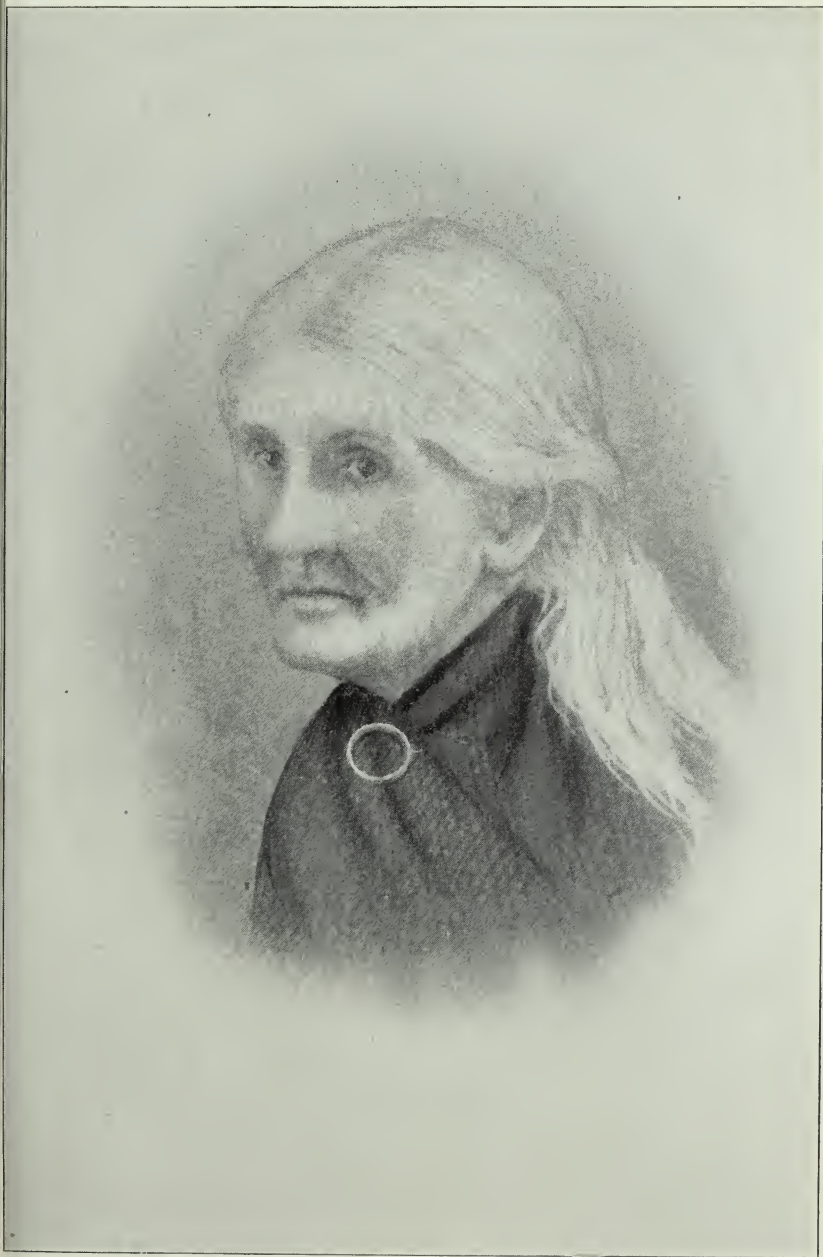
LETCHWORTH PARK, N. Y.

Scene at Dedication of Mary Jemison Statue, September 19, 1910. See pages 49 and 231.



LETCHWORTH PARK, N. Y.

Mary Jemison Statue, Dedicated September 19, 1910. See pages 49 and 231.



MARY JEMISON, THE "WHITE WOMAN OF THE GENESEE".

From a drawing which hung in the room of Mrs. Asher Wright, the missionary who attended her in her last illness. See pages 49 and 231.



FORT NUMBER ONE, NEW YORK CITY.

Scene at Residence of Wm. C. Muschenheim on Spuyten Duyvil Hill at Dedication of Tablet November 5, 1910. See pages 62, 86 and 293.



THE · FOUNDATION · OF · THIS · HOUSE · IS · A · PART · OF

FORT · NUMBER · ONE

WHICH · WAS · ERECTED · BY · THE · CONTINENTAL · ARMY

IN · AUGUST · 1776

OCCUPIED · BY · THE · BRITISH · NOVEMBER · 7 · 1776

DISMANTLED · IN · 1779

AND · REMAINED · "DEBATABLE · GROUND" · UNTIL
THE · CLOSE · OF · THE · AMERICAN · REVOLUTION

ONE · OF · A · CHAIN · OF · EIGHT · FORTS · NORTH · AND · EAST · OF
SPUYTEN · DUYVIL · CREEK · AND · HARLEM · RIVER · EXTENDING
FROM · THIS · POINT · TO · THE · SITE · OF · NEW · YORK · UNIVERSITY



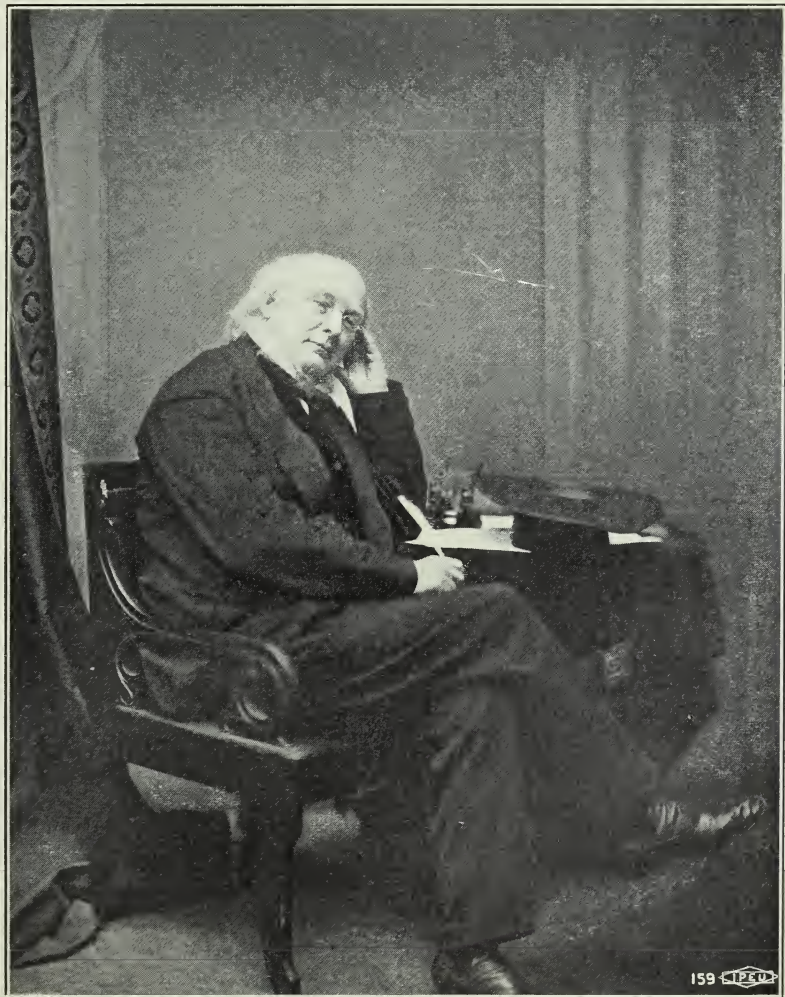
ERECTED · BY · W^M · C · MUSCHENHEIM · 1910



FORT NUMBER ONE, NEW YORK CITY.

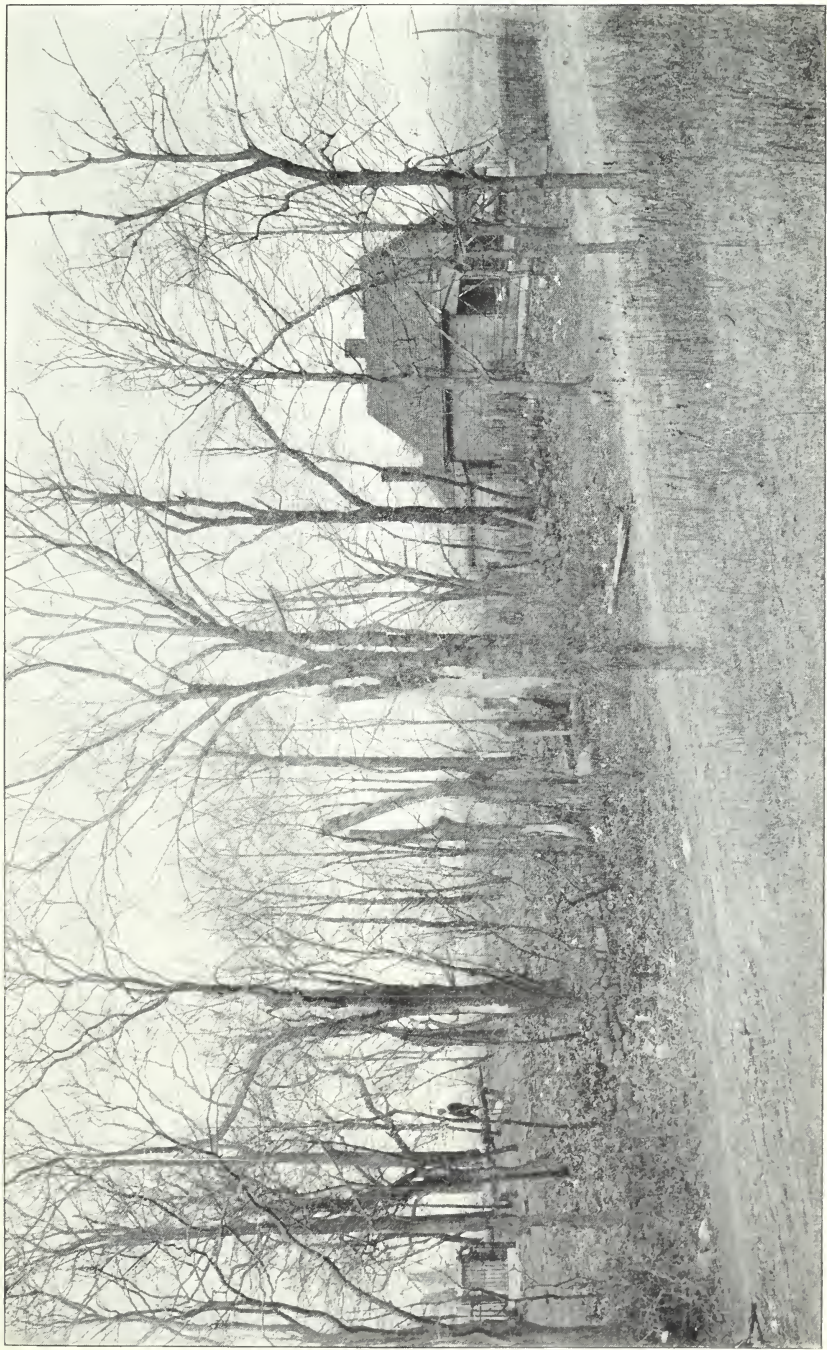
This tablet, placed on the house of Wm. C. Muschenheim, on Spuyten Duyvil Hill, New York City, was dedicated Nov. 5, 1910.

See pages 62, 86 and 293.



HORACE GREELEY.

See page 65.

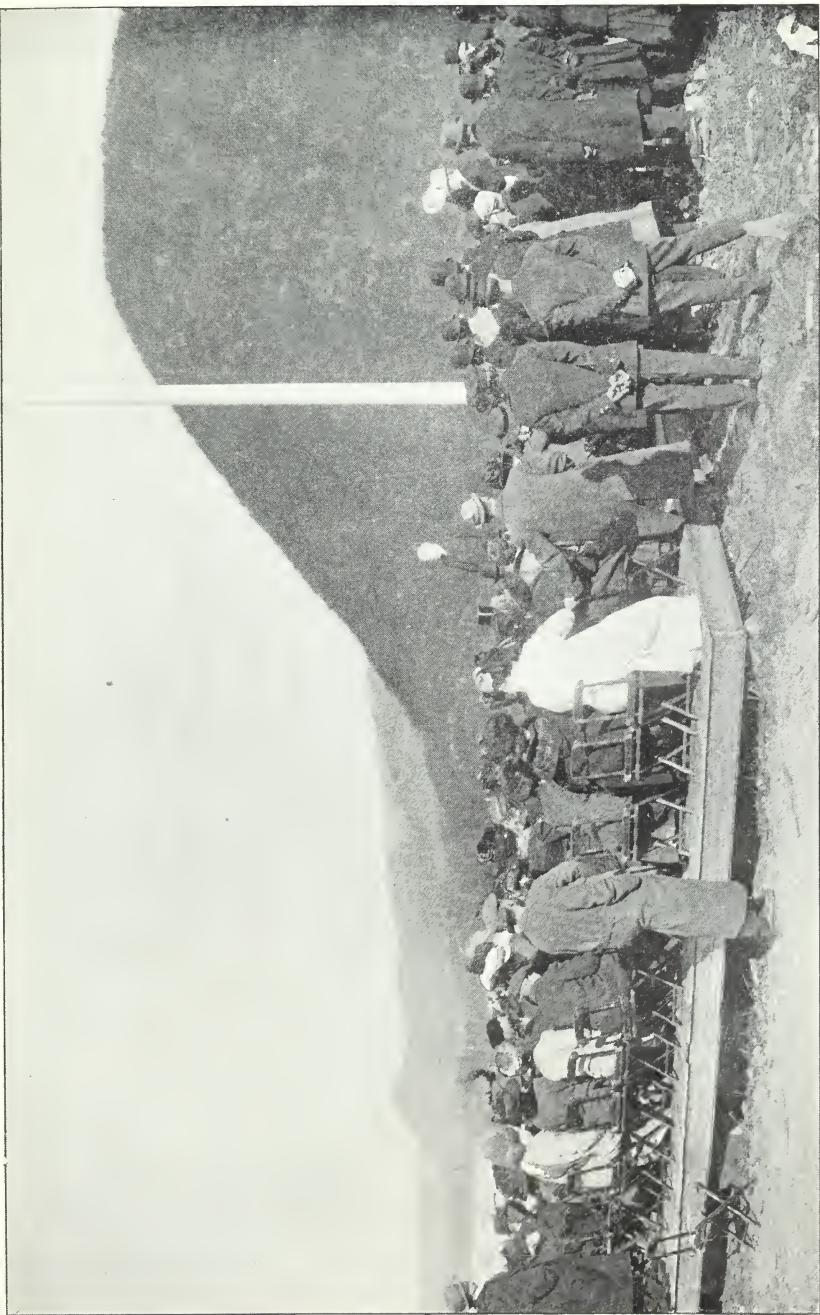


JOSEPH RODMAN DRAKE PARK, NEW YORK CITY.



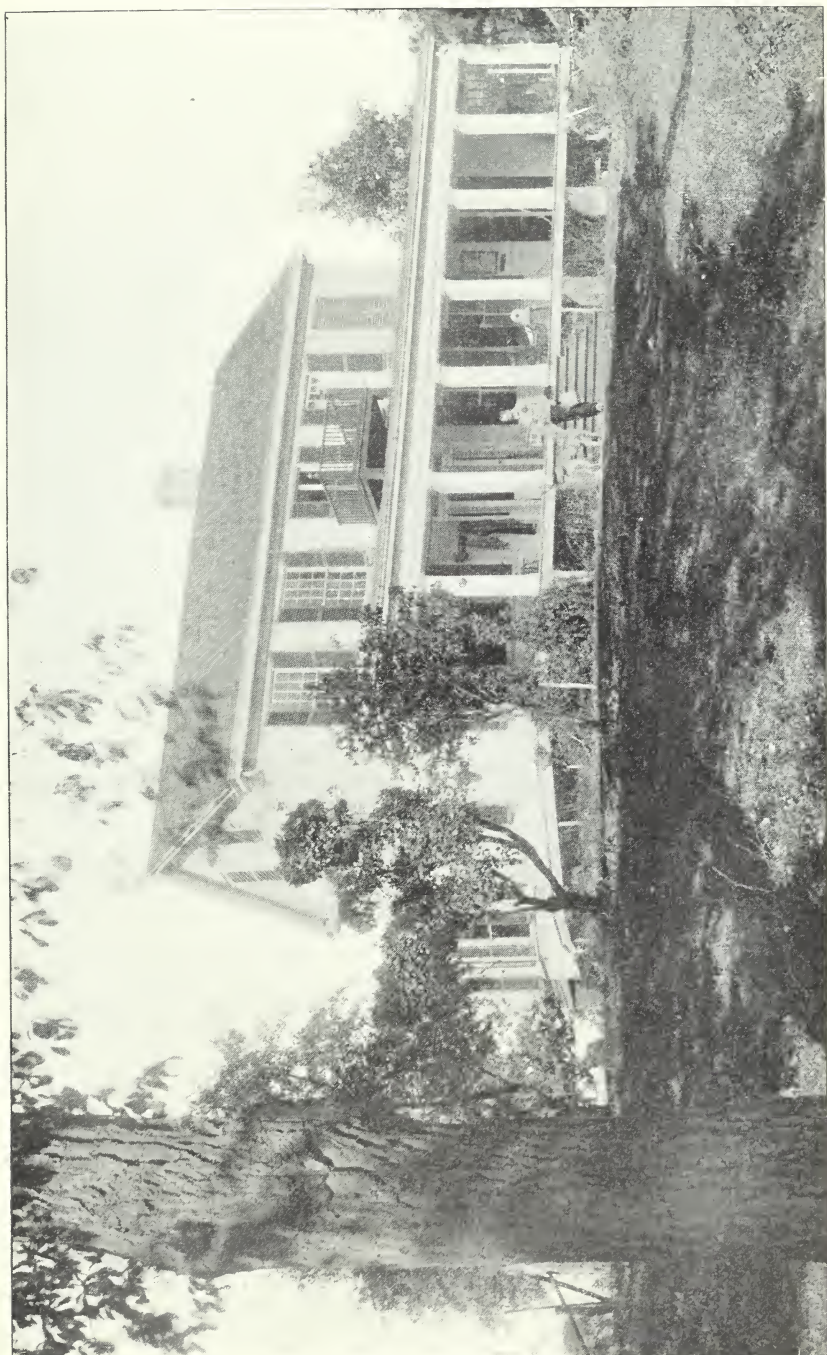
JOSEPH RODMAN DRAKE PARK, NEW YORK CITY.

After improvement. Poet's grave and monument at extreme left. See page 85.



HARRIMAN PARK, N. Y.

Ceremonies of Conveyance at Bear Mountain, October 29, 1910. See pages 122 and 367.

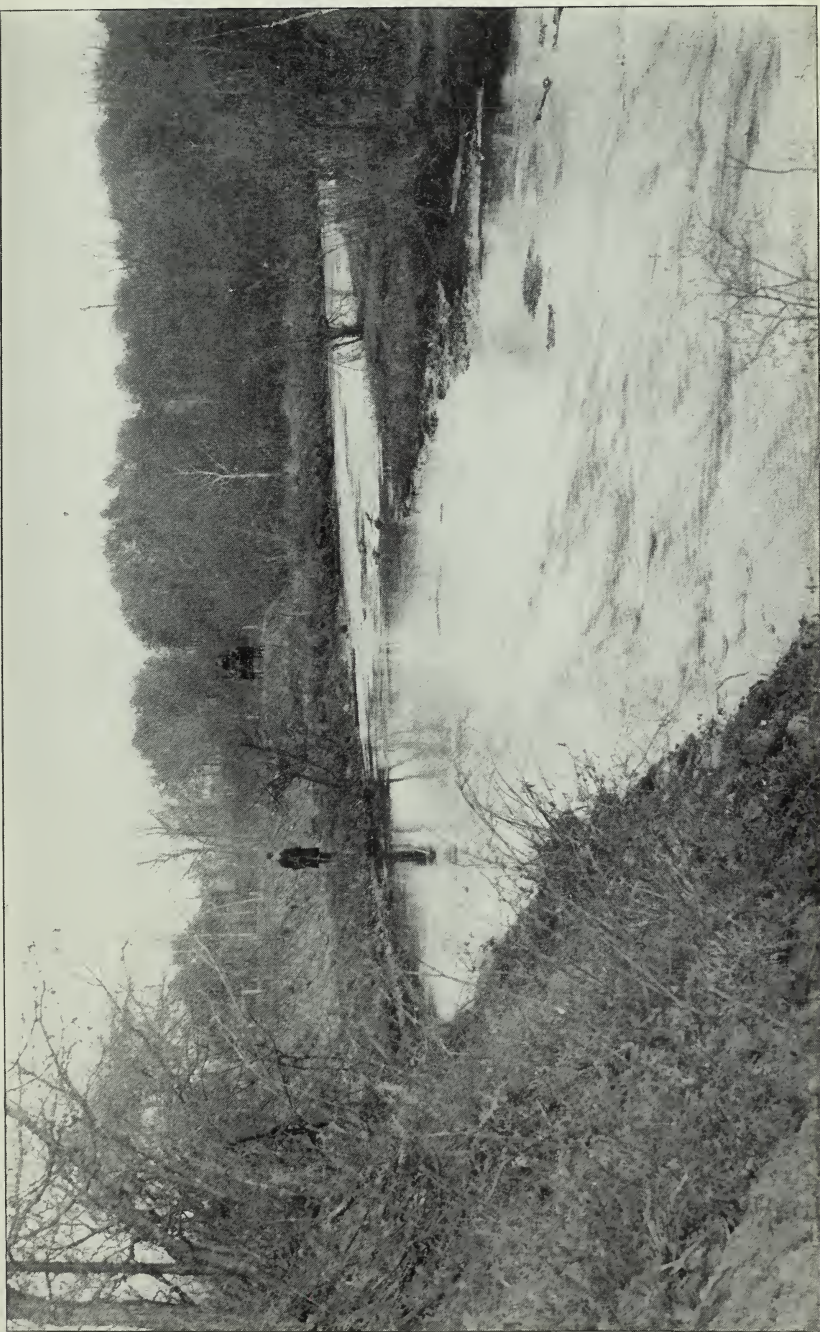


BIRTHPLACE OF JOHN BIGELOW AT MALDEN, N. Y.



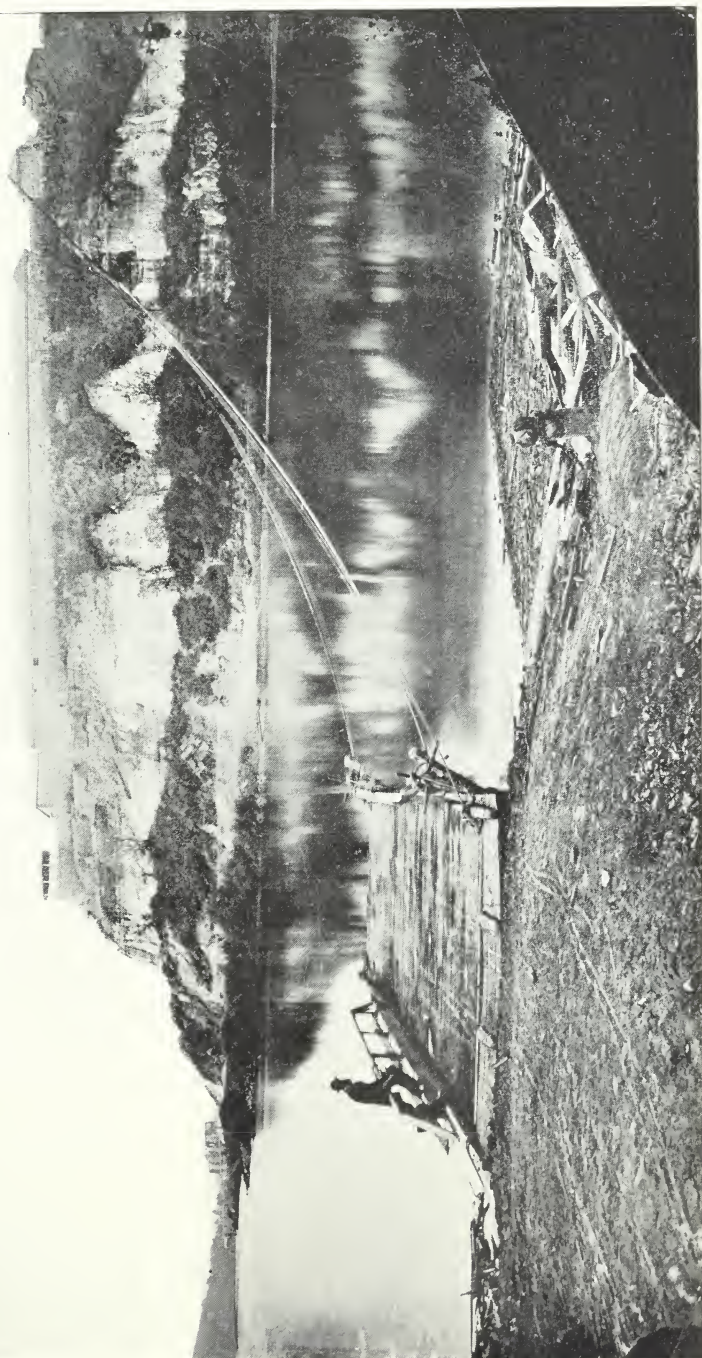
MINNEHAHA FALLS, MINNEAPOLIS, MINN.

See page 165.



MINNEHAHA CREEK, MINNEAPOLIS, MINN.

See page 165.



FORT SNELLING, MINN.

See page 165.



GRAND CANYON OF THE COLORADO RIVER.

Looking up-stream at foot of Bright Angel Trail. See pages 68 and 184.



GRAND CANYON PLATEAU.

White Cliffs north of Kanab, Utah. See page 68.



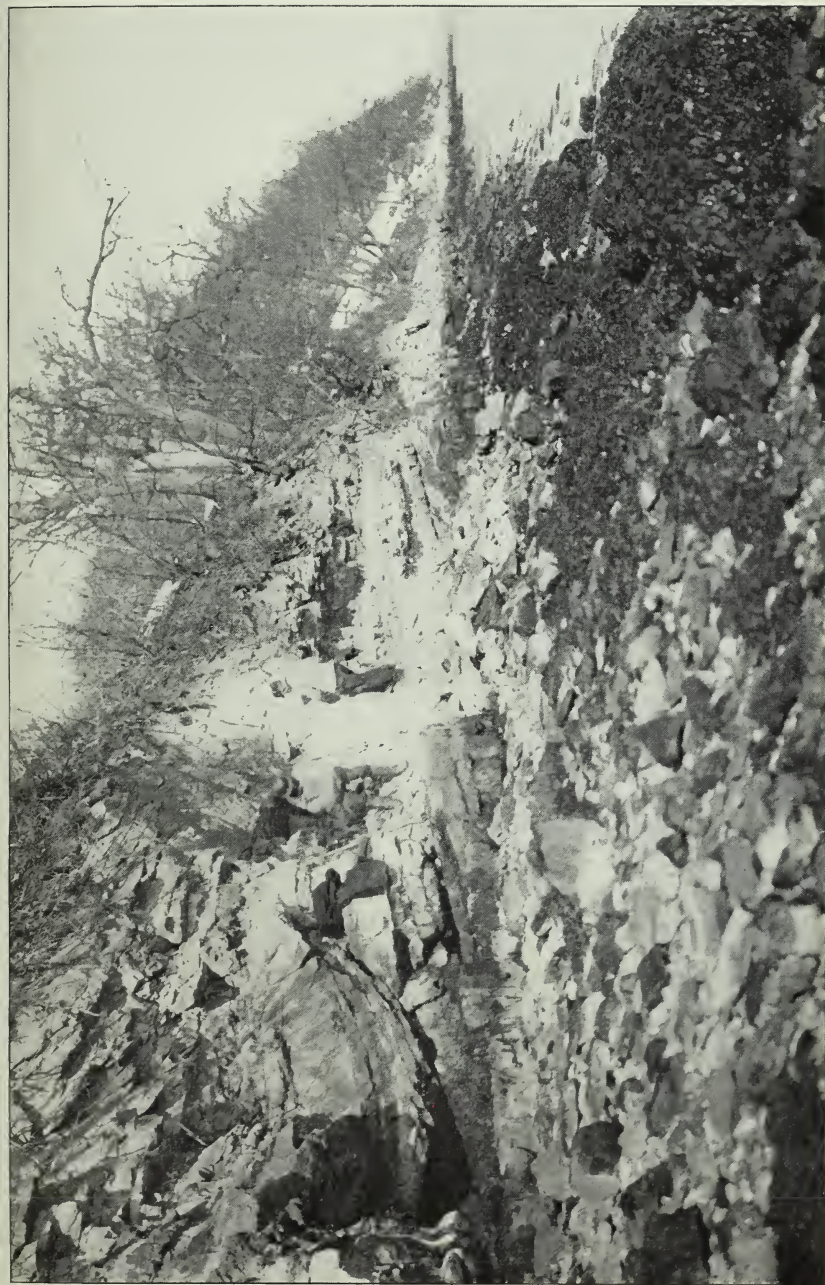
GRAND CANYON PLATEAU.

Kanab Creek, a small tributary of the Grand Canyon. See page 63.



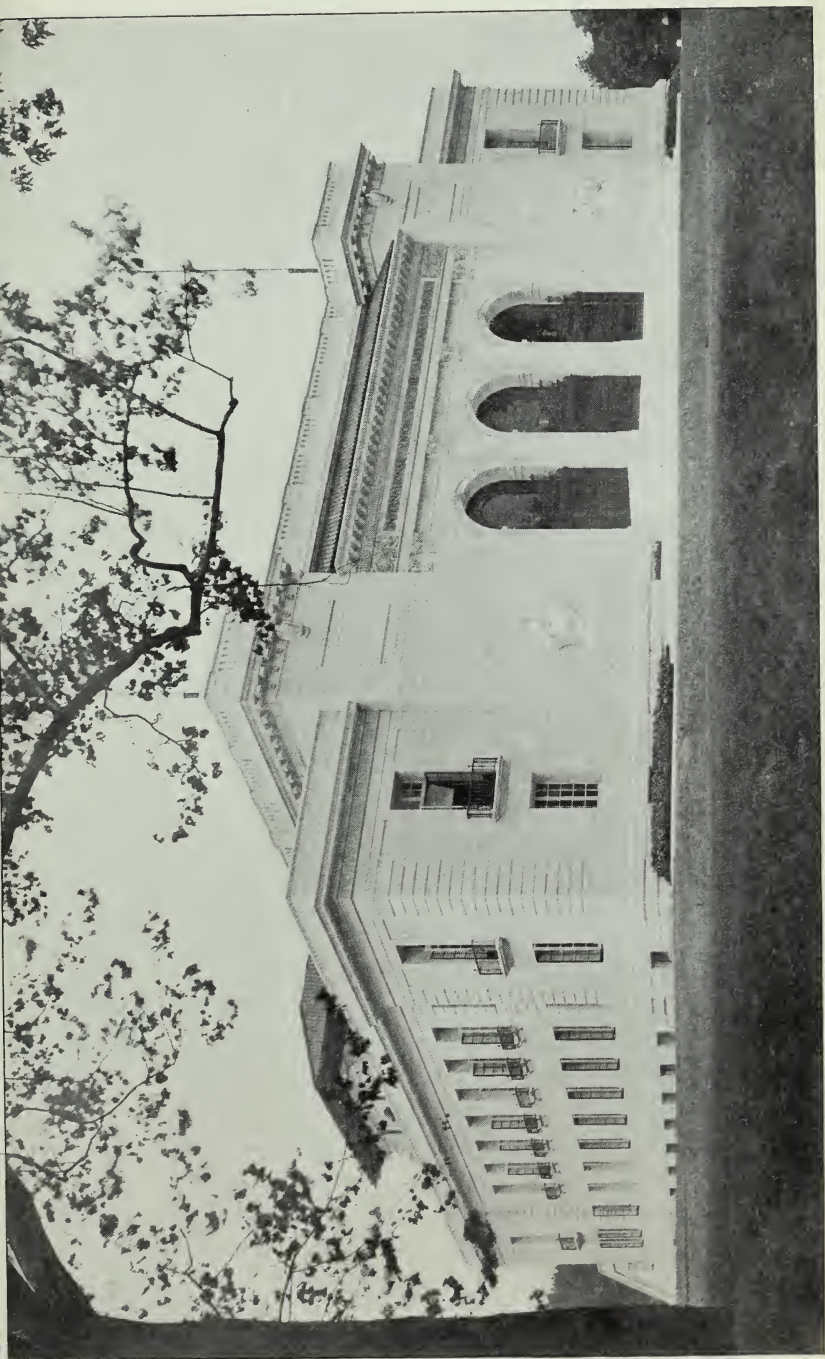
MAP SHOWING BOUNDS OF GRAND CANYON NATIONAL PARK PROPOSED BY THE AMERICAN SCENIC AND HISTORIC PRESERVATION SOCIETY.

See page 181.

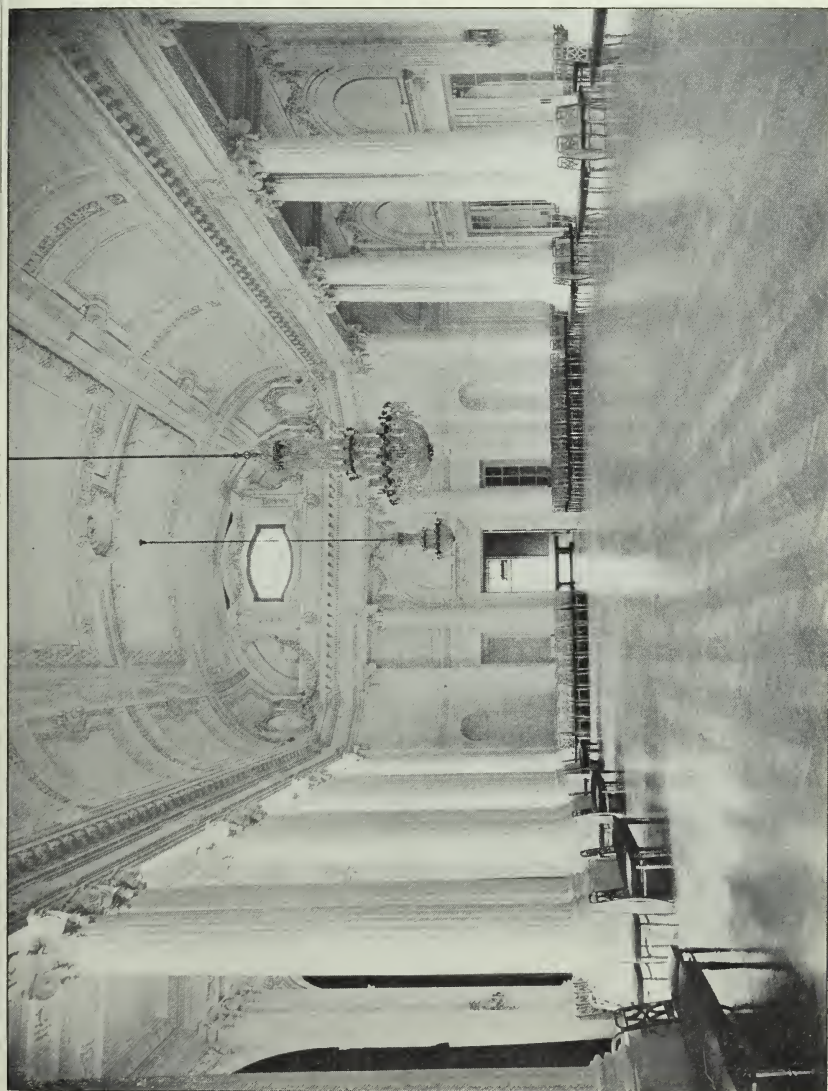


THE FORT LEE PHYTOSAUR.

Excavators removing the fossil at the base of the Palisades at low tide in December, 1910. See pages 64 and 360.



INTERNATIONAL UNION OF THE AMERICAN REPUBLICS.
Building dedicated in Washington, D. C., April 26, 1911. See page 491.



INTERNATIONAL UNION OF THE AMERICAN REPUBLICS.

Main Hall in building in Washington, D. C. See page 495.



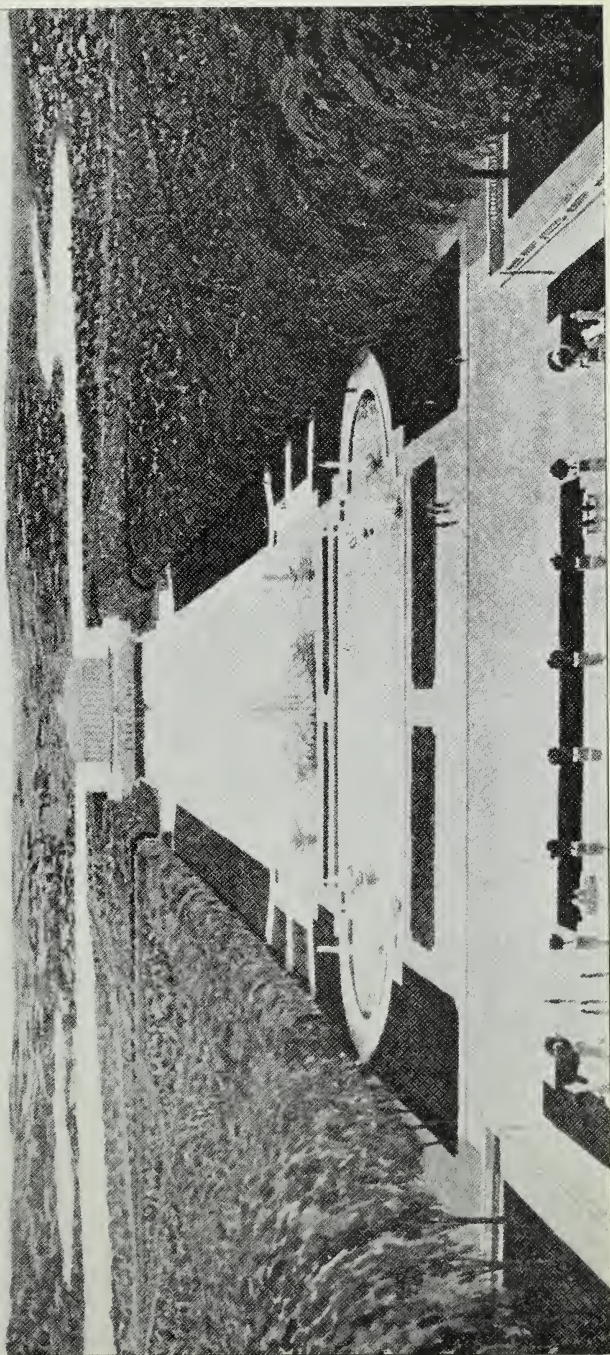
INTERNATIONAL UNION OF AMERICAN REPUBLICS.

Fountain in Courtyard of Building at Washington, D. C. See page 494.



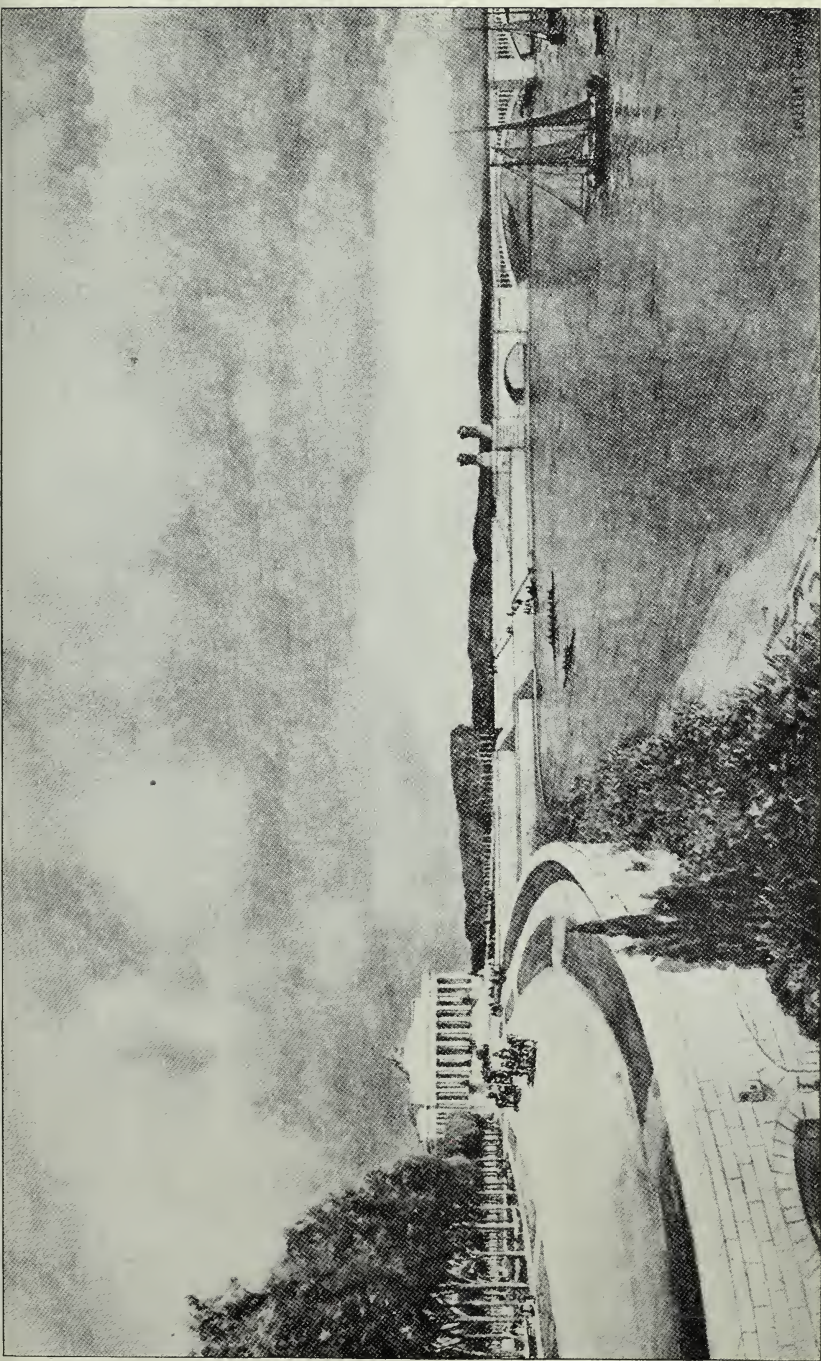
MEDAL PRESENTED TO ANDREW CARNEGIE.

By the American Republics, at Washington, D. C., April 26, 1911. See page 497.



LINCOLN MEMORIAL, WASHINGTON, D. C.

Proposed by Park Commission of Washington, D. C. View from terrace of Washington Monument. See page 508.

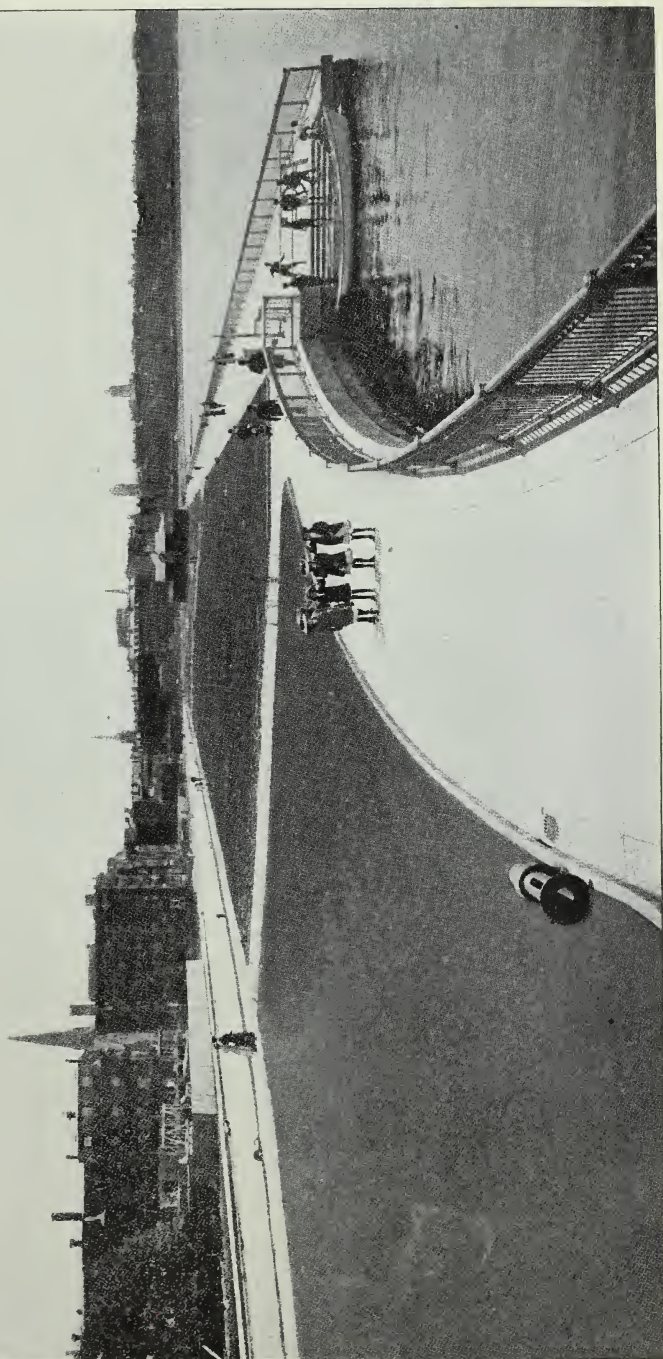


PROPOSED LINCOLN MEMORIAL, WASHINGTON, D. C.
West Front and Memorial Bridge to Arlington. See page 508.



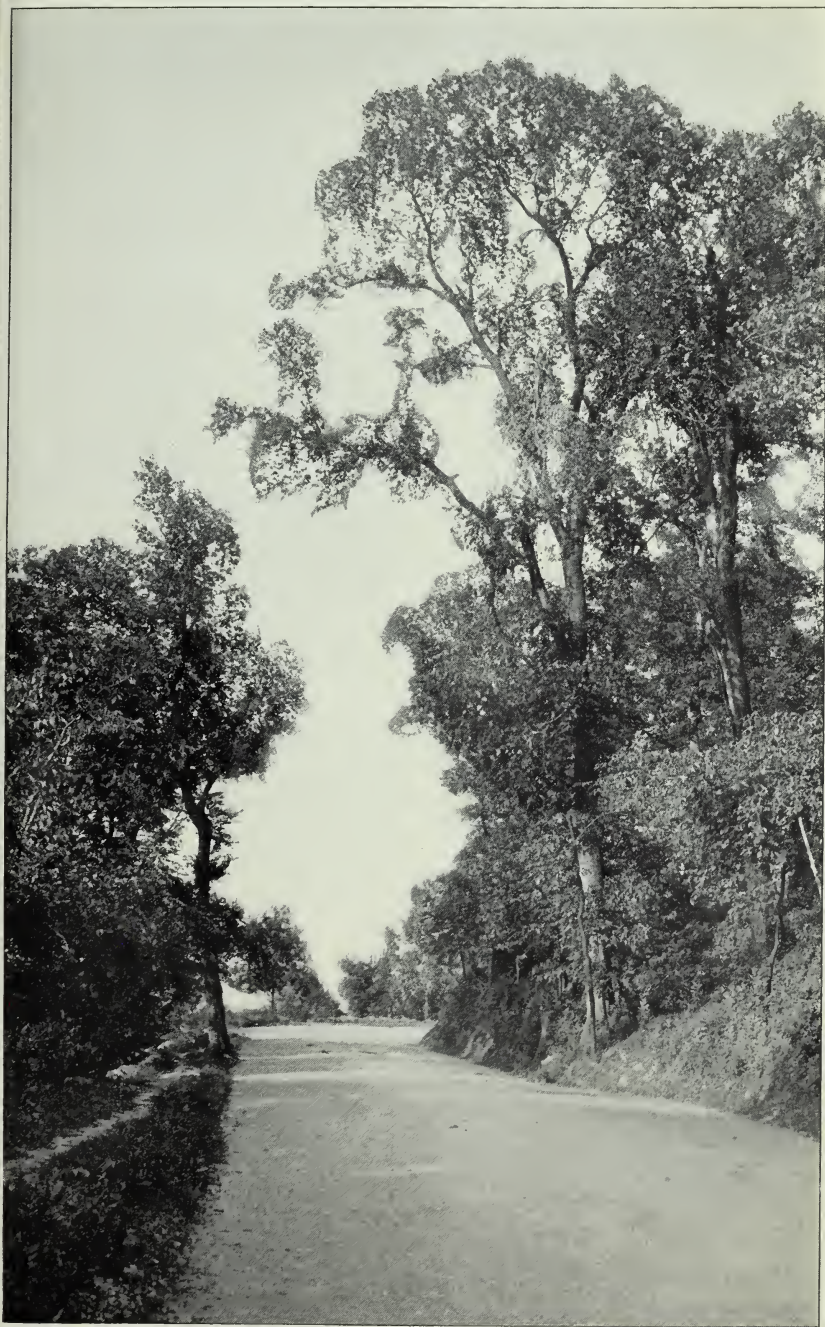
INDIANAPOLIS, IND., PARK IMPROVEMENTS.

Views before and after recent parkway work near Northwestern Avenue Bridge.
See page 512.



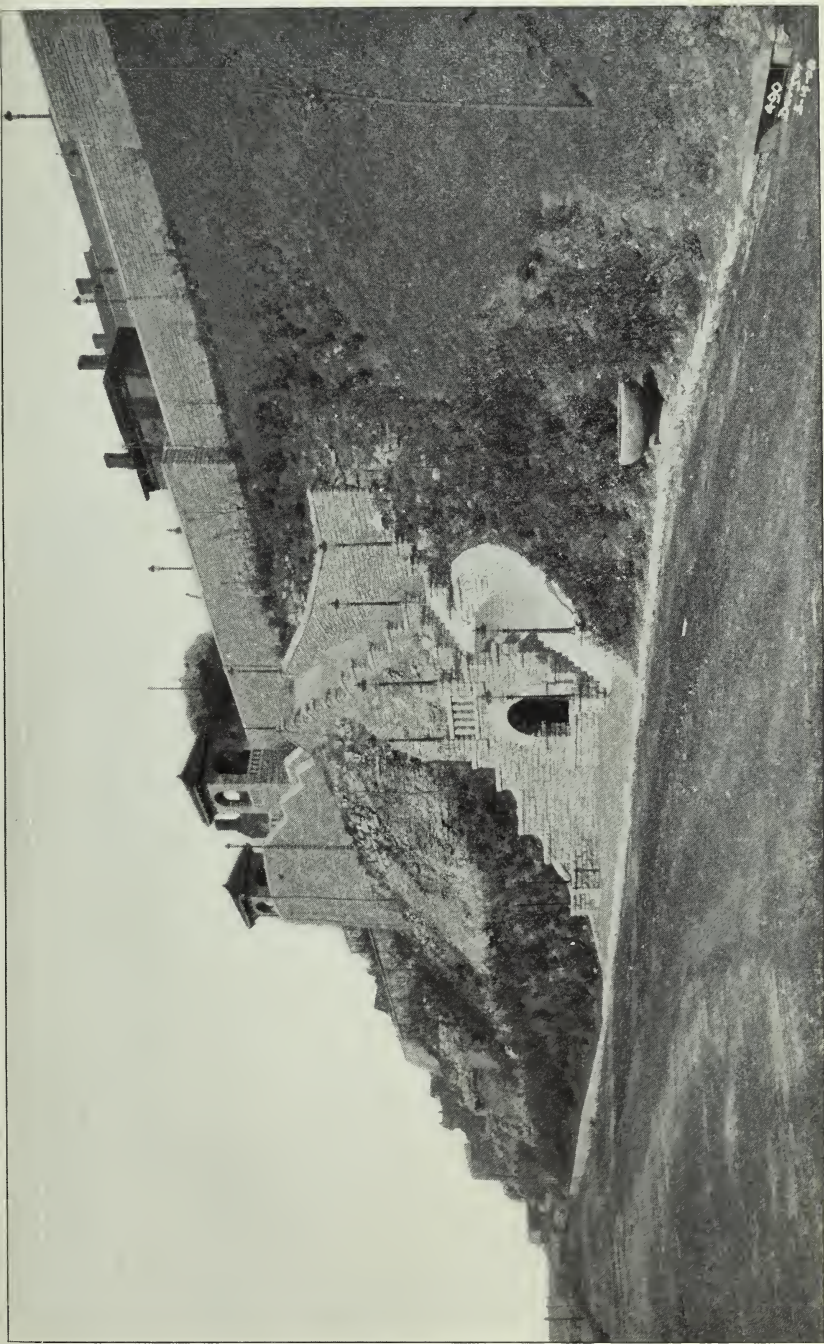
BOSTON, MASS., PARK IMPROVEMENTS.

Charles River Basin Embankment. Up-stream from Cambridge Bridge. See page 514.



KANSAS CITY, MO., PARK IMPROVEMENTS.

Drive in North Terrace Park. See page 517.



KANSAS CITY, MO., PARK IMPROVEMENTS.

Tenth Street Terrace in West Terrace Park, and Drive on the side of the bluff. See page 517.



JAMESTOWN, N. Y., PARK IMPROVEMENTS.

The upper picture represents Dow Park and the lower picture Jones Memorial Park.
See page 522.



Arched openings on the Ponte Vecchio, Florence. A suggestion for Main Street.



Unsightly structures on the river south of Main Street; to be hidden by proposed building on the aqueduct.

A CITY PLAN FOR ROCHESTER, N. Y.
By the Rochester Civic Improvement Committee.
See page 531.



A dignified and interesting railroad bridge in Paris.

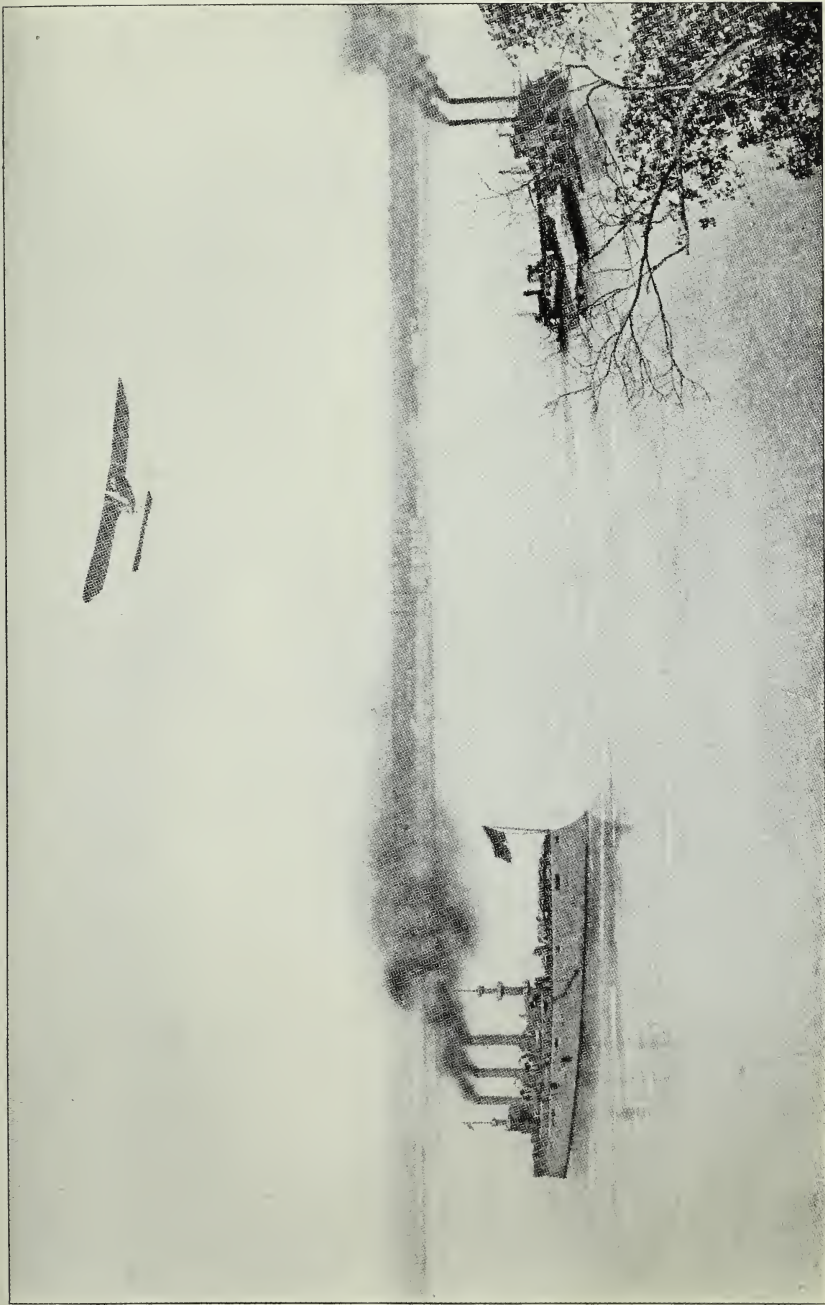


New York Central Railroad Bridge over State Street.

A CITY PLAN FOR ROCHESTER, N. Y.

By the Rochester Civic Improvement Committee.

See page 531.



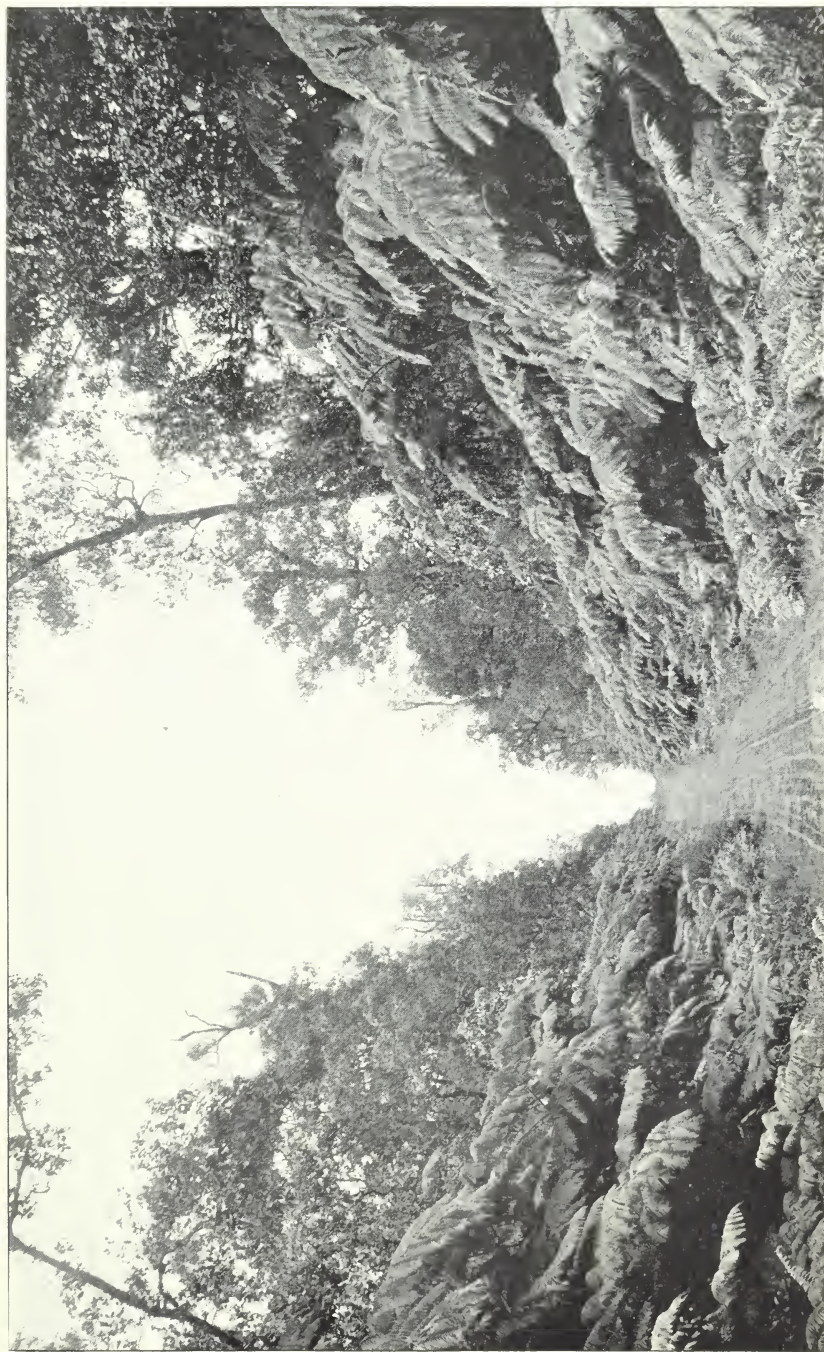
MISSISSIPPI RIVER FROM RIVERSIDE PARK, MEMPHIS, TENN.

See page 535.



MAP OF HAWAII.

Showing sites of proposed Volcano National Parks. Scale, 17 miles to 1 inch. See page 192.

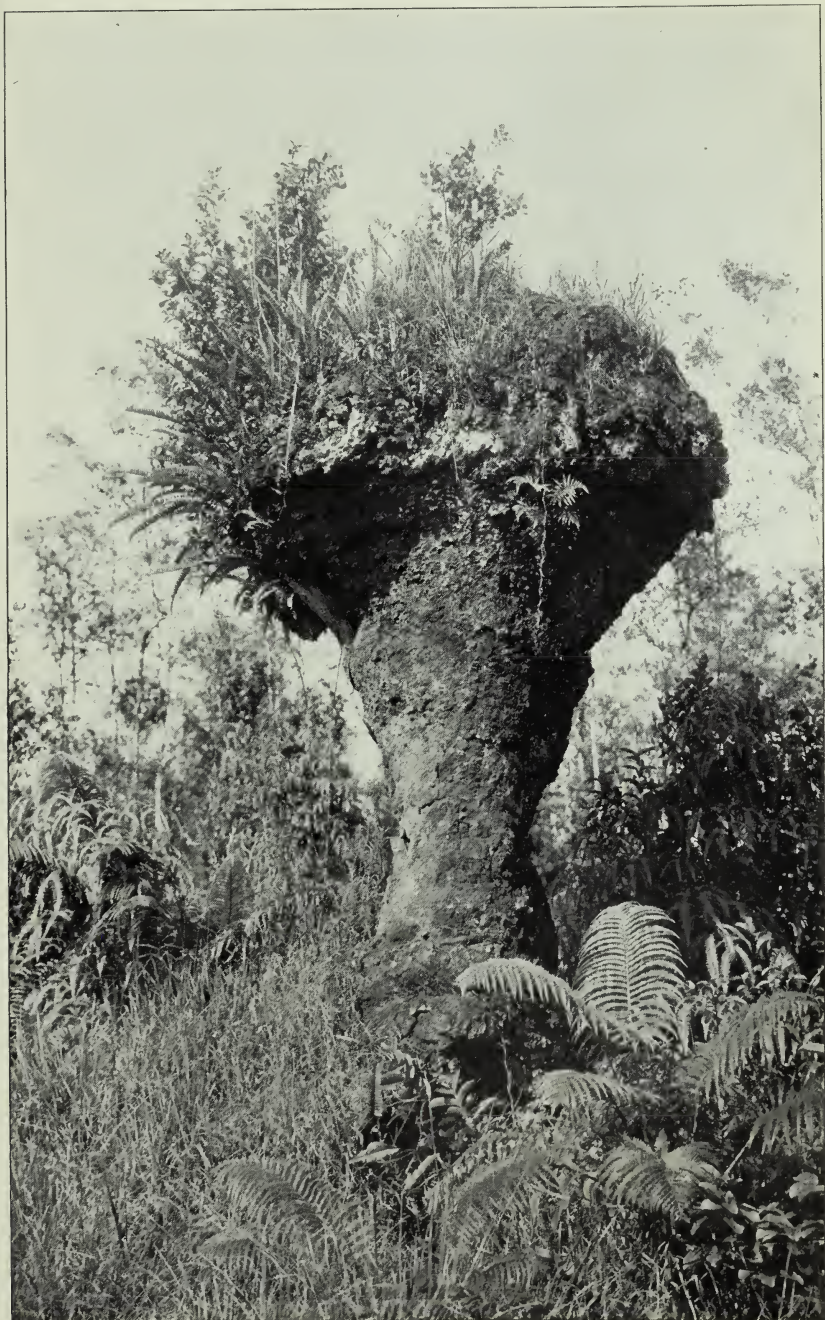


ON THE AUTOMOBILE ROAD TO KILAUEA, HAWAII.
Proposed Volcano National Park. See page 193.



KILAUEA CRATER IN PROPOSED VOLCANO NATIONAL PARK, HAWAII.

See page 192.

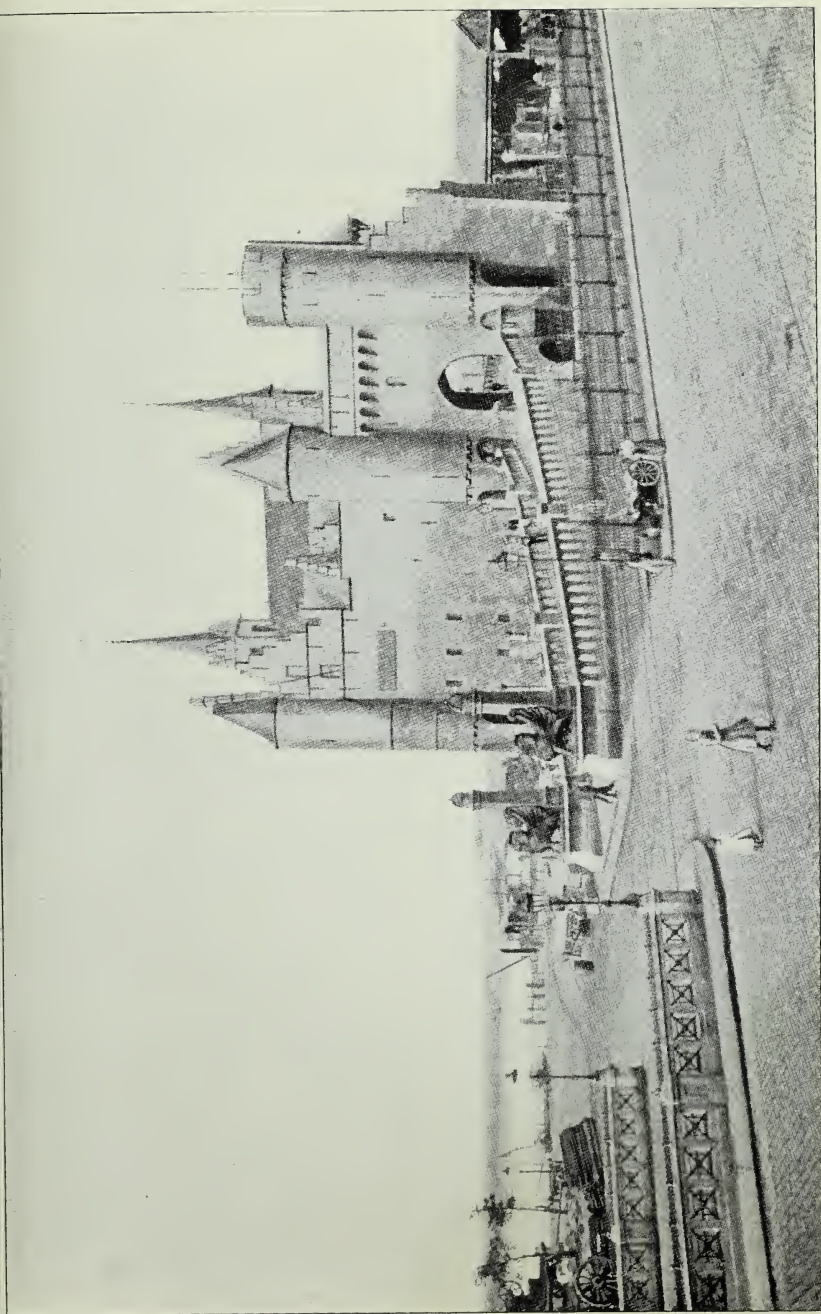


LAVA TREE MOULDS IN PROPOSED VOLCANO NATIONAL PARK, HAWAII.

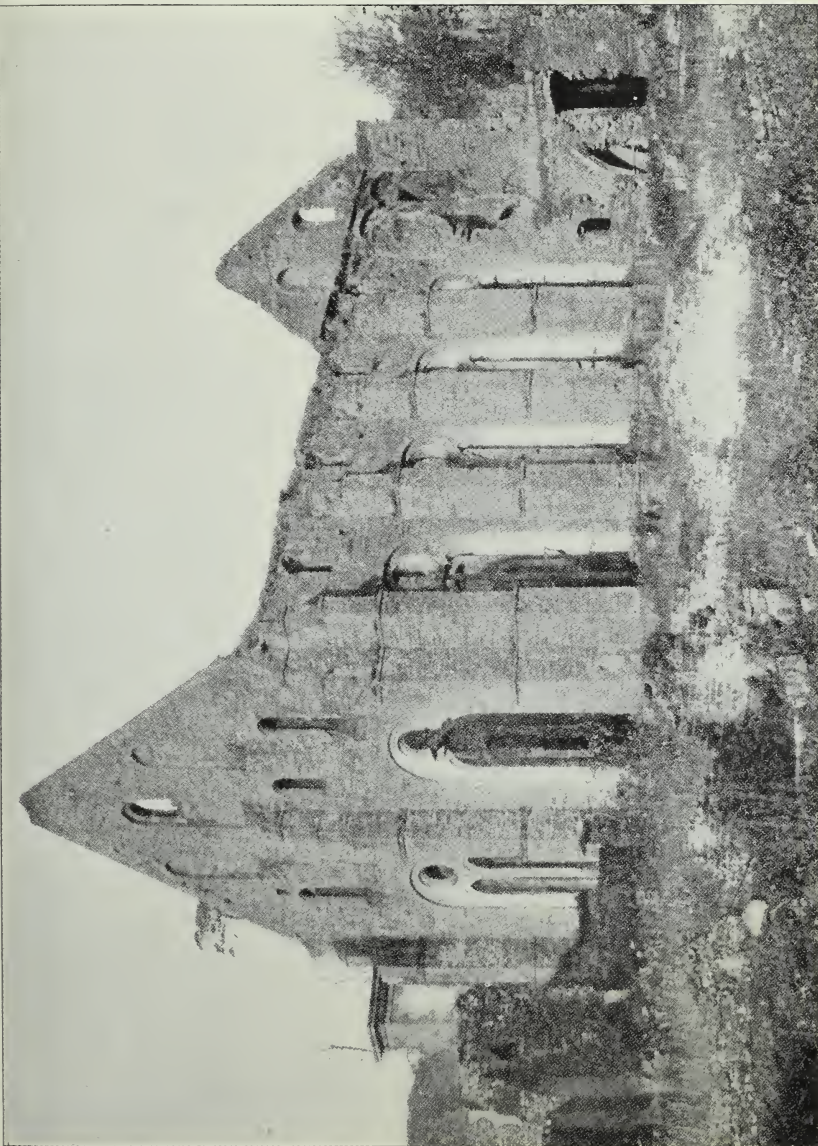
See page 193.



HISTORIC MONUMENTS OF BELGIUM.
The University Halls at Louvain. See page 560.



HISTORIC MONUMENTS IN BELGIUM.
Le Steen, in the City of Anvers. See page 560.



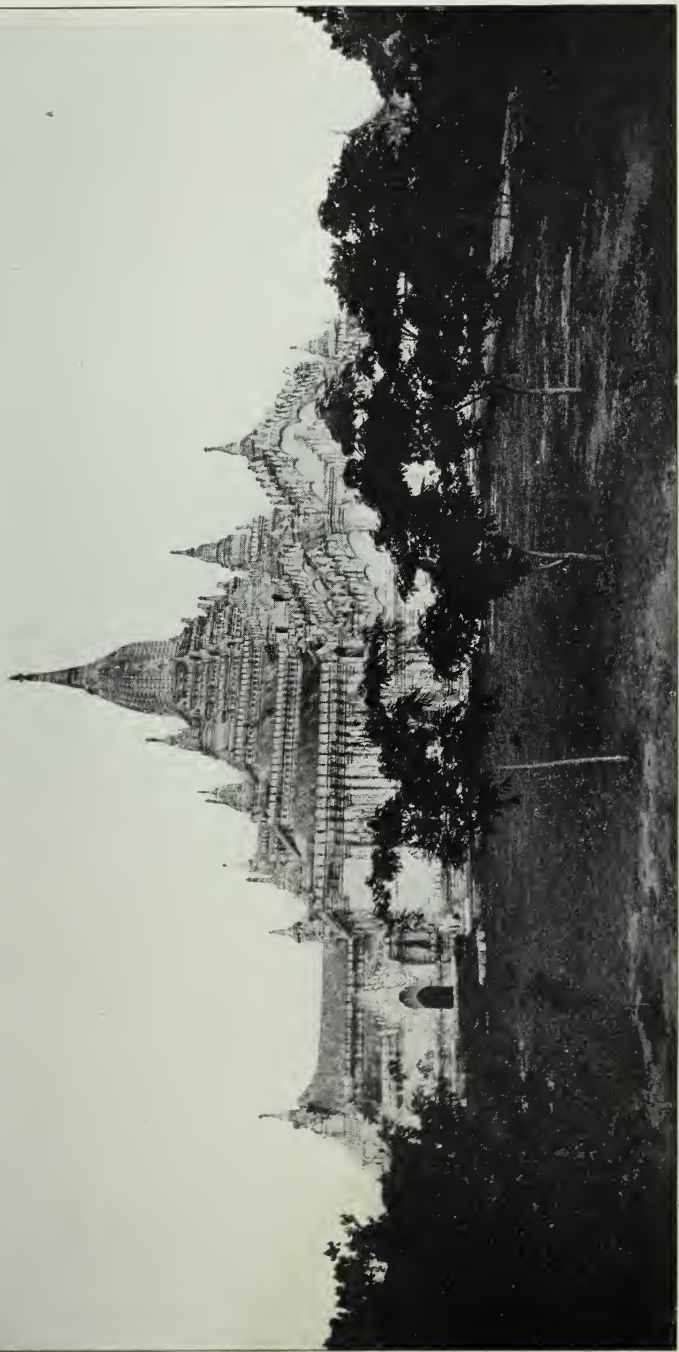
HISTORIC MONUMENTS IN BELGIUM.

Ruins of the Refectory of the Abbey at Villers. See page 561.



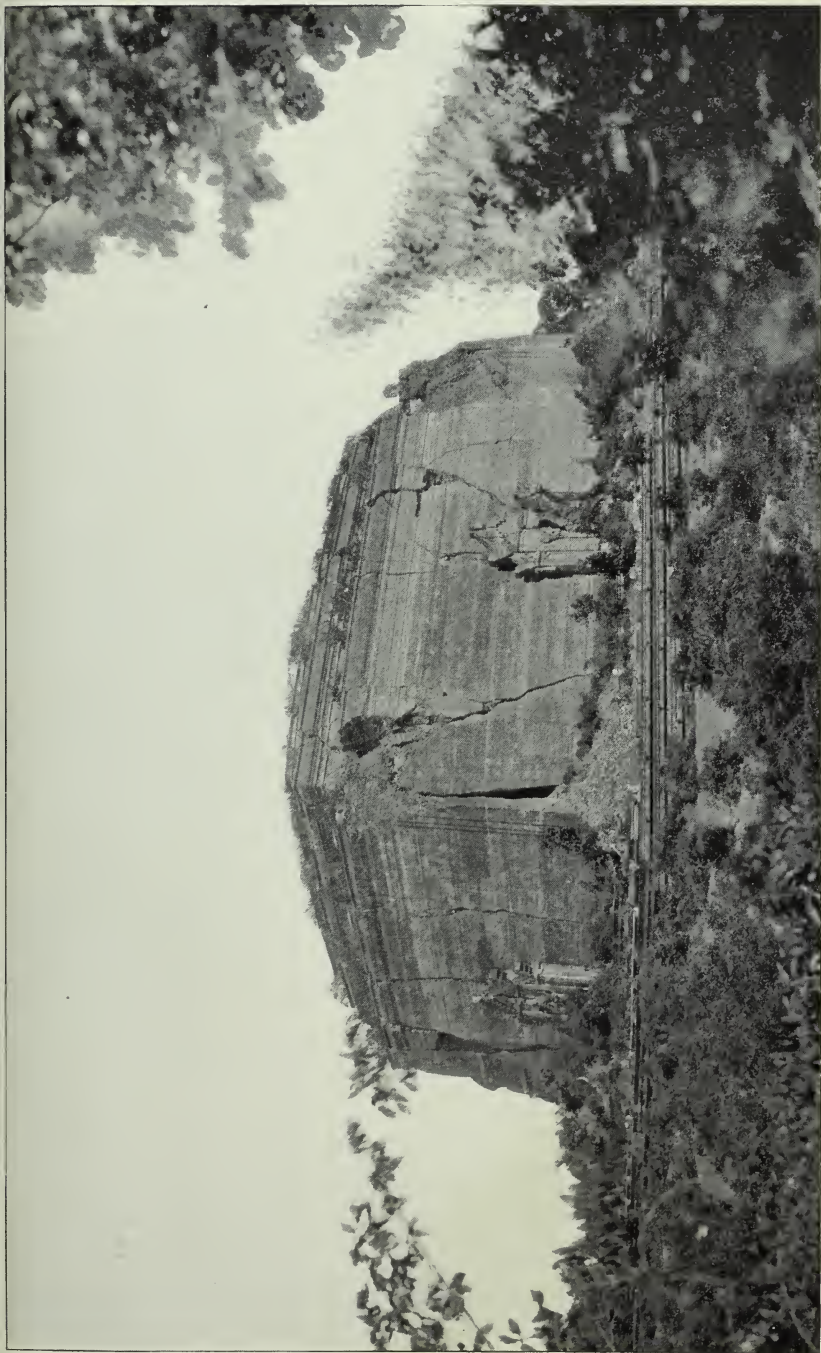
HISTORIC MONUMENTS IN BURMA.

Shwedagon Pagoda, Rangoon, "the most venerated object of worship in all the Indo-Chinese countries." See page 562.



HISTORIC MONUMENTS IN BURMA.

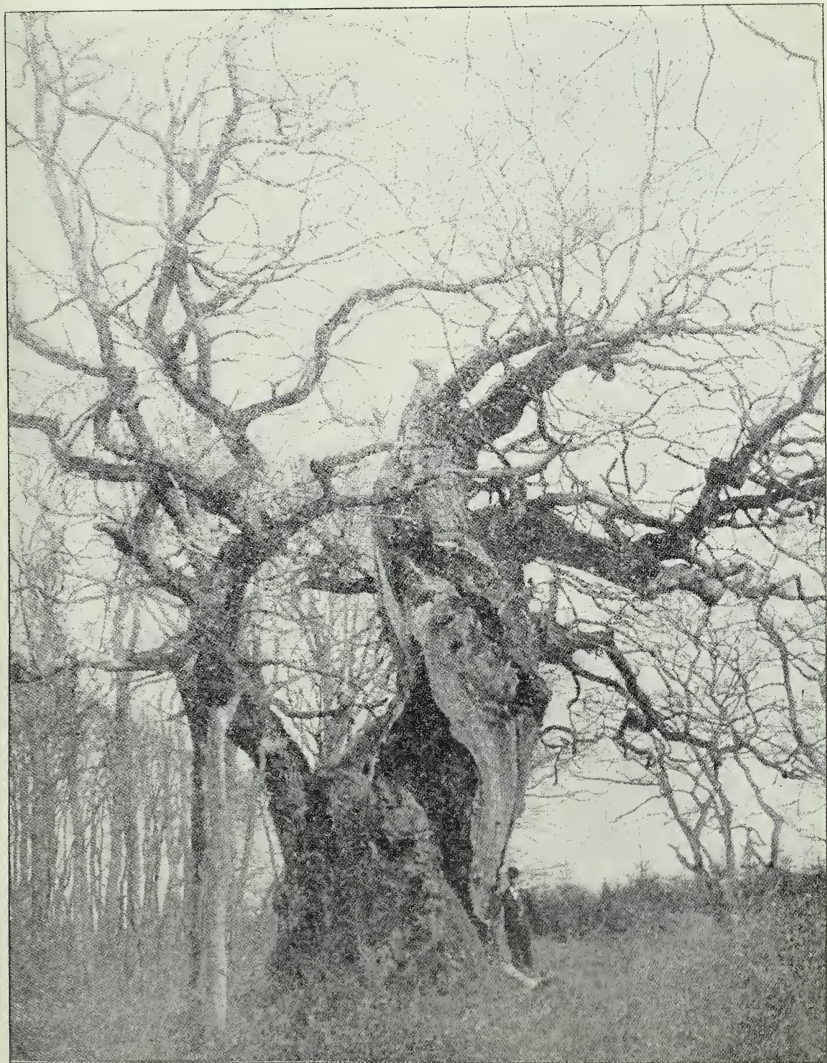
Ananda Pagoda at Pagan. See page 563.



HISTORIC MONUMENTS IN BURMA.
Mingung Pagoda, Sagaing. See page 563.



HISTORIC MONUMENTS IN BURMA.
Queens Golden Monastery in Mandalay. See page 564.



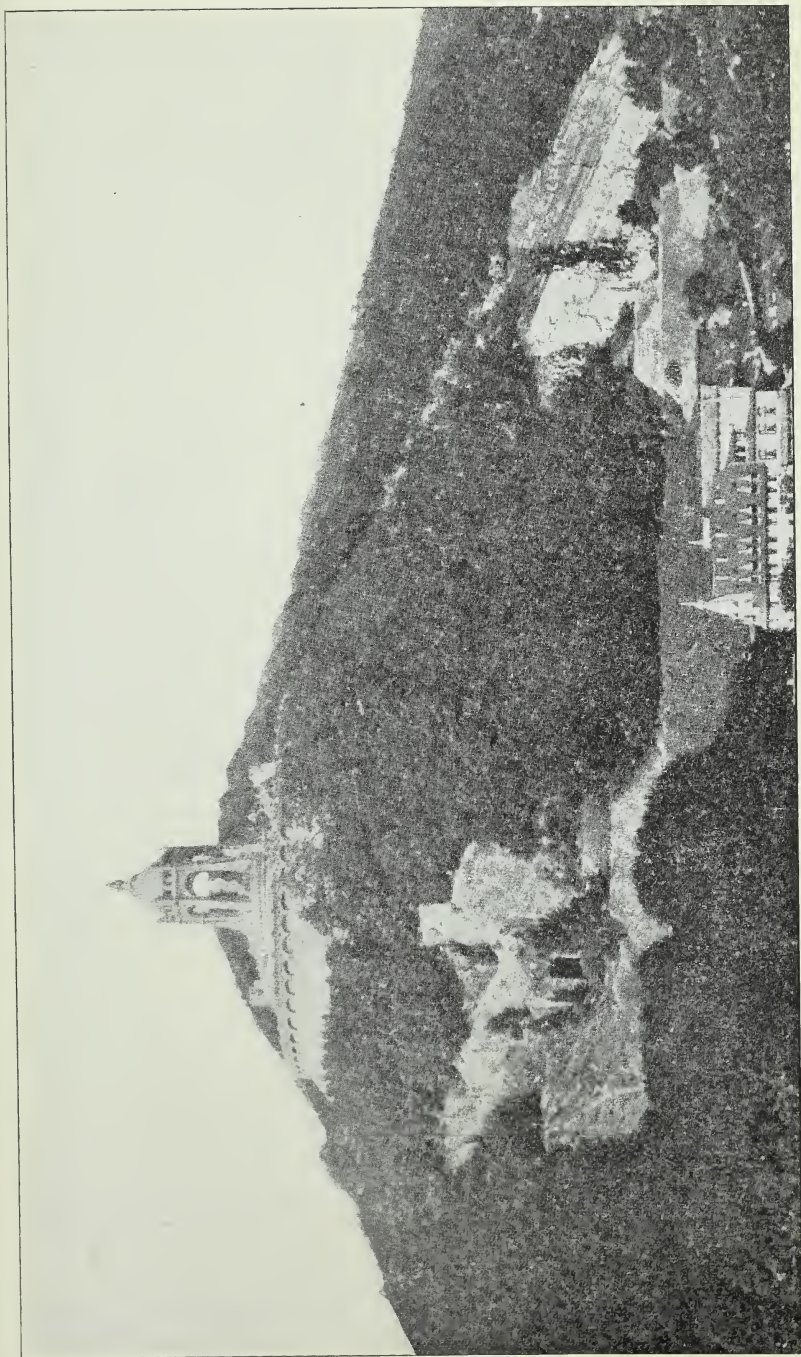
NATURE MONUMENT CARE IN DENMARK.

Stork Oak in Jaegerspris Nordskov, at Fredericksund. 900 years old. 11 m. in circumference. See page 565.



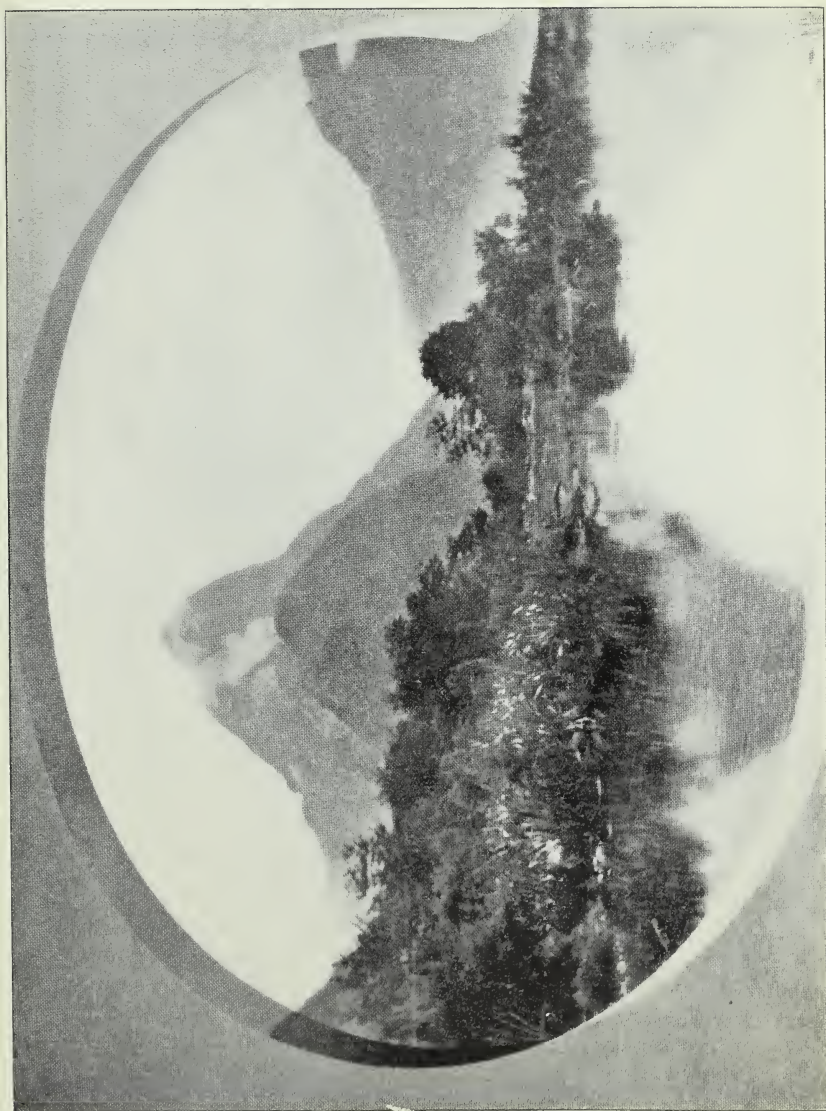
NATURE MONUMENT CARE IN DENMARK.

The Damme Stone, 15 kilometers south of Nyborg, the largest erratic stone in Denmark. See page 567.



NATURE MONUMENT CARE IN PRUSSIA.

Porta Westfalica, south of Minden. Disfigurement by Stone Quarry stopped. See page 570.



MITRE PEAK, NEW ZEALAND.

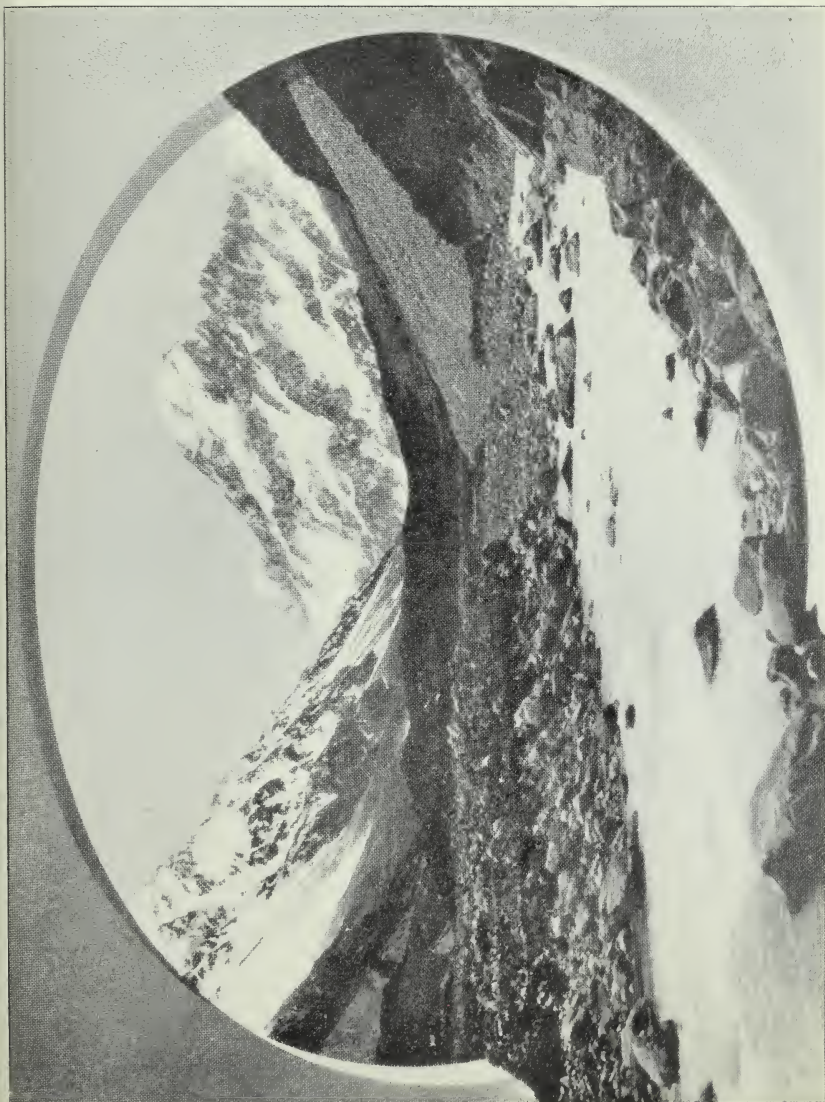
From near the head of Milford Sound. See page 579.



LAKE ADA, NEW ZEALAND.

In the lower part of the Arthur Valley, near the head of Milford Sound. In the distance are the Sheerdown

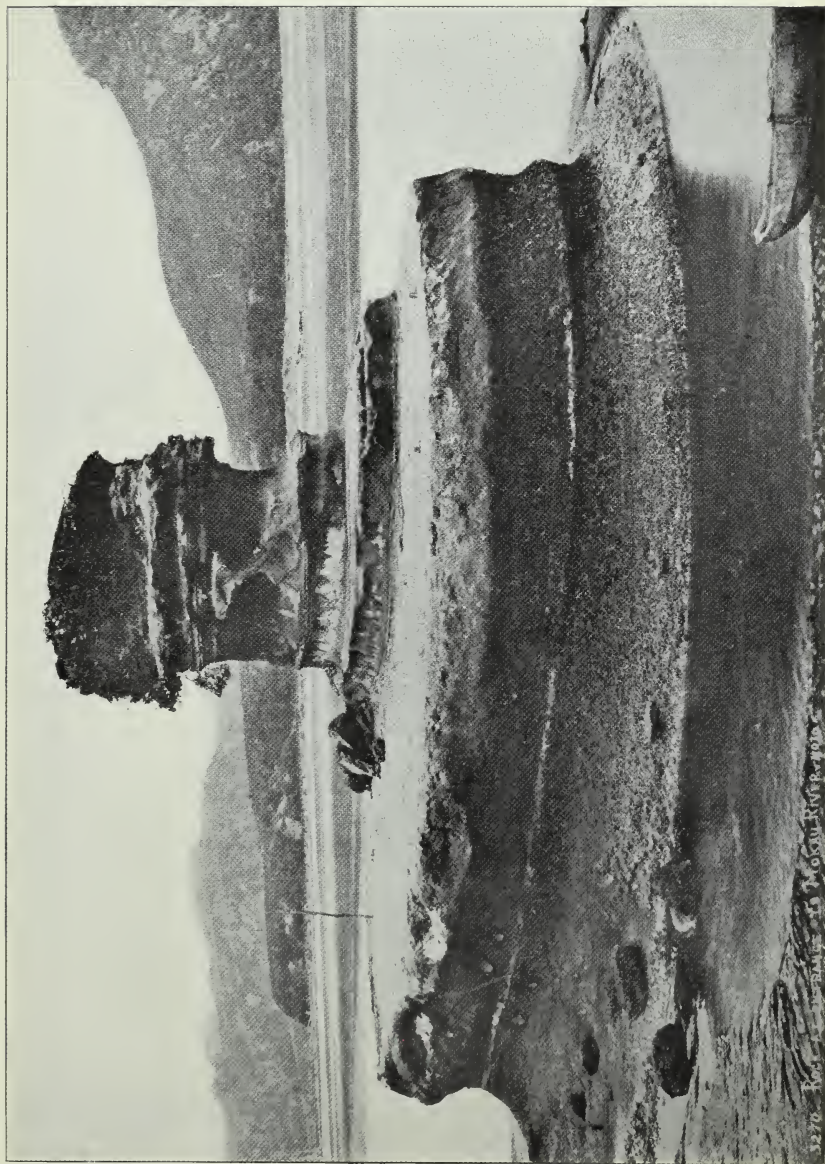
Heights and the Darran Ranges. See page 579.



MT. COOK, SOUTHERN ALPS, NEW ZEALAND.

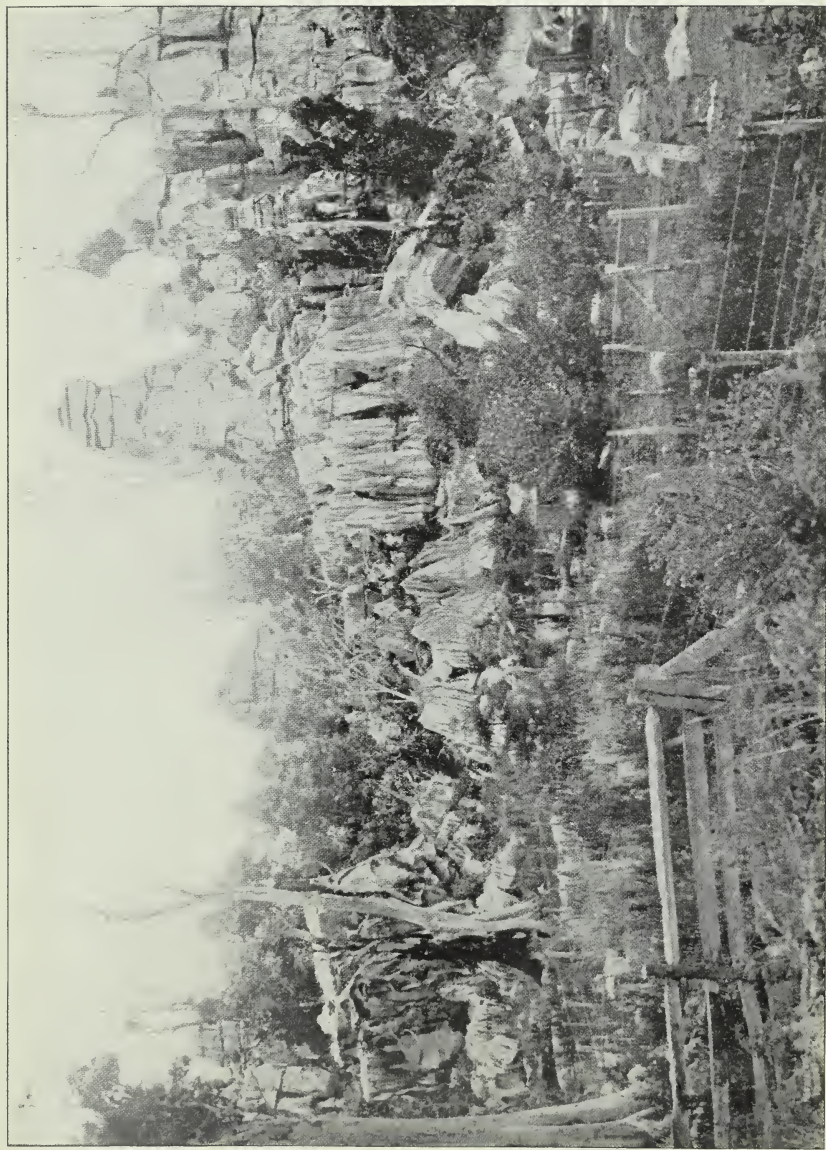
Mt. Cook, or Aorangi, the monarch of the Southern Alps, is 12,349 feet in height, and is the loftiest point of Australasia.

See page 579.



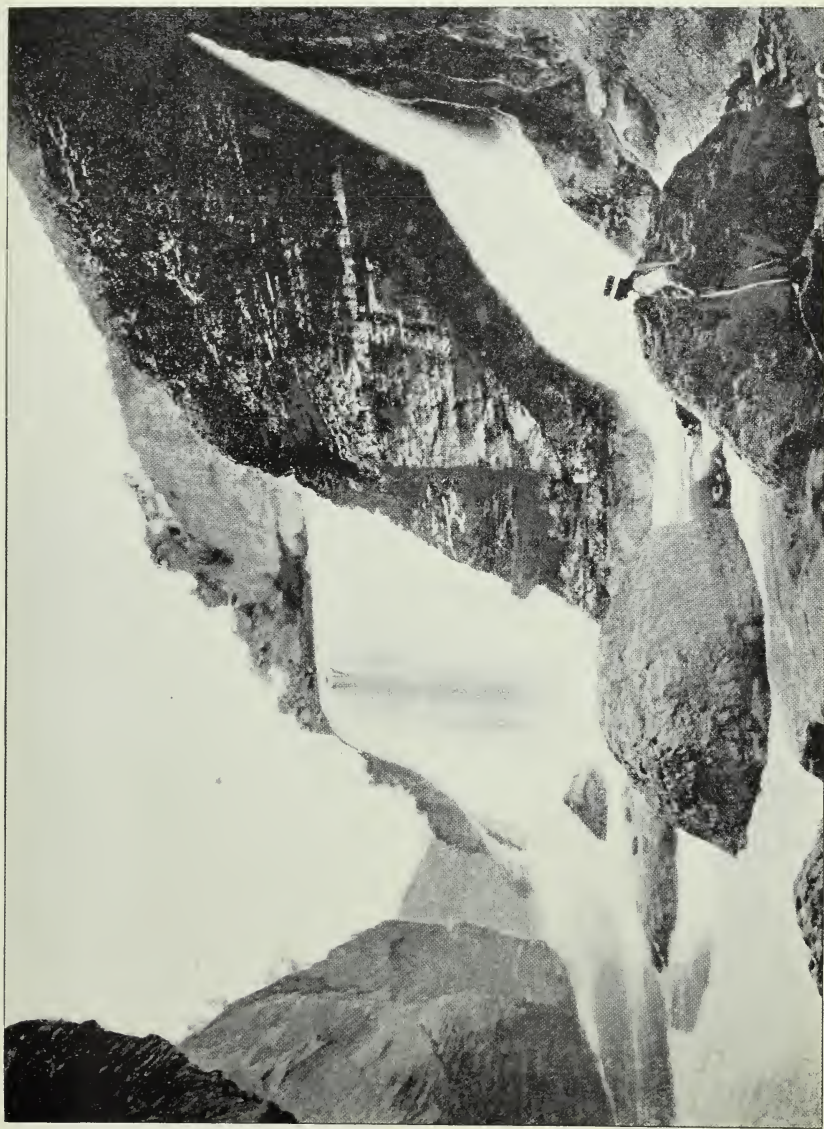
SANDSTONE ROCK AT ENTRANCE, MOKAU RIVER, NEW ZEALAND.

From Report of Scenery Preservation Commission See page 570

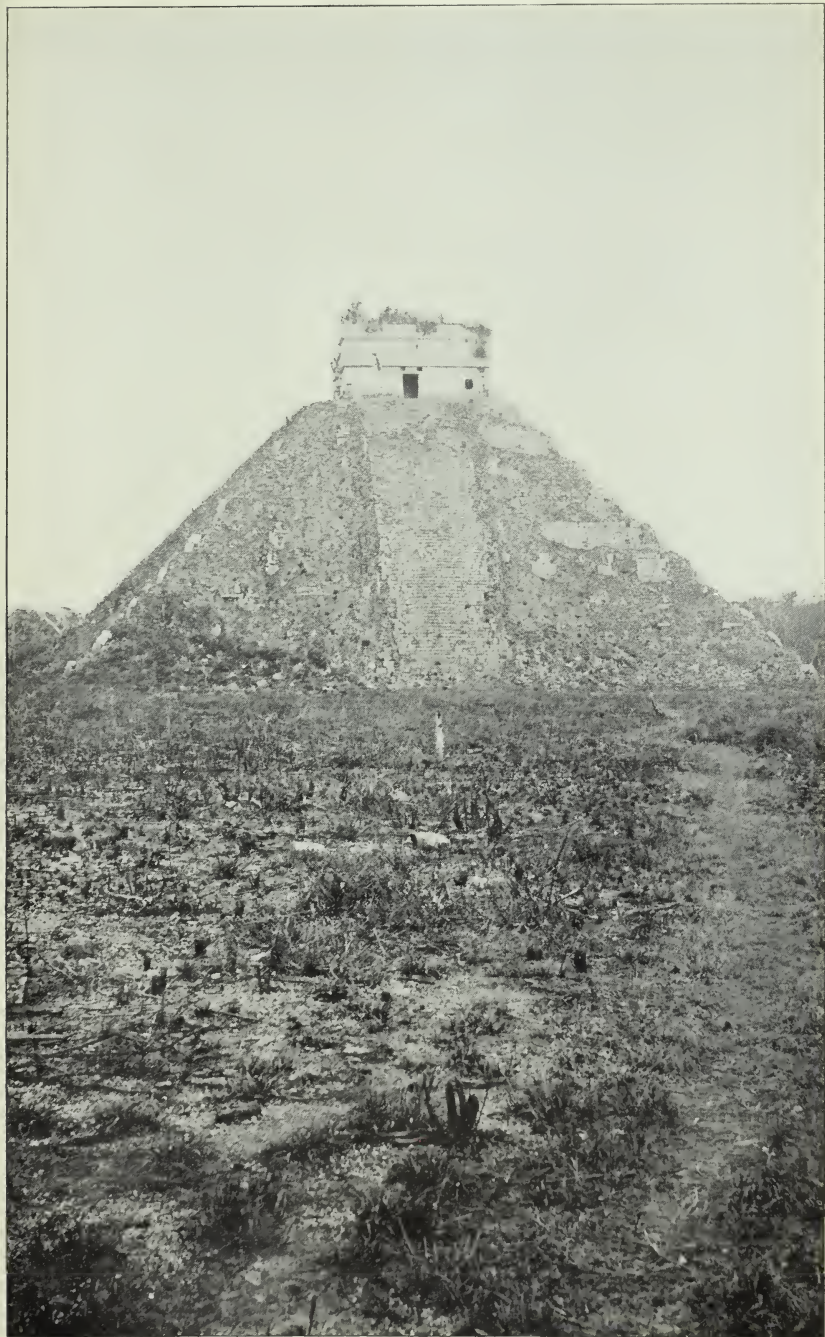


LIMESTONE ROCKS, WARU, NEAR WHANGAREI, NEW ZEALAND.

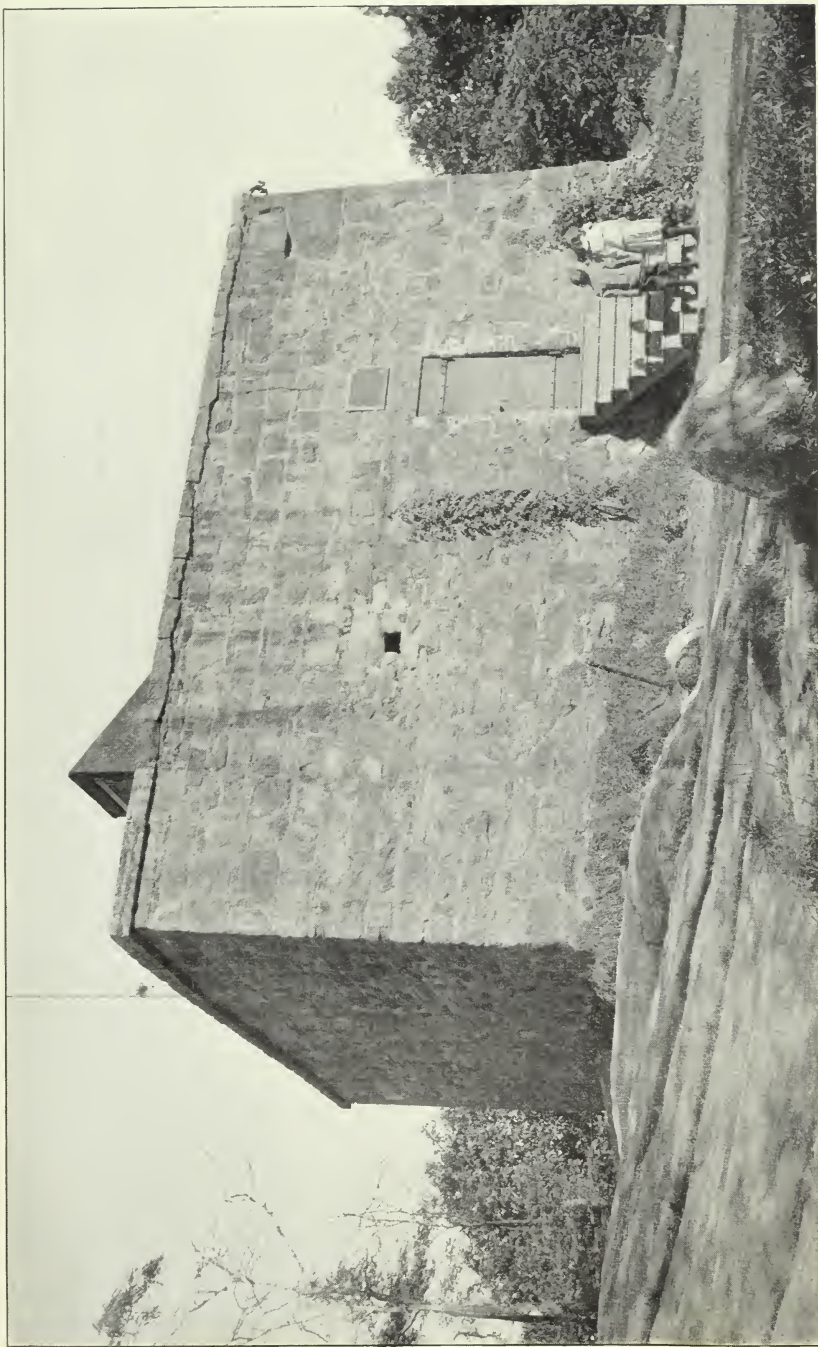
Preserved by the Scenery Preservation Commission. See page 579.



TE REINGA FALLS, WAIROA, HAWKE'S BAY, NEW ZEALAND.
Recommended for Reservation by Scenery Preservation Commission. See page 579.



HISTORIC MONUMENTS OF YUCATAN.
Pyramid and Temple of Chichen Itza. See page 63.



CENTRAL PARK, NEW YORK CITY.

Stone blockhouse in northwestern corner of Park, erected 1814. See page 423.



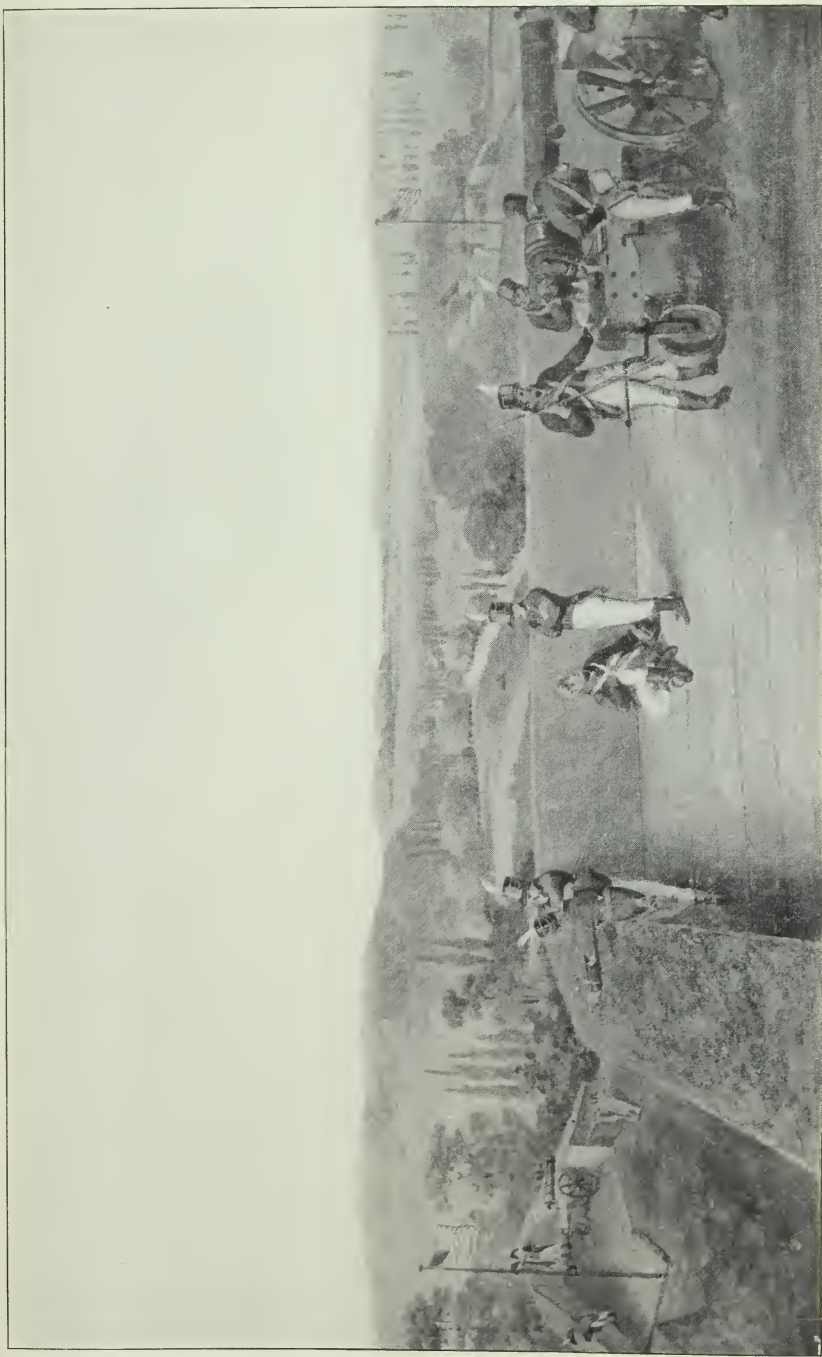
BLUFF OF FORT CLINTON IN 1905.

Looking northeast across Harlem Mere toward houses on 110th street, showing neglected old cannon.



CENTRAL PARK, NEW YORK CITY.

Monument in middle of Fort Clinton, showing care of same cannon.
See page 427.



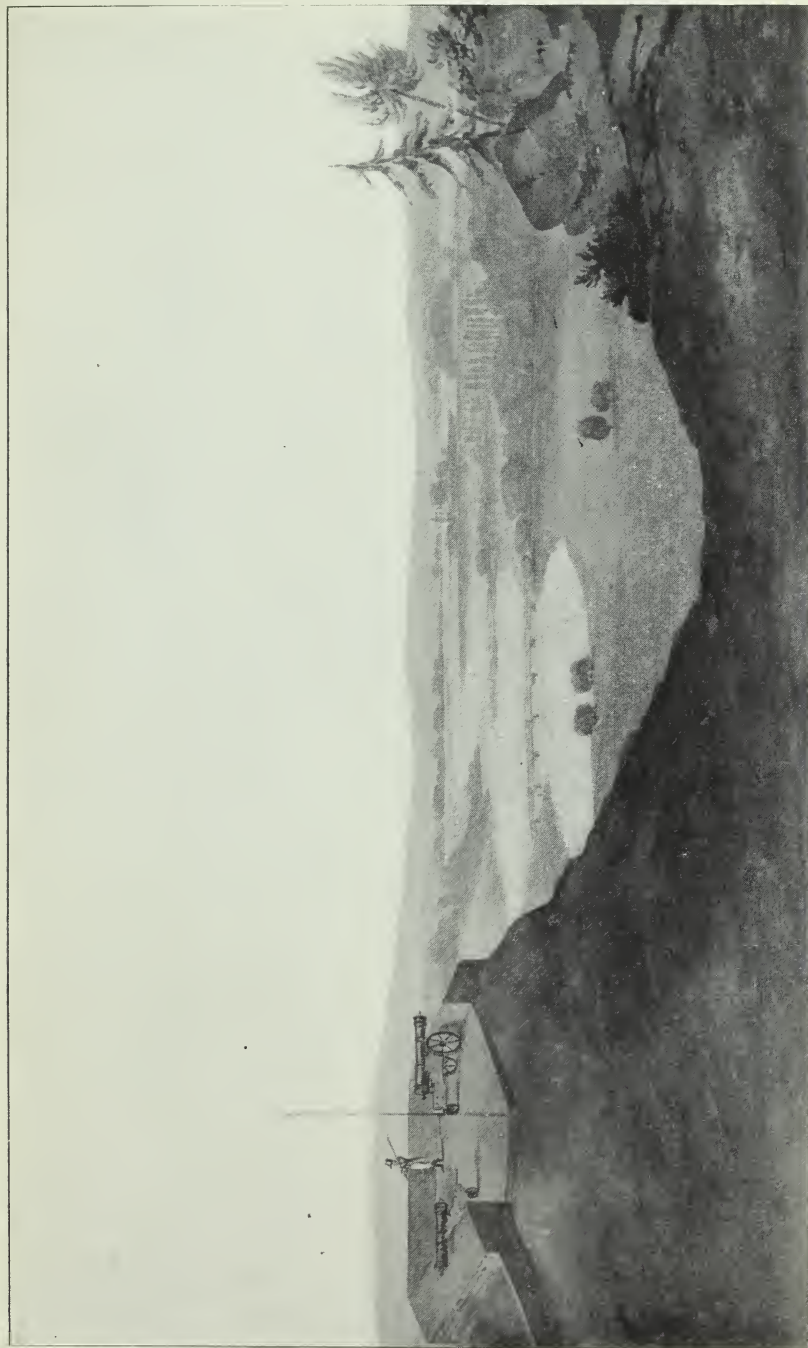
CENTRAL PARK, NEW YORK.

Works at McGown's Pass in 1814. Fort Fish in foreground. Fort Clinton at extreme left. Nutter's Battery at extreme right. Fort Clinton at right above gun. See page 424.



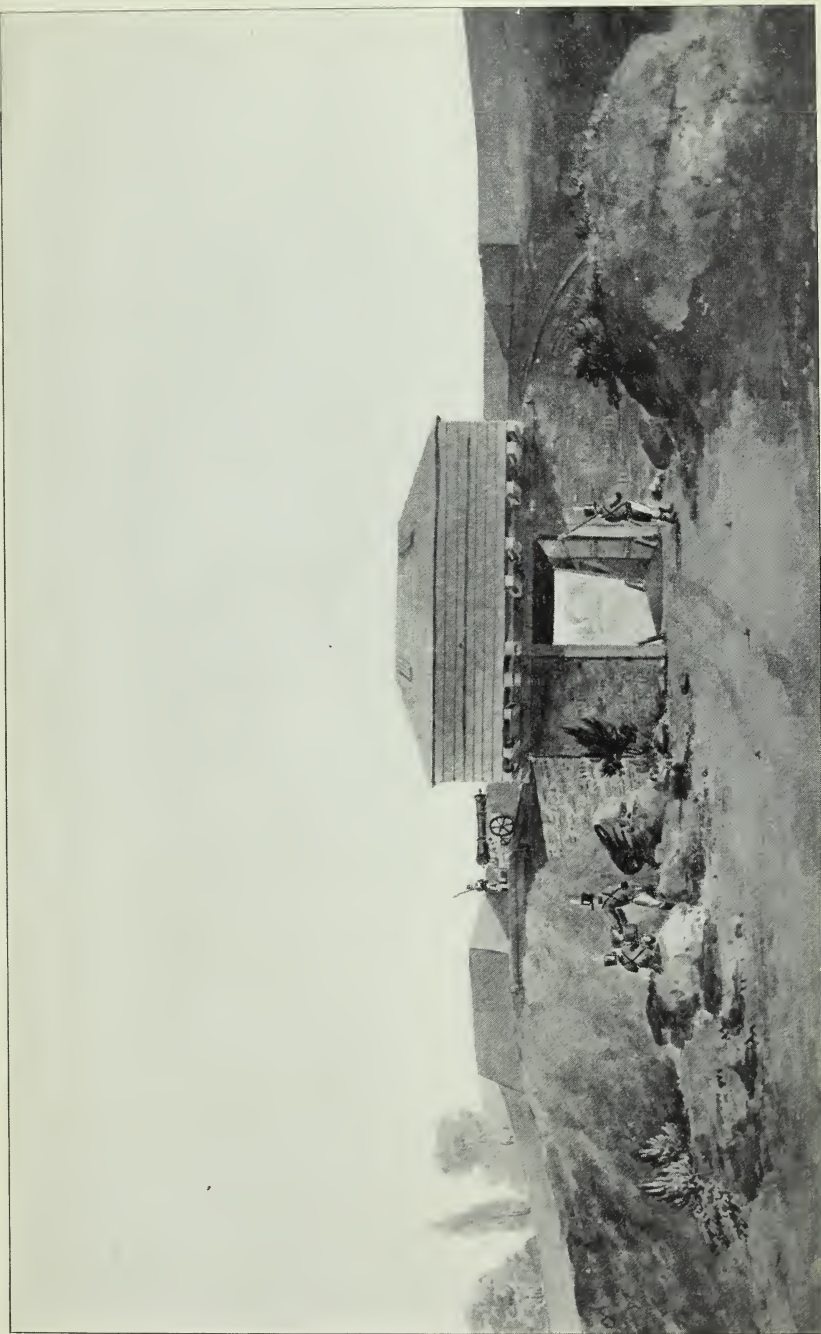
CENTRAL PARK, NEW YORK.

Fort Fish and Fort Clinton in 1814. Looking north. See page 424.



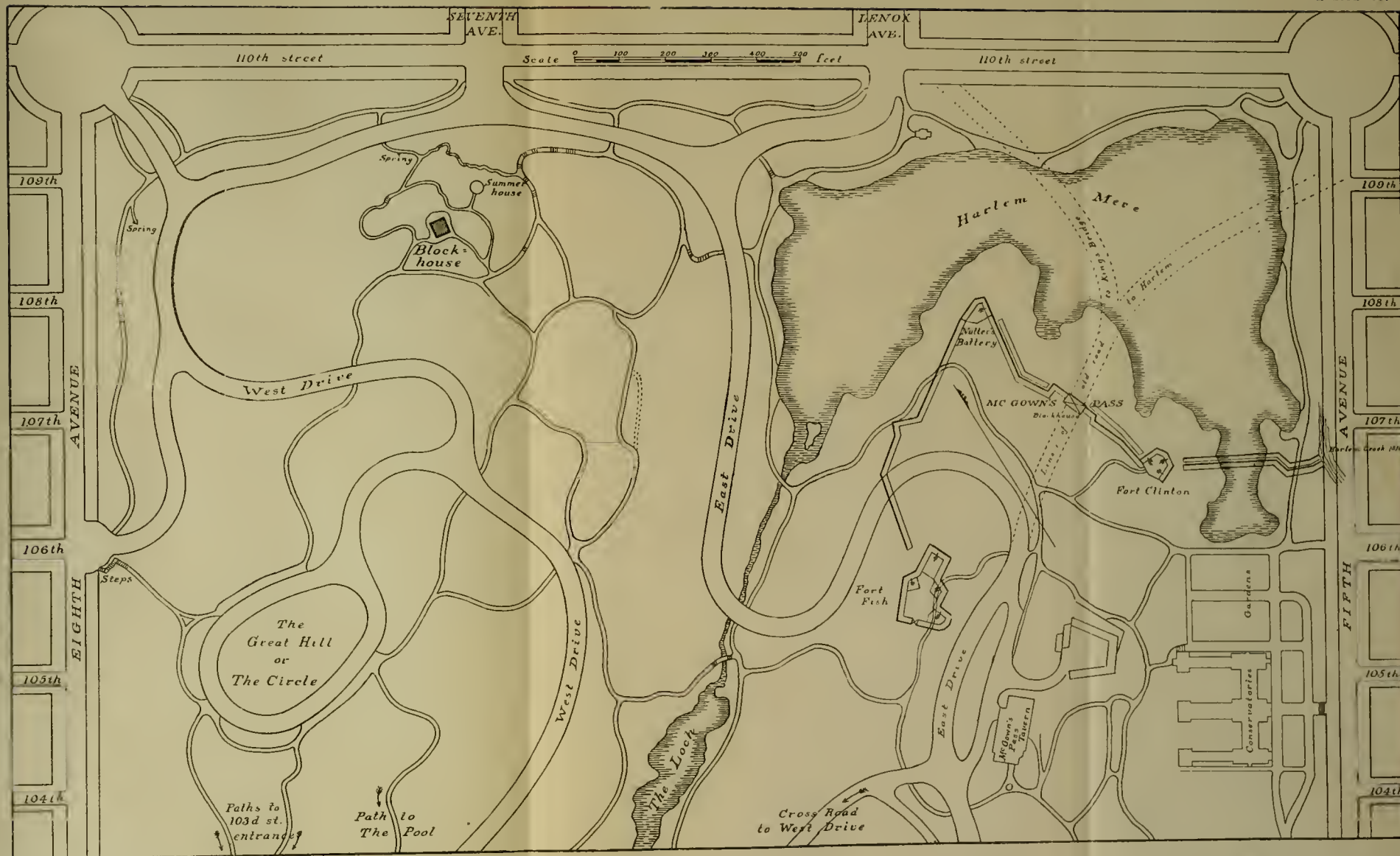
CENTRAL PARK, NEW YORK.

Fort Clinton in 1814. Looking east. Harlem Creek (now obsolete) in middle. See page 421.



CENTRAL PARK, NEW YORK.

Barrier Gate and Blockhouse at McGown's Pass in 1814. Looking northeast. See page 525.

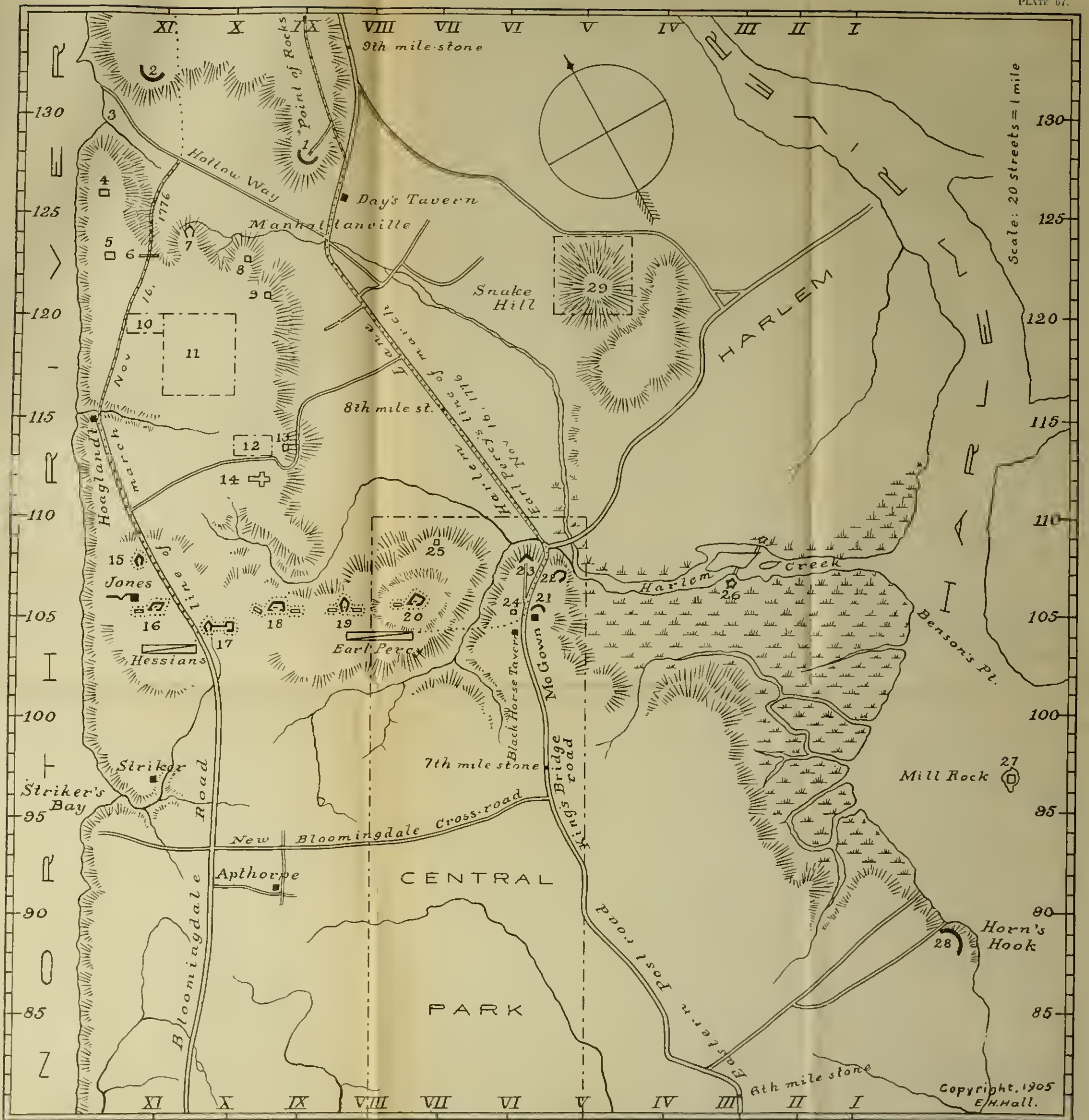


CENTRAL PARK, NEW YORK CITY, FROM 104TH STREET TO 110TH STREET.

With plan of fortifications at McGown's Pass in 1814 superimposed.

(Copyright, 1905, by Edward Hagaman Hall.)



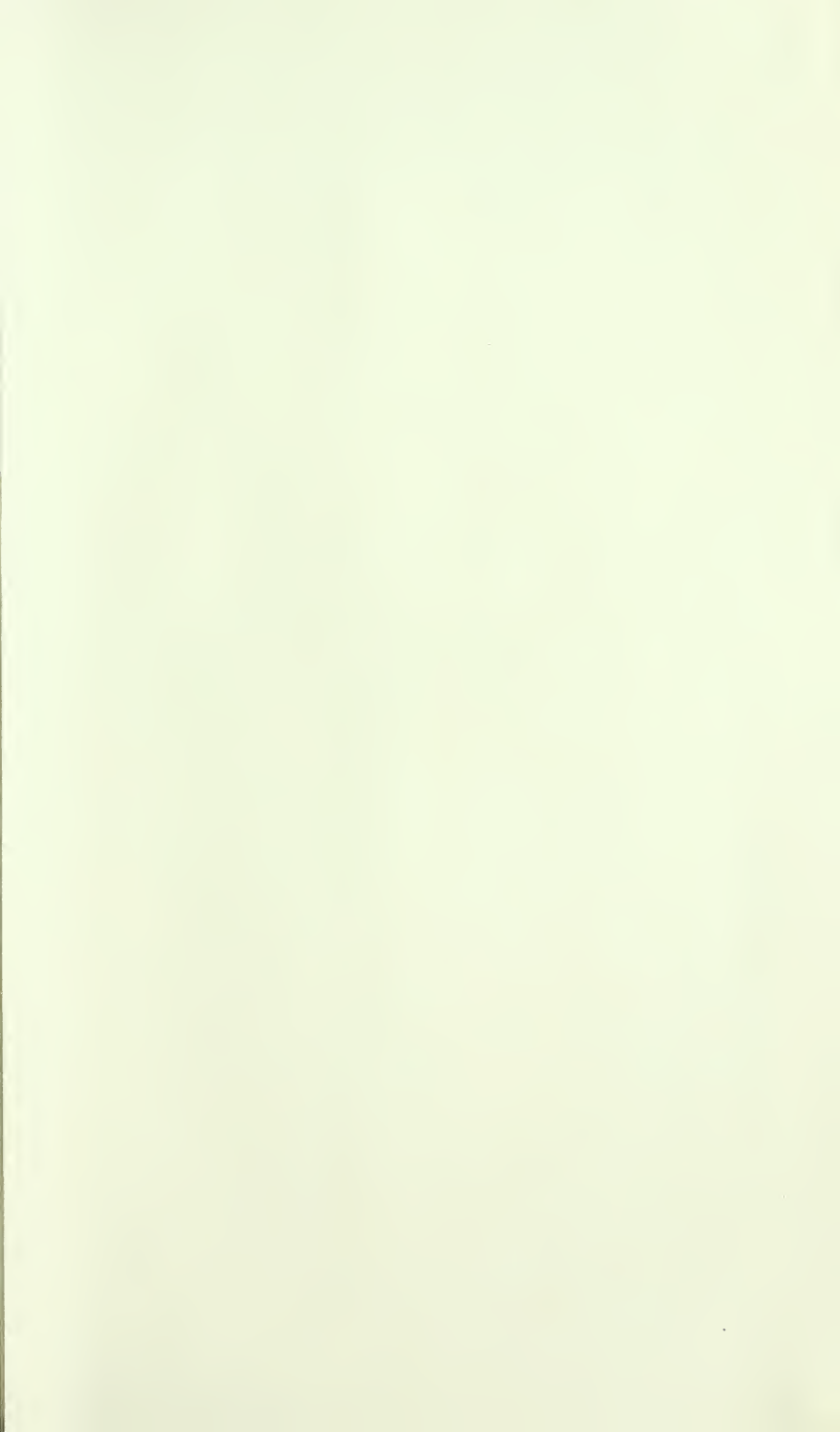


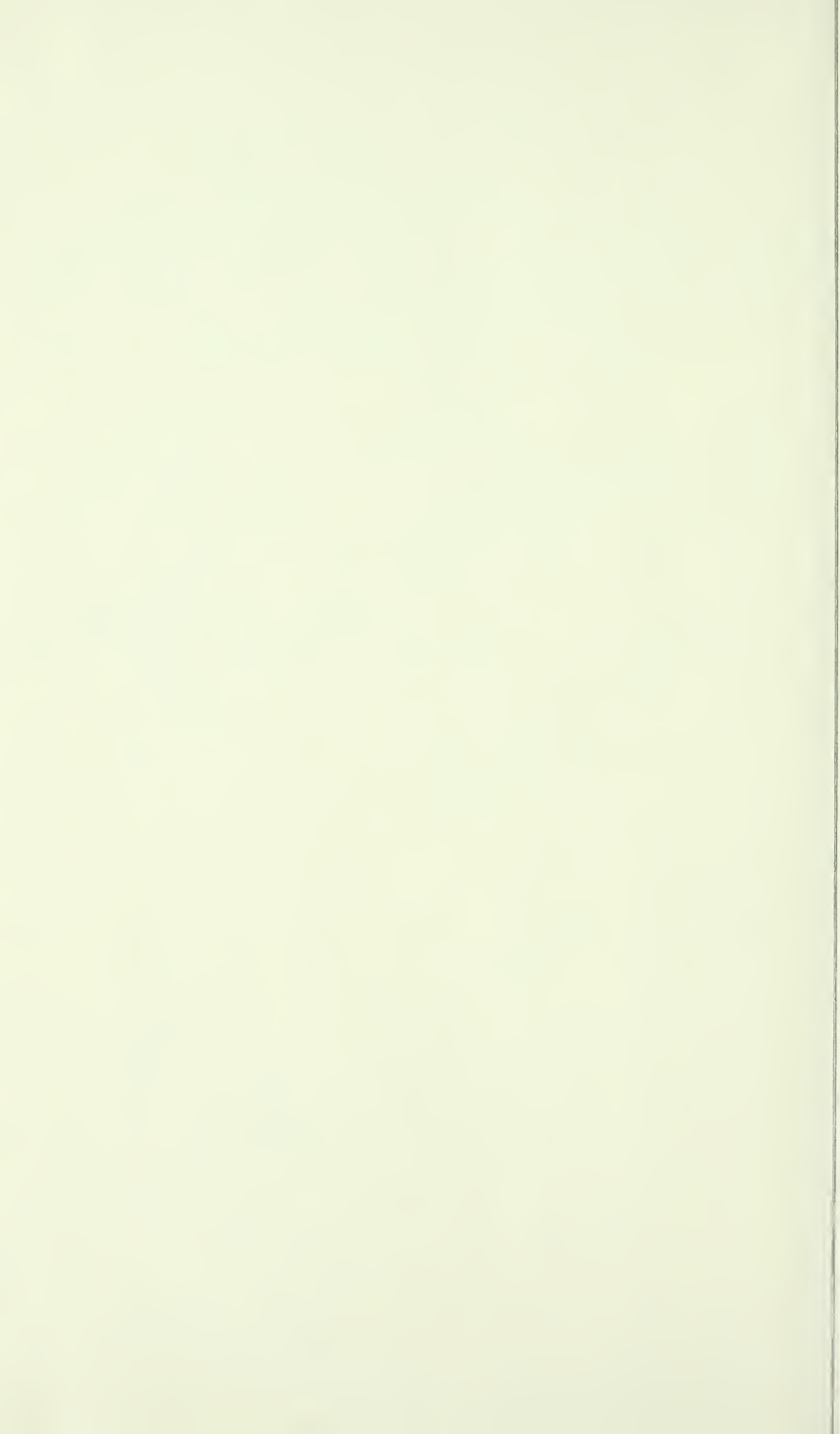
A LANDMARK MAP OF MANHATTAN ISLAND FROM 80TH STREET TO 140TH STREET IN 1776.

With location of some modern sites.

The division marks in margins represent projection of center lines of streets and avenues. Sites and topographical features are carefully located with reference to these lines: 1. American battery, 1776, whence Washington watched Battle of Harlem Heights. 2. American battery, 1776. 3. Matje David's Vly, 1776. Ground embraced between 4, 8, 14 and 15 was battlefield of Harlem Heights; eastern portion now called Morningside Heights. 4. Claremont restaurant, 1911. 5. Grant's tomb, 1911. 6. Barrier Gate, 1814. 7. Fort Laight, 1814. 8. Blockhouse No. 4, 1814. 9. Blockhouse No. 3, 1814. 10. Barnard College, 1911; bloody buckwheat field, Sept 16, 1776. 11. Columbia University, 1911. 12. St. Luke's Hospital, 1911. 13. Blockhouse No. 2, 1814. 14. Cathedral of St. John the Divine, 1911. 15, 16, 17, 18, 19, 20, 21, 22, 23, British fortifications erected 1776. 20 is on the Great Hill (the Circle) in Central Park; 22 is also site of Fort Clinton, 1814; 23 is also site of Nutter's Battery, 1814. 21. Fort Fish, 1814. 25. Blockhouse No. 1, 1814. 26. British redoubt, 1776; Benson's Point redoubt, 1814. 27. Mill Rock blockhouse. 28. American redoubt, evacuated Sept. 15, 1776. 29. Now Mt. Morris Park.









UNIVERSITY OF FLORIDA



3 1262 09720 0934